







ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01753 7058

GENEALOGY  
973.006  
AM3529A  
1920











# AMERICANA

(AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE)



VOLUME XIV

January, 1920—December, 1920

---

The American Historical Society  
317 Broadway  
New York





X 696508

# AMERICANA

Published by The American Historical Society, Inc.; formerly published by the National Americana Society. Issued in Quarterly Numbers at \$4 per annum; single copies \$1.

Publication Office, Somerville, N. J., Unionist-Quaker Association Building.

AMERICANA is a quarterly Magazine of History, Genealogy, Heraldry, and Literature. Manuscripts upon these subjects are invited, and will be given early and careful consideration. It is desirable that contributors should content not less than two thousand nor more than ten thousand words. Contributors should attach to their manuscripts a statement of the number of words written. A memorandum of address of the contributor should be attached.

Copyright, 1920, by

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Entered at the New York Post Office as Second-Class Mail Matter

All correspondence relating to contributions should be addressed to the Editor. All communications should be addressed:

The American Historical Society, Inc.,  
Somerville, N. J., or  
367 Broadway, New York City.

All rights reserved

## BOARD OF OFFICERS:

BENJAMIN F. LEWIS,

President;

FLORENCE A. KELLEY,

Secretary;

MAMON L. LEWIS,

Managing Director;

FRANK E. DUNN,

Circulation Department.

## EDITORIAL STAFF:

FRANK Y. HODGE,

Editor-in-Chief;

JOHN P. DAVIS,

Biographical Editor;

WILLIAM B. TOWNE,

Contributing Editor;

JAMES A. BLISS,

Genealogical Editor;

EDWARD C. FISHER,

Contributing Editor;

MAMON L. LEWIS,

Heraldic Editor;

ELMER E. POTNAM, Art Editor

322665

(ii)

7 6365

# AMERICAN

AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Copyright, 1922, by  
THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Entered at the New York Post Office as Second-Class Mail Matter

All rights reserved

NEW YORK

(1)

THE  
NEWBET  
LIBRARY



# AMERICANA

Published by The American Historical Society, Inc., formerly published by the National Americana Society. Issued in Quarterly Numbers at \$4 per annum; single copies \$1.

Publication Office, Somerville, N. J., Unionist-Gazette Association Building.

AMERICANA is a Quarterly Magazine of History, Genealogy, Heraldry, and Literature. Manuscripts upon these subjects are invited, and will be given early and careful consideration. It is desirable that contributions should contain not less than two thousand nor more than ten thousand words. Contributors should attach to their manuscript their full name, with academic or other titles, and memorandum of number of words written.

All correspondence relating to contributions should be addressed to the Editor. All communications should be addressed:

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.,  
Somerville, N. J., or  
267 Broadway, New York City.

---

## BOARD OF OFFICERS:

BENJAMIN F. LEWIS,  
President;

MARION L. LEWIS,  
Managing Director;

FLORENCE A. KELSEY,  
Secretary;

FRANK R. HOLMES,  
Circulation Department.

---

## EDITORIAL STAFF:

FENWICK Y. HEDLEY,  
Editor-in-Chief;

JAMES A. ELLIS,  
Genealogical Editor;

JOHN P. DOWNS,  
Biographical Editor;

EDWARD C. FINLEY,  
Contributing Editor;

WILLIAM B. TOWNE,  
Contributing Editor;

MARCUS ULBRICHT,  
Heraldic Editor;

ELMER E. PUTNAM, Art Editor.



## The American Historical Society, Inc.



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Inc., has for its purpose the acquisition and dissemination of authentic information relating to the history of the United States, their peoples and their institutions—religious, educational, professional, and commercial.

This, to the end that in this present age, when to a greater degree than ever before, the people are confronted by practical questions relating to everyday affairs, there shall be a vehicle for the conveyance of such lessons from the past as shall prove an inspiration to a most deepseated patriotism, and recognition of the weighty responsibilities resting upon those of today as worthy descendants of noble forbears, and as exemplars of the loftiest civic righteousness.

In furtherance of these purposes, it has during many years of diligent labor, assembled a vast accumulation of material—printed volumes, many of great rarity; and manuscript writings representing the life work of eminent antiquarians, historians, and genealogists, various of whom have passed away in well preserved old age and still at the zenith of their mental powers—material which is not to be found in any other hands. The names of those whose work remains in the hands of the Society, makes a noble roll, including: John Howard Brown and William S. Pelletreau, of New York; Hon. William Nelson and Francis Bazley Lee, of New Jersey; Gen. William H. Davis, of Pennsylvania; Samuel Hart, of Connecticut; Charles Nutt, of Massachusetts.

As a most essential part of such history is that of families and individuals, the Society gives particular attention to genealogical research—tracing family lines to their source in mother countries. The Society has in its present service a most capable corps following along these lines of investigation—men and women



1  
of large ability, familiar with its invaluable archives, and most of whom had the great benefit of long association with the masters before mentioned. To these are to be added a noble array of contributors representing every State in the Union—litterateurs, educationists and authors, entirely familiar with the history of their respective regions, and of their people.

As an agency through which the results of such labors may be given to the people at large, the Society presents a magazine under the title of "Americana." Its pages are held sacred to the purposes hereinbefore set forth—to the propagation of a fervent patriotism, and an appreciative knowledge of American history and American institutions. They will contain historical narratives from all parts of the country, and relating to all periods; the identification of spots made famous in colonial and revolutionary times; of family lines traced to their sources in the mother countries; and biographical sketches of men and women whose services are worthy of commemoration.

Not the least feature of importance will be the department of Heraldry, in which will be described and depicted the arms of prominent families, as identified by a master of this science, and presented in their proper colors by a skilled heraldic artist.

To these ends, the Society invites communications from all societies giving attention to such pursuits, and from individuals in possession of historical biographical or personal history, which will add to the wealth of such knowledge already in its possession; and for promulgation to the reading public through a responsible and capable medium.





JANUARY, 1920

IN THE LEHIGH VALLEY



# AMERICANA

JANUARY, 1920

## The Moravians in Northampton County

By THE REV. WILLIAM N. SCHWARZE, PH.D., BETHLEHEM, PENN.

**L**IKE most Protestant bodies, the Moravian church traces its origin to a revival of experimental religion. The revival occurred in an interesting country, amid stirring events, and exerted determinative influence on the character of the church that proceeded from it. Bohemia was the scene of the noteworthy awakening. This land is one of the smallest of the world's famous countries. Embracing an area of not more than twenty thousand square miles, it is less than half as large as Pennsylvania. It lies diamond shaped in the heart of Europe. Its boundaries are defended by mountain ramparts. Centrally situated like a natural fortress, Bohemia has been styled the "key" to modern Europe. Field of many battles, it was the storm-centre of the dark and lurid tragedy of the Thirty Years' War. Historically, too, the country is of importance. It has been convulsed by great questions of its own raising, and it anticipated by a century of brave struggle the general reformation of the sixteenth century. To the southeast of Bohemia lies the much smaller margraviate of Moravia. The two have substantially the same history, one by the ties of fortune and misfortune. Both lands, now parts of the newly formed Czecho-Slovak State, are regarded as the original seats of the "Unitas Fratrum," or the Moravian Church.

Into the territory embraced within the borders of these two lands there came in the fifth century the Czechs, a vigorous and high-minded people, the most gifted of the Slavonic tribes. Remnants of earlier inhabitants they either dispossessed or subdued. The missionary interest of the church reached out to them about the

NOTE—From advance sheets of "History of Northampton County, Penn., and the Grand Valley of the Lehigh," (The American Historical Society, Inc.)



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

middle of the ninth century. It proceeded from both the Latin and the Greek churches, a little earlier from the former, but with much more vigorous expression from the latter. Cyrill and Methodius, sent out by the Greek Church, became the apostles of the Bohemians and the Moravians. They translated the Scriptures into their language and established many churches. A marked feature of their work was the use of the language of the people, not only in giving instruction but, also, in public worship. Thus was laid the foundation for that national feeling and the liberal principles that thenceforward distinguished the Bohemians and Moravians. They were animated by a spirit akin to that which later manifested itself as Protestantism. Roman pontiffs were not indifferent to these developments. On the ground of the prior claims of the Latin Church, they sought to bring the Bohemian and Moravian Church under their supremacy. Toward the end of the eleventh century the two countries became subject to the Roman See. The Greek ritual fell into disuse, the vernacular was no longer employed in public worship. But the impression left in the minds of the people in favor of the use of the popular language for religious purposes was never effaced. The hearts of the people clung to the customs of the fathers. They were ready at any time to welcome a reformer, particularly, when the powerful Roman Church became corrupt.

In due time the reformer appeared. His name was John Huss. He was the forerunner of the Moravian Church. Under his guidance—as is well known, because his life is a part of universal history as truly as is the life of Luther, of Calvin, of Zwingli, of Wesley, or of Crammer—the intellectual and religious movement in Bohemia of the fourteenth century was turned into the channel of a national reformation. As learned professor at the University of Prague, as powerful preacher and vigorous writer, he labored for truth and righteousness. It was the seed-time of evangelical truth in Bohemia. As he lifted up his voice against abuses, he roused bitter enmity. Eventually, he was condemned to death at the Council of Constance and was burned alive as a heretic on July 6, 1415. The consequences of this act of violence were terrible. They precipitated the long and sanguinary Hussite wars. For years the brave Bohemians fought for national independence and religious liberty but were, in the end, overwhelmed because divided among themselves. What was left of the several parties at the end of the conflicts was constituted the





JAMPTON COUNTY

were the genuine folk

vision

d with

PULPIT ROCK, LEHIGH VALLEY



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

National Church of Bohemia, enjoying certain concessions granted by the Romish hierarchy, such as the Lord's Supper in both kinds and the use of the vernacular in public worship.

Amid the confusion and violence of the times, there were devout men of God who did not take up arms, nor meddle in political commotion, nor give way to fanaticism. They fostered apostolic teaching, discipline and fellowship, true to the principles and practices of the Bohemian reformer. They were the genuine followers of Huss and furnished the seed of the *Unitas Fratrum* or the Moravian Church. Dissatisfied with the National Church, they longed to work out their own salvation. They were encouraged by Peter Chelcic, a forcible writer of the times, who investigated the great questions of the age with independent mind. He exercised formative influence on their aspirations. His counsel led them to retire from Prague to the estate of Lititz, a hundred miles to the east, and begin an immediate reformation. There in the midst of the dense forests, under the shadow of the Giant Mountains, they founded their settlement in 1457. Primarily, the idea was simply to form a Christian Association. Hence the name *Unitas Fratrum*, Unity of the Brethren. Seclusion did not result in cloistering of their interests. They were continually joined by like-minded persons. Their lofty aim, as well as the compulsive force of persecution, prompted them to place their organization on a more solid basis. They were staunch people and true. As their Association gathered strength, they recognized that they had something worth the keeping and that they sustained weighty obligations over against their day and generation. Hence, they considered the propriety of separating from the National Church and instituting an independent ministry. The latter they secured by Episcopal consecration, in 1467, through the good offices of the Waldenses.

Four principles were adopted by the members of the *Unitas Fratrum* as basis of their union. (1) The Bible is the only source of Christian doctrine. (2) Public worship is to be conducted in accordance with Scripture teaching and on the model of the Apostolic Church. (3) The Lord's Supper is to be received in faith, to be doctrinally defined in the language of Scripture, and every authoritative human explanation of that language is to be avoided. (4) Godly Christian life is essential as an evidence of saving faith.

Gradually, the *Unitas Fratrum* attained to complete organization.



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

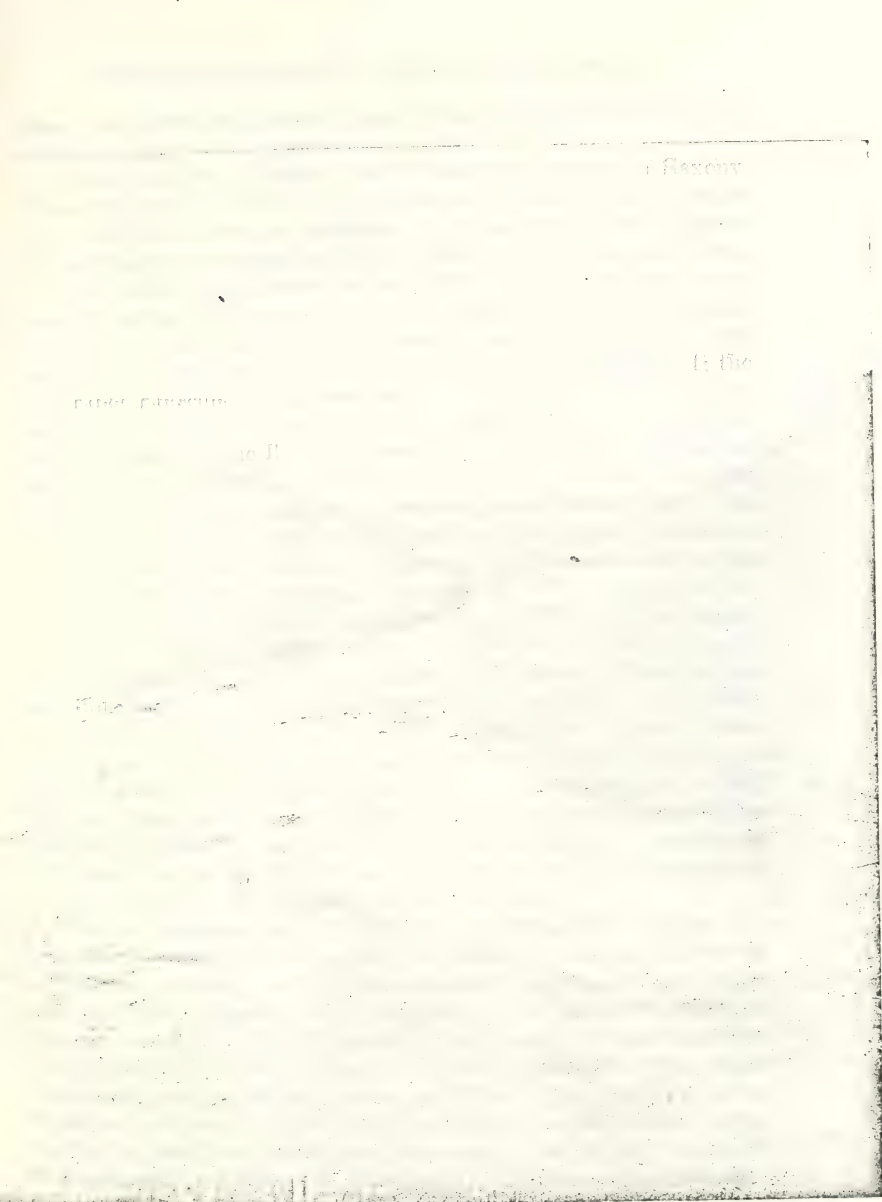
A well ordered polity was worked out. The form of government tended toward the conferential form. Numerical increase of the membership was rapid. When Luther appeared the *Unitas Fratrum* embraced about four hundred parishes and two hundred thousand members. Its activity was diversified. The native genius of the church asserted itself continually in practical evangelism. A thorough educational system was developed. Colleges and theological seminaries were established. A confession of faith was elaborated. Hymn-book, Bible and Catechism were given to the people. The *Unitas Fratrum* enjoys the distinction of having been the first church to put a hymnal into the hands of the people. The first edition bears the date 1501. It, also, has the honor of having been the first to translate the Bible into the Bohemian vernacular from the original tongues. After fourteen years of indefatigable labor, on the part of trained scholars, this translation was completed in 1593. Called the Kralitz Bible, modern Bohemians declare the style of this version to be unsurpassed. It has furnished, word for word, the text of the Bohemian Bible published in modern times by the British and Foreign Bible Society.

While building up their own organization, the Brethren did not neglect to cultivate a sincere spirit of fellowship with other evangelical Christians. They entered into friendly relations with Luther, Calvin, Bucer and others, relations that were of mutual benefit. In 1570, they formed with the Lutherans and the Reformed of Poland what may be termed the first evangelical alliance, based on the instrument of agreement known as the *Consensus of Sendomir*.

"Man proposes, God disposes." From the pinnacle of prosperity the *Unitas Fratrum* was plunged into the depths of adversity. The disastrous counter-reformation, which set in with the reverses of the Thirty Years' War, all but crushed the *Unitas Fratrum*. There was left only the Scriptural "remnant." This, from an expression used by John Amos Comenius, famous educator and last bishop of the ancient *Unitas Fratrum*, came to be called "The Hidden Seed." In secret the traditions of the church were cherished. These and the means for reconstructing the organization of the church were preserved, fresh and sound, for Comenius perpetuated the Episcopacy by regular ordination and embodied the principles of the church in his comprehensive work, entitled, "*Ratio Disciplinae*." The "Hidden Seed" was ready to germinate, when the proper time should







WHORROGOTT GAP, LEHIGH VALLEY



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

come, and grow to a mighty tree, stretching its branches to the uttermost parts of the earth.

In due time the "Hidden Seed" was transplanted to Saxony. There Herrnhut, founded in an unreclaimed wilderness on the estate of Count Zinzendorf by descendants of members of the ancient *Unitas Fratrum*, became the rallying place for the Brethren. Larger and smaller companies of exiles followed. Most of these came from Moravia. The name "Moravian Church" given the modern *Unitas Fratrum* is, therefore, historically well accounted for. The ancient discipline, handed down by Comenius, was introduced; the venerable Episcopate was received at the hands of the last two survivors of a line of seventy bishops, extending from 1467 to 1735, and the Church of the Bohemian and Moravian Brethren, concealed from human eye for three generations, renewed its youth like the eagle's. Earnest men and women were attracted to Herrnhut from other places and from other denominational connections. Hence, as the founding of Herrnhut was the beginning of a new epoch in the history of the *Unitas Fratrum*, it marked, also, the inauguration of a development different, in many respects, from that of former times. The remnant of the church, transferred to a foreign land, found itself in the midst of the territory and influence of the Lutheran State Church. Within the latter body the pietism of Spener constituted, at the time, a leaven of righteousness. Count Zinzendorf, who became the leading bishop of the resuscitated *Unitas Fratrum*, was by birth a Lutheran and by conviction devoted to the pietistic movement. Through him and other noteworthy men who identified themselves with the Moravians, the work of renewal of the church on the old principles was invigorated by an infusion of new life from the Evangelical Church of Germany.

Soon the vigorous life of the Herrnhut settlement came to expression in varied and far-reaching activity. An extensive network of itineracy in many parts of the continent was formed. An Inner Mission effort among nominal members of the State Churches of Europe, was called "The Diaspora," for it sought the promotion of vital godliness without endeavor to detach members from other Protestant bodies. Schools were established. Ten years after the founding of Herrnhut, the first messengers to the heathen went forth, the missionary field being destined, in the event, to absorb the chief and best efforts of the church. It became apparent that



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

resuscitation of the church had been brought about for the preservation and propagation of experimental religion in an age when the blight of rationalism was widely spread and the pietistic movement had suffered an inner decay. The activities of the Moravians have enabled them to be a power for good at home and abroad and have kept them, though geographically widely distributed, a Unity of Brethren in doctrine and practice.

Beginnings of Moravian activity in England and America followed within the second decade after the founding of Herrnhut. In both these countries an aggressive evangelism was prosecuted, amid circumstances at once promising and forbidding. As early as 1727, the people of Herrnhut seem to have thought of sending men to America. The Colony of Pennsylvania, with its broad and liberal charter, particularly attracted attention. The savages who roamed through its forests and the many persecuted religionists who had found a home within its borders but lacked, for the most part, the proper care of preacher and teacher, offered large opportunities for missionary and evangelistic activity. In the event, however, Pennsylvania was not the first of the American colonies to furnish a field for their operations. Through the good offices of Count Zinzendorf, a tract of land had been secured in the newly erected Province of Georgia for a colony of Schwenkfeldian exiles from Silesia. When these elected to go to Pennsylvania rather than to the southern colony was reinforced. True to their designs, they brought the Georgia. To that end, Bishop Spangenberg, with a number of Moravians, came over in the spring of 1735, and, subsequently, the little colony was reinforced. True to their designs they brought the gospel to Indians and negro slaves. A school for Indian children was opened on an island in the Savannah river, a mile above the town of Savannah. Unfortunately, the war which broke out a few years later between England and Spain interfered with the work of the Moravians so much that their settlement was brought to an untimely end. Before this occurred an interesting transaction took place, viz., what appears to have been the first regular ordination to the ministry for service in America, performed by a bishop of a Christian church in one of the English colonies of North America, for on March 10, 1736, Bishop Nitschman, who had come to Georgia, in the presence of the Moravian Congregation at Savannah, ordained one of their number, Anton Seifert, to be their pastor.









## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

But few Moravian colonists were left in Georgia at the beginning of the year 1740. Spangenberg, a learned and able man, formerly professor at Jena and Halle, had been commissioned in 1736 to investigate the spiritual condition of the German population in Pennsylvania and to gather information about the Indians. There he traversed many neighborhoods and visited all kinds of religionists, acquiring information that was of inestimable value to the Moravians later. In 1738, the colony of Moravians in Georgia had been given another strong leader in the person of Peter Boehler, also a former student and professor at Jena, who ranks in the early annals of Moravian activity next to Spangenberg as theologian, preacher and administrator. War conditions put insurmountable obstacles in his way. He and his companions thought of removing to the Pennsylvania colony. Opportunity to proceed thither came early in 1740. At that time the Rev. George Whitefield, famous Evangelist, arrived in Georgia on his sloop, the *Savannah*. When he sailed again for Philadelphia, he took Boehler and the remaining Moravian colonists with him as passengers. They expected to find both Spangenberg and Bishop Nitschmann in Pennsylvania. But the former had gone to report to the leaders of the church in Europe as to conditions in Pennsylvania, and the latter, commissioned to lead a colony to Pennsylvania, had not yet returned from Europe. Disappointed and at a loss whither to turn, Boehler and his companions were, without suspecting it, led through the instrumentality of Whitefield to the neighborhood in which was to be founded a Moravian settlement destined to be the centre of widespread and varied Moravian activity in this country.

According to the statement of his financial agent, Whitefield had determined to establish "a negro school in Pennsylvania where he proposed to take up land in order to settle a town for the reception of such English friends whose hearts God should incline to come and settle there." Whitefield himself had written, "To me Pennsylvania seems to be the best Province in America for such an undertaking. The negroes meet there with the best usage, and I believe many of my acquaintances will either give me or let me purchase their young slaves at a very easy rate. I intend taking up a tract of land far back in the country." To this end he purchased from William Allen five thousand acres of land in "the Forks of the Delaware," a term at first confined to the locality just within the



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

confluence of the Delaware and Lehigh rivers but later extended to the whole range of country between these streams from the place of the Forks to the Kittatiny or Blue Mountains—practically identical with the present area of Northampton county. Shortly after the agreement of purchase was made, Whitefield proposed to Boehler that he superintend the erection of the contemplated house and employ his companions, several of whom were carpenters and masons, in the work. After inspecting the locality and examining the timber, stone and springs of water, a contract with Whitefield was definitely concluded. In May of this year (1740) Boehler and seven others, with tools and the barest necessities for camping in the woods, started for this tract, which Whitefield, with the proposed school and village in mind, had named Nazareth. They reached their destination the next day (May 30). At its close, this little band of homeless wanderers broke the silence of the dark, wild forest with an evening hymn of praise and stretched their weary limbs to rest under the spreading branches of a giant oak, long thereafter known as Boehler's Oak.

Thus began Moravian history in the Forks of the Delaware—the region now enclosed within the bounds of Northampton county. Out of that humble beginning sprang institutions and activities that, for a century and three-quarters, have been closely identified with this interesting territory, with the tawny natives that sullenly retreated from this region, and the various population elements which thereafter poured in.

The pioneers experienced trying times during the following months. They reared a cabin of unhewn logs for themselves, while it rained nearly every day. Then with a force of lime-burners, quarrymen, masons, board-cutters and teamsters, secured from nearby places, they proceeded with the building of Whitefield's school. Work moved slowly. By early fall the walls were laid up only to the door-sills. Then work on this structure ceased, and Boehler and his companions set about the erection of a better house of hewn timbers in which to pass the winter. In November, Boehler went to Philadelphia to report to Whitefield. This proved unfortunate. Their conversation led into a doctrinal discussion, carried on in Latin, which these two schoolmen understood better than either understood the language of the other. Differences came to light. And Whitefield became so heated in the argument that he





ordered the Moravians to leave his land forthwith. That was out of the question, for winter was at hand. The friendly offices of Nathaniel Irish, well known land agent of Saucon, secured a temporary stay of the sentence.

At this juncture, Bishop Nitschmann opportunely arrived with another company of Moravians, commissioned to found a Moravian settlement in Pennsylvania. The choice of location at once engaged attention. Inducements to settle in various places were considered. In the event, it was decided to purchase five hundred acres, lying at the confluence of the Lehigh river and the Monocacy creek. Before the purchase had been actually consummated, the Moravians on the Whitefield tract, taking for granted that the land on the Lehigh would be bought, began to fell its timber. The first tree was cut down "about the time of the shortest day," (Dec. 21, 1740), by David Nitschmann, Sr., uncle of the Bishop, and others. In the early spring a log cabin was completed on a wooded slope crowning a bluff that descended to the Monocacy, where the most copious spring of the region gushed out of the limestone-bed at the foot of the declivity. That was the first house of Bethlehem. In it lived the founders of the community. Count Zinzendorf visited the little settlement on the Lehigh toward the end of the year and, stimulated by the associations connected with the celebration of the Christmas Eve Vigils, gave the place its significant name, Bethlehem. At the time that the band of pioneers built the first house of Bethlehem—the site of which is indicated by a stone marker to the rear of the Eagle Hotel—there were only three other settlements of white men in the neighborhood. All were located on the south bank of the Lehigh. One was the Jennings farm, about a mile above Bethlehem; another was the Irish farm and mill, property of Nathaniel Irish, at the mouth of the Saucon creek, now Shimersville; the third was the Ysselstein farm, now marked, in part, by the shops of the Bethlehem Steel Company. To the north stretched unbroken primeval wilderness, save where here and there corn waved in the summer around some Indian hamlet.

The foundations of Bethlehem were laid in the name and to the glory of God. It was to be the centre of evangelistic, missionary and educational operations. The work of reclaiming the wilderness was consecrated by this noble purpose held steadily in view. The second house erected, still standing, became the residence of the bishops and





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

the clergy. It contained, also, the first chapel. In the course of the following year (1742) the population of Bethlehem was increased by the arrival from Europe of a body of fifty-six Moravians, known as "The First Sea Congregation." The German speaking portion of these immigrants came to Bethlehem. The English speaking part of the new settlers were sent to Nazareth, where they occupied the two log houses that had been hastily thrown up by Boehler and his companions, while they were engaged in the work of erecting Whitefield's school.

At the very time when these settlers proceeded to Nazareth, negotiations were being concluded in England, whereby the five thousand acre tract came into possession of the Moravian Church. By the death of his loyal business manager, Whitefield had been left in such financial embarrassment that he was unable to push the Nazareth plans or even to retain possession of the property.

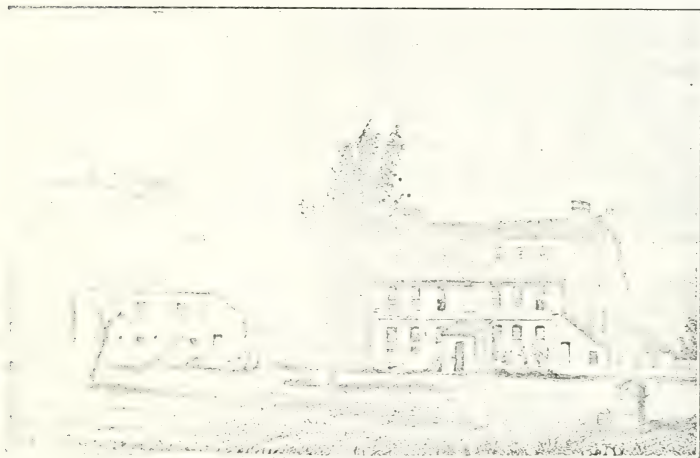
So much land was acquired by the Moravians in "The Forks of the Delaware," because elaborate plans for the Pennsylvania colony had been maturing. Spangenberg's three years of evangelization and investigation in the colony had deeply impressed him with the needs of the situation. Upon the report of his observations the Moravians conceived it to be their mission to minister to the needs of the many immigrant religionists who had sought a new home in the colony but were, for the most part, as sheep without a shepherd, and, still worse, distracted and demoralized by sectarian controversy; to take the gospel to the Indians who roamed through the forests; to provide instruction for the youth in whose interest but few schools had been established.

So fine a purpose was exacting in its demands. The Moravians were equal to the demands. On June 25th, 1742, the inhabitants of Bethlehem were formally organized as a Moravian congregation; a month later, July 24th, the settlers at Nazareth were organized as a second congregation. At the time of its organization, the congregation at Bethlehem consisted of about a hundred members, that at Nazareth of a much smaller number. The membership was divided into two parts. One was called the pilgrim or itinerant congregation, the other the home or local congregation—*Pilgergemeinde* and *Hausgemeinde*. The selection of persons for the one or the other division was made, in some cases, in accordance with their expressed





MORAVIAN CHURCH, BETHLEHEM



LOG HOUSE, NAZARETH

Erected 1749; was the Whitefield House, 1748, and torn down in 1871



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

preferences, in other cases by lot, at their request.\* The first division were to devote themselves to evangelistic work among neglected whites, missionary work among the Indians and educational activity among the children. The others were to "tarry by the stuff." They were to develop material resources for the maintenance of the pilgrims and, at the same time, spiritually to keep the fire burning on the home altar.

The system thus introduced was called "The Economy." It continued for twenty years, 1742-1762. According to its arrangements, the inhabitants of Bethlehem and the several settlements on the Nazareth tract—which is now included within Upper Nazareth township—formed an exclusive association, a body politic, in which prevailed a communism not of goods but of labor. Co-operative as it was, it differed materially from the communistic movements of a later day, since aggrandizement in things temporal, either for the individual or the corporation, was entirely foreign to its design and spirit. Its sole aim was the maintenance of evangelistic, missionary and educational activity. It was for this that the church had ventured her means in the purchase of real estate and the transportation of colonists. It was for this that the colonists now agreed to live and labor as one family. The surrender of personal property into a common treasury was no requirement for admission to this Economy. Such a communism was not binding upon the settlers, but left to the free will of each to adopt or reject. Those who had property of their own retained full control of it. The members of this association gave merely their time and the labor of their hands for the common good, and in return were supplied with the necessities of life and the comforts of home. The mutual obligation ended there. Farms, mills and work-shops that were cleared

---

\*The use of the lot obtained for some time among the Moravians, according to the precedent set by the apostles at the election of Matthias. The church was regarded as a kind of theocracy, and the will of God was to be ascertained in all important affairs. It was employed in the appointment of ministers, the admission of members, as, also, in the contraction of marriages. Its use in the case last named has been frequently misunderstood and misrepresented. Rightly regarded, this constitutes one of the most noble instances of devotedness to the service of Christ. In the work of the gospel, especially in heathen lands, Moravians of this period were minded not to be hindered through any of the relations of this life, and they were determined, also, that God should direct them absolutely in forming what constitutes the holiest union on earth. Moreover, marriages by lot were not contracted in an offensive or oppressive way. In course of time, the use of the lot was more and more restricted, then confined to the matter of appointment to high office or function in the church and, eventually, abolished.



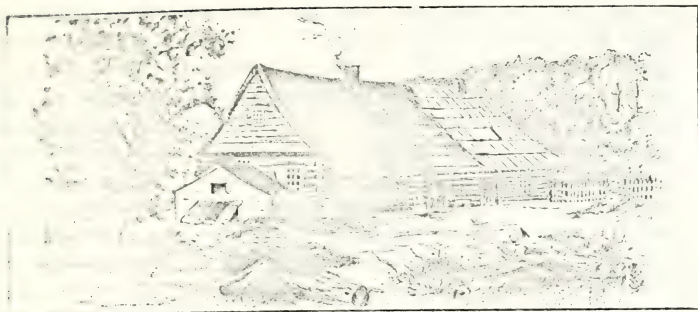


or erected at different points were made to do service in the interests of the work which the church had taken in hand. While it lasted, the Economy system defrayed the expenses of the various further immigrations of Moravian colonists from abroad, gave the Moravian colonists here comfortable support, and maintained ministerial itinerancy among white settlers, the mission among the Indians and schools for children.

Bethlehem was the centre of the Economy. So far as externals were concerned, this settlement was to be the place of manufacturing and trade. Its inhabitants were, for the most part, men skilled in various handicrafts and qualified to engage in business. In the settlements on the Nazareth tract—Gnadenthal, Christianspring, Friedensthal, Old Nazareth—the settlers were mainly people adapted to agricultural pursuits. Every branch of industry came under the supervision of committees responsible to a board of direction, of which, during most of the twenty year period, Spangenberg was chairman. For the diversified duties of this position he was admirably fitted. He added the tireless industry and system of the able administrator and shrewd man of affairs to the sound judgment of the thorough theologian and the quenchless zeal of the pioneer missionary. By his fellows he was familiarly known as "Brother Joseph," the protector and director of his brethren in a strange land. Under the wise guidance of Spangenberg and his coadjutors no less than thirty-two industries, apart from farms, were established and successfully operated at Bethlehem. No town in the interior of Pennsylvania could minister more readily to the varied wants of travellers and neighboring settlers. As a result of these varied enterprises about fifty ministers and missionaries were supported and fifteen schools were maintained. Yet at no time during the period of the Economy did the joint population of Bethlehem and Nazareth number more than six hundred.

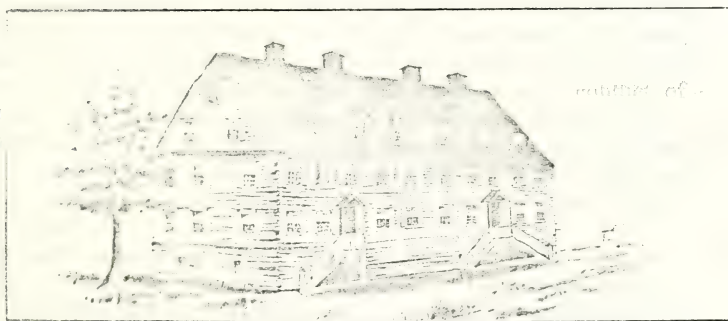
With the opening of Indian troubles in 1755, the Moravians were thrown into extraordinary perplexity and peril. Because of their well known zeal for the Indians, many of these fled to the Moravian settlements for refuge. Many white inhabitants, on the other hand, regarded them as being in league with the savages. When, however, the appalling massacre of missionaries and converts at the Moravian mission station Gnadenhuetten on the Mahoni—on the site of Lehighton, Pennsylvania,—became known, the character of the





FIRST HOUSE AT BETHLEHEM

Erected 1741



GEMEIN HAUS, BETHLEHEM

Erected 1741



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

Moravians came out in its true light. Writing to Zinzendorf during these times of hardship, Spangenberg wrote among other things, "The Indians are now threatening to attack Bethlehem, but our hearts rest in childlike hope. Our children are ignorant of the war and murder around them; they are lively and sing and play before the Lord in their innocence. \* \* \* The brethren are day and night on the watch to guard against an attack. The neighboring people seek refuge among us, and we refuse no one. In short, we are comforted and resolute in the Lord. We abide unterrified at our posts; for should we yield, the whole country between this and Philadelphia would become a prey to the ravages of the Indians, there being no other place that could resist them. As yet no one has deserted us; indeed, it has not yet entered the mind of any to seek for safety outside of our people." The letter admirably illustrates the faith and spirit of the Moravians amid trying conditions.

Evangelistic activity, using the term in its broadest sense, supported by such industry and steadfastness, made neglected people feel the thrill of a strong religious life. Of this the German colonists in Pennsylvania, in particular, were sadly in need, in the second quarter of the eighteenth century. Their condition was deplorable. It was akin to religious anarchy. Multitudes had been abandoned by the ecclesiastical authorities in Europe to spiritual starvation and moral decadence. There was almost complete destitution of Christian ministrations worthy the name. There were, it is true, numerous sects and parties that made up the motley religious composition of the Province. But they promoted, mainly, conflict of doctrines and confusion of tongues. In consequence, irreligion and distaste for all forms of public worship prevailed to an alarming extent. It had become a proverbial expression that a man who was utterly indifferent to revealed religion belonged to "The Pennsylvania Church."

To meet the needs of such a situation, plans elaborate and comprehensive were matured and the connection of the Moravian settlements at Bethlehem and Nazareth with many points was established. As early as July, 1742, ten itinerant evangelists were sent out. It was enjoined upon them not to interfere with the work of any other denomination but to minister to the unchurched colonists. From time to time they reported at headquarters and were appointed to new fields of labor. They sought no compensation from those among



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

whom they labored. Their own brethren provided the frugal support with which they were content. Their congregations gathered in private houses, barns, school houses, occasionally in a humble log or stone church. In course of time groups of persons here and there became definitely identified with them. The efforts of the itinerant evangelists were followed up by "visitors" who did the work of pastors. Advance of the Moravian Church as such was not the primary aim. The furtherance of vital religion, not denominationalism, was the object of the evangelists and their coadjutors. Throughout Pennsylvania and the neighboring colonies these fervent heralds awakened a great hunger for the Word of God. By their agency the "Great Awakening" of 1740-42, started through the influence of George Whitefield, Jonathan Edwards and others, had its counterpart among the German settlers. The more important places that were centres of this itinerant work were Germantown, Philadelphia, Lancaster, York, Donegal, Heidelberg, Lebanon, Lititz, Oley, Allemaengel, Maguntzsch, Salisbury, Falekner's Swamp, the Trappe, Mahanatawny, Neshaminy and Dansbury, in Pennsylvania; Manocacy, in Maryland; Maurice River, Penn's Neck, Racoon, Oldman's Creek, Pawlin's Mill, Walpack and Brunswick, in New Jersey; Staten Island and Long Island; Newport, in Rhode Island; Broadbay, in Maine; and Canajoharie, in New York. In covering distances to reach these scattered points the devoted itinerants were undaunted by conditions of weather or road or season of the year when they started on their toilsome foot-journeys, sometimes hundreds of miles in extent and months in duration.

Quite in harmony with the spirit of this activity was an attempt, in the earliest days, to unite the different German religious bodies of Pennsylvania in closer fellowship. Zinzendorf was the life of the movement, as he was, to the end of his career, the dominant figure in all the widespread Moravian interests. The effort to effect an evangelical alliance of German Protestants in Pennsylvania proved, however, an impracticable ideal for the condition of those days, and, to say the least, was far in advance of the times. Its inevitable failure, coupled with the fact that other denominations, particularly the Lutheran and the Reformed, were assuming organic form in America, forced the Moravians to shape the course of their activity anew. As they had gained a foothold in the not inconsiderable number of preaching places established in seven of the original





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

thirteen colonies, the logic of events gradually led them to enter upon the natural denominational effort of church extension.

The Indian Mission made heavy demands on the time and care of the Moravians. It was hampered by difficulties that have attended all missionary enterprise among the aborigines of this country. The nomadic character of the red men made it impossible to secure anything like the abiding results aimed for in the prosecution of missionary work among any people. It was clear at the outset that no Christian Indian state could be built up to crown the labors of faithful missionaries. Nevertheless, the Moravians addressed themselves, without delay, to the task.

As early as 1740, Christian Henry Rauch landing in New York met there certain Mohicans. He returned with them to their home village, Shekomeko, in what is now Dutchess county, New York. Results of his work gave omen of a fine future. Among his earliest converts was the notorious Wasamapa, formerly fierce as a savage bear. While this missionary was wintering in his lonely hut amid the pines of Shekomeko, trying to reach the hearts of the wild Mohicans, his brethren in the Nazareth woods made the first Moravian missionary effort among the Delawares. The interest of the Indians in hearing "the great word" stimulated the desire of the missionaries to acquire the language of these people. During the early weeks of the organization of the settlement at Bethlehem, strolling bands of Indians were among the most interesting visitors. In the summer of 1742 some such were escorted to the Chapel, where the Moravians entertained them with instrumental music and endeavored to speak to them about the Saviour. In September of that year two Indians were baptized at Bethlehem. At one of the early conferences, Gottlob Buettner and John Christopher Pylaeus, besides Christian Henry Rauch, all of them ordained men, were set apart for missionary service among the Indians. With a view to opening the way for these and other missionaries, Zindendorf undertook three tours into the Indian country. The first, July 24-August 7, 1742, took him into the region beyond the Blue Mountains. Of particular importance was his meeting with deputies of the Six Nations at Tulpehocken. With them he ratified a covenant of friendship, securing permission for the Moravians to pass to and from and sojourn in the domains of the great Iroquois confederation as friends and not as strangers. His second journey, August 3-30,



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

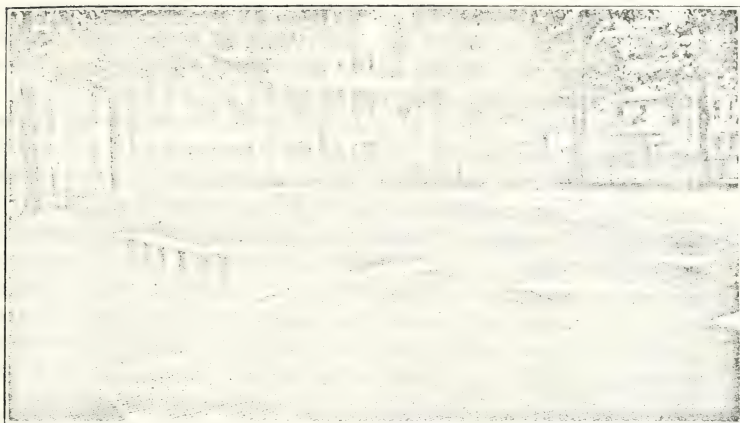
1742, was to Shekomeko, where he organized a congregation consisting of ten Indian converts, fruit of the labors of the missionary Rauch. His final Indian tour, Sept. 21-Nov. 8, 1742, by far the longest and most perilous, was that to the Upper Susquehanna and into the Wyoming Valley, then a *terra incognita* to white men. On this journey he encountered heathenism and savagery in their darkest colors. He endured great hardships and his life was more than once imperiled, for fierce tribes of those regions were a different kind of men from the Indians of the lowlands. The account of these tours given at Bethlehem awakened the greatest enthusiasm for extensive plans of missionary work among the red men of the forest. At a conference, held in November, the Count unfolded his scheme for carrying on this work. His vivid account of the experiences made among the Shawanese, far from deterring men and women, had the effect of increasing the number of volunteers for this service to fifteen.

From Shekomeko, missionary interest reached out to the neighboring villages. Rauch and others sent to assist him visited the natives in various parts of New York State and extended operations into Connecticut. Within a year, however, the opposition of unscrupulous whites, rum-sellers and the like, caused the government of the New York colony to assume an unfriendly attitude. In consequence, the Moravians determined to transfer their Indian mission activity to Pennsylvania, beyond the settlements of the colonists, the treaty with the Six Nations having been renewed.

In course of the following years, a body of capable, devoted men developed an extensive Indian mission in Pennsylvania and the contiguous territory. Noteworthy among these were David Zeisberger and John Heckewelder. Both have left important philological and literary works relating to their field of activity. Zeisberger, in the event, rounded out sixty-two years of continuous, unwearied labor in behalf of the red men, a career perhaps not equalled, certainly not surpassed, in point of length of service by any missionary of any church among any people. These men and others among their brethren began their labors by applying themselves to the study of the Indian languages, especially the Delaware and Iroquois, not only by taking instruction from competent teachers but, also, by taking up their residence among the Indians for months at a time. Their work, directed by an intense and wise devotion, extended over a



# NORTHAMPTON COUNTY



MORAVIAN CEMETERY, BETHLEHEM

and road



MORAVIAN CEMETERY, BETHLEHEM





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

wide field of operations. Necessities proceeding from the conditions of the time and the habits of the natives determined that their missionary careers should be largely a succession of missionary journeys. In many respects the constant enforced wanderings were a hindrance to their work. Yet frequent removal of the mission stations from place to place and the journeys incident thereto served to spread the knowledge of the Gospel over a vast stretch of territory and among many tribes. The missionaries travelled through Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, Pennsylvania, Ohio and entered Michigan and Canada. They brought the Gospel to the Mohicans and Wampanoags, to the Nanticokes and Shawanese, to the Chippewas, Ottawas and Wyandots, to the Unamis, Unalachtgos and Monseys of the Delaware race; to the Onondagas, Cayugas and Senecas of the Six Nations, and those who heard often carried the message of the truth into regions where the missionary never appeared. These journeys acquire additional significance when it is remembered that they represent the missionaries' resolute faithfulness to the remnant of a people often cruelly and heartlessly driven from one locality to another.

These missionaries were not attracted to the Indians by any romantic notions about the character and traits of these men of the woods. They learned to know them, if ever men did. In their diaries and accounts of the Indians, their country, manners and customs, they denounce their cowardice, treachery, licentiousness and indolence, in all but unmeasured terms, even as they do full justice to their few redeeming qualities. Yet they loved them. They spent their lives in the effort to do them good.

Among the most illustrious features of their work were the Christian Indian communities they established. Against all odds, they established a number of such, which enjoyed a degree of permanence. These were the wonder of all who saw them. They proved beyond shadow of a doubt how much could be accomplished by a practical application of Christianity to savage life. They were not aggregations of hunting lodges, they were agricultural colonies. The chase was not neglected, but played a subordinate part. These settlements, moreover, were governed by a published set of laws. They proved that under the matchless power of the Gospel even the Indian could be constrained to exchange his wild habits and unsettled ways for peaceable life and regular duty, to give up un-



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

restrained and arbitrarily used liberty in order to submit to municipal enactments that secured the greatest good to the greatest number.

The missionaries were successful, too, in the character of the native helpers whom they raised up. And thus their missionary work sustains one of the severest tests applied in estimating the real value and advance of such effort. Only that great day, when "every man's work shall be made manifest," will reveal how many precious souls were led out of darkness into light through the ministry of these intrepid missionaries and that of the faithful men trained by them to be spiritual leaders of their fellows.

Another department of activity instituted was school work for neglected children. In 1739, Spangenberg had written to Count Zinzendorf in Europe that the educational needs of the colony of Pennsylvania were very great. It was the day of beginnings. The whole region was sparsely settled by whites. In most parts of it they were battling with the wilderness. The "Log College on the Neshaminy" to the south had reached only its teens. In Spangenberg's language there was "almost no one who made the youth his concern."

For several reasons this point of the pioneer's report met with a sympathetic response. Moravians were the conservators of traditions that connected them with the Ancient Unitas Fratrum, or Moravian Church, and the labors of Comenius, at this time dead about seventy years, who was a pioneer in advocating the equal education of the sexes, the system of object teaching, the necessity of physical training and the importance of aiming to develop the whole human being. It is not possible to affirm that when George Neisser took his stand behind the desk, in 1742, in Bethlehem, and other Moravians at about the same time began their instructions elsewhere, they had a complete apprehension of the Comenian principles. But we cannot peruse the manuscripts left by the first Bethlehem school teacher and avoid the conviction that in him and in others vital traditions of what was best in the church of the forefathers survived. Moreover, Moravians were forcefully affected by the influence of what was best in European education. Men from Halle, Wittenberg and Leipzig had identified themselves with the Moravians. They knew the value of liberal culture. They stimulated Moravian traditions, so that Moravians founded schools wher-



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

ever they went, in Germany, Switzerland, Holland, Denmark, Britain and Ireland.

Naturally, therefore, Moravians in America included educational effort in their plans. Their special zeal and capacity for the training of the young blossomed out in schools of various kinds, particularly in Pennsylvania, where the provincial authorities during the first three-quarters of the eighteenth century did next to nothing for the cause of general education, and, in consequence, various denominations established elementary schools. In 1742, the daughter of Zinzendorf inaugurated a school for girls in Germantown. After sundry migrations this school has been located in Bethlehem since 1749. A school for boys was founded at Nazareth in 1743, but was, two years later, transferred to Frederickstown, now Montgomery county, Pennsylvania. During the next three years schools were established at Oley, near Reading, at Maguntschi, now Emaus, at Germantown, at Lancaster, at Heidelberg, at Tulpehocken, at York, at Lebanon, at Muddy Creek, near Reamstown, Lancaster county, at Milton Grove, Lancaster county, at Muehlbach and most likely elsewhere; for it was an essential feature of the policy of Zinzendorf and Spangenberg to organize schools wherever they established a congregation or posted a preaching station. These were schools of various grades. Unfortunately, circumstances hindered the permanence of most of them.\*

When Braddock's defeat opened the flood-gates and a turbulent stream of savagery poured into the back country, beyond the Blue Mountains, hundreds of refugees from desolated homes were received in the incipient towns. Schools ceased in the open country. Thus Moravian educational effort was driven back upon itself and, apart from the parochial and boarding schools in the settlements, Moravian schools here came to an end. As the savage raids of this time were succeeded by other disturbances, notably Pontiac's conspiracy, and the premonitory thunders of the life and death struggle of the colonies rumbled in the distance, these schools were not opened again.

1075-1080. Not till 1746-1747 did the first schools and

---

\*It is interesting to note that in November, 1746, a school was opened in the "Great Swamp" for boys who had learned bad habits and whom it was not desirable to have with those in the other institutions. It was a kind of reform school. Its maintenance in the "Great Swamp" being encumbered with difficulties, it was transferred, in 1747, to the Ysselstein farm-house, south of the Lehigh at Bethlehem. It was the first school in what is now Bethlehem, South Side. It continued but a short time.





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

In subjecting to scrutiny the curricula of these early schools, it should be remembered that text-books were rare. The accessories of the modern school room were mainly wanting. Nevertheless, in some of them special attention was paid to English, French and German. Mathematics, astronomy and history find their places beside the more elementary branches. At Nazareth, Latin and Greek were read. Instrumental and vocal music and drawing contributed pleasant accomplishments. The Bethlehem spinning, needle-work and embroidery were famous, fitting young women for life. It is of more than ordinary interest that the Boys' School in the Brethren's House, at Lititz, furnished opportunity for the learning of various trades, and thus for the time and the place the question of industrial training was solved. Unobtrusively in all these schools, and, in a way free from sectarian bias, religion was imparted as a matter of course. In the light of modern educational development, defects and crudities will be discovered, but here were the essentials of a liberal education.

A word is in order concerning the mission schools among the Indians. Wherever the Moravians obtained a foothold among the Indians, with a prospect of doing good, they built a school-house and opened a school. During the short time they were in Georgia, they had in operation a school for the children of the Creek Indians. At Bethlehem and Nazareth schools for Indian children were opened at an early time. Wherever it was possible in the Indian country, within and beyond the bounds of the Pennsylvania colony, church and school were established. Among the principal stations thus established were Meniolagomeka, in Monroe county, Shamokin, now Sunbury, Wyoming, near Wilkes-Barre, Schechschiquannink, Bradford county, Goschgoschuenk, Venango county, the several places successively named Gnadenhuetten, in Pennsylvania and Ohio, Friedenshuetten, on the Susquehanna, Lawunnakhannok, in Venango county, and Friedensstadt, in Lawrence county. Not until one hundred and thirty years after these and other schools had been established by the Moravians, not till hundreds of tribes and hundreds of thousands of men, women and children had been swept from the face of the earth, did the United States learn the lesson taught by these and other missionaries in their efforts to civilize the Indians. Wickersham, in his "History of Education in Pennsylvania," pays the Moravian mission schools this tribute: "Even





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

Carlisle and Hampton, with all their merit, have less to recommend them as schools for Indians than had the old Moravian towns of Gnadenhuetten, Friedenshuetten and Friedensstadt."

Educational conceptions and methods exemplified by these early Moravian schools were, mainly, that the personality of the teacher counted for much in securing the results of training; that education was regarded not as something to be sought for its own sake, but as a means to greater perfection of character; that it was understood that education should render the youth thoroughly at home in the world, to the end that recognizing opportunities they should best serve their age; that a liberal education must be a Christian education.

Little did the fathers of one hundred and seventy years ago, with all their faith, comprehend the abundant harvests of all these years enfolded in the seeds they cast into the soil of the wilderness. When in their log cabins they introduced children to the fundamentals of knowledge or led young men and women of rustic habit forward into the beauties of classical literature and the practical demonstrations of science, a cloud covered from their vision the development which in five generations should not only contribute much to fill the region of their self-denial with the fruits of culture, but from that very region, too, send forth the abundant offerings of learning, science and refinement, in hallowed union with religion, across the continent and to the ends of the earth.

*The Moravian Seminary and College for Women.*—This institution, as far as known, is the oldest boarding-school for girls and young ladies in the country. It is conspicuously located in the heart of the city of Bethlehem, Northampton county, Pennsylvania. Among all the historic sights of that community none are more rich in legendary and historic associations than the imposing buildings in their spacious and picturesque campus of eight acres, which constitute the home of this institution.

In unbroken continuity, this institution traces its history back to 1742. At a conference of leaders of various religious persuasions, held in Philadelphia in that year, school work for the hosts of neglected children of the colony was projected. As one result of the deliberations a school was opened on May 4th by the Countess Benigna Zinzendorf, daughter of Count Zinzendorf, of Saxony, with



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

suitable assistants, in the "Ashmead House," Germantown. Twenty-five girls were in attendance. On June 28th, the school was transferred to Bethlehem and assigned quarters in the Community House, the school being a boarding school from the beginning. On October of the following year room was provided for it in the new eastern wing of the Community House, then completed. Removing to the huge stone building in Nazareth, known as the "Whitefield House," May 23, 1745, it was conducted there for a period of three and one-half years. On January 6, 1749, the school was again transferred to Bethlehem, where pupils and teachers "were welcomed with agreeable music" to the stone building, on the north side of the Church street quadrangle, thenceforth known as "the Old Seminary" or "the Bell House." Here the school remained for forty-one years, doing its laudable work. It was not stopped by the threatening events of the French and Indian war, when the town had to be surrounded by a stockade fort. It continued its usefulness during the Revolutionary War, when generals and soldiers came and went, and while the old Colonial Hall—as the building, destined in the event to be home of the school, came to be known—was a crowded military hospital. During most of this period, the chief function of the school was the education and training of daughters of Moravians, laymen and clergymen who, because of the responsibilities they had assumed in the work of the church, were incapacitated for care of their offspring. Accordingly, outstanding characteristics in the school's activities were parental discipline, thorough instruction in useful knowledge, and scrupulous attention to religious culture. In course of the Revolutionary War, the public and men of influence had the opportunity of studying Moravian life and character and of acquainting themselves from personal observation with Moravian institutions, theretofore both misunderstood and misrepresented. Moravians were recognized to be conscientious and capable educators of the youth and they were soon sought to do service in that capacity in a new and wider sphere. Hence, on October 2, 1785, this school, reorganized, was opened in the interest of the American public as a Boarding School for Girls, under the auspices of the Moravian Church. From this time onward regularly appointed principals administered the affairs of the institution, the first to be established in this office being the Rev. Andrew Huebner, then settled in the ministry at Bethlehem, who assumed the duties of principal along with those of his pastorate.



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

The steadily increasing number of pupils called for more ample accommodations than "the Old Seminary" afforded. A commodious structure was erected to the rear of the Community House, on the site of the present imposing main building of the Moravian Preparatory School, and was festively entered on April 12, 1791. For twenty-four years this was the home of the school. By the end of that time, the enrolment had increased to one hundred and thirty-two. Once more the institution moved to more commodious quarters, taking possession November 10, 1815, of Colonial Hall. In this structure, marked by a bronze tablet reciting the part it played as a military hospital during the Revolutionary War, and the added buildings, the school has remained more than a hundred years. Thirty-two years after the institution had taken possession of Colonial Hall, an addition to the south-east end of the hall was erected, and in 1854 Main Hall was built. By 1859 the growing institution made necessary the erection of West Hall. A decade later the building now containing chapel and refectory was added. South Hall was built in 1875. The latest additions to the growing pile of buildings have been the gymnasium, built in 1908, and East Hall, acquired in 1914.

Though venerable and rich in historic and romantic associations, the school plant is in no sense antiquated. The interior of the buildings presents all the features of a thoroughly modern institution, equipped and furnished in every part to meet the demands of the present day. Yet, while fitted with all the latest improvements and modern educational apparatus, this school has "a certain uninstitutional coziness, an unconventional comfortableness, freedom and cheerfulness, that are unusual in schools," and yet are essential elements in the life of the school.

Commensurate with external growth and improvement have been the elevating of the standard of instruction and the development of the curriculum. In later years the scholastic work of the institution has been mapped out and articulated in conformity with generally recognized standards. A Preparatory Department provides instruction corresponding to that of the grade schools. The High School Department, accredited by the Bureau of Professional Education of Pennsylvania, offers courses equal in extent to those of a modern city high school. The College Department, recognized June 17, 1912, by the United States Bureau of Education of Washington,





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

D. C., as an accepted College for Women, and a year later accredited by the College and University Council of the State of Pennsylvania, offers complete four year courses in arts, science, philosophy and education, leading to the degree of B. A. or B. S. Work in certain branches of these courses, designed to meet the demands for a broad and liberal culture, is required. Beyond these branches of study the student may exercise the elective privilege. In addition, the several departments of the institution offer opportunity for courses in music, vocal and instrumental, fine art and domestic science. Of late the venerable institution has extended its sphere of usefulness by offering extension courses. By reason of these developments in its activities, the character and scope of the institution were not properly designated by the name honorably borne for so many years. Accordingly, by order of the court, in May, 1913, the name was changed to "The Moravian Seminary and College for Women."

Proprietorship of the institution is legally vested in a board of trustees, elected by the Synod of the Moravian Church. In the management of the school and in the administration of its estates and properties, the men composing this board from time to time have exercised their powers with wisdom and discretion. Within recent years, the trustees have co-operated with the president of the institution and the alumnae association in the effort to build up an endowment fund. Gratifying progress has been made in this direction.

Since 1785, nineteen men have in succession presided over the institution in the office of principal, latterly designated as that of president. All of them have been ordained ministers of the Moravian Church. The record of them all has been that of faithfulness to duty. Certain of them were eminent scholars, holding membership in the Academy of Natural Sciences, the American Philosophical Society, or kindred organizations. The Rev. J. H. Clewell, Ph. D., is at the present time the president of the institution. For a decade he has administered its affairs with ability and success.

Associated with these men has been a long line of devoted and capable teachers. Besides instructing their pupils, they have kept them under constant supervision. The pupils according to age or congeniality are divided into "room companies," of from twelve to fifteen. Two of the teachers share the responsibility of supervision



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

for each company, being with their charges in leisure hours as well as in the hours assigned for preparatory study. Thus the Christian family idea is extended through the entire institution, fostering in the pupils those graces that enter into the development of true womanly character. This household or home arrangement is the result of generations of study and has elicited much favorable comment from educators as well as patrons.

In course of the century and three quarters, about ten thousand students, representing most of the States and several foreign countries, have been enrolled. The list of students last year, in all departments and special courses, totaled two hundred and thirty. Many of the students have been descendants of famous families. A niece of George Washington entered, upon his recommendation, in 1796. Further reference to the register of the early years brings to light such well known names as Sumpter, Huger, Alston, Bayard, Elmendorf, Hiester, Morton, Addison, Butler, Reddick, Coleman, Sergeant, Bleecker, Lansing, Livingston, Vander Heyden, Roosevelt, and others. Many of the graduates have taken their places in the long line of distinguished women of the land, either as worthy members of some profession or as mothers or wives of statesmen, soldiers, philanthropists, of men famous on land or sea. Of the vast majority of graduates, concerning whom there is any knowledge, the school may be justly proud. Undergraduate activities have led to the formation of various associations, religious, literary, dramatic, musical, athletic, and have found a medium for the expression of undergraduate sentiment in "The Mirror," which for several decades as a student publication has faithfully reflected the life of the institution.

As is the case with other Moravian institutions of learning, the Moravian Seminary and College for Women is committed to the principle that a liberal education must be a Christian education. Unobtrusively and in a way free from sectarian bias, religious instruction is imparted. The religious atmosphere is not of a strictly denominational type. It consists chiefly in the influence thrown about the pupils and the general direction given their activities outside of class-room instruction proper. The discipline of religion is perpetuated in the educational system as dominating the will, warming the heart, clarifying conscience, purifying motives,



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

strengthening character, furnishing self-mastery, and seating hope upon life's throne.\*

*The Moravian College and Theological Seminary*—The Moravian College and Theological Seminary is situated in Bethlehem, Northampton county, Pennsylvania, having an admirable site on College Hill, in the north-western section of the city. This institution enjoys the distinction of being one of the oldest divinity schools in America.

Of the first importance are the facts concerning the founding of this institution. Purely local circumstances had little influence in its origin. The Moravian College and Theological Seminary represents the cooperation of causes extending in their area from Pennsylvania, New Jersey and New York to North Carolina. It sprang from the devotion of Moravians in America to their church, at the time engaged in wide and varied activity in eight of the States of this country. From 1735, when the Moravian Church first began its missionary and educational work in America, onward, the leaders in this activity had been men of European birth and training, many of them graduates of the leading universities, especially Jena and Tuebingen, others of the Seminary the Moravian Church had established in Germany. When difficulty of communication and risk of travel, incident to the Napoleonic Wars, rendered the importation of ministers no longer feasible, the establishment of a Moravian divinity school became desirable, especially since young men born in America were desirous of entering the Moravian ministry. Such an enterprise was advocated, particularly, by the Rev. Jacob Van Vleck while principal of the boys' school known as Nazareth Hall, Nazareth, Pennsylvania, and by the Rev. Christian Lewis Benzien, stationed at Salem, North Carolina. A memorial from the latter brought the matter before a conference of Moravian ministers, convened at Bethlehem, in the year 1802, its thirty-six members representing work of the Church in five States. The project met with favor. Execution of the plan was, however, deferred until 1807, when a general scheme and curriculum were elaborated. The first professors appointed were Ernst Lewis Hazelius and John Christian Bechler, the most gifted and best trained men available. These men with three students, William Henry Van Vleck, Samuel Reinke,

\*Reference—"A History of the Rise, Progress and Present Condition of the Moravian Seminary for Young Ladies, at Bethlehem, Pa.," William C. Reichel, J. P. Lipincott & Co., Philadelphia, Pa., 1870.





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

and Peter Wollé, all of whom afterward became honored Bishops in the Moravian Church, began their work on October 2, 1807, in one of the buildings of Nazareth Hall. That was the beginning of the Moravian Theological Seminary. A second class was formed in 1810. There being no candidates for the ministry in the following years, the institution was temporarily closed. In 1820 it was reopened, since which date the work of the institution has been uninterrupted.

Manifestly, the religious motive furnished the chief incentive to the founding of the institution. It did not, however, act entirely apart from the human, the other of the two motives that have proved of the largest influence in the cause of higher education. The founding of this institution occurred in the period when the educational institutions of our land were greatly multiplied. Prior to the War of Independence but nine institutions of higher learning had been established in the country. In the decades that followed the signing of peace, growth of the collegiate interest was quite as remarkable as the development of industrial and social forces, and inspired individual States and denominations to found and endow their own institutions of higher learning. By this reviving national spirit the leaders of the Moravian Church were stirred. For their special zeal and capacity for the education of the young had blossomed out in schools of various kinds, particularly in Pennsylvania, where the Provincial authorities during the first three-quarters of the eighteenth century had done next to nothing for the cause of general education and, in consequence, various denominations had established elementary schools. Indeed, one of the arguments brought forward at the conference of ministers, in 1802, in favor of establishing the proposed institution, was that out of it the ministers of the town and country congregations might secure proper assistants for their school work. Originally, therefore, the institution bore, in some respects, the character of a normal school as well as that of a theological seminary. When in addition to this it is remembered that in a Moravian scheme of education it has generally been held that professional study should be entered by the avenue of the liberal studies, and that the Moravian Church has from the beginning recognized the importance of a thoroughly trained ministry, it can be readily understood that the need of a theological seminary should have created the need of a college. Prior to 1858,





## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

the Moravian College did not exist as such, except as a classical department preparatory to the study of theology, begun in 1823. In 1858, by determination of Provincial Synod, the work of this preparatory department was expanded into that of a full collegiate course and the institution was reorganized under the name and character of the Moravian College and Theological Seminary. Under this title it was incorporated on April 3, 1863, by an act of the Legislature of Pennsylvania, approved by Governor A. G. Curtin, and its board of trustees was, at the same time, invested with the legal rights belonging to such bodies.

The general scheme and curriculum of the early years show that the classical tradition was accepted as among the most precious forces the past can offer for the training of the present. Enlargement of the general field of knowledge, through the years, has consistently resulted in the enrichment of the course of study. New disciplines have been recognized, and new facts discovered have been admitted as they have affected the character and scope of work here done. Grown out of these principles, the Classical, Latin-Scientific and General Science courses offered in the college, leading to the degree of B. A. or B. S., are designed to meet the demands of a broad and liberal culture. Their purpose is to prepare young men for intelligent and successful activity in professional, business or industrial life. Work in certain subjects, regarded as essential preliminaries for all professional study—such as languages, ancient and modern, literature, physics, chemistry, psychology and economics—is required of every student. Beyond these branches of study, the student may exercise elective privilege. He is thus enabled to choose his work with reference to the ultimate aims he has in view, and may, in some cases, reduce by a year or more the length of his professional course.

The course of study in the Theological Seminary does not differ materially from that offered by other divinity schools. Here the Bible is the chief text-book, the doctrine of the crucified and risen Lord the central doctrine, and the principle of the fathers, "In essentials unity, in non-essentials liberty, in all things charity," controls.

The first purpose of the institution has been and remains the training of men for the ministry of the Moravian Church. Ever cherishing this, adapting itself with care to new conditions and prob-



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

lems, as well as to the ever enlarging domain of knowledge and the results of reverent and patient inquiry, this institution has provided the Church with a succession of energetic and exemplary ministers, who have worthily filled their places in the long line of illustrious and faithful leaders of the Moravian Church that reaches through more than four and a half centuries of honored history. As the human motive cooperated with the religious in the establishment of the institution, it is noteworthy that a considerable number of graduates of the college department have pushed to the front in professions other than the ministry, and some have won distinction as able and diligent workers for God and fellow-man.

In laying the foundations of educational institutions and maintaining them, it generally happens that vigorous personalities emerge. They give force and direction to plans and purposes. An interesting figure is that of the first head professor of the institution, Ernst Lewis Hazelius. Descended from a long line of Lutheran ministers, reaching as far back as the Swedish king, Gustavus Vasa, whom one of his ancestors served as chaplain, his parents had become connected with the Moravian Church. Trained in the institutions of that church, he was by nature and by grace eminently fitted to preside over the newly established seminary at Nazareth. Unfortunate differences with some of his brethren regarding church government and discipline induced him, after some years, to sever his connection with the church and the seminary. Subsequently he became an honored professor, successively, in Hartwick Seminary, New York, Gettysburg Seminary, Pennsylvania, and Lexington Seminary, North Carolina. He was one of those men who, thoroughly trained in the biblical religion of the Moravians, went forth to labor in important fields to overcome unbelief, to purify and strengthen the church. His successors were representative types of the Moravian ministry of their day and generation. They guarded the interests of the oft-times struggling institution with wisdom and fidelity. Conspicuous among them were the Rev. L. F. Kampmann, the first to be designated as "President" of the institution, a man of ripe experience and fine spirits; the Rt. Rev. Edmund deSchweinitz, S. T. D., a noted historian and mighty leader of the church; the Rev. A. Schultze, D. D., L. H. D., an inspiring teacher, whose appreciation of educational values was sound. The present head of the institution is the Rt. Rev. J. Taylor Hamilton, D. D., formerly



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

a scholarly professor and for some years clothed with high executive authority in the church. The professors have been men of high purpose and scholarly attainment. In the board of trustees there have been many men of vigorous personality and varied experience, who have supervised the pecuniary concerns of the institution with success.

More or less directly under the influence of these men have come the more than seven hundred students who, since 1807, have here pursued their studies for a shorter or longer period. The number of students in attendance last year was seventy-four. Review of the records of these men subsequent to their leaving the institution makes it clear that the Moravian College and Theological Seminary has, in the main, been fortunate in attracting young men of serious purpose. Undergraduate activities have blossomed out into religious, literary, musical and athletic associations. Undergraduate sentiment has secured a medium of expression in "The Comenian," which, during an honorable career of twenty-eight years, has made its way among student publications.

Endowment of the institution was practically begun through the legacy of Godfrey Haga. Coming to this country as a Redemptorist, in 1766, Haga, at first, itinerated as a tailor in the territory now included within Bucks and Lehigh counties, Pennsylvania. At about the time of the conclusion of the War of Independence he began business in Philadelphia, later engaging in foreign trade. He greatly prospered and, in 1814, retired a wealthy man and prominent citizen, honored with public trusts and, eventually, with a seat in the Pennsylvania Legislature. He was a member of the Moravian Church in Philadelphia. Having no direct heirs, he constituted the Society for Propagating the Gospel, a Moravian organization, and the oldest denominational missionary association in the country, his residuary legatee, twenty thousand dollars of the sum bequeathed to this association to be devoted to the training of candidates for the ministry. The endowment thus created in 1825 has since been increased by other benefactors, the largest legacies being those of Mrs. Eliza Richardson Yoder, of Bethlehem, and of Albert Ebermann, of Lancaster. The endowment fund of the institution now amounts to \$125,207, and the special endowments, including real estate and buildings, total \$106,794.

Considerable interest attaches to the home of the institution. For

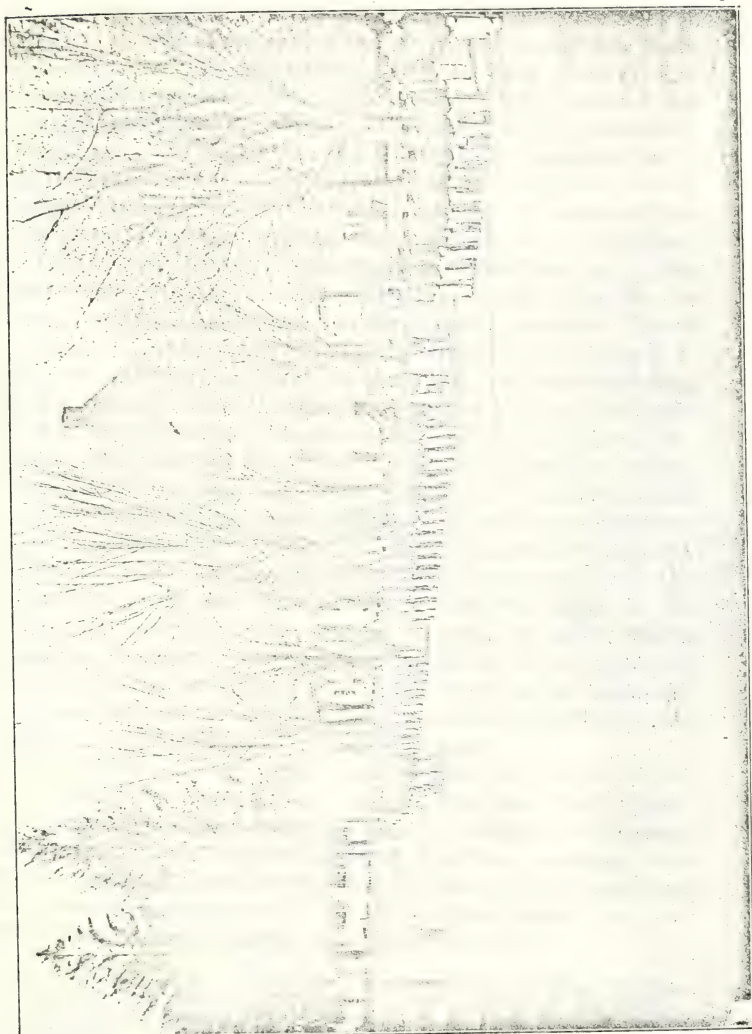






# THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAM

re it led a somewhat ungr



NAZARETH HALL, BATTALION PARADE

Founded 1743



## THE MORAVIANS IN NORTHAMPTON COUNTY

50 years it led a somewhat migratory existence. Its first home was in Nazareth Hall. In 1838 it was transferred to Bethlehem, finding its home on the north side of Broad Street, a little to the west of New Street. In 1851 it was moved back to Nazareth, its home there being the historic Whitefield House. For the brief interval of a little more than one year, 1855-56, the theological class attended lectures in Philadelphia. In 1858, by order of synod, the institution was finally settled in Bethlehem and located in a remodeled building, on the south side of Church Street, a little to the east of New Street, theretofore known as Nisky Hill Seminary. In course of time the College and Seminary outgrew the arrangements of this structure. Then the erection of the stately group of buildings on College Hill was begun. In 1892 Comenius Hall, a massive structure in Romanesque style, the refectory and the resident professors' house were occupied. A year later, the Helen Stadiger Borhek Memorial Chapel, also patterned on the ideals of nobility and impressiveness of the Romanesque forms, the munificent gift of Mr. and Mrs. Ashton C. Borhek, of Bethlehem, was added. In 1908, the Harvey Memorial Library, generous gift of the late Cennick Harvey, an alumnus of the institution, and his brother Charles E. W. Harvey, was completed. By assuming certain necessary obligations accompanying the gift of the library building, the Alumni Association assures the endowment of the library. Architecturally in harmony with the other buildings, this structure secures a dignified home to the library, now numbering 15,000 volumes. In 1912, the united efforts of students and alumni brought to the institution a well equipped gymnasium. As a memorial to the soldier and sailor members of the Moravian Church who rendered the supreme sacrifice during the European War, a Science Hall is to be erected.

On the outbreak of the World War, students and alumni of the institution began to volunteer. A unit of the Students' Army Training Corps was established here. Eventually, students and alumni to the number of one hundred and twenty-seven, including four regularly appointed chaplains in either the army or the navy, had entered army or naval service. In addition three alumni were engaged in Young Men's Christian Association war work.\*

\*References—"Souvenir of the Centennial Celebration, Moravian College and Theological Seminary," Times Publ. Co., Bethlehem, Pa., 1907. "History of the Moravian College and Theological Seminary," W. N. Schwarze, Ph. D., Times Publ. Co., Bethlehem, Pa., 1910.



## Honest Jenny Lind

By CHARLES A. INGRAHAM, CAMBRIDGE, N. Y.



URING Jenny Lind's stay in this country in 1850-52, she became acquainted with Mr. Nathaniel P. Willis, the popular prose writer and poet, and a man of thorough culture, who in several visits to Europe had mingled in the most exclusive society of its capitals. While the Swedish singer was in New York he saw much of her, and came to enjoy the favor of her friendship, a boon which he acknowledged by publishing her biography in 1851. Though Willis was an author who aimed generally at merely light and superficial effects, he became deeply impressed not only with Miss Lind's vocal accomplishments, but particularly with the originality and brightness of her intellect and the noble sincerity of her character. She stirred to life within him the deeper and better springs of his nature, and in his book may be read what are perhaps the most discerning, illuminating and satisfying estimations that have been written of the mind and character of this gifted artist. He says: "After once having seen her, the worst man's heart, we sincerely believe, drops to its knees on hearing but the whisper of her name. . . . Through the angel of rapt music, as through the giver of queenly bounties, is seen honest Jenny Lind."

It has seemed to me, as I have studied the life of Jenny Lind, that this word "honest" most happily characterizes the underlying foundation of her wonderful career. Through the years of her preparation, from a child of nine, she was a diligent student of singing and acting, ever striving to attain to her ideal and surmounting with admirable courage every obstacle, until she stood at the head of her profession. And though the things she dealt with were imaginary and artificial, she maintained in the glare of fame and in the midst of adulations such as few have ever received, a beautiful simplicity and sincerity of character, and a soul rich in goodness and abounding charity. She despised sham and pretense, cared not for



# HONEST JENNY LIND

III  
110

and

in her songs there breath

187 210



11011





## HONEST JENNY LIND

the superficial and transitory street demonstrations, but preferred the quiet of seclusion, and the few tried ones from whom she might derive sympathy and strength. She made a wonderful name for herself, but she honestly earned it by years of toil and by labors that were never remitted. Every performance was prepared for with anxious care; on every occasion she gave the best that she had; and, better than all, she threw into her work her own sincere and unique individuality, so that in her songs there breathed out over the silent multitude something strangely moving, and which listeners never forgot.

It was because she was honest that she abandoned the stage in the zenith of her fame and with wealth flowing abundantly into her coffers; for she heard the call of her womanly heart, of the home and the domestic side of her nature, and though she did not consider the stage unworthy of her, she felt that, with all its fever of excitement and nights of fiction, it was dragging her away from nature and nature's God. She forfeited much—the magnificence, the romance, the golden store and the glorious applause—but she gained the peace she had so long coveted, and the quiet fireside of home, and the independent life. Though the art world was disappointed and in some instances censorious because of her decision, the people realized the worthiness of it, and accorded her their unlimited love and honor; and, while she sang no more in the great operas, the lullabies for her children were perhaps a more soul-satisfying employment, and their cooing voices sweeter than any applause of thousands. She had been honest with herself, and honesty had its reward.

The life-story of Jenny Lind is one of the most fascinating in the literature of biography. She was born in Stockholm, Sweden, October 6, 1820. Her father, Niclas Jonas Lind, was a man of amiable disposition, fond of music of a popular and convivial nature, and derived a moderate income from the teaching of languages and service as an accountant. Her mother was a woman of decision of character, who aided in the support of the family by keeping a day-school for girls. Niclas Lind was but twenty-two years of age when Jenny was born to him, which in a measure, perhaps, accounts for the straits into which his family came, Jenny being sent while a babe to be cared for by a family located fifteen miles out of town, where she remained for three years. It is said that at the age of



twenty months she was able to sing the airs of songs of Sweden. Though her remembrance of this experience in the country must have been very faint, she throughout her career was fond of pastoral life and rural people, particularly delighting in birds, to which she would listen for hours and observe attentively. In her mature years she said: "I sing after no one's method—only as far as I am able, after that of the birds; for their Master was the only one who came up to my demands for truth, clearness and expression." Apropos of her love of birds: In the summer of 1851, Jenny having sung in Utica, New York, improved the opportunity of visiting Trenton Falls, not many miles from the city, and then a famed place of resort. The following episode of the trip is given by George William Curtis, he having heard it from a boy who rode with the driver:

"As we came back, we passed a little wood, and Jenny Lind stopped the carriage and stepped out with the rest of the party and went into the wood. It was toward sunset, and the wood was beautiful. She walked about a little and picked up flowers, and sang like to herself, as if it were pleasant. By-and-by she sat down upon a rock and began to sing aloud. But before she stopped, a little bird came and sat upon a bough close by us. And when Jenny Lind had done, he began to sing and shout away like she did. While he was singing, she looked delighted, and when he stopped she sang again, and oh! it was beautiful, sir. But the little bird wouldn't give it up, and he sang again, but not until she had done. Then Jenny Lind sang as well as ever she could. Her voice seemed to fill the woods all up with music, and, when it was over, the little bird was still awhile, but tried it again in a few moments. He couldn't do it, sir. He sang very bad, and then the foreign gentlemen with Jenny laughed, and they all came back to the carriage."

To her dying day she was a lover of birds, whose songs she strove to equal, and to whom, perhaps, was due her famous "shake," and the compass and facility of her glorious voice, which made her known throughout Europe and America as "The Swedish Nightingale." The lark was her emblem, and his image was carved over the door of her home.

At three years of age, Jenny astonished her family by drumming out on the piano the fanfare that she had heard from the military bugler in the street, and at nine her vocal abilities led to her being accepted as a pupil in the school of music connected with the Royal



## HONEST JENNY LIND

Theater of Stockholm. The Linds were Lutherans, and, though in needy circumstances, had scruples about granting their child to the care of the theater, which in effect dedicated her to a life on the boards; but when mother and daughter were ascending the broad steps of the playhouse, and the former hesitated and seemed ready to turn back, Jenny tugged at her hand and led her on. Her trial proving satisfactory, she was accepted by the director of the theater, who agreed to instruct her in singing and acting, provide for her maintenance and equip her with a liberal education, she to make her home with her parents. The years of her childhood were not happy, owing to the irregularity of the domestic fortunes of her parents; she was much alone, left to entertain herself as best she could, employing the long hours in singing, a diversion she practiced at "every step." Indeed, it was while she was singing beautifully to her cat that she attracted the attention of a maid employed by a dancer in the theater—an humble beginning that led to her introduction to that institution and to all her future career.

She was ever a diligent student, and so faithful was she now that she made good advancement in voice culture and dramatic art, piano, French, drawing, etc., and became eventually well educated and accomplished, particularly proficient on the piano, which skill in after years was admired when she would frequently sing in private recitals, playing her own accompaniments. At the age of seventeen, having appeared many times since her tenth year on the stage and in private apartments, gaining considerable recognition, she was assigned the role of *Alice* in the opera of "Robert de Normandie," in which character her singing won for her an increased admiration. On March 7th of the following year (1838) occurred one of the greatest events of her life, her appearance as *Agatha* in the opera "Freischutz," a character which had for some time deeply appealed to her, and to which she had devoted careful study, hoping that some time she might have the opportunity of representing it on the stage. It was revealed to her at the rehearsal that her rendering was effective for professional auditors, when the orchestra laid down their instruments and applauded her, but it remained for the open performance to show that she had become an artist of superior ability, for the audience accorded her an ovation. This was the first revelation that Jenny had experienced of the wonderful gifts which she possessed; to use her own expression, "I had found my





## HONEST JENNY LIND

power." "I arose in the morning," she said, "one creature, and I went to bed another." Stockholm, the people said, had never enjoyed such a demonstration of dramatic and lyric genius as had been given them by the girl that had been born and bred in their midst. Steadily advancing, at the age of twenty she was appointed court singer of the Royal Theater of Stockholm, and offered an engagement of three years at a stated salary; but feeling the promptings of genius for a yet higher attainment in her art, she resolved to decline the proposition and seek the instruction of Signor Garcia, of Paris, the vocal teacher of the century.

In order to obtain funds to defray the expense of a year's training, she made a concert tour, accompanied by her father, and with the proceeds went to Paris in the summer of 1841. On her first trial before the great maestro she failed pitifully, owing to the fatigue of her voice and the nervousness with which she was ever beset when venturing on important occasions. Her voice was lost, he told her with cruel frankness, and that it would be useless to attempt to do anything for her; but Jenny plead tearfully for another trial, and Signor Garcia, sympathizing with her grief and disappointment, consented to hear her again after a protracted rest for her voice. At the end of the specified time she came again and was accepted as a pupil. Though she had gained a national fame in Sweden, she was ignorant of the refined technicalities of her art which the maestro had to communicate, but during a course of lessons extending through a period of ten months, she acquired by diligent application all that he had to teach her. While in Paris she met Meyerbeer, who was pleased with her singing and remained her friend to aid her in the upward path she was taking to a higher distinction. Her friends in Paris considered the proposition that she should sing in the Grand Opera House of that city, and a trial was made of her powers in the vacant and unlighted auditorium, with Meyerbeer and a few others present; but though her performance, notwithstanding her nervous apprehension, was brilliant, it was deemed prudent, owing to the jealousy which her appearance would excite, to abandon the venture. She never sang publicly in Paris, although, after her European fame had been established, she had proposals from that capital, for the reason that she believed that her personality and singing, which appealed primarily to the better impulses and higher sentiments, would not be appreciated and sustained in that metropolis.



"The more I think of it," she says, "the more I am convinced that I am not for Paris, nor Paris for me."

She returned to Stockholm in August, 1842, where she appeared in a number of performances, and astonished the city with the improvement she had made. Her voice, which was a brilliant soprano, had developed power, clearness and sympathy, with a magnetic individuality which rendered it irresistible. Her compass was from B below the staff, to G on the fourth line above, a range of two and five-eighths octaves, and throughout these limits her voice control was perfect, the high notes being given in the same rich, full tones as those of the lower. By nature her voice was not flexible, but by incessant practice she achieved a phenomenal elasticity which was a marked feature of her artistic skill, being able to accomplish all transitions with ease and certainty. Every note was clear and precise, and every syllable, irrespective of what language she might be singing, was plainly enunciated, while her breathing had been so carefully trained that she was able to take brief and frequent inhalations unobserved by the audience, and to pour out melody with apparently no exertion. A rule that she had set for herself was to appear always of a pleasant countenance and to avoid contortions of the features, which precautions, together with her almost divinely transfigured features as they responded to the varying sentiments of her themes, constituted her a singer of unbounded popularity.

Copenhagen now invited her, and, though accepting with characteristic nervous dread, she charmed the people and won their hearts. While here she devoted herself for the first to that work of charity which ever after she cultivated, by giving a benefit performance in aid of unfortunate children. She was moved by the success of her effort, and exclaimed tearfully: "It is beautiful that I can sing so!" She appreciated the value of her gift and meditated upon it daily, considering that she should employ it well, as another day might not be granted for its beneficent exercise.

The rise of Jenny Lind from now on was phenomenal in its rapidity as she went from city to city, until her fame was heard in every part of Europe. Not only did she gain public renown, but individuals of all ranks of society, having met her, were warm in her commendation, while crowned heads and men and women of the highest distinction were proud to be numbered among her acquaintances and friends. Musical composers of the highest rank were loud in



her praise, and delighted to indite lyrical works for her rendering, Mendelssohn being particularly devoted to her as a woman of rare personality and as an artist of astonishing gifts. The two were mutually attracted through the harmony of their musical and aesthetic tastes, and would sit for hours conversing upon the topics in which they were so deeply interested. His death in 1847 fell as a heavy calamity on the sensitive soul of Jenny, and for the space of two years she was unable to sing his songs on account of the sorrow which that would overwhelm her when she would attempt to render them. He had been the most helpful and highly valued of her friends, and had said of her: "I have never in my life met so noble, so true and real an art nature, as Jenny Lind is. I have never found natural gifts, study and sympathetic warmth, united in such a degree; and, although one or other quality may have appeared more prominently in this or the other case, I do not believe that they have ever been so confound united in such potency. . . . There will not be born in a whole century another being so gifted as she."

In 1844, through Meyerbeer's influence, she was called to Berlin, and, after appearing for a time in secondary operatic roles, leapt suddenly into high favor by her rendering of the character of *Alice*, of Jeanin "Robert de Normandie," thus displacing the reigning prima donna, and singing leading parts from thence to the close of her engagement. Two years later she sang in Vienna, winning a signal triumph at her first appearance in "Norma," and was called before the curtain sixteen times, though the event had been preceded by three days of tortuous apprehension. This is one of the many indications which may be found along the path of her career, that in the midst of her dazzling success she never lost the simplicity and childlikeness of her original nature; and hence, the wanderings among strangers and the continual excitement and the toil of preparation had become a weariness, and she longed to escape from it all and dwell in peace. As early as the Berlin engagement, she had resolved to retire from the stage, and this purpose is several times expressed in her letters. She wrote on December 1, 1845: "I have the old homesickness all the same! And my only wish is to get into quietude away from the stage. And a year hence I go home, and remain at home, my friend! Ah! how I shall enjoy life! Ah! peace is the best that there is!"

The secret of this aversion to the stage may be found in the noble





## HONEST JENNY LIND

nature of this extraordinary woman, whose modesty was embarrassed by the professional aspects of a prima donna's career;—the *furore*, the flaunting publicity, and the merchandising of her art. She was greater than her singing, over which there ever presided and in which there ever mingled, a soul of uncommon intellectual gifts, of deep and fervent religious convictions, and all combined with a simple and childlike nature which no plaudits of renown were ever able to displace. Her songs were the beautiful pinions upon which the soul of Jenny Lind flew to the bosom of every listener, making there its nest, while the auditor felt struggling to life within him an angel which had never been known to exist.

In person she was beneath the average height; five feet three and one-half inches, with a slight, symmetrical frame, and finely molded hands and arms. Her features were plain, nose wide, with thin nostrils, blue "dove-like" eyes, pale complexion, and blonde hair. Her countenance is said to have been remarkably responsive to every shade of thought, taking on every changing emotion from mirth to grief, and assuming under the inspiration of her themes an almost supernatural beauty. The vocabulary has been wellnigh exhausted in attempts to portray the rare mobility of the countenance of Jenny Lind: "Delicious transformations;" "full of animation;" "ever-changing mirror of the soul;" "illumination from within;" "transfigured in singing, and her face shone as an angel's." Her nature was a strange blending of many elements, resulting in a unique and charming personality which alone constituted her a woman of uncommon attractiveness, and there were those who esteemed it a greater pleasure to see and hear her converse than to listen to her singing. Though of a happy disposition, she was acquainted with that undefined sense of sadness so frequent among those of gifted parts, and wrote: "When I am alone, you have no idea how different I am—so happy; and yet so melancholy that tears are rolling down my cheeks unceasingly."

Wherever she appeared in the cities of Europe, this quiet and retiring woman created enthusiasm through the sheer force of her admirable personality, reinforced by her artistic singing. The sedate English people proved no exception when she sang in London in 1847, the populace becoming almost ridiculous in the exhibition of their devotion; for, as some one has said, the Englishman likes to have his art manifested in flesh and blood, and that was





## HONEST JENNY LIND

peculiarly Jenny's forte; she exemplified the highest range of artistic excellence, and associated it at the same time with her lovable, unique and honest nature. They understood her from the hour she came upon the boards of the theater, and from the Queen to the common people, among whom her name became a household word, all cherished her more deeply than any other land she had known except her own country. In London she appeared eighty-one times, more than in any other city except Stockholm, and here occurred the great event of her life, her retirement from the stage, at the full tide of her fame, on May 10, 1849. England she made the home of her adoption; there she died, and there she was buried. She was called by the Germans, "The Priestess of Art;" but the English, and afterwards the American people, characterized her as "The Priestess of Nature." She responded gladly to the overtures of these two nations, while the religious consecration of England, contrasting so markedly with the continent, made a deep impression upon her and led her to the study of the English musical specialty, the oratorio, to the singing of which she had been encouraged by Mendelssohn.

Before turning for the time being from her English experiences, I would dwell a moment upon her private life in London for a period of two years, prior to her leaving the stage. She made her home during this time in a residence in the outskirts of the city, which she had leased furnished, and with the accessories of servants and coachman. Upon the family of the latter she bestowed much attention, caring for the baby and teaching the older children. While ladies of the nobility would have been delighted to enjoy her hospitality, she would be with the coachman's children in the hay-mow, which was her favorite resort, delighting herself with this humble employment, rather than in listening to empty words of praise and idle worship as a prima donna. While absent singing in the cities of the kingdom, she wrote daily letters to this family, which were expressed "with a tenderness of broken English which was as touching as it was curious," evidencing the lowly simplicity and the unaffected goodness of Jenny Lind. It was in a sense her home, and that word, in her wanderings and loneliness, had become precious, and it is significant of this state of mind that her encore was frequently, "Sweet Home."

Another interesting feature of this period was her engagement



in 1848 to Captain Claudius Harris, serving in the army of India. He followed her from city to city in her tours, and there was a strong attachment between the two. Jenny seems to have been delighted with the prospect, and said she desired to live quietly thereafter and "to be near trees, and water, and a cathedral. I am tired, body and soul; but my soul most!" But the engagement was abandoned on account of her refusal to agree to the proposition of Captain Harris to forego singing in public and to make him the custodian of her income. The decision was creditable to her, but the affair left a deep sadness upon her. She wrote: "It has passed over my soul like a beneficent storm which has broken down all the hard shell of my being, and has set free many dear plants to find their way to the dear sun! So that now I am always clothed in green, like the fairest hope! And I see quite clearly how infinitely much there is for me to do with my life; and I have only one prayer, that I may yet live long, and that in the evening of my life I may be able to show a pure soul to God."

Having been engaged by Mr. P. T. Barnum to give one hundred and fifty concerts in the United States at one thousand dollars an appearance, Jenny Lind arrived at New York on Sunday, September 1, 1850. America at that time was considered by Europe as decidedly provincial; art and music had been but little cultivated, while literature, led by Irving, Bryant and Cooper, was but beginning to attract foreign attention. The people, immersed in the tide of practical affairs incident to the development of a new country, were for the most part unacquainted with æsthetics, and, outside of musical and editorial circles, had scarcely heard of Jenny Lind. Mr. Barnum, however, had laid himself under obligations to the extent of \$187,500, deposited with London bankers and subject to the order of Miss Lind, though financiers of New York believed that he had involved himself in bankruptcy. But convinced by his keen discernment that Jenny's gift of song, with her nobility of character and munificent charities, would render her popular, Mr. Barnum inaugurated an elaborate and extended campaign of advertising, for which a long experience in the entertainment business had made him an expert. No foreign celebrity in the flush of fame had heretofore considered it worth while to appear before American audiences, a fact which operated to awaken interest in Jenny, who, in her democratic and generous spirit, had gladly embraced the opportunity



of coming among us, and had declared that the proceeds of the tour should be devoted to charitable purposes.

Her first appearance, at Castle Garden, New York, September 11, 1850, was a great artistic and financial success; the most notable musical event that has ever occurred in this country, and it marked the beginning here of Jenny's munificent gifts to charity. Her share of the net proceeds of the first New York concert, \$10,000, went to twelve of such institutions in that city, as also did her proportion of the second. When she was led to the foot-lights she beheld the largest audience before whom she had ever appeared;—five thousand refined and appreciative people, eager to behold and hear the famous prima donna who had won such distinction in Europe; but what was their astonishment to see before them, instead of the stately and elaborately appareled person whom they had imagined, merely a pleasant-faced Swedish young lady, clad in simple white, with a rose in her flaxen hair, and plainly agitated by the tremendous ovation that greeted her. "Casta Diva," a selection from the opera of "Norma," was her theme, and though the opening notes were somewhat unsteady, she soon recovered herself and poured forth such wonderful rendering that the audience were carried away with enthusiasm, and, ere the final passage had been completed, burst forth unrestrained and drowned out her closing notes in wild applause. Never has Castle Garden in its long and diversified career as Fort Clinton, auditorium, immigration station, and aquarium, its present use, sheltered in its old walls so interesting and famous an event as when Jenny Lind with her angelic voice breathed for the first time on the American people the highest excellence of song. The musical critic of "The Tribune" said: "The charm lay not in any point, but rather in the inspired vitality, the hearty, genuine outpouring of the whole—the real and yet truly ideal humanity of her singing. . . . We have never heard tones that in their sweetness went so far. They brought the most distant and ill-seated auditor close to her." Daniel Webster, who was sitting in the middle of the front row of the balcony, seems, however, not to have been much impressed and said, "Why doesn't she sing some of the mountain songs of her own land?" An usher, hearing the remark, carried the word behind the curtain, and Jenny responded with one of the native, wild songs with which she had been familiar from childhood. Mr. Webster was visibly affected, and when the great singer





## HONEST JENNY LIND

had acknowledged the applause, she bowed specially to him, upon which the grand old colossus of American oratory arose and returned the compliment with the grace and dignity which he alone could command.

Mr. Barnum has given in his autobiography an interesting account of his associations with Jenny Lind in New York, at his home in Bridgeport, Connecticut, and during the tour to Havana, and eastern and southern cities of the country, and has left on record more really illuminative incidents connected with her than I have found in all other sources. Her charities were on a grand scale;—benefit performances in many cities, and munificent gifts to associations and individuals; \$5,000 to a schoolmate living in Brooklyn, to whose home she drove on two different occasions. Called upon by a Swedish domestic, she entertained her a long time, took her to the concert and sent her home in a carriage; at New Orleans, learning that a blind boy had come many miles to hear her, his expenses having been defrayed by a subscription that the young flute player might have his desire, she invited him to her rooms, sang for him, accompanied him to her concerts, and shared with him the contents of her purse. Her manner was animated and cheerful and she was fond of a joke, when “her rich, musical voice would be heard ringing through the house.”

Mr. Barnum gives a dramatic description of her experience and triumph before her first Havana audience which, on account of the high prices for admission, hissed her as she came forward. Jenny, who as usual in first appearances was tremulous, immediately assumed a self-possessed and queenly attitude, and began singing in the most brilliant and beautiful manner of which she was capable, until the hostile house was lost in admiration and broke forth unanimously in splendid applause. Mr. Barnum says: “I cannot express what my feelings were as I watched this scene from the dress circle. Poor Jenny! I deeply sympathized with her when I heard that hiss. I, indeed, observed the resolute bearing which she assumed, but was apprehensive of the result. When I witnessed her triumph I could not restrain the tears of joy that rolled down my cheeks; and rushing through a private box, I reached the stage just as she was withdrawing after the fifth encore. ‘God bless you, Jenny, you have settled them!’ I exclaimed. ‘Are you satisfied?’ said she, throwing her arms around my neck. She, too,



## HONEST JENNY LIND

was crying with joy, and never before did she look so beautiful in my eyes as on that evening."

After the company returned from the South and were giving a series of concerts in New York City, certain meddlesome parties renewed their attempts to induce Miss Lind to endeavor to obtain from Mr. Barnum financial concessions, although before leaving the city he had liberally granted all she had asked, as the returns from the concerts were much larger than had been anticipated. Mr. Barnum, rather than interrupt the amicable relations that had existed between them, at the ninety-third performance, which was given in Philadelphia, retired as manager, he having granted Miss Lind at the beginning of the tour the privilege of cancelling the contract for a consideration, at the one hundredth concert, which she had notified him she would do. He continued, however, to maintain friendly relations with her, convinced that the unfortunate friction was due wholly to outside influences. But I learn from other sources that Jenny had limitations in the management of practical affairs, was of impulsive temper and immature judgment, and given to entertaining unwarrantably severe estimations of conduct; but these slight shortcomings, which she was free to acknowledge, have been in almost every volume passed over in silence by her biographers, and have been dissolved and forgotten in the radiance of her artistic genius and inherent worth.

The funds derived from her concerts here went entirely for charitable and educational purposes in Sweden and England. It is believed that she gave away during her life a half million of dollars. The gross receipts from the concerts given under Mr. Barnum's management were \$712,161, of which the net income to Miss Lind was \$176,675 and to Mr. Barnum, \$350,000, the latter sum a not unreasonable proportion considering the risk he assumed and the labor he expended. Under her own management, Miss Lind gave several concerts, but, lacking the aid of Mr. Barnum's genius and popularity as a manager, she seems not to have been very successful, and admitted to him that she had been imposed upon in her dealings on the road. She had been joined in May, 1851, by Mr. Otto Goldschmidt, of Hamburg, son of a wealthy merchant of that city, and through the remainder of her concerts he served as her accompanist. They had been associated in musical pursuits in Europe, and, having congenial tastes and being devotedly attached,



## HONEST JENNY LIND

they were married in Boston, on February 5, 1852, and not long after sailed for Europe. Having made their home for five years in Dresden, in 1858 the family settled permanently in England, making their residence in London, with a summer cottage in the Malvern Hills. She found peace and delight in her domestic life, and her children were a source of joy unspeakable, so that her time after her marriage was not considerably taken up with concert work. She died resignedly, after a lingering illness, passing away midst the rural scenes she loved, at her cottage, on November 2, 1887, rounding out a life of extraordinary success and usefulness, and maintaining to the last the magic sweetness of her voice and the lovable and noble traits of her character.

Concerning Jenny Lind, while I read on and on, volume after volume, I became obsessed with the charm of her character and genius, and wondered if, in the midst of all her wealth and distinction, she had forgotten the United States, the people of which had so idolized her in the years that were gone. And one day I found it recorded that at her death the Queen had sent a wreath of white flowers, and following the statement of this royal acknowledgment of regard was the assurance that I had so greatly missed; it was remarked that "in accordance with her oft-expressed desire, the patch-work quilt, which the children of the United States gave her, was buried with her." Words cannot convey the emotion of gratitude that swept over me when I read this; it was as if the gulf of the years had been bridged, and Jenny Lind, with her "heavenly smile" and warm hand-clasp, had visited me; and it is a cherished thought that today her dust is infolded by the gift of a land that loved her in life, and to which she was true in her death.

Thus have I plucked a few sprays from the evergreens that flourish along the path of "The Swedish Nightingale," and having arranged them as best I could in a wreath, I place it now upon the shrine of "Honest Jenny Lind."





# Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute

BY WINFIELD SCOTT DOWNS, NEW YORK CITY



IN a period of great social and industrial uneasiness, when the watchword of the councils of the world is the self-determination of age-oppressed peoples, it is restful to the mind and heart to turn the eyes toward that laboratory of manhood and womanhood,—the Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute. Here, for fifty-one years since its founding by the Heaven-inspired hand of General Samuel Chapman Armstrong, men and women of lofty vision and noble purpose have given their lives to the training of the hands, minds, and characters of its Negro and Indian students. The story of Hampton has been told the world over, the teachers who have gone out from its halls have added to its sphere of influence beyond computation, the school has acquired a permanence that is veritably the hope of a race, and its greatness and usefulness are bounded only by human limitations in the development of the qualities of good citizenship and leadership. The story of Hampton is best told by those who have given most to its work, and from their written and spoken words most of the record following shall be taken.

Since the life of General Armstrong and the growth and development of Hampton Institute are so essentially one and the same from the founding of the school in 1868 until his death in 1893, the following is of interest, being extracts from an address on "General Armstrong's Life and Work," delivered by Franklin Carter, Ph.D., LL.D., ex-president of Williams College, in Hampton Institute Memorial Church, June 26, 1902:

When the first missionaries sailed from Boston for the Sandwich Islands eighty years ago to begin the work of uplifting and redeeming the Hawaiian natives, not the wildest imagination could foresee that out of that movement and from one of those islands should come the force, the man, who would be to millions of helpless Negroes in our Southern country the uplifter into the thoughtful,





loving, diligent apprehension of their own duties, into a gentle and rational patriotism. Love of the degraded natives of the Hawaiian Islands, stirred in New England breasts, was the original force that produced the heroic mau, the Christian service, for which we thank God today.

I ask you to consider for a little while how admirably fitted Samuel Chapman Armstrong was for his great work. He was born, as I said, in the midst of a people who needed help, and to give help to whom his countrymen and his own father and mother had travelled thousands of miles. He knew from childhood the perils and sorrows of a degraded, ignorant race, and he knew also that there is no work so glorious as the uplifting of such a people. When he went to America for his education he went to a college among whose students, nearly a hundred years ago, the greatest American movement for the redemption of the world was born. He imbibed, during his college course, something of the inspiration of that movement. He lived in the home of one who was and had been for many years the president of that great missionary society. He was taught by Mark Hopkins the sublime philosophy of Christianity, and that means the rescue of the lost. He learned from Albert Hopkins, on whose window in our chapel are the words, "They that turn many to righteousness shall shine as the stars forever and ever," as he never knew it before, the majesty of Christian loving and living. He did with his might in college what his hands found to do. . . . He was physically sound and strong. . . . He was intense. . . . He was always dead in earnest.

He went into the service of his country. This was his country, though he was born in a distant island of the sea, for it was his father's country, and his love of it and service for it early won him citizenship. . . . In the war he learned to control men, and that means that his insight was quickened, his patience was enlarged, his judgment of men made comprehensive, and his swift resort to wise measures in emergency became a habit. It does not mean that he lost for a moment one atom of his hatred of meanness or of his love for righteousness or of his love for humanity. What a series of promotions his war record was! In nearly every important movement from the beginning to the end he had a part, and he learned to love the black race in his two years' command of negroes. When the war was over and the Southern people lay exhausted and quivering with pain and bewildered by their relations to the freed slaves, the Northern people, chastened by the desperate struggle and the desolation of their households, in the nobility of their love for the colored people, gave to them, when they could not well use it, the right of suffrage. Assigned to duty in this region by the Freedmen's Bureau for the care of ten counties, having studied the condition of the race and long since perceived that education of head and hand and heart



—the development of character—could alone save this enfeebled people from misery and crime, General Armstrong said to himself: “I will found a school to educate teachers for this race. I will begin in a humble way a more patriotic, more difficult work than fighting for my country. I will open the door for this people, whom I dearly love, into intelligence, self-control, manhood, and womanhood, and send my pupils all over this Southern land to be centers of light and love, examples of diligence and loyalty to the noblest motives.”

Here the writings of General Armstrong take up the record in simple narrative, without literary embellishments and with the intent of evading rather than of seeking credit for his accomplishments at Hampton:

In March, 1866, I was placed by General O. O. Howard, Commissioner of the Freedmen’s Bureau, in charge of ten counties in Eastern Virginia, with headquarters at Hampton, the great “contraband” camp, to manage Negro affairs and adjust, if possible, the relation of the races.

Colored squatters by thousands, and General Lee’s disbanded soldiers returning to their families, came together in my district on hundreds of abandoned farms which government had seized and allowed the freedmen to occupy. There was irritation, but both classes were ready to do the fair thing. It was about a two years’ task to settle matters by making terms with the land owners, who employed many laborers on their restored homes. Swarms went back on passes to the “old plantations” with thirty days’ rations, and nearly a thousand were placed in families in Massachusetts as servants, through the agency of a home in Cambridgeport, under charge of a committee of Boston ladies.

It was my duty, every three months, to personally visit and report upon the conditions of the ten counties; to inspect the Bureau office in each, in charge of an army officer; to investigate troubles and to study the relations of the races. The better class of whites were well disposed, but inactive in suppressing any misconduct of the lower class. Friendliness between the races was general, broken only by political excitement, and was due, I think, to the fact that they had been brought up together, often in the most intimate way, from childhood.

Martial law prevailed; there were no civil courts, and for many months the Bureau officer in each county acted on all kinds of cases, gaining generally the confidence of both races. When martial law was over, the Military Court at Hampton was kept up by common consent for about six months.

General Howard and the Freedmen’s Bureau did for the ex-slaves, from 1865 to 1870, a marvelous work, for which due credit has not





MEMORIAL CHAPEL  
HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE  
BUILT 1883





## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

been given; among other things, granting three and a half millions of dollars for school houses, salaries, etc., thereby giving an impulse and foundation to the education of about a million colored children. The principal negro educational institutions of today, then starting, were liberally aided at a time of vital need. Hampton received over \$50,000 through General Howard for buildings and improvements.

On relieving my predecessor, Captain C. B. Wilder of Boston, at the Hampton headquarters, I found an active, excellent educational work going on under the American Missionary Association of New York. This society in 1862 had opened in the vicinity the first school for freedmen in the South, in charge of an ex-slave, Mrs. Mary Peake. Over fifteen hundred children were gathered daily; some in old hospital barracks—for here was Camp Hamilton, the base hospital of the Army of the James, where, during the war, thousands of sick and wounded soldiers had been cared for, and now where over six thousand lie buried in a beautiful National Cemetery. The largest class was held in the "Butler School" building, since replaced by the "John G. Whittier School-house."

Close at hand, the pioneer settlers of America and the first slaves landed on this continent; here Powhatan reigned; here the Indian was first met; here the first Indian child was baptized; here freedom was first given the slaves by Gen. Butler's famous "contraband" order; in sight of this shore the battle of the *Monitor* and *Merrimac* saved the Union and revolutionized naval warfare; here General Grant based the operations of his final campaign. The place was easily accessible by railroad and water routes to the north, and to a population of two millions of negroes; the centre of prospective great commercial and maritime development, and, withal, a place most healthful and beautiful for situation.

I soon felt the fitness of this historic and strategic spot for a permanent and great educational work. The suggestion was cordially received by the American Missionary Association, which authorized the purchase, in June, 1867, of "Little Scotland," an estate of 125 acres on Hampton River, looking out over Hampton Roads. Not expecting to have charge, but only to help, I was surprised, one day, by a letter from Secretary E. P. Smith, of the A. M. A., stating that the man selected for the place had declined, and asking me if I could take it. I replied, "Yes." Till then my own future had been blind; it had only been clear that there was a work to be done for the ex-slaves and where and how it should be done.

A day-dream of the Hampton School, nearly as it is, had come to me during the war a few times; once in camp during the siege of Richmond, and once one beautiful evening on the Gulf of Mexico, while on the wheelhouse of the transport steamship *Illinois*, en route for Texas with the 25th Army Corps (Negro) for frontier duty on



the Rio Grande river, whither it had been ordered under General Sheridan, to watch and if necessary defeat Maximilian in his attempted conquest of Mexico.

The thing to be done was clear; to train selected Negro youth who should go out and teach and lead their people, first by example by getting land and homes; to give them not a dollar that they could earn for themselves; to teach respect for labor; to replace stupid drudgery with skilled hands; and, to these ends, to build up an industrial system, for the sake not only of self-support and intelligent labor, but also for the sake of character. And it seemed equally clear that the people of the country would support a wise work for the freedmen.

The missionary plan in Hawaii had not, I thought, considered enough the real needs and weaknesses of the people, whose ignorance alone was not half the trouble. The chief difficulty with them was deficient character, as it is with the negro. He is what his past has made him; the true basis of work for him, and all men, is the scientific one,—recognizing the facts of heredity and surroundings, all the facts of the case.

There was no enthusiasm for the manual labor plan. People said, "It has been tried at Oberlin and elsewhere, and given up; it wont pay." "Of course," said I, "it cannot pay in a *money* way, but it will pay in a *moral* way, especially with the freedmen. It will make them men and women as nothing else will. It is the only way to make them good Christians."

The school has had, from the first, the good fortune of liberal minded trustees. They accepted its unformulated, practical plan, when it opened in April, 1868, with two teachers and fifteen pupils, and adopted my formal report of 1870, the year of its incorporation under a special Act of the Assembly of Virginia. By this Act of Incorporation, the school became independent of any association or sect, and of the government. It does work for the State and general government, for which it receives aid, but is not controlled or supported by them.

From the first, it has been true to the idea of education by self help, and I hope it will remain so. Nothing is asked for the student that he can provide by his own labor; but the system that gives him this chance is costly. The student gets nothing but an opportunity to work his way. While the workshops must be made to pay as far as possible, instruction is as important as production.

The Slater Fund has been a great stimulus to technical training. The Negro girl has proved a great success as a teacher. The women of the race deserve as good a chance as the men. So far, it has been impossible to supply the demand for Negro teachers. School houses and salaries, such as they are, are ready; but competent teachers are the great and pressing need, and there is no better work



## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

for the country than to supply them. But the short public school sessions, of from three to seven months, do not give full support, and skilled labor is the only resource of many teachers for over half the year. As farmers and mechanics, they are nearly as useful as in the school room. Hence, the importance of industrial training.

It was not in the original plan of the School that any but Negroes should be received, though the liberal State charter made no limit as to color; but when, in April, 1878, a "Macedonian cry" came from some Indian ex-prisoners of war in Florida—once the worst of savages—through Captain R. H. Pratt, seventeen were accepted at private expense.

Captain Pratt, an intrepid Indian fighter, but a fighter always, in war and peace, for the best good of the savages, conducted an educational experiment at St. Augustine, Florida, that was a revelation in Indian possibilities for civilization, and induced twenty-two young braves, chiefly Kiowas and Cheyennes, to enter training at Hampton. Captain Pratt was detailed by the government to assist in the work at Hampton, and there was founded the Indian work that has since become such an imposing government program, comprehensive and valuable, establishing just and generous treatment for the tribes that have been reclaimed from savagery.

Returning to Dr. Carter's address for an eloquent appreciation of the work of Hampton:

round broken for :

Think of the great schools that have had their origin in this school; think of the hundred of little schools that have been guided by the student graduates of this school; think of the thousands of children that throughout the South have learned how to read, cipher, write, and speak properly, to watch the growth of plants and animals, to know something of the history of our country and of the world, to whom the world is such a different place because dear General Armstrong lived and died here. Think of the hundreds of steady, productive farmers, carpenters, tinsmiths, blacksmiths, bricklayers, leather workers, who have gone out from here to contribute to the comfort and improvement of their own race and to the stability of society, and think of the hundreds of mothers trained to neatness and thrift, with enough perception and love of knowledge to quicken in their little ones the thirst for respectable attainments and the sincere love of home, and all this, too, because dear General Armstrong lived and died here. The cost has been indeed great, but the harvest also wonderfully great. Had this school, with its thirty-three years of toil and discouragements, but also years of leaps and bounds in progress, years of amazing expansion in re-





## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

sources, done nothing more than to send out one Booker Washington, it would have been a glorious success. Had Williams College no other graduate than Samuel Chapman Armstrong, it would have amply paid for its cost, for all the hopes and fears, all the prayers and tears, all the self-denying gifts that have marked its progress for a hundred years. But because Williams College sent forth ministers and missionaries, workers for the good of men from the beginning, it sent forth Armstrong. And because this great school had Armstrong for its founder and head, it sent forth Booker Washington, and because it has sent forth one Washington, it will surely send forth many more to make upright, industrious, thrifty, property-holding, beneficent citizens of your race.

When Hampton Institute opened in April, 1868, there were two teachers, fifteen pupils, and three buildings. When, on May 1-2, 1919, the friends of Hampton came together to celebrate its fifty-first anniversary and its delayed semi-centennial, there were over two hundred workers on the staff; its enrollment, including its summer and training schools, had for several years reached nearly two thousand; its graduates and ex-students numbered over ten thousand; and there were one hundred and forty buildings on the grounds. A chronological table of its physical development is here given:

*(Cleveland, or Philadelphia.)*

1867—Wood Farm purchased. Ground broken for temporary building October 1.

1868—School opened April 1; fifteen students present.

1870—Charter granted by the General Assembly of Virginia; Academic Hall completed, cost largely defrayed by funds donated by the Freedmen's Bureau.

1874—Virginia Hall, a girls' dormitory, completed. "Sung up" by Hampton Singers.

1876—Marquand Cottage, a boys' dormitory, built. Gift of Mr. Frederic Marquand.

1878—First party of Indian students arrived April 3; wigwam for Indian boys built; Whipple barn built.

1879—Shellbanks Farm purchased, gift of Mrs. Mary Hemenway, of Boston.

1881—Huntington Industrial Works opened. Gift of Mr. Collis P. Huntington; second Academic Building opened, to replace the first one which was destroyed by fire in 1879.

1882—Stone Building, a boys' dormitory, completed, gift of Mrs. Valeria Stone of Massachusetts; Winona Lodge, for Indian girls, built; Marshall Hall built; named in honor of General J. F. B. Marshall. Contains Museum and offices.





1883—Pierce Machine Shop opened, gift of Mr. Moses Pierce, of Norwich, Connecticut. Changed to boys' dormitory in 1909.

1884—Gymnasium built, later moved and additions made; Girls' Cottage, a dormitory, opened; brick laundry built.

1886—King's Chapel Hospital for boys built, gift of members of King's Chapel, Boston; Memorial Chapel dedicated, gift of Frederic Marquand Estate, through Mr. E. B. Monroe, president of board of trustees, and Mrs. Monroe.

1887—Whittier Training School opened, gift of Mr. and Mrs. McWilliams of Brooklyn. Replaced the Butler School for contrabands.

1890—Science Building, gift of northern friends, completed. Furnished additional class-rooms. Whittier School destroyed by fire, March 1; reopened November 24; Treasury Building erected. Contained treasurer's office and school guest rooms. Gift of Mr. E. B. Monroe. Later made annex to Holly Tree Inn.

1894—Abby May Home, gift of northern friends of Miss May, opened for domestic science classes; new teachers' dormitory.

1896—Armstrong-Slater Memorial Trade School opened; part of cost defrayed by Mr. Morris K. Jesup of New York.

1898—Domestic Science Building opened. Houses Agricultural Department and Domestic Science and Domestic Arts classes.

1901—Cleveland Hall dedicated, an addition to Virginia Hall. Built in memory of Mr. Charles Dexter Cleveland, of Philadelphia. Cost defrayed by some of his former pupils.

1903—Peabody Dairy Farm built at Shellbanks, gift of Mr. George Foster Peabody, of New York.

1904—Huntington Memorial Library, gift of Mrs. C. P. Huntington as a memorial to her husband, a former trustee; Library contains 47,000 volumes. Shellbanks dormitory and school building erected. Huntington Industrial Works changed to Huntington Hall, a boys' dormitory.

1906—New Whipple Barn built to replace first building, burned in 1904.

1913—Clarke Hall dedicated. Used for activities of Y. M. C. A. Gift of Mrs. Delia S. Clarke, of New York, in memory of her husband, Mr. Charles Spears Clarke.

1915—Academic Hall renamed Schurz Hall.

1917—James Hall, a boys' dormitory, completed. Gift of Mrs. D. Willis James in memory of her husband, for many years a valued friend of the school.

1918—Administration Building completed. A large addition to Marshall Hall, in which the various administrative offices are assembled; name Palmer Hall has been given to the addition. Ogden Hall completed, an auditorium erected in memory of Mr. Robert C. Ogden, for many years president of the board of trustees.



Under construction, 1918--John S. Kennedy Dormitory, a girls' dormitory, gift of Mrs. John S. Kennedy in memory of her husband, who was a lifelong friend of the school. Work suspended for the present on account of the war.

So much for the material growth of the school. The extent of its influence can be only suggested by noting the callings of Hampton's sons. Tuskegee Institute, noted as the monument to Booker T. Washington, is the realization of a Hampton man's dream of service, and at least three hundred Hampton men are transplanting her ideals and practices into Negro professional life. One hundred and three of these are graduates and have been successful in a degree that makes them regarded as established in their callings. Twenty-nine of these are ministers, twenty-one are lawyers, forty-three are doctors, eight are dentists, and two are druggists. An Indian lawyer from Hampton has devoted most of his time to Indian land cases, and has been able to render his people a great service, while a distinguished Indian physician was for many years a successful practitioner among white people in a large western city until the call of his people took him to the reservation to stamp out disease and raise standards of living. Hampton business men have been no less successful than their professional brethren. More than five hundred are either in business for themselves or hold important positions in mercantile and financial establishments. The People's Building and Loan Association of Hampton owes no small share of its successful permanence and useful career to the Hampton men who have been instrumental in its management and direction.

In these post-bellum days the tendency toward measuring the moral fibre of an institution by the participation of its sons in the World War is strongly developed. Without pausing for discussion of the fairness of this method of judgment, Hampton Institute, regarded in this light, attains very high standards. The Hampton Roll of Honor, including all Hampton graduates and ex-students known to have been in the army or the navy, as reported to March 1, 1919, numbers seven hundred and eighty-seven. Nine Hampton men served with the Y. M. C. A., three later entering the regular army, while a number of teachers and other workers of the Institute entered the service of the Red Cross, War Camp Community Service, Y. W. C. A. and Y. M. C. A. So far as is known at present, eleven Hampton women, graduates or ex-students, have been en-



## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

gaged in the same kinds of war work. One member of the teaching staff died in the service of his country, Lieutenant Ralph T. Neal, an instructor in the Agricultural Department, who was killed in action in the Argonne Forest, and seven graduates gave their lives.

Hampton's work is directed by a board of trustees of which the personnel in 1919 was as follows: William Howard Taft, president, New Haven, Conn.; Francis G. Peabody, vice-president, Cambridge, Mass.; Clarence H. Kelsey, vice-president, New York City; George Foster Peabody, Charles E. Bigelow, Arthur Curtiss James, William Jay Schieffelin, New York City; William W. Frazier, Philadelphia, Penn.; Frank W. Darling, Hampton, Va.; Samuel C. Mitchell, Newark, Dela.; Henry Wilder Foote, Cambridge, Mass.; W. Cameron Forbes, Boston, Mass.; Alexander B. Trowbridge, New York City; Chester B. Emerson, Detroit, Mich.; James E. Gregg, Hampton, Va.; Robert R. Moton, Tuskegee, Ala.; Homer L. Ferguson, Newport News, Va.

Hampton Institute has had a host of loyal and liberal friends throughout the country who have provided the means for the operation and development of the school along the broad lines it has followed, with the introduction of such departments as modern educational methods and the capacity of the students have justified. Its endowment (1919) is more than \$3,000,000, and the will of the late Andrew Carnegie provided for a gift of \$300,000 to Hampton, eloquent testimony to the regard of that great friend of all education for the Institute.

To attempt to conclude even the briefest record of Hampton Institute without paying tribute to the spirituality and character of Dr. Hollis Burke Frissell, General Armstrong's successor as Hampton's executive head, would make an unfaithful narrative. Dr. Frissell came to Hampton in 1880 as chaplain and later became vice-principal. The annual reports of the Founder for several years before his death bear witness to the high esteem in which he held the young man who was destined to succeed him. General Armstrong served the school as its principal for twenty-five years. He died May 11, 1893, and a few days later Dr. Frissell was chosen his successor. Already he had served an apprenticeship of thirteen years with his acknowledged master, and in vision, in power and in spirit he was fully qualified to assume the difficult task to which he was called. Could he have lived a few months more he, too, would have







## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

served as principal for twenty-five years. If the highest tribute which can be paid to the administrative skill of a man is to have his work go on in his absence as when he is present, certainly the history of the year following his death on August 5, 1917, was a tribute to his power of organization, for, without a principal, the Institute met disturbing war conditions in a most creditable manner. Services were held in Hampton, October 14; in Boston, November 30; in New York, December 2; and in Philadelphia, December 3, to honor the memory of a great teacher who, to an extent that can never be measured, had served his country well. Generations of children yet unborn will have a better chance in life without ever knowing to whom they are indebted, because of the life and work of Dr. Frissell. Dr. Francis G. Peabody, at a memorial service to Hampton's former principals, thus compared its two great leaders:

"Armstrong was a flaming fire; impulsive, impetuous, daring, audacious, a crusader of Christianity; a Paladin of philanthropy. Frissell was a steady light; patient, sagacious, prudent, wise. The one was raised up of God to establish this untried work; the other was not less manifestly raised up to perpetuate a great institution and to commend it to two races and to two divided portions of a common land. Their very graves are a symbol of their lives—Armstrong's with a colossal, volcanic boulder from his Hawaiian Islands at its head, a great mass of quartz boulder at its foot, and between the two the fresh, green budding leaves and the flowers strewn by constant love. That was Armstrong—volcanic in temperament, granitic in firmness, and over all the fresh, fragrant blossoms of his sacrificial life. And close by the side of Armstrong's grave there is soon to be set a stone to mark the resting-place of Frissell's body; and that, too, is to be characteristic of the man—a simple, low-lying, flat slab of dark stone; on it no eulogy, but simply his name and the date of his birth and death; as though, lying there close to his master and teacher, he could desire nothing else but to be remembered as one who served. That was Frissell."

Robert R. Moton, principal of Tuskegee Institute, spoke as follows of the election of James Edgar Gregg as principal of Hampton Institute:

"I am very glad to take this opportunity to congratulate the Board of Trustees, as well as the graduates and the students and friends of



## HAMPTON NORMAL AND AGRICULTURAL INSTITUTE

Hampton, on the fact that they have found as a successor to Dr. Frissell a man with the same beautiful Christ-like spirit that characterized his predecessor. It is a source of satisfaction to us all that Dr. Gregg has entered upon this work with so great wisdom and vigor, and we are perfectly sure that Hampton is not going to be permitted, by friends at Hampton or outside of Hampton, in North or South, black or white,—to go down.”

Such is the history of Hampton, the story of earnest, devoted, practical service of men and women privileged to see clearly a great need and to supply it; of other men and women who could not work with their hands but gave generously of their means and prayer; of negro and Indian men and women, boys and girls, given a new conception of life and an appreciation of the dignity and beauty of work; and of whole communities and an entire race elevated and strengthened by their presence and example. The noble Founder of Hampton wrote in his memoranda shortly before his death: “Hampton must not go down. See to it, you who are true to the black and red children of the land, and to just ideas of education.” With this exhortation of one who had given his all to the school constantly in mind, with the inspiration of his holy life before them as a pillar of fire, those who have received his sacred trust *have* seen to it, and so far from going down, Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute has gone onward and upward to higher and better things, a vital force for education, character, and Christianity.





## Monroe and Allied Families

*Monroe Arms*—Or, an eagle's head erased gules.

*Crest*—An eagle perching proper.

*Supporters*—Two eagles' wings extended proper.

*Motto*—Fear God.



THE ancestry of the family of Monroe is very ancient in Scotland, and the American branch traces to an early period in the eleventh century. Misty tradition furnishes many fables, attested by high antiquarian authority. Sir Robert Douglas declares the family was driven over to Ireland by the Romans in 357 and did not return to its original Highland home until seven centuries later. Some authorities state that the Munro clan was of purely Gaelic origin and was driven down into the southern Highlands from the rocky islands of the north.

Donald, son of Oceaon Ro, a nobleman in County Derry, upon the waters of Ro, in Ireland, went to Scotland with his forces. He was called Donald a Bonro, from his father's residence on the Ro, and thereafter, by change of initial letters, the name became Monroe.

The first Munro to hold land known to his descendants was one Donald. It is said that he aided Malcolm II. against the Danes, and received for this service land on Alness Water, called Ferrindonald (Donald's Land), which subsequently became the Barony of Fowlis, still in the possession of the family. Malcolm II. died about 1034, and the origin of the family is thus traced to a period preceding the advent of William the Conqueror. Donald Munro died about 1053, and was succeeded by his son George, who helped Malcolm III., son of King Duncan, to wrest the Scottish throne from the usurper Macbeth, between 1054 and 1057. George Munro was succeeded by his son Hugh, created First Baron of Fowlis. From him the title and estates came down in uninterrupted male descent for nearly eight hundred years, a fact said to be unexampled in the annals of Scotland and England, and only paralleled in the succession of the Lords Kingsdale, premier barons of Ireland. Hugh Munro is said to have increased the family estates by the acquisition of the land of Logie, Wester, and Findon, County Ross, of which the Earls of Ross were at that time the superiors.

*Robert Munro*, second Baron of Fowlis, was a loyal subject of David I. and Malcolm IV. of Scotland. He died in 1164, and was





interred in the Chanonry of Ross, which continued thereafter to be the family burying place for more than four hundred years.

*Donald Munro*, third Baron, son of Robert Munro, is said to have built the old tower of Fowlis as early as 1154, during the life of his father. There is no doubt that the inhabitants of Ross in Donald's time gave the government much trouble, for in 1179 William the Lion came into the country with an army "to compose some disorders in that distant quarter," and while there he caused two castles or forts to be built, with a view to the repression of the oft-recurring rebellions and disorders, one at Etherdover ("between two waters") now Redcastle, and the other at Nigg, which the "Chronicle of Melrose" names Dunscaith ("the castle of dread") now known as Dunscarth. It is said that Donald Munro joined the King while in Ross on this occasion, and rendered him material assistance in repressing the rebellion which so extensively prevailed. He married, with issue. Donald Munro died in 1192 at his Tower of Fowlis, and was, like his father, buried in the Cathedral Church of Chanonry, where the Bishops of Ross had their Episcopal seat from prior to 1130 until the Reformation. He was succeeded by his eldest son, Robert.

*Robert Munro*, fourth Baron, between 1194 and 1214, married a daughter of Hugh Freskyn de Moravia, "with whom he marshalled" his men at the King's request to apprehend Harold, second Earl of Caithness, who had in 1222 murdered Adam, third Bishop of that See. Harold was "a very wicked and turbulent man who committed vast cruelties," and for the murder of Bishop Adam and other crimes his estates and honors were forfeited to the Crown. Baron Robert died in 1239, and was buried at the Chanonry of Ross, leaving, among others, a son George, who succeeded him. Robert Munro is said to have married a daughter of the Earl of Sutherland.

*George Munro*, fifth Baron, was the first of the family of whom there exists any authentic historical record. He witnesses a charter by William, Earl of Sutherland, to the Archdeacon of Moray, dated 1232-37, wherein he is described as *clarissimo et fidelissimo consanguineo Georgis Munro de Foules*. George had all his Ross-shire lands confirmed to him by a charter from Alexander II. before 1249. He died about 1269, and was succeeded by his son Robert.

*Robert Munro*, sixth Baron, who succeeded in minority, was placed under the guardianship of the Earls of Ross and Sutherland. He attained his majority in 1282. After the death of the Maid of Norway in 1290, Robert Munro joined the party of Bruce, when the Lord of Annandale put forward his claim to the Scottish throne, and he is said to have suffered much from the Comyns for so doing. But he continued steadfast in his support throughout all the varying fortunes of that family, and finally, though advanced in years, he raised his clan and accompanied the Earls of Ross and Sutherland





## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

to Bannockburn. In that memorable contest his eldest and apparently only son George was slain, along with many more of Robert's followers. He personally escaped unhurt and returned home in safety, though much bereaved by the loss of his son and other near relatives. There is a charter of the reign of Robert Bruce (after 1309) which seems to refer to the Baron, preserved in Robertson's "Index of Missing Charters," between the years 1309 and 1413 (No. 55, page 2). Robert Munro lived for nine years after his return home, and died in 1323. His only son George, who fell at Bannockburn, had married, a year before his death, a daughter of the Earl of Sutherland, who bore him George, who succeeded his grandfather in 1323.

*George Munro*, the seventh Baron, like his father and grandfather, was a steadfast supporter of the Bruce dynasty and a firm upholder of the true interests of his native country, in opposition to the Balliol faction and their followers. When Edward III. seized upon a flimsy pretext for renewing the war with Scotland and coming to the assistance of Edward Balliol, who had been crowned at Scone in 1332, George Munro raised his clan and marched to Northumberland, where he joined the Scottish army under the Regent Douglas. At the battle of Halidon Hill, which followed on the 20th of July, 1333, the Munros formed part of the fourth division, or reserve, commanded by Hugh, Earl of Ross, who, while leading an attack on the wing of the English army commanded by Edward Balliol, was driven back and slain. The repulse which proved so disastrous terminated in the total defeat of the Scots, chiefly owing to the difficulties of the ground and their rash advance against the English troops. The Scottish army lost at the lowest computation fourteen thousand men, among whom, besides the Earl of Ross, were the Earls of Sutherland, Lennox, Atholl, and Carrick, and many other Scottish nobles. The Regent was mortally wounded. The chief of the Munros was killed, fighting bravely at the head of his clan, many of whom fell on that fatal field, and the survivors, a sadly attenuated band, were led home by the chief's brother John, who fortunately escaped unhurt and on his return took charge of his young nephew's affairs and continued in their administration during Robert's minority. George Munro married a daughter of Hugh, Earl of Ross.

*Robert Munro*, eighth Baron, was a mere child when his father fell, but his estates were carefully managed by his uncle John, who during his guardianship redeemed portions of the ancestral possessions which had been mortgaged by his ancestors. There was among the Fowlis papers a Renunciation, dated the 4th of January, 1338-39, by Christianus Filius Nogelli, in favor of Robert Munro de Foules, of the lands of Achmellon, a part of the lands of Logie, said to have been held by the granter from Robert and his predecessors. On at-



taining majority, Robert Munro followed the example of his guardian, and in the traditions of the family he is described as "a man of abilities and economical habits of life." He is mentioned as "Robert de Munro" in several of the Balnagowan charters in 1341, 1362, 1368, and 1372. He had a charter from William, Earl of Ross, of the lands of Pitlundie and others, in which the reddendo was a pair of white gloves or three pennies Scots, if required, alternately; and afterwards the same nobleman, who was his kinsman, conveyed to him "the lands of Petain and Morvich." The first named charter was witnessed, among others, by Roger, Bishop of Ross, and must have been dated prior to 1350. The other was confirmed by David II. in 1634. Robert Munro also obtained from Earl William a charter of confirmation of Eastern Fowlis and other lands, in which it is declared that they had belonged to his predecessors since the time of Donald, the founder of the family. This charter was also confirmed by David II. in the last named year. From a charter dated July 1, 1365, granted by Hugh Ross (1) of Balnagowan, second son of Hugh, Earl of Ross, and confirmed by William Ross, of Ross, the granter's brother, at his castle of Dingwall on December 21, 1366, it appears that Robert, who was one of the witnesses, was also one of the Baron Baillies of the Earldom of Ross, a very important office in those feudal times. He married (first) Jean, a daughter of Hugh Ross (I.) of Balnagowan, on record in 1350 and 1366, by his wife, Margaret Barclay, niece of Queen Euphemia, the second wife of Robert II., King of Scotland.

*Hugh Munro*, ninth Baron, son of Robert Munro, obtained several charters, some of which are still preserved in the Fowlis charter chest. In 1369, William, Earl of Ross, granted "to his well beloved cousin Hugh Munro the lands of Keatwell, and Tower of Badgarvie, and others," in the parish of Kiltearn. In 1370 the same Earl granted him the half davoch lands of Daan-more in Edderton; the davoch lands of Inverlael in Lochbroom; the lands of Kilmachalmack in Strath-Oykel; Carbisdale, in Strathcarron; and others in the parish of Kincardine, reserving the salmon fishing of the Kyle of Oykel to himself and his heirs. Nine years later Euphemia, Countess of Ross, conveyed the lands of Contullich and the Tower of Ardoch "to her dearest cousin, Hew Munro," and by another charter she granted him the davoch lands of Western Fowlis and Tower of Strathskiach, in the parish of Kiltearn. The Countess of Ross, who granted these charters, succeeded to the title on the death of her father in 1372. Her first husband, Sir Walter Leslie, who in her right became the Earl of Ross, died February 27, 1382, and before July 22, ensuing, she married as her second husband, Alexander Stewart, the Seneschal, Earl of Buchan, better known as the "Wolf of Badenoch," fourth son of Robert II., without issue, but in right of his wife he became Earl of Ross. He, however, soon after-





## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ward deserted her for Mariotta, daughter of Athyn. The Chartulary of Moray shows that the Bishops of Moray and Ross, both of whom were named Alexander, at Inverness, on November 2, 1389, recorded a judgment ordering him under a heavy penalty to return to the Countess and to refrain from maltreating her. But the Wolf ignored the judgment. Alexander died on the 20th of February, 1394. She granted a charter of the lands of Wester-Fowlis, dated August 4th following, to Hugh Munro. To this charter she obtained the consent of Alexander, her son and heir, who succeeded to the Earldom of Ross. She died Abbess of Elcho in 1398, and was buried in Fortrose Cathedral. The Fowlis Chief is mentioned as "Hugh de Munro" in one of the Balnagowan charters in the last named year. He appears to have joined Donald, Lord of the Isles, in his contest with the Duke of Albany in the beginning of the fifteenth century concerning the Earldom of Ross, a possession and title which Donald claimed by right of his wife, Lady Mary Leslie, daughter of Sir Walter Leslie and Euphemia, Countess of Ross. In the course of this contest the battle of Harlaw was fought on July 24, 1411, and its immediate results and ultimate consequences are so well known that they need no detailed mention. With the darkness the battle ended, and when morning dawned it was found that Donald, Lord of the Isles, had withdrawn during the night. When the news of the disaster of Harlaw reached the Duke of Albany, he at once collected a large army with which he marched to the north, determined to bring Donald to obedience. Having taken the Castle of Dingwall next year (1412) he appointed a governor of it and then proceeded to recover the whole of Ross. Donald was ultimately compelled to give up his claim to the Earldom of Ross, and to become a vassal of the Scottish Crown, and to provide hostages for his future good behavior. This he did by a treaty signed at Post-Gilp, Argyleshire, in 1416. The connection of the Munros with the family of the Isles continued after Hugh's death and during their temporary restoration to the title in 1430 by James I., whose policy was in every respect opposed to that of the house of Albany, and was not interrupted until, on July 10, 1476, James III. again forfeited the Earldom because of the continued turbulence of its possessors, their many acts of treason and persistent rebellions. The forfeiture took place in the time of this Hugh's grandson, Baron John, but is introduced here because in consequence of it the Munros and other vassals in the North were made independent of any superior by the Crown. In the charters which the family of Fowlis at various times obtained from the Scottish Kings, they were declared to hold their lands as direct Crown vassals on the singular tenure, at least in some instances, of furnishing the Sovereign when required at midsummer with a snow-ball from the hill of Fowlis in the forest of Wyvis, a condition which was easily accomplished, for the snow





## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

never wholly disappears from the hollows and crevices of that noble mountain. In this connection it is related that when the Duke of Cumberland arrived at Inverness in 1746, after the battle of Culloden, a party of Munros sent him, as the Royal representative, some snow from Ben Wyvis to cool his wine.

Hugh Munro married (first) Isabella, daughter of John Keith, second son of Sir Edward Keith, Great Marischal of Scotland, by his wife, Mariotta, daughter of Sir Reginald Cheyne, of Inverngie, with issue, George, tenth Baron. He married (second) Margaret, daughter of Nicholas (son of Kenneth, fourth Earl of Sutherland and brother of William, the fifth Earl) by his wife, Mary, daughter and co-heiress of Reginald le Cheyne and Mary, Lady of Duffus. Hugh Munro died in 1425, and was buried at Chanonry.

*George Munro*, tenth Baron, was on October 10, 1410, before Hugh Fraser, first Lord Lovat, Sheriff of Inverness, served heir to his mother in the lands of Lissera, the half-lands of Borrowston and Lybster, in Caithness. These lands had been disposed by his maternal grandmother, the Lady Mariotta Cheyne, proprietor of a fourth part of Caithness, as one of the co-heiresses of her father, Sir Reginald Cheyne of Inverngie—"to her beloved son and daughter, Hugh Munro, of Fowlis, and his spouse, Isobel de Keith, and their heirs." He also obtained a charter under the Great Seal of James I., dated at St. Andrews, July 22, 1426, in which he had confirmed to him the lands and baronies of Easter and Wester Fowlis, Katewell, Contullich, Daan, Carbisdale, Inverlael, Findon, and others. In the same charter is also confirmed the entail made by Sir John Forrester of Corstorphine, "in favour of George Munro of Fowlis, John Munros elder and younger." William, Earl of Ross, grants a charter on November 22, 1383, which Alexander, Earl of Ross, confirms by another ninety years later, and one of the witnesses to the latter is George Munro, of Fowlis. He is also on record as "George Munro of Fowlis" in charters of the years 1437-38-39-40 and 1449. It is during the life of George that the battle of "Bealach-nam-Brog" was fought. At it the Chief, several members of the family, and a great many of his followers were slain. It is described as a desperate skirmish, and the place where it occurred is said in a manuscript history of the Mackenzies (where by far the fullest account of it is found) to be "betwixt the heights of Fearann Donnill and Lochbraon," that is, between "Donald's lands" of Fowlis and Lochbroom. The fight was brought about by some of the vassals of Alexander Mackenzie VI. of Kintail, who ruled from 1416 to 1418, instigated by Donald Garbh Maciver, who attempted to seize, some say Alexander Leslie, Earl of Ross, but really his second cousin, Walter Ross II. of Balnagowan, who some time before this date succeeded to the lands of Balnagowan by marriage with the heiress of these extensive possessions. The object of the



attempt to seize Ross was to exchange him, when captured, for the Mackenzie Chief, who had been incarcerated in the prison of Dingwall by Countess Euphemia, the Earl's mother, but who was in time released by his undaunted vassals from Kinlochewe, the Macivers, Maclellans, Macauleys, and Maclearys, who then seized her Ladyship's cousin, Walter of Balnagowan, and carried him along with them. The Earl of Rodd immediately advised Hugh, Lord Lovat, who is said to have been at that time the King's lieutenant in the Highlands, of the illegal seizure of his relative, and his Lordship promptly dispatched to the North two hundred men who, joined by Ross' vassals, the Munros of Fowlis, and the Dingwalls of Kildun, pursued and overtook the western tribes at Bealach-nam-Brog, where they were at that moment resting. A sanguinary conflict ensued, more than usually aggravated and exasperated by a keen and bitter recollection of previous feuds and ancient animosities. The Kinlochewe men were almost extirpated in the fight. The manhood of the race of Dingwall was literally extinguished, one hundred and forty of their men having fallen, while according to Sir Robert Gordon "there were slain eleven Munroe of the house of Fowlis that were to succeed one another, so that the succession fell into a child then lying in his cradle," in addition to a great many more of their leading men and followers. It is stated that the combatants, to defend themselves from the arrows of the enemy, tied their shoes on their breasts with their belts and hence the name, Bealach-nam-Brog, or Pass of the Shoes.

George Munro married (first) Isobel, daughter of Ross of Balnagowan, with issue: George, who was killed with his father and other members of the family at Bealach-nam-Brog. George Munro married (second) Christian, daughter of John MacCulloch of Plaids, on record in 1453 as Baillie of the Girth or Sanctuary of St. Duthus, Tain, with issue: John, who, when his father and elder brother were killed at Bealach-nam-Brog, succeeded to the estates and chiefship of the clan; Hugh, of whom further; William, mentioned with his brother Hugh in a document dated October 26, 1499, appears to have died unmarried.

*Hugh Munro*, son of George Munro, the tenth Baron of Fowlis, is on record in 1492, and is the progenitor of the cadet families of Coul, near Alness; of Balcovy, Carbisdale in Kincardine, now Culrain; of Linseedmore, Erribol, Culeraggie, Kiltearn, Daan in Edderton, Ardullie, Katewell, Teanoird, Killechoan, now Mountrich, and of Teaninich, all in their proper order. He is said to have married Eva, daughter of Maclean II., of Urquhart, Chief of the Clan Thearlaich, who subsequently acquired the lands of Dochgarroch. He had several sons: John, the eldest, designated before he succeeded to his father's estate as "Mr. John Munro of Balcovy," showing that he was a clergyman; John Mor, of whom further.



## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*John Mor Munro*, son of Hugh Munro, married Catherine, daughter of John Vass, of Lochshin, and had several sons: John, his heir and successor; Hugh, progenitor of the family of Teaninich; Robert, a clergyman; and Farquhar, of whom further.

*Farquhar Munro*, son of John Mor and his wife, Catherine (Vass) Munro, married Catherine, daughter of William MacCulloch, of Baccall, who bore him a son, Robert.

*Robert Munro*, son of Farquhar Munro, succeeded to his father's estate of Aldie, and was also Commissary of Caithness. Robert of Aldie died before November 6, 1633, on which date John, Earl of Sutherland, has a mandate from Charles I. granting in heritage to George Ross all the lands in the parish of Dornoch, Southlandshire, "belonging to the deceased Robert Munro, Commissary of Caithness." Robert of Aldie married and had at least four sons, all of whom fought in the battle of Worcester, where he subsequently settled. The youngest was Sir Benediet, Baron of Meikle Dorf, Germany, whither he escaped after the battle of Worcester. The third was William, who with several of his relatives was taken prisoner and banished along with three other Munros to the plantations in New England, America, where they were required to serve a number of years before obtaining their freedom. They were shipped from London on November 11, 1651, by Jo Reex, Robert Rich, and William Greene, in the *John and Sarah*, John Greene, master, and were consigned to Mr. Thomas Kemble, of Boston. The list of the banished on board this vessel was recorded May 13th, 1652, and "it contains four of the name of Monrow, viz., Robert, John, Hugh, and one other whose first name is obliterated by time." This was undoubtedly William, of whom further.

*I. William Monroe* (as this branch of the family has come to spell the name, which has varied forms in different lines), married (first) about 1665, Martha, daughter of John George, of Charlestown, Mass., a prominent Baptist, who was fined, imprisoned, and finally ordered out of town for heresy. She bore him John, William, George, and Martha, and died prior to 1672. William Monroe married (second) Mary Ball, and they were the parents of Daniel, of whom further; David, Joseph, Benjamin, Hannah, Elizabeth, Mary, Eleanor, and Sarah. Mary (Ball) Monroe was twenty-six years the junior of William Monroe. She died in August, 1692, aged forty-one years, and he married (third) Elizabeth, widow of Edward Wyer, of Charlestown, Mass., who died December 14, 1715, aged seventy-nine years, he surviving her until January 27, 1717, when his death occurred at the extreme old age of ninety-two years.

*II. Daniel Monroe*, son of William and Mary (Ball) Monroe, was born August 12, 1673, died February 26, 1734, and was the fourth son of the Lexington founder. He and his wife Dority were the parents of: Daniel, born June 27, 1717; Jedediah; John, born May 30,





## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1731, served in the Colonial army and marched to the relief of Fort William Henry in 1757; he was a member of Capt. Parker's company and fought in the battle of Lexington in 1775; marched to Cambridge with his company on the day of the battle of Bunker Hill, and fought through the campaign in the Jerseys in 1776; Sarah, born 1724; Dorothy, born 1728.

*III. Jedediah Monroe*, son of Daniel and Dority Monroe, was born May 20, 1721, and fell in battle with the British on the march to Concord, April 19, 1775. Like his brother John, he was a member of Capt. Parker's company, and fought at Lexington, where he was wounded, being killed later in the afternoon of the same day. He married Abigail, daughter of Joseph Loring, and they were the parents of: Daniel, of whom further; Jedediah, a soldier in the Continental forces of the Revolution, married Sarah Parker, of Roxbury, and had children; Solomon, also a soldier of the Revolution, married, and resided in Boston; Joseph, born 1757, married Rhoda Leathe, of Woburn, and had children; Dolly, died unmarried; Zacharias, died young; Elizabeth, twin with Zacharias, also died young; Elizabeth, married Abel Walker, of a distinguished Woburn, Mass., line.

*IV. Daniel Monroe*, son of Jedediah and Abigail (Loring) Monroe, was born September 29, 1744. Like his father and brothers, he was a soldier in the Revolution. He married Abigail, daughter of Jonathan Parker, of Roxbury. Issue: Daniel, of whom further; Nathaniel, born 1777, settled in Baltimore, Maryland; William, born Dec. 17, 1778, the first and for many years the only manufacturer of lead pencils in America; John, born Oct. 11, 1784; Charles, married Adeline Smith, of Portland, Maine; Abigail.

*V. Daniel (2) Monroe*, son of Daniel (1) and Abigail (Parker) Monroe, was born in Roxbury, Mass., July 13, 1775. He was a clock-maker, and for many years followed his calling in this locality. He married, November 29, 1804, Sarah Dakin, of Lincoln, with issue: Daniel, died young; Ebenezer, of whom further; Edward; Daniel; Sarah Dakin; Emmeline Eliza; Elizabeth Dakin; Louise; Sarah, married, 1848, Charles E. Melcher, of Boston; Mary, married Samuel C. Joy, of Boston. The six children of Daniel and Sarah (Dakin) Munroe after Ebenezer all died in infancy.

*VI. Ebenezer Monroe*, son of Daniel (2) and Sarah (Dakin) Monroe, was born November 25, 1810. He was a member of the firm of Ball, Tompkins & Black, formerly Frederic Marquand, of New York, and acquired considerable wealth. He was a member of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, of the Historical Society and the Geographical Society of New York. He married Elizabeth H. Brinckerhoff, of New Jersey, and they were the parents of: Daniel, who died young; Ebenezer, who died young; and Elbert Brinckerhoff, of whom further.





*VII. Elbert Brinckerhoff Monroe*, son of Ebenezer and Elizabeth H. (Brinckerhoff) Monroe, was born in New York City, August 25, 1836. He was educated in the schools of his native city, graduating from the University of the City of New York in 1855. He received from Yale College the degree of A. M. in 1886. Immediately after leaving college he engaged in business with Ball, Black & Co., later Black, Starr & Frost, one of the larger jewelry houses of the city. He was very successful in business, and after twenty years of constant application retired in order to give his time to religious and philanthropic undertakings.

For thirteen years he was superintendent of the Knox Memorial Sunday School. For many years until his death he was a trustee of the Presbyterian Hospital of New York City and of the famous Hampton Institute of Virginia and Rutgers College, New Brunswick, New Jersey. Mr. Monroe was active in fostering the interests of many kindred institutions, and the extent of his philanthropies will never be fully known. President Harrison appointed him a member of the Indian Commission, and this position he filled efficiently and faithfully until the end of his life. The work of the Young Men's Christian Association was very near to his heart. He was among the founders, and in 1852 served successively as director, treasurer and vice-president of the national organization of the Young Men's Christian Association. Throughout his life he was a member of its finance committee. On hearing in 1884 that an effort was being made to provide a suitable building for the Young Men's Christian Association in connection with Yale College, Mr. Monroe immediately took steps to carry out this project. He was heir and executor under the will of Frederic Marquand, and erected on the college grounds a beautiful building for the use of the Association, which was named Dwight Hall, in honor of an early president of Yale College whom Frederic Marquand highly esteemed. As the entire cost of this first college building in the United States for the use of the Young Men's Christian Association and its equipment was paid by a part of the residuary of Frederic Marquand's estate, it is a fitting memorial to him. The building was presented to the college in 1886. Among Mr. Monroe's many benefactions was the erection of a chapel for Hampton Institute, Virginia, and the first Young Men's Christian Association building in Osaka, Japan. For two years Mr. Monroe's home was at Tarrytown-on-the-Hudson, and from it he was called to higher service in Heavenly Mansions. His death occurred April 21, 1894.

He married (first) October 10, 1866, Hetty Perry, of Southport, Connecticut, who died August 28, 1870; (second) November 7, 1872, in New York, Virginia Marquand Tompkins, daughter of Erastus Osborne and Mary Penfield (Marquand) Tompkins. She survives



## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

him, and endeavors to carry forward worthily the numerous benevolent and educational plans of her late husband.

(The Marquand Line).

*I. Henry Marquand*, of the Channel Islands, born in the Isle of Guernsey, July 8, 1737, was the founder of his line in the Connecticut Colony, coming to America in 1761. He was a cabinetmaker in calling. He married Lucretia Jennings, and died in Fairfield, Conn., July 12, 1772.

*II. Isaac Marquand*, son of Henry and Lucretia (Jennings) Marquand, was born in Fairfield, Conn., March 10, 1766, died in Brooklyn, N. Y., November 24, 1838. He was a member of the well known firm of Marquand, Paulding & Harriman, and a successful man of affairs. He married Mabel Perry, daughter of Peter Perry, of Fairfield, Conn., and they were the parents of Frederic, Mary Penfield, Josiah P., and Henry Gurdon.

*III. Frederic Marquand*, son of Isaac and Mabel (Perry) Marquand, was born in Fairfield, Conn., April 6, 1799, and died at his country place at Southport, Conn., July 14, 1882. His first business venture was in Savannah, Georgia, and after he came north he became the head of the house of Marquand & Company, jewelers and silversmiths, and in 1839 he retired from business with an ample fortune, devoting himself thereafter to the care of his large estate in New York City. His benefactions were large and numerous, especially toward religious and philanthropic institutions. For the Union Theological Seminary in New York City and for the Theological Department of Yale University he caused to be erected ample chapels for religious worship.

He married, September 3, 1822, at Southport, Conn., Hetty Perry, the Rev. Dr. Nathaniel Hewitt, of Bridgeport, Conn., officiating at the ceremony. Mrs. Marquand died in New York City, December 12, 1859.

*III. Henry Gurdon Marquand*, son of Isaac and Mabel (Perry) Marquand, was born in New York City, April 11, 1819. He was educated at Pittsfield, Mass., and for the first twenty years of his business life he assisted his elder brother Frederic in the management of his estate. During this time he turned his attention to the study of architecture, and from the fulness of the knowledge achieved in this period began a campaign of constructive criticism that did much to raise the standard of architecture in the public and private buildings of the city and that won him election as the first honorary member of the American Institute of Architects. Mr. Marquand next turned his attention to banking, and for ten years was prominent in Wall Street, where he accumulated large wealth and became interested in many railroads and other corporations. In 1868 he joined with other capitalists in the purchase of the Iron



## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Mountain Railroad, and upon the organization of the directorate was made vice-president and afterward president, holding that office until the road was absorbed by the Missouri Pacific system, when he became a director of the Missouri Pacific. He was also connected with several of the most substantial banking houses and trust companies of the city.

Mr. Marquand was one of the most liberal contributors to the collection of the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City. He purchased and presented to the Museum the collection of glass made by M. Charoet; the reproduction of ivory carvings exhibiting the mediaeval continuance of the art; the collection of Renaissance iron work, the Della Robbia altar-piece, the metallic reproductions of gold and silver objects in the imperial Russian museums; the sculptural casts, and the valuable collections of paintings by old masters and painters of the English school. He has, as well, made frequent other valuable gifts, as well as numerous and often repeated loans from his noted private collection of paintings. As a philanthropist, Mr. Marquand stands pre-eminent, and Princeton College, the hospitals in New York, and the large charitable organizations of the country, find in him a liberal and constant friend. A portrait by Rembrandt was bought by Mr. Marquand from the Marquis of Lansdowne for \$25,000, and was presented by him to the Metropolitan Museum of Art. His private art collection was a splendid one, carefully classified in appropriately designed galleries, Persian, Japanese, Arabic, and Hispano-Moresque, filled with rare antiques, tapestries, porcelains, arms, and other objects of art.

The Marquand Pavilion of Bellevue Hospital was erected in 1877 by Frederic and Henry G. Marquand in memory of their brother, Josiah P. Marquand. The chapel at Princeton is his gift to the college, and with Robert Bonner he was the donor of the Gymnasium. Mr. Marquand died in 1902.

*IV. Allan Marquand*, son of Henry Gurdon and Elizabeth L. (Allen) Marquand, was born in New York City, December 10, 1853. He received the Bachelor's degree in Arts from Princeton in 1874, attended classes at the University of Berlin in 1877-78, and in 1880 was made a Doctor of Philosophy by Johns Hopkins University. His connection with Princeton University has been long and useful, and in it he has filled the chairs of archaeology and history of art, art and archaeology, and director of the Museum of Historic Art. He was Professor of Archaeology in the American School of Classical Studies at Rome in 1896-97, and since 1885 he has been associate editor of the "American Journal of Archaeology." He is a writer of high repute on scientific subjects, an educator of rank, and a recognized authority on archaeology.







(The Tompkins Line).

*Tompkins Arms*—Azure, on a chevron between three moorcocks close or, as many crosses crosslet sable.

*Crest*—A unicorn's head erased per fesse, argent and or, armed and maned of the last, gorged with a chaplet of laurel vert.

The Tompkins patronymic is one of the class derived from the Christian name Thomas, of which some of the forms are Thomason, Tomlins, Thompkins, Tompkinson, and Thomaston. The line herein recorded was founded in America by John Tompkins, who came from his home in the North of England to Massachusetts, landing at Plymouth about 1630. He was of Concord, Mass., in 1640, and of Fairfield, Conn., in 1644. His children were: Ruth, born April 1, 1640; Nathaniel; John, born August 25, 1642.

II. *Nathaniel Tompkins*, son of John Tompkins, died in East Chester, New York, September 6, 1684. He and his wife Elizabeth were the parents of: Nathaniel, Stephen, and Elizabeth.

III. *Nathaniel (2) Tompkins*, son of Nathaniel (1) Tompkins, died in East Chester, New York, February 15, 1732. His children were Edmund, and perhaps Nathaniel.

IV. *Edmund Tompkins*, son of Nathaniel (2) Tompkins, was born in 1702, and died in Waterbury, Conn., June 30, 1783. He and his wife Hannah were the parents of: Edmund, Elsie, Hannah, Jerusha, and Susanna, the place of birth of whom is unknown; Elizabeth, born December 4, 1735; Nathaniel, born March 20, 1738; Rachel, born Jan. 23, 1740-41; Mary, born March 11, 1742-43; Philip, born May 6, 1748, all in Waterbury, Conn.

V. *Edmund (2) Tompkins*, son of Edmund (1) Tompkins, married, July 10, 1754, Bethia, daughter of Benjamin Wetmore. Children: A child, born and died 1756; Edmund, of whom further; Ina, born Oct. 18, 1758; Mercy, born Feb. 24, 1760; Elizabeth, born Oct. 18, 1761; Joseph, born Oct. 10, 1763; Philip, born March 25, 1765; Benjamin, born Jan. 30, 1767; Frances, born Feb. 14, 1769.

VI. *Edmund (3) Tompkins*, son of Edmund (2) Tompkins, was born May 21, 1757. He married, August 29, 1783, Lucinda Wildman.

VII. *Elihu Tompkins*, son of Edmund (3) Tompkins, married Aletta, daughter of Shadrach Osborne, and had children: Benjamin Wildman, of Norwich, Conn.; Mary C.; Erastus Osborne, of whom further; Henry E., of New York City, travelled abroad extensively in the capacity of purchasing agent; Charles Blagg.

VIII. *Erastus Osborne Tompkins*, son of Elihu and Aletta (Osborne) Tompkins, was a resident of Brooklyn, New York, and died in Savannah, Georgia, in 1851. He formed the jewelry firm of Ball, Tompkins & Black, locating at No. 181 Broadway, later at No. 247 Broadway. After Mr. Tompkins' death, the firm, under the title of Ball, Black & Company, moved to No. 565 Broadway, subsequently



## MONROE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

occupying the present place of business on Fifth avenue, New York, as Black, Starr & Frost, one of the most noted jewelry firms in the country.

Mr. Tompkins married, July 7, 1836, Mary Penfield Marquand (see Marquand II).

---

EDITOR'S NOTE.—Included within the preceding pages are engravings of various important buildings erected through the generosity of members of the Monroe-Marquand Families. These are as follows: By Mr. Elbert Brinckerhoff Monroe: The Hampton (Va.) Institute Chapel; Dwight Hall, the Y. M. C. A. Building, Yale University; the Y. M. C. A. Building (two views) in Osaka, Japan; by Mr. and Mrs. Elbert Brinckerhoff Monroe: The Pequot Library Building at Southport, Conn.; by Mr. William Monroe, (the first manufacturer of lead pencils in America), the Concord (N. H.) Free Library Building, (three views); by Mr. Frederic Marquand; Chapels of the Union Theological Seminary in New York City, and of the Theological Department of Yale University.





made over  
he was

In October 18

the

## Russell-Baldwin Families

*Russell Arms*—Argent a chevron between three crosses crosslet fitchée sable, all within a bordure engrailed gules charged with four bezants, and as many escallops or, alternately.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant holding in the dexter paw a cross crosslet fitchée sable.

*Motto*—*Constans justitiam moniti.*



THE surname Russell belongs to that class of English surnames which had their origin in nicknames. It is derived directly from the cognomen Russell, the diminutive of Rous, a sobriquet for one with hair or complexion of a reddish-brown. Just as the old French brun (brown) took in English two diminutives, burnett and burnell, so roux (reddish brown) found two diminutives—russet and russell. From nicknames these became hereditary surnames, and are all in existence today with the exception of Russet. The first entry of the name in English records of medieval date occurs in the Hundred Rolls in the year 1273.

The Russell family has figured notably in New England life and affairs since the middle of the seventeenth century. Among its members have been famous patriots, public men, divines, and captains of industry and finance. Several emigrants of the name left England in the early decades of the colonization period, and became the founders here of families which have since spread to every part of the United States. The line of ancestry herein under consideration descends from John Russell, of Woburn, through the Revolutionary patriot, Major Thomas Russell, and his son, Thomas Handy Russell, to the late William Henry Russell, founder of the famous old Russell House of Detroit, Michigan, and one of the best known figures in the life of the Middle West in the stirring period which preceded the Civil War.

*Major Thomas Russell*, son of Thomas and Honora (Loud) Russell, was born September 28, 1758. He was a descendant in the sixth generation of John Russell, one of the earliest inhabitants of Woburn, Massachusetts. Thomas Russell was pursuing his studies in Boston at the time of the occupation of that city by the British, in 1775. After the battle of Bunker Hill, he and his sister Elizabeth went to Providence and took up their residence with their brother, Jonathan Russell, a merchant of prominence there, who at that time was captain of the well known Providence Cadet Company, which was called into active service and of which Thomas Russell was





made ensign. In October, 1777, although but eighteen years of age, he was commissioned by General Washington as ensign in Col. Sherburne's regiment of Continental troops, then being formed. The regiment was then ordered to garrison the Highlands of the Hudson, and passed several months at Fishkill and various places along the river. In March following the regiment proceeded to West Point, where it erected what was afterwards known as "Sherburne's Redoubt," after which it went into garrison at Fort Arnold (now Fort Clinton No. 2). On June 24, 1778, Col. Sherburne's regiment set out for White Plains, whence it proceeded with Gen. Varnum's brigade to Rhode Island, and went into camp near Providence. In August, 1778, Gen. Sullivan assembled his forces at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, for the campaign against the British troops in Newport. In the memorable battle which followed on August 29th, Gen. Varnum's brigade, to which Russell (who had been promoted) was attached, was on the right and bore a prominent part in what Gen. Lafayette characterizes as "the best fought action of the war." Gen. Washington, in a communication to Gen. Sullivan, officially expressed his thanks for the "gallant behavior" of the American forces, and Congress, on September 19th, presented thanks to the officers and troops for the "fortitude and bravery displayed." On August 31st, Col. Sherburne's regiment took post at Bristol, Rhode Island, where it remained until July, 1779. It then proceeded to Providence, where it was inspected by Major-Gen. Baron Steuben. Gen. Varnum having resigned his commission, Brig-Gen. Stark assumed command of the brigade, which in November joined the main army, then with Gen. Washington in New Jersey. Russell's soldierly qualities having attracted the attention of his commander, the following brigade order appeared on November 20, 1779: "Adj't Thos. Russell, of Col. Sherburne's Regt., is appointed A. D. Camp to B. Genl. Stark. He is to be respected accordingly." After which he was known as Major Russell. He remained with the main army at Morristown until June, 1780, and was with Gen. Stark's brigade in the affair at "Connecticut Farms," and on duty at various posts until October 6, when the brigade marched to West Point. In October, 1780, Congress resolved on a reduction of the army. Under this resolve nine Continental regiments were consolidated into five, the junior officers in each regiment becoming supernumerary, retired on half pay. Under this arrangement Russell was retired on January 1, 1781, after a faithful and honorable service.

Repairing to Newport, he married, November 29, 1783, a daughter of Charles Handy, of that town, and with his wife removed to Philadelphia, where he embarked in mercantile business, in which he continued until 1785; returning again to Newport, he entered into foreign commerce, which led him abroad in voyages to London, Canton, and other distant parts. He became a member of the Artil-





## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

lery Company at Newport, and one of its commissioned officers; subsequently he was in command there of a volunteer company of cavalry. Major Russell died in the city of New York, February 19, 1801. His children were: 1. Ann Brown. 2. Mary. 3. Thomas Handy, mentioned below. 4. Charles Handy, married (first) Ann Rodman; (second) Caroline Howland. 5. William Henry, married (first) Mary Alice Crapo; (second) Anna Kane.

*Thomas Handy Russell*, son of Major Thomas Russell, was born in Newport, Rhode Island. He married Anna P. Bosworth, of Bristol, Rhode Island, and in middle life removed to Western New York, where he rose to considerable prominence in public life.

*William Henry Russell*, son of Thomas Handy and Anna P. (Bosworth) Russell, was born in Rhode Island, February 8, 1824. He was educated in the schools of his native State, and on the death of his father went as a youth to live with his uncle, Charles Handy Russell. When about thirty years of age he went to Detroit, Michigan, to accept the post of confidential agent with the firm of Crane & Wesson, real estate dealers. Shortly afterward he conceived the plan of conducting a first class hotel, and to this end leased the National Hotel, which stood on the site now occupied by the Pontchartrain. Changing the name to the Russell House, and inaugurating a new policy of management, Mr. Russell in the five years preceding his death made the Russell House one of the most noted hostelries of the Middle West. It was known from coast to coast in the stirring period of bitter controversy which directly preceded the Civil War, and in its lobbies gathered the men who directed the destinies of the times. Mr. Russell was a prominent figure in Republican politics in Detroit. He was also active in the Episcopal church, of which he was a valued member.

William Henry Russell married Emily L. Baldwin, daughter of Col. Lyman and Nancy (Booth) Baldwin, both of whom were descendants of Connecticut families of ancient date. (See Baldwin VII and Booth VII). Mrs. Russell, who survives her husband, has made her home in the handsome Russell residence on Jefferson avenue for forty-five years. She is an honored member of the First Congregational Church of Detroit.

(The Baldwin Line).

*Baldwin Arms*—Argent a chevron ermine between three hazel sprigs vert.

*Crest*—A squirrel sejant or, holding a hazel sprig vert.

*Motto*—*Vim vi re pello.*

The surname Baldwin is of ancient German or Scandinavian origin, and signifies literally "Bold-Winner" or "Bold, Courageous Friend." The name or its counterpart is found in practically every language in use in medieval Europe. The Latin form, Baldwinus, takes the form Baudouin in French, in Italian Balduino, and in German, Baldwin.



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

The first mention of the cognomen in a place of historic importance occurs after the battle of Roncenvalles, A. D., 778, when Baldwin, son of Gan, a young French knight, fell with so many other noble youths. Another Baldwin, son of Ogier, the Dane, was slain by Charlon, son of Charlemagne. This would seem to fix the name as of Danish origin, and to establish the fact that it was introduced into France by the Norsemen from whom historic Normandy takes its name. In 837 A. D. we hear of "Baldwin of the Iron Arm," the founder of Bruges, so called from his skill in wielding the battle axe. He was the first ruler of Flanders of whom history has left any record. A brave and daring warrior, and a "forester" of Flanders, under Charles the Bald, Baldwin in his visits at court fell in love with the king's daughter, Judith, the youthful widow of two English kings, married her, and fled with his bride to Lorraine. The king, then harassed by the Danes, was unable to avenge what he regarded as an insult. He applied to the Pope, who excommunicated Baldwin. The latter in turn pleaded his "cause of true love" so eloquently that the Pope withdrew his censures and induced Charles to pardon his children. Charles was at last conciliated, and made his son-in-law margrave (Marchio Flandriae) of Flanders, which he held as an hereditary fief. The Northmen were at this time continually devastating the coast lands, and Baldwin was entrusted with the possession of this outlying borderland of the west Frankish dominion in order to defend it against the invaders. He was the first of a line of strong rulers, who at some date early in the tenth century exchanged the title of Margrave for that of Count. His son, Baldwin II., the Bald, from his stronghold at Bruges maintained, as did his father before him, a vigorous defence of his lands against the incursions of the Northmen. On his mother's side a descendant of Charlemagne, he strengthened the dynastic importance of his family by marrying Aelfthryth, daughter of Alfred the Great. On his death in 918, his possessions were divided between his sons Arnulf the Elder and Adolphus. Direct descendants of Baldwin I. ruled the Dukedom of Flanders for several centuries.

In the tenth and eleventh centuries the Crusades convulsed all Europe. Every family of note was constrained to send its representatives to the East. The Counts of Flanders and the English branches of the family were numerously represented as leaders in the successive armies that went forth to deliver Palestine from the infidels. Baldwin, Count of Flanders and Hainaut, known in history as Baldwin I., was one of the most prominent leaders of the Fourth Crusade, which resulted in the capture of Constantinople, the conquest of the greater part of the East Roman Empire, and the foundation of the Latin empire of Romania. Baldwin, Prince of Edessa, and first King of Jerusalem, was one of the "adventurer princes" of the first crusade, and as such he stands alongside of Bohemund,



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

Tancred and Raymund. Tasso in his poem "Jerusalem Delivered" speaks often of the Baldwins:

"Baldwin he does ambitiously aspire  
The height of human grandeur to attain."

At Patti, Sicily, repose the ashes of Queen Adelaide, mother of the great King Roger, who became the wife of Baldwin, King of Jerusalem. After two years' residence there, discovering that he had another wife living, she returned to Sicily and taking the veil, buried her grief and mortification in a convent founded by her brother, and died in 1178.

Baldwin, Archbishop of Canterbury, with a train of two hundred horse, three hundred foot, his banner inscribed with the name of Thomas A'Becket, accompanied Richard Coeur de Lion on a crusade in 1120. Matilda, daughter of the Duke of Flanders, married William of Normandy, the Conqueror, and went to England with him. History and tradition preserve an interesting story of the romance of William and Matilda. Matilda, it is said, showed an inclination to play the coquette, and refused to give a positive consent to marriage. William was not to be trifled with and adopted heroic measures. One day, accompanied by some of his boon companions, he met her at Tours, and contrived to have her hustled and crowded through the street and even tumbled in the dust. The lady forthwith concluded not to further incur the anger of so rough a lover, and they were married shortly afterward. One of their sons ruled Normandy. Another, William Rufus, became King of England on the death of his father.

Baldwin as cognomen and surname figures notably in English history from the end of the seventh century. The ancestor of John Hampden, the English patriot of ship money fame, was Baldwin de Hampden. We read of Baldwin D'Anesnes, son of Margaret, Countess of Flanders and Hainaut. He is known as the historian of his house in the thirteenth century. William the Conqueror created one Baldwin hereditary Viscount of Devonshire and Baron of Okehampton. He was succeeded by his son Richard. Hemington was held by Baldwin de Pettour, who was obliged every Christmas to go to Saltus, Sufflus, and Pettus to retain his estate.

Rev. Thomas Baldwin, who died in 1190, at the siege of Petolemais, was the author of "De Sacramento Atlantis," "Bibliotheca Patrum Cisterciensium," and several other commentaries. Rev. William Baldwin, scholar and divine, was the author of a work called "A Mirror for Magistrates," and of several plays, poems, comedies, tragedies, similes, etc. We read also of Benjamin Baldwin, an archeologist of the sixteenth century; of Sir Thomas Baldwin, a miscellaneous writer of the seventeenth century; of Fredericus Baldwin of Wittenberg, in 1628, who wrote a Latin "Treatise on Cases of Conscience."







Mr. C. C. Baldwin, in his "Baldwin Genealogy," gives much interesting information concerning the family in England, and particularly of the Bucks county branch from which the American emigrants came. He tells us that "The most eminent Baldwin of Bucks was Sir John Baldwin, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas of England, 1536 to 1546, when he died. He was lord of the Manor of Aylesbury. His office was very lucrative and he was very rich. In 1540 Henry VIII. granted him the home and site of Gray Friars in Aylesbury." Richard Baldwin, of Dundrege, County Bucks, was the direct ancestor of the American Baldwins. The first Baldwin settlers in New England were all kindred, but not all brothers. The family today is found in every part of the United States, and for two and a half centuries has been honorably represented in professional, business and public life. Henry Baldwin was a judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. Baldwins have been governors of States, members of congress, divines, authors, and leaders in every honorable walk of life. One Abram Baldwin was a member of the convention which framed the Constitution of the United States. He later was instrumental in the founding of the Georgia University. Matthias Baldwin, the distinguished inventor, rose from a humble place to the foremost rank. Beginning in a small shop, of which he was the sole occupant, he became the head of an establishment employing a thousand workmen. He was the builder of the first American locomotive.

Connecticut has been the home of one of the most distinguished branches of the family for over two hundred and fifty years. It was here, in the early town of New Haven, that John Baldwin, founder of the line herein under consideration, settled prior to 1648.

*I. John Baldwin*, the progenitor, was born in England; all evidence points to the fact that he was of the distinguished County Bucks family, and kinsman (brother, nephew or cousin) of Sylvester Baldwin, whose nuncupative will he witnessed. The family of Sylvester Baldwin came from Aston Clinton, a quiet little parish four miles from Aylesbury. It has a small church called St. Leonard's, built in the old English style. The walls are the same that the Baldwins were familiar with before coming to these shores. The roof had been burned in the Revolution of 1640, but was replaced. The Chapel farm, formerly in the tenure of Sylvester Baldwin, lies directly across the street. At the end of the farm are the Baldwin woods. A little way from St. Leonard's lies Great Hampden, the paternal home of Hampden, with its grand old avenue of beeches, so long that one imagines the four thousand yeomen who are said to have ridden to London in sympathy for the patriot congregated about it. Hampden was buried here in 1643. In his will he remembers John Baldwin. From this region came the Baldwins, Bryants, Fenns, Fowlers and others of Milford, Connecticut, in 1638. John



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

Baldwin was among the earliest planters of Milford, but was not a member of the church, and hence not a freeman. He joined the Milford church, March 19, 1648, and was buried at Milford, 1681. He married (first) Mary ———; (second) Mary Bruen, of Pequot, daughter of John Bruen, who came from Stapleton, Cheshire, England. She died September 2, 1670.

*II. Josiah Baldwin*, son of John and Mary Baldwin, was baptized at Milford, Connecticut, March 20, 1648, aged six years. He was a lifelong resident of Milford, a prosperous landowner and leading citizen. On January 30, 1671, he joined the church at Milford in full communion. On June 25, 1667, he married Mary Camp, who is thought to have been a daughter of Edward Camp, of New Haven.

*III. Samuel Baldwin*, son of Josiah and Mary (Camp) Baldwin, was born at Milford, Connecticut, March 14, 1674-75. He was called "senior" in the records after 1711. He owned lands at Chestnut Hill. Samuel Baldwin was a wheelwright by trade. He disposed of his property by deed to his sons before his death. He married Rebecca Wilkinson, who was born in 1676, daughter of Edward and Rebecca (Smith) Wilkinson, of Milford. He and his wife and oldest children were baptized at Milford, August 1, 1703. He died in Milford, January 8, 1737-38. His will is dated February 14, 1734.

*IV. Caleb Baldwin*, son of Samuel and Rebecca (Wilkinson) Baldwin, was born at Milford, Connecticut, July 26, 1704. He married, January 29, 1729, Ann Tibbals, daughter of Thomas and Sarah Tibbals. Her mother, Sarah Tibbals, was a daughter of Nathaniel Bristol. Caleb Baldwin joined the church at Milford in 1741. His will, which bequeathed to his widow and children, was dated December 20, 1763, and proved April 2, 1782. He resided at Milford and Newtown.

*V. Jared Baldwin*, son of Caleb and Ann (Tibbals) Baldwin, was born at Milford, Connecticut, January 30, 1731. He married, September 18, 1753, Damaris Booth, of Newtown. In 1775 he had a deed of land from his parents, then of New Milford. Jared Baldwin served with the Continental forces during the American Revolution as a member of Capt. Caleb Mix's company, Col. Increase Mosell's regiment, in 1778; and in 1780 was in Col. Heman Swift's regiment. After the war he removed to Luzerne county (Wyoming Valley), Pennsylvania, and settled on a large tract of land there. His wife died in 1816, and he in 1817, at the residence of his son, Dr. Gabriel Baldwin, in Connecticut.

*VI. John (2) Baldwin*, son of Jared and Damaris (Booth) Baldwin, was born November 17, 1768, and settled in Weston, Connecticut, where he died July 7, 1840. He resided in Weston and in Bridgeport, following agricultural pursuits in both places. He married (first) October, 1790, in Weston, Naomi Brinsmade, who was born February 27, 1769, and died December 16, 1812. He married (sec-



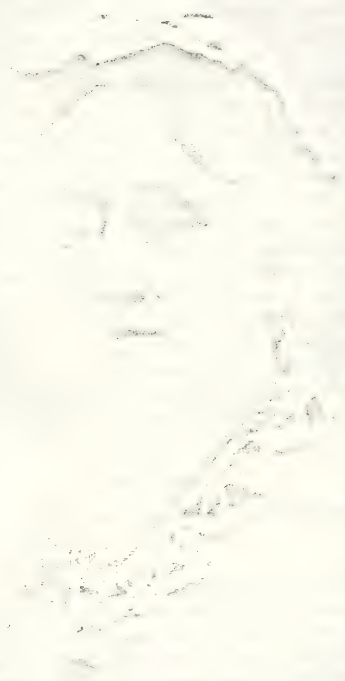


Frederic Baldwin





EDWIN FAMILIES



Mary Baldwin



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

ond) in 1814, Mariane Smith, who died in Weston in 1819. Children: 1. Eli, born July 30, 1791, died in Columbus, Ohio. 2. Josiah, born Feb. 28, 1793, died Oct. 25, 1867; married (first) May 20, 1818, Jeannette Wells, who died Dec. 5, 1826; (second) May 11, 1828, Sarah Burr, who died in 1864. 3. Clarissa, born Feb. 14, 1795, died Sept. 25, 1880; married, Nov. 6, 1817, Levi Beardsley. 4. Esther, born April 16, 1797, died March 15, 1852. 5. Nathan, born May 8, 1799, died May 21, 1854; married Julia Ann Wheeler, and among their children was Samuel Wheeler Baldwin, a notable figure in financial and business circles in Bridgeport, Conn., and for several decades president of the Connecticut National Bank. 6. Lyman, mentioned below. 7. Abel, born May 3, 1804, died Oct. 15, 1872. 8. Edwin, born April 29, 1808; was identified with his brother Josiah in the printing and bookbinding business; died May 12, 1882.

*VII. Lyman Baldwin*, son of John and Naomi (Brinsmade) Baldwin, was born in Weston, Connecticut, March 27, 1802. He removed to Michigan in middle life, and until his death occupied a prominent place in public life in that State. Colonel Lyman Baldwin was high sheriff of Wayne county, Michigan, for the years 1853 and 1854, having previously held other important offices. In 1855 Baldwin avenue, Detroit, was named in his honor. That city was his home during the greater part of his residence in the West, and he figures notably in the history of the early years of its industrial and commercial expansion. Col. Baldwin married Nancy Booth, daughter of Eben and Sarah (Steele) Booth, of Bridgeport, Conn. (See Booth VII). He died in Detroit, Oct. 8, 1875.

(The Booth Line).

*Booth Arms*—Argent three boars' heads erect and erased sable langued gules.

*Crest*—A lion passant argent.

*Motto*—*Quod ero spero.*

The Booth family has figured prominently in English history since the middle of the thirteenth century. The name, which is of local origin and has become strongly ramified in South Lancashire, England, is first of record on the ancient rolls of the county palatine of Lancaster, in the year 1275. All families of the name in various parts of England, and those American branches which claim descent from the founder, Richard Booth, are believed to be derived from one parent stock, of which William de Boothe of Lancaster county was the progenitor.

The New England Booths, prominent from the beginning of Colonial history to the present day, descend from four progenitors. Robert Booth settled at Exeter, Massachusetts, in 1645, whither he removed to Saco, Maine, in 1653. John Boothe was of Scituate, Massachusetts, in 1656, and probably of Southold, Long Island. Humphrey Boothe, merchant of Charlestown, Massachusetts, mar-



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

ried a daughter of the Rev. Mr. Symes, about 1656. Richard Boothe, of Stratford, was one of the original proprietors of the town, and a leading figure in its early life. His descendants have ranked among the foremost families in Connecticut for two hundred and fifty years, and have never relinquished the prestige of early generations.

The pedigree of the English house of which the American Booths are an offshoot, is herewith appended:

*I. William de Boothe*, son of Adam de Boothe, of Lancaster county, in 1275 married Sybil, daughter of Ralph de Brereton, of the county palatine of Chester, descendant of an ancient English family.

*II. Thomas de Booth*, son of William de Boothe, and his heir, married and had Robert, mentioned below.

*III. Robert Booth*, son of Thomas de Booth, married into the Barton family of Lancashire, but evidence is not clear whether his wife was Agnes, daughter and heir of Sir William de Barton, or her daughter and heir Loretta.

*IV. Thomas (2) Booth*, knight, (styled Thomasin of the Booths), son of Robert Booth, was living at the time of Edward III., 1327-77. His seal (as appeared in an ancient document in possession of Lord Delamere in 1680) was, in 1372, "a chevron engrailed in a canton, a mullet, and for crest a fox and a St. Catherine wheel," with the motto "*Sigillum Thomae*." He married Ellen, daughter of Thomas De Workesley, near Booths, in Lancashire.

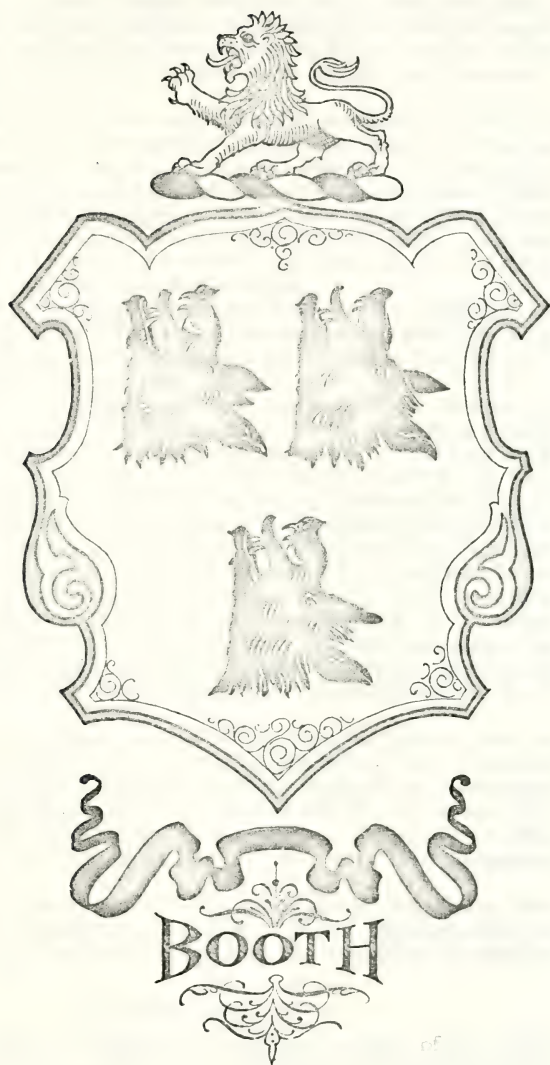
*V. John Booth*, son of Sir Thomas (2) Booth, and his heir, was living in the time of Richard II. and Henry IV. (1377-1413). He is styled John of Barton. He married (first) Joan, daughter of Sir Henry Trafford, of Trafford, in Lancashire, Knight, member of an ancient English family seated in Lancashire before the Conquest. After her death, he married Maude, daughter of Sir Clifton Savage, of Clifton, in Cheshire, Knight.

*VI. Sir Robert (2) Booth*, son of John Booth and his wife Joan, was the first of the Booths who settled at Dunham Massey, in Cheshire. He died September, 1450, and is buried in the parish church of Wilmerton, in Cheshire. He married Dulcis, daughter and heir of Sir William Venables, of Bollen, Knight. She died September, 1453. Sir Robert Booth and William, his son, had a grant of the shrievalty of Cheshire for both their lives.

*VII. Sir William (2) Booth*, son and heir of Sir Robert (2) Booth, of Dunham Massey, Knight, married Maude, daughter of J. Dutton, Esq., of Dutton in Cheshire, who survived him and married again. Sir William Booth received of Henry VI. an annuity for services to the Crown.

*VIII. Sir George Booth*, or Bothe, son of Sir William (2) Booth, married Catherine, daughter and heir of R. Mountfort, of Bescote, in County Stafford. The Mountforts were of noble connection, bear-









ing relationship to David, King of Scotland, and to the great family of Clinton. This marriage brought to Sir George Booth an "ample estate of manors and lands in the counties of Salop, Stafford, Warwick, Leicester, Herford, Wilts, Somerset, Devon and Cornwall." He died in 1483.

*IX. Sir William (3) Booth*, son of Sir George Booth, of Dunham Massey, married (first) Margaret, daughter and co-heir of Thomas Ashton, of Lancashire "by whom a large inheritance in Lancashire and Cheshire came to the family of Bothe;" she died before 1504. He then married Ellen, daughter and co-heir of Sir John Montgomery, of Kewby, in Staffordshire. Sir William Booth possessed various manors in Cheshire, Yorkshire and Cornwall. He died November 19, 1519, and was buried at Bowden.

*X. Sir George (2) Booth*, son and heir of Sir William (3) Booth, married Elizabeth Butler, of Beausay, near Warrington, in Lancashire, whose progenitors had been summoned to Parliament in the reigns of Edward I. and II.

*XI. Sir George (3) Booth*, eldest son and heir of Sir George (2) Booth, was born about 1515-16, and died in 1544, aged twenty-eight years. He married, in 1531, Margaret, daughter of Rowland Bulkley, of Benmorris (Anglesea). He married, after her death, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Edmund Trafford, of Lancashire, Knight. To him, as head of one of the families of rank, came an official letter, October 12, 1529, announcing, by command of Queen Jane Seymour, the birth of her son, afterward King Edward VI. It is dated on the day of his birth. This letter was preserved by Mary, Countess Dowager of Stamford (1771), as was also another from Henry VIII. to Sir George Booth, dated February 10, 1543, concerning the forces to be raised against the Scots. Elizabeth, wife of Sir George Booth, died in 1582. Both are buried at Trentham Church, Staffordshire.

*XII. William (4) Booth*, son of Sir George (3) Booth, was but three years old when his father died, and therefore was in ward to the King. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Warburton, of Airely, in Cheshire, Knight. He became sheriff of Chester, 1571, and was knighted, 1579. He died September, 1579, in his thirty-ninth year, and was buried at Barton. His wife died December, 1628.

*XIII. Richard Booth*, son of William (4) Booth, married a Masie, of Cogshill, in Cheshire, and died in 1628. Through him the connection of the Stratford Booths with the family in England is established.

(The Family in America.)

*I. Richard Booth*, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Stratford Booths, was born in 1607. The exact date of his coming to New England is unknown. He is first of actual record in Stratford, Con-



necticut, in a list dated about 1651. The list of the seventeen original proprietors of the town has been lost, but considerable evidence leads to the belief that Richard Booth's name was among them. The birth of a daughter to him is noted in 1641. Another curious incidental testimony in favor of his original proprietorship is a protest in 1724 (vol. of "Town Acts," p. 102), by Ambrose Tompson, son of John, then aet. 72, and by Ebenezer Boothe, son of Richard, also aet. 72; they complain of injustice in the distribution of land, and say "Our parents we suppose were either actually or virtually among some of the very first settlers of the town of Stratford, which was settled with very great difficulty and charge, as we have been informed. The expense of one of our parents for watching and warding, and other charges, cost more than £40, money." Richard Booth's (or Boothe's) name appears often in the town records of his day as "townsman," or selectman, and in other commissions of trust. The prefix Mr. before his name is incontrovertible evidence that he was a man of influence and high position in the community. The title in usage in that day was applied only to gentlemen of recognized social standing. Richard Booth became the owner, through grant and purchase, of a large landed property, which he divided in his lifetime among his children. His home lot was located on Main street, on the west side, the fifth in order below the Bridgeport road. Like other proprietors his lands were spread over a considerable area, and were unconnected, a fact which seems to be more generally characteristic of Stratford than of the majority of New England towns. His name last appears on the records, in March, 1688-89, in his eighty-second year. Mr. Booth seems to have been twice married, for in 1689 he speaks of "my now wife," a phrase commonly indicative, as then used, of a second marriage. His first wife was Elizabeth, sister of Joseph Hawley, founder of the Hawley family of Stratford, and the first recorder or town clerk. This is another incidental proof of his being one of the original proprietors of the town.

*II. Joseph Booth* (or Boothe), ancestor of all of the name now living in the present town of Stratford, was born there in March, 1656. He became a landed proprietor in Stratford, and was one of the leading men of the town in his day. His estate was among the largest in the town. Part of the front wall of the cellar of his house still remains. Other relics are in possession of his descendants. An account-book in which his business transactions are entered is in the possession of Mr. David B. Booth, of Putney. Several leaves at the beginning of this interesting old ledger are lost. The remaining entries extend from 1681 to 1703. Two or three generations of the descendants of Joseph Booth used the volume for a like purpose. Numerous debts of long standing were discharged by deeds of land, which greatly increased his property, and enabled him to confer



## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

valuable farms on his children and their families. Joseph Booth occupied a position of prominence in the life and affairs of early Stratford. He married (first) Mary Wells, daughter of John Wells; (second) Hannah Wilcoxson, daughter of John Wilcoxson, about 1685; she died in 1701. In 1702 he married (third) Elizabeth —, who after his death gave bonds for the management of the estate. He died in Stratford, September 1, 1703, aged forty-six years.

*III. David Booth*, son of Joseph and Hannah (Wilcoxson) Booth, was born in Stratford, Connecticut, about 1698. He married (first) in June, 1727, Mrs. Anne Mills, of Windsor. About 1740 he married (second) Mary —, and shortly after his marriage removed to Roxbury, Connecticut, where he died June 21, 1773, aged seventy-four years. David Booth was a prominent resident of Trumbull, and was one of the twenty-four original members of the church formed there, May 6, 1747. His wife died November 19, 1793, aged ninety-one years.

*IV. David (2) Booth*, son of David (1) and Anne (Mills) Booth, was born in October, 1733. He settled in Trumbull, Connecticut, and was prominent in civil life there. He was a large land owner and prosperous farmer. David Booth served on the school committee of Trumbull, and in October, 1812, represented the town in the Connecticut Legislature. He married, November 12, 1752, Prudence Edwards, who died December 21, 1782, aged sixty years. He died September 14, 1824, aged ninety-one years.

*V. Philo Booth*, son of David (2) and Prudence (Edwards) Booth, was born in Trumbull, Connecticut, and resided there all his life, a prominent citizen and prosperous farmer. He died July 31, 1819, aged sixty-one years. Philo Booth was active in public affairs in Trumbull, and in 1806 represented the town in the Connecticut State Legislature. He married Anna —, who died March 18, 1838, aged seventy-six years. Both are buried in the Unity Burying Place.

*VI. Eben Booth*, son of Philo and Anna Booth, was a well known farmer in Bridgeport, Connecticut, for several decades. He was widely known and eminently respected in Fairfield county. Eben Booth married Sarah (Sally) Steele, member of a family long established in Connecticut; they were the parents of eight children, all daughters, who removed after marriage to the West.

*VII. Nancy Booth*, daughter of Eben and Sarah (Steele) Booth, was born near Bridgeport, Connecticut, December 22, 1805. She became the wife of Colonel Lyman Baldwin, and shortly after her marriage removed with her husband to Auburn, New York, later going to Detroit, Michigan, where she died in 1882. Mrs. Baldwin is remembered greatly by the older generation of Detroit's citizens, as a gentlewoman of birth and breeding, who worked indefatigably beside her husband for the advancement of religious interests in the







## RUSSELL-BALDWIN FAMILIES

city. She was also one of the leaders among the noble Christian women of Detroit whose self-sacrificing efforts in behalf of Michigan soldiers at the front, in the hospitals, and maimed and wounded at home, during the Civil War period, are matters of history.





## Elijah Fox

*Fox Arms*—Ermine, on a chevron azure three foxes' heads erased, or, on a canton of the second a fleur-de-lis of the third.

*Crest*—A fox sejant or.

*Motto*—*Faire sans dire.* (To do and be silent.)



O say of Elijah Fox, whose name heads this memoir, that he rose unaided to rank among the substantial and successful business men of the city of Haverhill, Massachusetts, is but stating a fact, and his entire business record was one that any man might well be proud of.

Beginning at the very bottom of the ladder of success, he advanced steadily until he occupied a position of prominence allotted to but few to hold in the commercial world. His business career was looked upon as a model of integrity and honor, and it was said of him that he was one of those men who form the backbone and sinew of any community in which their lot is cast. His ability and intellectuality won for him many honors, and his integrity and personality won something even better and far more valuable, namely, warm friendship, deep respect and esteem. The death of Elijah Fox, which occurred at his home on White street, Haverhill, Massachusetts, on March 18, 1916, brought genuine sorrow to the hearts of many who had recognized in him the traits of our best New England people and the sterling qualities of virile manhood. He was, indeed, a striking example of those who secure their own start in life, and his career illustrates in no uncertain manner what is possible to accomplish when perseverance and determination form the key-note to a man's life. Depending upon his own resources, and looking for no outside aid or support, Mr. Fox rose to a place of prominence in the community by dint of tireless energy and moral courage. At the time of his death he was eighty-two years of age, old in years and in wisdom, but his heart was ever young, a progressive man in the broadest sense of the word, always giving his earnest support to any movement that promised to benefit his community in any manner.

In the town of Parsonsfield, Maine, December 22, 1834, Elijah Fox was born, the son of Thomas Edgecomb and Elmira (Johnson) Fox. He was a lineal descendant of Thomas Fox, the English ancestor, who sailed from Southampton, England, on the ship *Abigale* in 1635, and settled in Concord, Massachusetts. His early training was given to him in the schools of his native town, but he passed through



## ELIJAH FOX

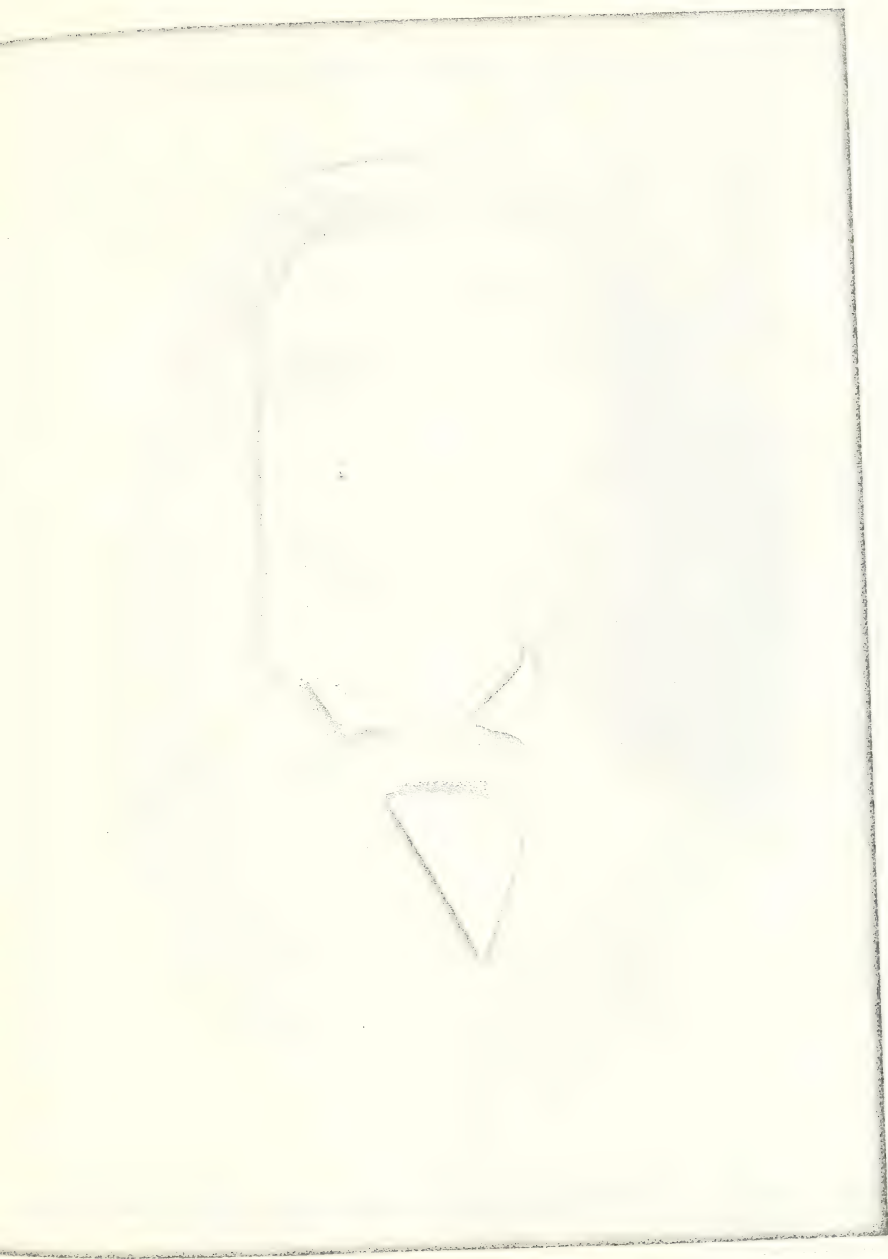
the door of the school very early in life. When he was eighteen years of age he went into the country store of Goddard & Ward, in Parsonsfield, Maine, in which store was also the post office. This did not by any means satisfy his ambition, and coming to Haverhill, at the age of twenty-one, he apprenticed himself as a grocery clerk in order that he might learn the business thoroughly. Later Mr. Fox entered business for himself, and with his brother as a partner conducted one of the leading grocery establishments on Merrimack street, which they conducted very successfully for more than thirty years. In 1886 he retired from the grocery trade, and had since then been engaged in the real estate business, having interested himself in extensive properties in the heart of the manufacturing district of Haverhill. He also had mining interests and other business projects from which he amassed a large fortune.

In 1863 Mr. Fox united with the Wesley Methodist Church, of Haverhill, giving himself to the activities of the church as earnestly as he gave himself to business. In 1868 he was one of ten members of the Wesley church who bought the property which by later additional purchases became the present site of Grace Methodist Episcopal Church. He was a member of the building committee that secured the plans and built the present structure. He also was on the official board, and was very active in all things pertaining to the moral and spiritual welfare of the church. For more than forty-five years he had been a leading official of the Grace Methodist Episcopal Church, giving most liberally of his time and money.

On December 6, 1864, Elijah Fox was united in marriage with Eliza Ann George, daughter of James Greenough and Rebecca Plumer (Bradley) George. They became the parents of one daughter, Florence Louise, who was born in Haverhill, August 11, 1874, and died at the age of seven years. Since the death of her husband, Mrs. Fox has continued to reside in the old Fox homestead, at No. 27, White street, Haverhill, Massachusetts.

Elijah Fox will long be remembered for the cheerfulness and optimism of his closing years. Griefs came to him, as to others, and he bore them without becoming embittered or indulging in vain questionings. Old age found him at peace, happy, even joyous. Like Cato of old, he was a man "full of faith," and the memory of his life will remain as a rich legacy to all who knew him. Shakespeare's characterization of old age has been quite generally accepted, and Elijah Fox demonstrated as the poet had written, how far the gulf stream of youth may flow into the arctic region of our lives. His life was full of beautiful sunsets and peaceful twilights, in the glow of which the toil and labor of the day are forgotten. It was that the varied experiences of a long life had not embittered him, had not rendered him skeptical, but had left him full of faith in his fellow-men, and full of confidence in the future. In closing this brief





*Elijah Fox*







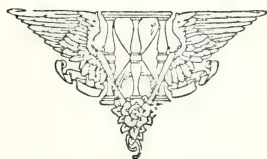
*Florence Louise Fox*



## ELIJAH FOX

biography of Mr. Fox's life, we herewith quote the tribute paid him by the Rev. C. C. Garland:

"Mr. Fox was a man of very positive temperment, undemonstrative, but of the highest moral principle. He had been a careful student of astronomy, and the works of God in the heavens were to him a delightful and wonderful study. In his religious life he laid his foundations deep and broad. His utterances in the religious services of the church he loved will long be remembered. The thoroughness of his own religious life was what he wanted to see realized in all others. The religious life of the city is poorer because of the departure of this esteemed citizen, and yet it will be true of him that, 'being dead he yet speaketh.' "





## James Greenough George

*George Arms*—Argent, a fess gules between three falcons volant azure, beaked and membered or.

*Crest*—A demi-hound sable, collared or, ears and legs argent.

*Motto*—*Magna est veritas et prevalebit.* (Truth is great and it will prevail.)



O the minds of all of us the term "a New England character" presents a fairly definite picture. We think in the first place of those fundamental virtues upon which all worthy character must be based—courage and honor, and in addition to those we think of a somewhat unusual combination of idealism and practical common sense, the presence of which anywhere is almost sure to spell success for its possessor. It is these qualities which, first possessed by the English ancestors of our New England people, drove them out to all quarters of the world to explore the wilderness and finally subject it to the needs and requirements of human life. This character we find admirably expressed in the life of James Greenough George, whose name heads this memorial sketch, just as we also find it in so many other of his fellow-countrymen and among his own forbears. The death of Mr. George occurred at his home in Plaistow, New Hampshire, in 1873. He was born in what is now Plaistow, but in former years was known as Kingston, New Hampshire, in 1799, a son of James and Tabitha (Noyes) George.

The name George, first a forename and later a surname, is derived from two Greek words, and signifies "earth-worker," or "farmer." The families of this name are probably of different ancestors, and are scattered throughout the United States. The members of the George family who settled in Massachusetts Bay Colony about the middle of the seventeenth century came from the southeastern part of England, and as traditions of the family indicate there were three brothers arriving in America at nearly the same time.

James George, one of the three brothers mentioned above, was in Haverhill, Massachusetts, as early as 1652, when he was chosen as herdsman of the town. For this service he received a compensation of twelve shillings and six pence per week, payable in Indian corn and butter. He was "to Keep ye herd faithfully as a herd ought to be kept; if any be left on the Sabbath when ye town worships they who keeps are to go ye next day doing their best endeavor to find them." He was not permitted to turn his flock into the pasture on

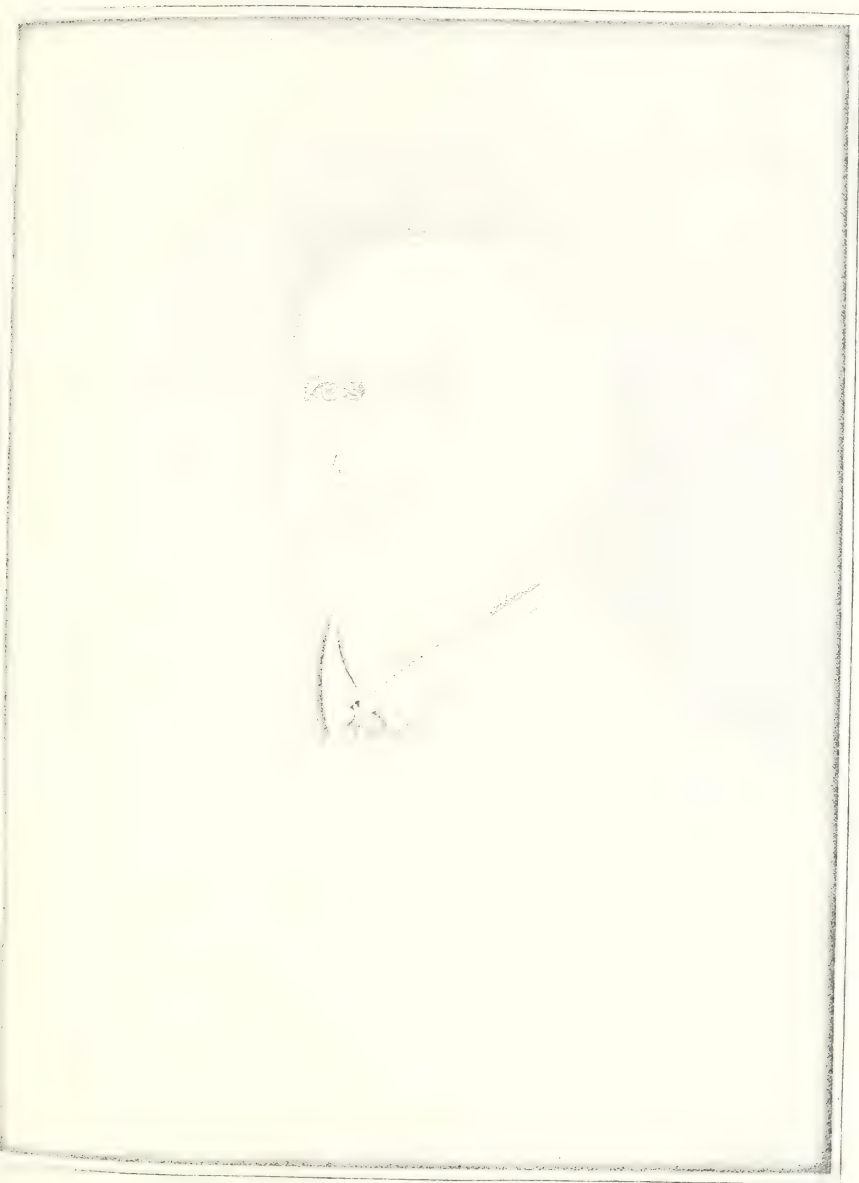






*Isaac Bradley George*





*James Newell George*





*James Greenough George*



## JAMES GREENOUGH GEORGE

the Sabbath until the "second beating of ye drum." He worked for William Osgood, of Salisbury, as early as 1654. When the boundary between Salisbury and Haverhill was established in 1654, because of it he became a resident of the part of Salisbury since known as Amesbury. He was a townsman at the incorporation of that town, March 19, 1655. He received grants of land in 1655, 1658 and 1666. He is found in the list of "commoners" or owners of common lands in 1667-68, and subscribed to the oath of allegiance in 1677. He married Sarah Jordan, daughter of Francis and Jane Jordan, and they were the parents of five children: James, Samuel, Sarah, Joseph and Francis.

James Greenough George, sixth in descent from James George, the immigrant ancestor, was brought up in the town of his birth, Plaistow, New Hampshire, and with the exception of a short time spent in Haverhill, Massachusetts, about 1838, at which time he was in the shoe manufacturing business, he spent his entire life in that town. He became a man of prominence in his locality, and although never a politician he was elected and served several terms in the New Hampshire State Legislature, being what was then termed "an old-fashioned Democrat." In early life he was a shoe manufacturer, but later he purchased the general store at Plaistow, which he conducted many years with success, and was also for several years depot master and postmaster at Plaistow. He was always a staunch friend of temperance, and gave up a great deal of his time in furtherance of that cause.

James Greenough George married Rebecca Plumer Bradley, a daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Currier) Bradley, and they became the parents of five children: Isaac Bradley, deceased; Eliza Ann, now the widow of Elijah Fox, a sketch of whom precedes this; James Newell, deceased; Cyrus Albert, now a resident of Lexington, Massachusetts; and Edgar Wallace, who lives on the old homestead in Plaistow.

His will was dated







## Weaver-Forsyth Families

*Weaver Arms*—Barry of four, argent and sable; on a chief of the last a garb or.  
*Crest*—A ram's head erased argent, armed or.



THE Weaver family of Rhode Island, which ranks among the leading families of Colonial origin in the State, was founded in Newport, Rhode Island, about the year 1655, when the name of Clement Weaver, the founder and immigrant ancestor, first appears on the records of the early settlement. The Weavers of Rhode Island, who for several generations have been active and prominent in the life and affairs of the Colony and Commonwealth, are without exception the descendants of Clement Weaver, who in 1655 became a freeman in Newport. He purchased land there and settled about three miles from Newport, in what is now Middletown. On June 7, 1671, he served as jurymen. In the period intervening between his arrival, about 1655, and 1678, it is evident that he rose to a position of prominence in the community, for in the latter year he was elected to the office of deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly. On August 28, 1680, he deeded to his son, Clement Weaver, of East Greenwich, ninety acres there, at his decease to go to William Weaver, son of Clement. On February 13, 1682, he sold to George Vaughan, of Newport, ten acres in East Greenwich. He died in 1683; and under date of October 20, 1683, Samuel Hubbard, of Newport, wrote to William Gibson, of New London, "Old Weaver is dead, near an hundred years old." His will was dated November 4, 1680. Clement Weaver married Mary Freeborn, daughter of William and Mary Freeborn. Their sons, Clement and William, settled in East Greenwich, Rhode Island, and were the founders of the Weaver families of that vicinity.

1. *James Weaver*, descendant of Clement Weaver, and grandfather of Mrs. Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Forsyth, widow of the late Robert Forsyth, of Quidneck, Rhode Island, was born April 28, 1750. He was a farmer and prominent citizen of Warwick, Rhode Island. He married Mahitable Greene, daughter of James Greene, the founder of the family in America, who was one of three brothers who emigrated from England in the eighteenth century. Mahitable (Greene) Weaver was born November 2, 1754. James and Mahitable (Greene) Weaver were the parents of the following children: 1. Anstrous, born May 8, 1777. 2. Mary. 3. Deborah, born Aug. 12, 1779. 4. Warren, born May 3, 1782. 5. Isaac, born Jan. 18, 1786.



6. Harris, born April 30, 1789. 7. Rufus, mentioned below. 8 Sarah, born April 30, 1797.

*II. Rufus Weaver*, son of James and Mahitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, July 18, 1792. He resided all his life on the Weaver homestead in Coventry, Rhode Island, where he engaged in farming on a large scale, until an accident caused him to retire from active affairs. He was prominent in the life and affairs of Coventry for many years, and was highly respected in the town. Rufus Weaver married Mahitable Greene, daughter of James and Eunice (Hopkins) Greene. They were the parents of the following children: 1. Lewis, born May 29, 1823. 2. Alvina, born Dec. 3, 1824. 3. Lucretia, born Dec. 6, 1826. 4. Unice, born Dec. 2, 1828. 5. Albert, born Aug. 29, 1832. 6. James, born June 4, 1835. 7. Mary, born Nov. 22, 1837. 8. Edwin, born Feb. 15, 1839. 9. Sarah, born April 24, 1841. 10. Ann Elizabeth, mentioned below. 11. George, born Jan. 12, 1847. 12. Mary Amelia, mentioned below. 13. Charles, born Sept. 18, 1851.

Rufus Weaver died at his home in Coventry, Rhode Island, September 19, 1868. All of the above children, with the exception of Mrs. Cushing and Mrs. Forsyth, are deceased.

*III. Ann Elizabeth Weaver*, daughter of Rufus and Mahitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, July 1, 1843. She was educated in the schools of her native town. She married (first) February 14, 1866, Rowland H. Gavitt, of North Kingstown, Rhode Island, who was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, and was educated in the public schools of the town, at an early age learning the machinist trade. He became an expert and was employed in this capacity in the mills of Anthony, Rhode Island, until shortly before his death, when sickness made necessary his retirement. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Mr. Gavitt enlisted in the Rhode Island Cavalry, going immediately to the fighting line with his regiment. He participated in some of the most stirring actions of the early days of the conflict, and in 1863 was honorably discharged. Returning to the North he once again took up mechanical pursuits. For many years prior to his death he was a resident of Quidneck, and was well known in the village. He was a member of the Masonic fraternity and of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and was prominent in social and fraternal circles. Mr. Gavitt died April 29, 1899.

Mrs. Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Gavitt married (second) Robert Forsyth, mentioned below, whom she survives. Mrs. Forsyth resides at Quidneck, Rhode Island, with her sister, Mrs. Cushing.

*III. Mary Amelia Weaver*, daughter of Rufus and Mahitable (Greene) Weaver, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, May 6, 1849. She was educated in Coventry, Rhode Island, and on October 22, 1895, became the wife of the late Christopher Cushing, mentioned



## WEAVER-FORSYTH FAMILIES

below. Mrs. Cushing, who survives her husband, resides at the Cushing home in Quidneck, which was built by her husband in 1895. She is a member of the Quidneck Baptist Church, and is well known in social circles in the town.

(The Forsyth Line).

*Arms*—Argent a chevron engrailed between three griffins segreant vert, armed and ducally crowned or.

*Crest*—A demi-griffin vert.

*Motto*—*Instaurator ruinae.*

Robert Forsyth, for many years a well known and prosperous coal, wood and grain merchant of Centerville, Rhode Island, was a native of Ireland, born in 1833. At the age of seventeen years he came to America, settling in Rhode Island, where for several years he worked at mercantile occupations. He succeeded eventually in amassing a small capital, and established a coal, wood, hay, and grain business at Centerville, Rhode Island, on a small scale. This business he developed gradually into one of the largest of its kind in the county. Mr. Forsyth became active in public affairs in Centerville and, although he remained outside political life, was deeply interested in the welfare and advancement of the town, and a supporter of all movements toward this end. He was a member of the Centerville Protestant Episcopal Church, and a liberal donor to its charities and benevolences.

Robert Forsyth married (first) —. George R. Forsyth, the son of this marriage, died in 1903. He married (second) September 18, 1902, Ann Elizabeth (Weaver) Gavitt. Mrs. Forsyth is active in social life in Coventry, and for twenty-seven years has been a member of the Coventry Women's Club. She is a member of Gaspee Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution. She has supported the cause of suffrage ardently for many years, and has been active in war work.

(The Cushing Line).

The surname Cushing had its origin in the baptismal name Custance, one of the most popular of girl-names of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, and was derived directly from the nickname Cuss, to which was added the diminutive "in;" the g in the name is excrecent. The first mention of the name in early English registers is found in the poll tax for the West Riding of Yorkshire, in 1379, under the entry Johannes Cussyng. The Cushing families in the vicinity of Providence, Rhode Island, are the progeny of Benjamin Cushing, who settled in Providence in the early part of the eighteenth century, and Matthew and Josiah Cushing, who were of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, at a somewhat earlier date. These men were descendants in the fourth generation of the founder of the





*Robert Ferryth*  
*Taken on his 80<sup>th</sup> birthday*





*Eng. by L. Williams & Son N.Y.*

*Lizzie A. Forsyth*

*The American Historical Society*



## WEAVER-FORSYTH FAMILIES

family in America, Matthew Cushing, who was of Boston in 1638, and later became one of the founders of Hingham, Massachusetts. He was the progenitor of the New England Cushings, who have been rendered famous in American history as the "family of judges."

The late Christopher Cushing, member of the Rhode Island branch of the early Massachusetts family, was born in Coventry, Rhode Island, January 9, 1845, the son of Chauncey and Clarissa (Congdon) Cushing, who were natives of Swansea, Massachusetts, and later residents of Anthony, Rhode Island. They were the parents of six children, of whom only one, Mrs. Philip Matteson, survives. Christopher Cushing was educated in the schools of Coventry, and on completing his education learned the trade of machinist, in Anthony, Rhode Island. Within a short period he became an expert mechanic, and removed to Providence, where he followed his trade successfully until about 1900. In the latter year he removed to Quidneck, Rhode Island, where he became connected with his brother, the late J. Henry Cushing, in the grocery business. In 1902, on the retirement of the latter from business life, Mr. Cushing purchased the business, which he conducted very successfully until his death in 1903, when the business was sold to his brother-in-law, Philip Matteson. Mr. Cushing was for many years a well known figure in the business and public affairs of the town of Quidneck. He was at one time a member of the Town Council. He was a Democrat in political affiliation. Mr. Cushing was a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. He attended the Central Baptist Church of Coventry, and was a generous donor to its charitable efforts. He was universally respected, and his death on October 26, 1903, was sincerely mourned.

On October 22, 1895, Christopher Cushing married Mary Amelia Weaver, daughter of Rufus and Mahitable (Greene) Weaver (see Weaver). Mrs. Cushing resides in Quidneck.

*Greene Arms*—Azure three bucks trippant or.

*Crest*—Out of crown a buck's head or.

*Motto*—*Nec timeo nec sperno.*

[The printer, or  
the printer, or

for us of today, but we wish



## Editorial

or that he knows:

### LOOKING BACKWARD

It is a relief to the editor of this Magazine, and he trusts that it may so prove to his readers, to ponder such pages as are here presented—pages which, in impressive contrast with our daily reading matter, deal with the past, and pleasant features of that past. For it is in memory and retrospection that consolation may be found, and there are times when these may be a chief enjoyment and a lofty inspiration.

The narratives referred to are burdened with no disturbing tale. They are rather soothing and cheering. They dwell upon names and achievements that have been helpful to multitudes in the past, and that bear a weighty message to us and to those who are to follow us. They depict the potent influences for good that come from cleanly lives; from building the actions of life upon a healthy sentiment; from performance of humble duties; from labor, whether of brawn or brain, performed in a large degree out of love of the task, and not only because of the wage; that come from no noisy propaganda for something new and startling (as if there were such in all the world; as if history was not of late repeating various aspects of the turmoils and degradations of the past; as if Rome and Florence and the French Revolution were not having in some degree their revival!)—but that come from plain, healthy habits of life and thought; that come as the pleasure as well as the duty of the hour; and that bring a rich reward in genuine contentment and the approvals of conscience.

Under such headings may properly be brought the life work of the gentle Moravians—the story of a people of simple faith and constant good works. True, such community life as was theirs is not for us of today; but we might well heed their lessons as examples in cleanliness of life, and service to our fellow-men. In a different way, and yet pointing along somewhat similar lines of endeavor and





## EDITORIAL

attainment, is the story of the Hampton Institute, a creation by one of a lofty fellow-serving spirit; and that of the many benefactions by the Monroe and Marquand families. In each of these is found exemplification of the fact certified to us through the ages of human struggle, that the builder ever builds better than he knows; that

"Good is not a shapely mass of stone  
Hewn by man's hand, and hewn by him alone.  
It is a seed God suffers him to sow—  
Others will reap, and when the harvests grow  
He giveth increase thro' all coming years,  
And let's men reap in joy, seed that was sown in tears."

Nor to be omitted is mention of the pleasure to be derived from the exceedingly well told story of Jenny Lind, the sweet songstress whom our grandsires and granddames loved to hear. Her name will recall to those old memories a Parepa Rosa, a Patti, a Kellogg, and others famous in the world of song; but, in a deep way, none is so affectionately remembered as "the Swedish Nightingale," whose first and constant inspiration was her art, and the benefactions which its practice enabled her to bestow upon the poor and afflicted.

---

## LITERARY NOTES

An historical work of far more than ordinary worth is "Maine: A History," by Mr. Louis Clinton Hatch, Ph.D., of Bangor. To its making the author has brought every quality necessary to such a task—to begin with, that peculiarly deep personal interest which attaches alone to one native to the soil, "to the manner born;" and, besides, a well-stored mind, a discriminating judgment, and unflagging industry and perseverance, the latter trait well attested by the many references which mark the great majority of his pages. They bear an impress of thoroughness convincing us that no incident in the history of the State, from the coming of the first settlers down to the present time, necessary from the standpoint of the historical investigator, has been overlooked; while much matter of importance is here incorporated which until now has been sparingly treated or altogether neglected. It is a work that will have an ever-increasing value, and it may be confidently believed that many a writer and speaker of a future day will accept it as an unquestionable authority, and save himself much labor in original research. (The American Historical Society, Inc., New York, N. Y.).



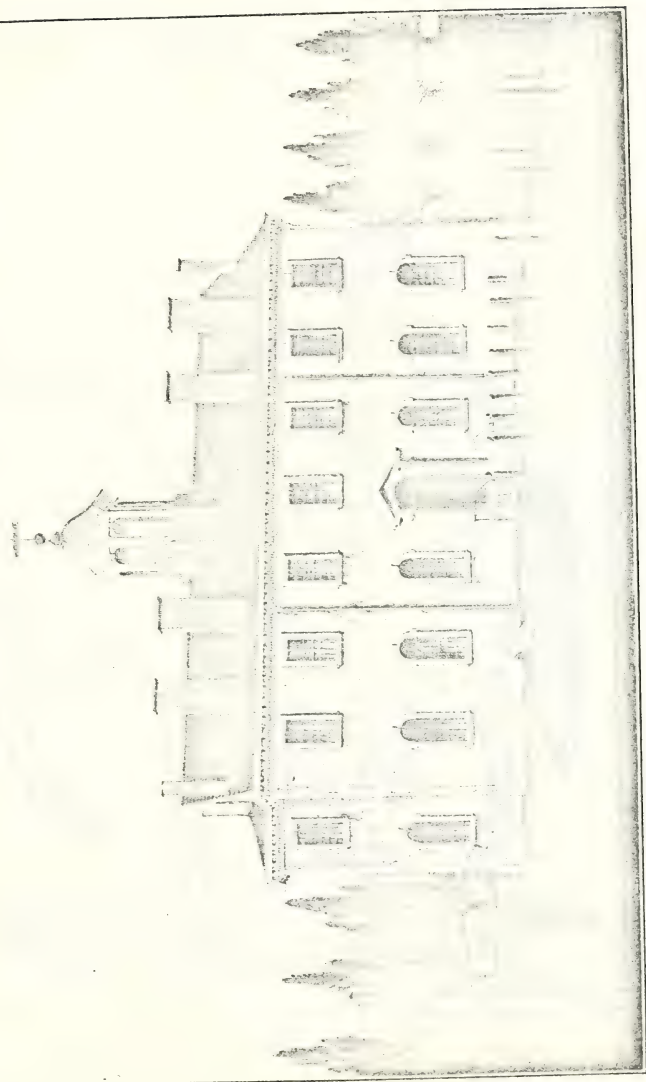
## EDITORIAL

From the Lont & Overkamp press at Paterson, New Jersey, comes a neat substantially bound volume of a hundred pages intended for use in the school rooms of that city—"Four Chapters of Paterson History: The War for Independence; The Early White Settlers; The Struggle for Industrial Supremacy; Municipal Administration."

The author of this work, Mr. Charles A. Shriner, of Paterson, a well known writer and former newspaper editor, explains in his foreword that it is a condensation of certain chapters which will appear in a three volume "History of Paterson," under the auspices of the Lewis Historical Publishing Company of New York City. The great bulk of the work is that of the late Mr. William Nelson, of Paterson, an author, historian and antiquarian of national fame, whose life was practically devoted to a study of New Jersey history, and who had made a wonderfully complete collection of records and papers from the first days of the colonial period. This is the material which Mr. Shriner is collating and editing for the forthcoming "History of Paterson," and which will be supplemented to date out of his own personal knowledge and from authentic sources of information. While the title of the work would suggest only a local significance, it is a fact that the matter is really so comprehensive as to make it of general worth throughout the entire State, and to historical students in the nation at large.







A. Frey del.

STATE CAPITOL OF NEW JERSEY AT TRENTON.

BUILT 1794

From an Old Print





New Jersey in the Re

about 1811

1811



WASHINGTON STATUE AT NEWARK



# AMERICANA

APRIL, 1920

## New Jersey in the Revolution

SOME SCENES IN AND ABOUT WHAT IS NOW THE CITY OF PATERSON

**W**HILE MANY a gallant patriot soldier from Acquackanonk, the Goffle, Totowa, Little Falls, Cedar Grove, Preakness, Pompton, Ringwood and West Milford, was to be found in the ranks of the American troops in those early days, War had not "reared his horrid front" within the present Passaic county, and it was not until November, 1776, that the peaceful region of Acquackanonk was desolated by the march of hostile armies. The battle of Long Island (August 27, 1776) had brought mingled hope and dismay to the patriots—hope, when they found how bravely our men could fight, and how skilfully they were commanded by Washington; dismay, when the disastrous defeat and the ominous retreat were heralded abroad. With painful apprehension they followed the course of the American leader and his diminishing band of heroes as they fell back to New York, and thence to Westchester county. After the battle at White Plains, on October 28, 1776, Washington, seeing the concentration of the British forces in that neighborhood, under Lient-Gen. Sir William Howe, conceived that it was the purpose of the enemy to march over into New Jersey. On November 6 he wrote that he regarded this design "as highly probable, and almost certain," and avowed his intention, as soon as he should be satisfied on this point, to forward part of his own forces into New Jersey to counteract the project of Howe. He had already ordered Brig-Gen. Adam Stephen, then at Trenton, with a Virginia brigade, to march forward to Gen. Greene, then at Fort Lee, and they were understood to be on the

NOTE—This narrative consists of excerpts from "History of Paterson and Its Environs," by Mr. Charles E. Shriner, (Lewis Historical Publishing Co., New York, in press). The orthographical variances as to names of places are ascribable to the various manuscripts from which they are taken.



way. They advanced with such extreme deliberation, however, that although they were at Princeton on the 8th, and although Gen. Mercer ordered them forward "with all expedition" to join Gen. Greene at Fort Lee, they never advanced further than Amboy. Gen. Greene counted confidently on their support. "I shall order Gen. Stephen on as far as *Equacanock* at least," he wrote to Gen. Washington, on November 9; "that is an important post. I am fortifying it as fast as possible."

From a military point of view Acquackanonk was of great importance. It was on the only direct route from Fort Lee to Newark and points south of that town, and the bridge across the river there was the only convenient means of crossing the Passaic without going so far out of the way as Totowa. The commanders of both armies appreciated the strategic importance of the Acquackanonk bridge, as we shall see presently. On the very day that Gen. Greene wrote, the bridge was being utilized by Gen. Mercer in hurrying forward troops to the relief of Greene, who reported the next day (November 10) to Washington: "Gen. Mercer is with me now. About five hundred more are marching from Amboy directly for Dobb's Ferry." The men brought by Gen. Mercer were probably the first considerable body of soldiery to march through Acquackanonk.

In the meantime Washington, in order to protect the Jerseys against the threatened British invasion, had ordered Gen. Lord Stirling to march from up the Hudson into New Jersey, to interpose his tried and true brigade between New Brunswick and Philadelphia, in order to cover the sittings of Congress. On November 10 Stirling crossed the Hudson at Haverstraw, and began his march down the west side of the river, passing Fort Lee on the 13th, and probably passing through Acquackanonk on the 14th, with eight regiments of foot, three of which he left at Rahway, and arrived with the other five at New Brunswick on November 17.

On November 7 the American commander wrote to Gov. Livingston, of New Jersey, advising "that the inhabitants contiguous to the water should be prepared to remove their stock, grain, effects, and carriages, upon the earliest notice. If they are not, the calamities they will suffer will be beyond description, and the advantages derived to the enemy immensely great. \* \* \* The article of forage is of great importance to 'em; not a blade should remain for their use. What cannot be removed with convenience should be





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

consumed without the least hesitation." His Adjutant-General, Joseph Reed, wrote at the same time, with prophetic vision, of the prospective invasion of New Jersey: "My heart melts within me at the thought of having that fine country desolated, for it is of little consequence which army passes. It is equally destructive to friend and foe." In accordance with Washington's advice, the Essex County Committee issued an address, urging the inhabitants of that county, especially "those living near the water, or on the great roads leading through the country, to remove their stock, grain, hay, carriages, and other effects, into some place of safety back into the country, that they may not fall into the enemy's hands." Many a farmer of Acquackanonk and vicinity sorely lamented three weeks later that he had not heeded this timely warning. Washington, on November 8, in justification of this harsh order, wrote: "Experience has shown that a contrary conduct is not of the least advantage to the poor inhabitants, from whom all their effects of every kind are taken, without distinction, and without the least satisfaction."

On November 9 Washington advised the President of Congress (the sturdy John Hancock) that Gen. Howe "still has in view an expedition to the Jerseys, and is preparing for it with the greatest industry." To check this threatened maneuver he had ordered a division to cross the Hudson river, which he hoped would pass over at Peekskill that day and another the next day, and he proposed to follow himself, "in order to put things in the best train I can, to give him [Howe] every possible opposition." The next day he hastened to Peekskill, to push the movement of his forces, and after two or three days of anxious inspection and direction, hurried down the river to Gen. Greene, at Fort Lee, where he arrived November 13. The next day he wrote that he proposed to quarter his troops at Brunswick, Amboy, Elizabethtown, Newark and about Fort Lee. Gen. Greene at this time had 4,682 officers and men on the Jersey shore, nearly half (2,158) of whom, however, were on out-guard or detached duty, 168 being stationed at Hackensack, Bergen, etc. On November 15 Washington was at Hackensack, whence he rode in the afternoon to Fort Lee, on hearing that Col. Magaw had been summoned to surrender Fort Washington, on the opposite shore of the Hudson river. The next day, to his intense mortification, and to the dismay of the Americans, that fort was captured by the British, after a brief but fierce engagement, with its garri-





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

son, 2,634 officers and men, besides great quantities of army stores. This disaster opened the way for the British to enter New Jersey, which they did by a very adroit movement on the rainy night of November 19, landing six or eight thousand men under command of Lieut.-Gen. Earl Cornwallis early next morning at or near Closter Dock, between Dobbs' Ferry and Fort Lee, and within five or six miles of the fort. By ten o'clock the startling news reached Washington, at Hackensack, who hastily galloped over to Gen. Greene's headquarters, where the intelligence was confirmed by a patriot farmer who had hurried from the scene at the landing. To this man's zeal Gen. Howe ascribed his failure to surround and capture the fort and garrison. Since the loss of the fortification on the opposite side of the river, Washington had been causing the stores and munitions to be removed from Fort Lee, with a view to distributing them at "Acquaykinac Bridge" and other places further south, where they "would not be subject to sudden danger in case the enemy should pass the [Hudson] river." This removal had not been fully accomplished at this time, and on the first impulse he ordered out the troops to meet the enemy, but finding they were facing greatly superior numbers, they were withdrawn. This post, garrisoned by only about 2,000 men, was obviously no longer tenable, so Gen. Greene hastily retreated, in some confusion, abandoning much stores and ordnance, and marched across country for Hackensack, six miles distant. The "New" bridge (as it is still called) across the broad Hackensack river, about two miles above the town, was distant six miles from the Americans, and but three miles from the British advance. Washington placed himself at the head of his troops, and marched them straight for the bridge. It was an anxious moment. Would the enemy dispute the passage? Fortunately they did not, and the greater part of the army crossed it in safety, others by the ferry, and still others by a mill-dam on a small creek between the bridge and the ferry, making their way through the marsh and over the river. It was about dusk when the head of the troops entered the village—a dark, cold and rainy night, the men "ragged, some without a shoe to their feet, and most of them wrapped in their blankets." Washington's headquarters had been located at Hackensack since November 15, in a private house of Peter Zabriskie, his mess table being supplied by Archibald Campbell, the tavern-keeper hard by. Orders, reports and letters had  
farm, south of the present Garrettsville



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

been issued from these headquarters in a steady stream on November 15, 16, 17, 18, 19 and 20; but now the situation was no longer safe. As he had been hemmed in between the Hudson and the Hackensack, so now he was similarly hemmed in between the Hackensack and the Passaic, with an overwhelming force opposed to him. He writes to Gen. Lee from Hackensack on the morning of November 21: "As this country is almost a dead flatt, we have not an entrenching tool, & not above 3,000 men, & they much broken & dispirited not only with our ill success, but the loss of their tents and baggage, I have resolved to avoid any attack, tho' by so doing, I must leave a very fine country open to their ravages, or a plentiful store house, from which they will draw voluntary supplies." One more letter the general wrote from Hackensack that same morning to the President of Congress, giving substantially the same reasons for his course. Then the sorrowful retreat was resumed. Before Washington left he rode down to the dock, where the bridge now is, near the court house, and viewed the enemy's encampment, stretched out in martial array on the opposite side of the river, then turned his horse's head and followed his diminished army. What were his emotions as he wheeled about from gazing on that martial host beyond, arrayed in all the insolence of power, and all the bright panoply of war, to look upon his little band of straggling soldiers, in tattered raiment, with downcast looks and laggard step, as they marched onward, inspired rather with anxious dread of the enemy behind them, than with hopes for future victory and their country's coming triumph? His own letters in the trying days that followed give some idea of the stubborn resolution, the fixed determination of the man to do his duty, whatever others might do, or say, or think, and to look forward, rather than backward. He shrank not from setting forth in the plainest terms the condition and the prospects of his army, and how much better both might have been, had his repeated entreaties and counsels been heeded. "*But as yesterday cannot be recalled,*" he says, "I will not dwell upon a subject, which, no doubt, has given much uneasiness to Congress, as well as extreme pain and anxiety to myself." It was with that spirit of indifference to the past, and confidence in the future that he led his heroic and suffering soldiers onward. Steadily yet anxiously they followed the lower road from Hackensack to the old Terhune farm, south of the present Corona; then turned northwesterly to



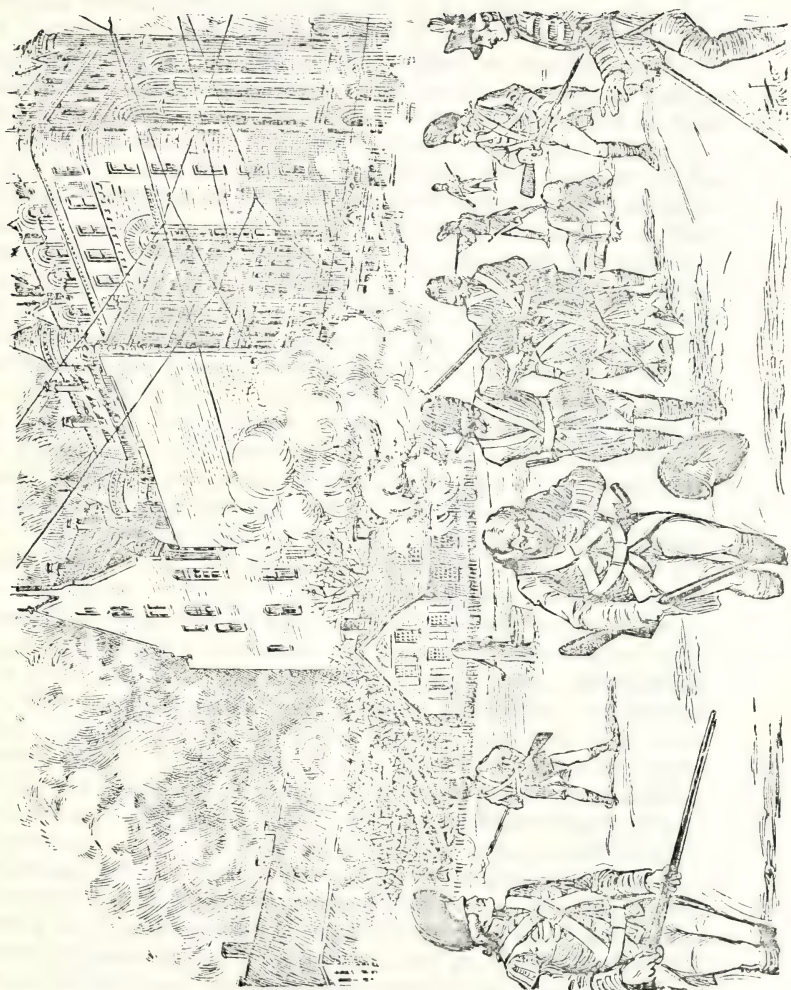
## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

Saddle river, which, if needful, might be placed between them and their pursuers. The road from the present Lodi to Garfield was next followed, and then the southern bank of the Passaic, until the bridge at Acquackanonk came in sight. How eagerly the men strained their vision to see if the British had arrived there first! But no, the enemy was not in sight, and the army passed safely over, and now had another large river to protect their retreat. Here Washington paused long enough to write a letter, dated "Acquackanonoc Bridge, 21 November, 1776," to Gov. Livingston, of New Jersey: "I have this moment arrived at this place with General Beall's and General [Nathaniel] Heard's brigades from Maryland and Jersey, and part of General [James] Ewing's from Pennsylvania. Three other regiments, left to guard the passes upon Hackinsac River, and to serve as covering parties, are expected up this evening. \* \* \* As our numbers are still very inadequate to that of the enemy, I imagine I shall be obliged to fall down towards Brunswic, and form a junction with the troops, already in that quarter, under the command of Lord Stirling." The regiments which had been left behind, having broken up the New bridge on the Hackensack, also passed over the Acquackanonk bridge, which was then destroyed, to hinder the enemy's pursuit.

A council of war being held, it was deemed inadvisable to make a stand north of the Raritan, and on the advance of the British the retreat was resumed at seven o'clock on the morning of Thursday, November 28, the army marching in two columns—one via Woodbridge (which was reached by sunset), and the other via Newark mountain, Springfield, Scotch Plains and Quibbletown, both columns converging at New Brunswick on Friday, November 29. Gen. Greene tersely summarizes the march in a letter from Trenton, December 4: "We retreated to Hackensack; from Hackensack to Equaconeck, from Equaconeck to Newark, from Newark to Brunswick, from Brunswick to this place." Both officers and men," says Tom Paine, in "The Crisis," No. I, "though greatly harassed and fatigued, frequently without rest, covering or provision, the inevitable consequences of a long retreat, bore it with a manly and martial spirit. All their wishes centered in one, which was, that the country would turn out and help them to drive the enemy back. None can say that our retreat was precipitate, for we were near three weeks in performing it, that the country might have time to







SKIRMISH AT NEWARK, NOW MARKET AND BROAD STREETS

From a drawing by Edwin S. Fancher, for the Newark "Sunday Call"



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

come in. Twice we marched back to meet the enemy, and remained out till dark. The sign of fear was not seen in our camp." It was with the memory of this retreat vivid in his mind that, under date of December 23, 1776, he issued the first number of "The Crisis," beginning with the burning words: "These are the times that try men's souls. The summer soldier and the sunshine patriot will, in this crisis, shrink from the service of his country; but he that stands it *now*, deserves the love and thanks of man and woman."

Having followed the retreating American army well out of the reach of the British, let us now return and accompany the victorious cohorts on their triumphal progress through this region of New Jersey. On November 21, the day after the Americans had quit Fort Lee and retired to Hackensack and Acquackanonk, Gen. Howe dispatched Maj.-Gen. Vaughan, with the Light Infantry and the British Grenadiers, to New Bridge, on the Hackensack, and a detachment of the Sixteenth Dragoons, under the command of Col. Harcourt, to Fort Lee. This latter detachment, with some companies of the Light Infantry, scoured the country on the 22d, as far as the Passaic, as already related, only to find that the Americans had abandoned the intermediate country, and were safely established at and beyond Acquackanonk. On this day Howe had his headquarters at DeLancey's Mills, on the New York side of the Hudson. Significantly enough, the parole for the day was "Cornwallis," and the countersign, "Jersey." The same day Gen. Howe "went to Jersey," probably to have a conference regarding the next move to be made, with Lord Cornwallis, who then lay about three miles from Fort Lee. Their counsels were protracted until a late hour, as the general did not return to his quarters until eleven o'clock that night. Doubtless in pursuance of the arrangements then made between the two generals, the Second and Fourth Brigades of the British and a battalion of the Seventy-first Highlanders reinforced his Lordship on the 24th. Leaving the Second Brigade at Fort Lee, he advanced on November 25 with the main body to New Bridge, and probably to the Passaic river at Acquackanonk, the same day, as heavy firing was said to have been heard from that vicinity, beginning early in the morning. He was delayed in his march by the weather, it raining heavily all the time, and by the fact that all the bridges on the route had been destroyed by the Americans. Although he did not hesitate to march his troops through shallow



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

streams, despite the cold, he was at a loss just where to attempt the passage of the Passaic. Accordingly, his soldiers were spread out along the eastern bank of the river, encamping on the high ground extending from the Saddle river northerly along the hillside nearly or quite to the Dundee dam, where Adrian Post then had his grist and saw-mills. The next day, November 26, he determined to cross the river by the ford just below the dam. The river was full of ice, and he also feared that there might be deep holes into which his men might flounder if they attempted to wade across without a guide. So Adrian Post, the oldest son of Adrian, the miller, at Slotterdam, was pressed into the service, and at the point of the bayonet was compelled to wade through the icy water, and lead the troops across by the ford. He was only twenty years old at the time, and the exposure brought on a cold and rheumatism which made him an invalid until his death, twelve years later. The British army having crossed the river, followed the Wesel road to Acquackanonk bridge, and thence passed down the River road, on the west bank of the Passaic, until they came to Second River and Newark.

In Stedman's map (*Hist. of the War, I., opp. p. 214*), showing the movements of the Americans and of the British in November, 1776, it is indicated that Lord Cornwallis took the "road down the meadows," or toward Boiling Spring, on November 28. It is possible but highly improbable that one column took the road on the east side of the Passaic as far as Lyndhurst, where there was a ford, and there crossed to the west side. There was no bridge over the river below Acquackanonk, and the depth and width of the river below Lyndhurst would have made fording out of the question. The date, November 28, moreover, is certainly erroneous.

Writing from Newark, on November 27, Washington says: "I have nothing in particular to advise you of respecting the enemy, more than that they are advancing this way. Part of them have passed the Passaic." That same night he learned that the British had advanced near Second River, and at once issued orders for his army to be put under arms early the next morning for another retrograde movement, which began at seven o'clock. As Washington wrote a day or two later: "The enemy's advanced guards were entering the town [Newark] by the time our rear got out." Another writer says: "We hear the enemy weré on the march through





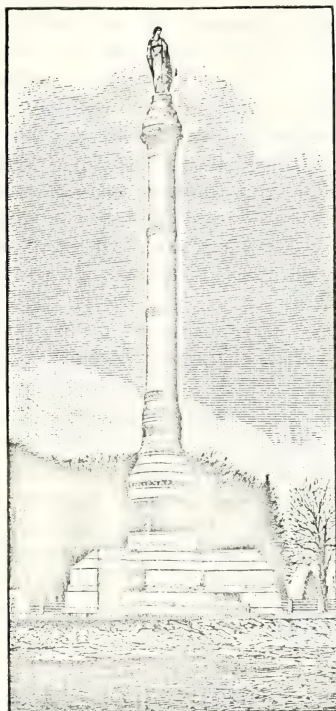
# NEW JERSEY IN THE P

ROW 3

ished.

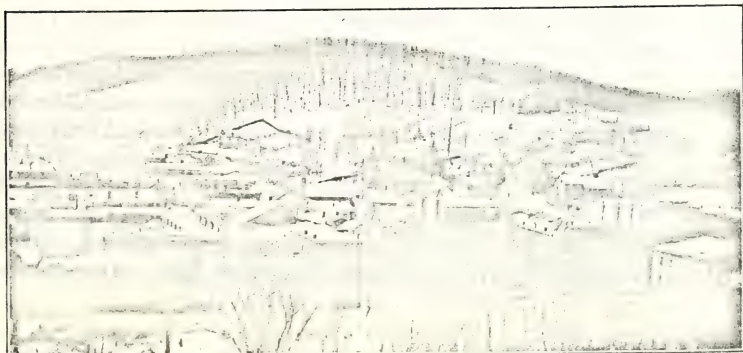
Princeton was the British Eng courage and cor CRUSE

1. and front of



1000 0000

MONMOUTH BATTLE FIELD



FORT NONSENSE, MORRISTOWN





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

the town [Newark] soon after we left." Gen. Howe reported: "On the enemy retiring from Newark, as his Lordship approached, he took possession of that place on the 28th [of November], and is now following them, retreating towards Brunswick." And so the retreat and the leisurely pursuit went on as far as Brunswick, where Gen. Howe called a halt, and Cornwallis was restrained in his purpose to fall upon and crush Washington and his little army, who were so soon to turn and strike that double blow at Trenton and Princeton which was to send a shock of consternation throughout the British Empire, and to thrill the American patriots with pride, courage and confidence in their Washington, their army and their cause.

The precise composition of the British army that marched through Acquackanonk at the time of the second invasion, is somewhat uncertain. It probably consisted of the First and Second Battalions of Light Infantry, two battalions of the Guards, two companies of Chasseurs, two battalions of Grenadiers, the Thirty-third and Forty-second Regiments, a battalion of the Seventy-First Highlanders, and a detachment of Light Dragoons, and two other British brigades. Besides these there were two battalions of Hessian Grenadiers and the Hessian Jägers, these mercenaries being under the command of Col. Donop. The latter formed the advance guard, and kept the flanks covered, so that these men were often under fire, which naturally did not tend to improve their disposition toward the natives.

When this invading army had disappeared toward the South, the people of Acquackanonk began to breathe more freely. But alas, their sensation of relief was of short duration. On November 28, Gen. Howe sent across the Hudson, into New Jersey, Rall's (formerly Stirn's) brigade, comprising the regiments of Rall, Knyphausen and Lossberg, who camped for the night at Fort Lee, and the next day marched to Hackensack, "a small town, consisting of about 160 old houses, and there the inhabitants, mostly Hollanders, were favorably disposed towards the King," says one of the Hessian officers, "so the troops were quartered there." Thence they followed the forces of Cornwallis, marching through Acquackanonk, Second River, Newark, Elizabethtown, and so on to New Brunswick (which the Rall brigade reached December 8) and Trenton, where they were destined to fall into the hands of Washington



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

on the following December 26. They were sorely disappointed to find how thoroughly their comrades in arms had stripped the country the week previous. Still, they managed to pick up a few trifles here and there.

While Washington was in the most desperate straits for want of reinforcements, Gen. Charles Lee, whom he had repeatedly begged, entreated and positively ordered to hasten to his relief, after three weeks of inexcusable delay began his leisurely march toward the Delaware on December 5, on which day he left Haverstraw with "an army of five thousand good troops in spirits." He reached Ringwood Iron Works on December 6, and Pompton on the 7th, pausing at the latter place to write a long letter in which he indites the aphorism, "Theory joined to practice, or a heaven-born genius, can alone constitute a General." He meant Charles Lee; but by a curious irony of fate, as he would have said, or, rather, by the hand of an overruling Providence, within three weeks he was a prisoner of the British, through his own stupidity or by his treasonable connivance, and Washington, whom he sought to undermine, was the admiration of the world, and proved that he exactly met either of Lee's criteria as to what constituted a general. On December 8 Gen. Lee reached Morristown, marching from Pompton through Lower Preakness, with three thousand ill-shod men. This was the first time that an army had been seen west of Totowa. It was destined to be a familiar spectacle in that region during the next four years.

Writing from Morristown on December 11, to Gen. Heath, whom he expected to follow him, Gen. Lee says, with a somewhat hazy notion of local topography: "I would recommend to you, if you are at Ramapouch or Pompton, to take your route either by the Great or Little Falls; if by the Great Falls, you may come by Hachquacknock. If by the Little Falls, you may inquire for Newark Mountains, and come a route at a small distance from the river." Three of Heath's regiments, from Ticonderoga, reached Morristown about two weeks later, marching via Paramus, Totowa and Little Falls.

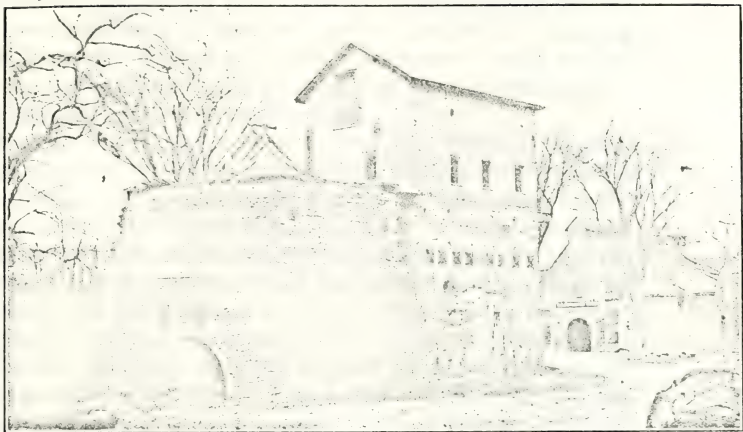
The British reverses at Trenton and at Princeton caused a withdrawal of their forces from Newark and Hackensack, so that the Moravian preacher in New York regretfully remarked (January, 1777) that "the rebels were again in those places." Gen. Washington ordered Gen. Lincoln to cross the Hudson and join him at Mor-



NEW JERSEY IN THE REV.

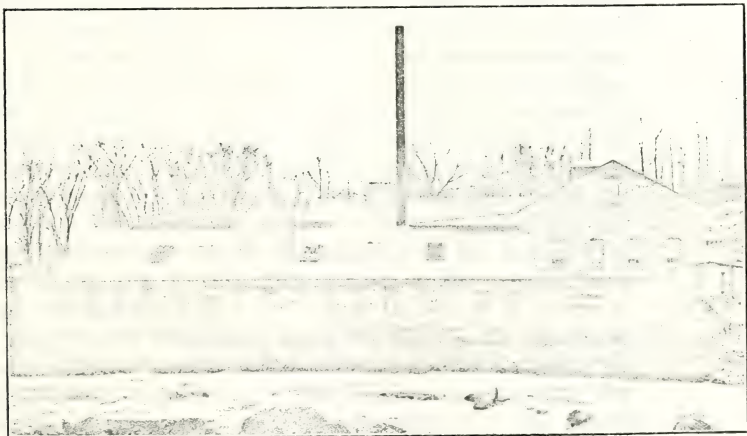
OLD IN FEBRUARY, 1862

THE JUNE.



RUINS OF OLD OXFORD FURNACE, WARREN COUNTY

Where cannon balls were made for Washington's army



CRADLE OF IRON INDUSTRY

Site of Old Forge where cannon balls were made for Washington's Army. Now under the waters of Jersey City Reservoir





ristown, which he did in February, probably marching via Ringwood and Pompton. On February 19, 1777, Washington wrote from Morristown that he had been informed "that many of the Inhabitants near the Passaick Falls, are busily employed in removing their stock Provision & Forage within the Enemy's reach with a design of supplying them." Let us hope that he was misinformed respecting this alleged unpatriotic conduct.

Gen. Nathaniel Heard had a body of the Jersey militia at Pompton in May, where he threw up defensive works, between Pompton and Slater's mills, one of the forts in the latter region being known thirty years later as "Federal Hill," doubtless in commemoration of its military use in the Revolution. These works were precautionary, to defend the approaches from the North River, either by Smith's Clove and the Ramapo valley, by Paramus or by Ringwood. Pompton not only commanded these several roads towards Morristown, but was important on account of the iron furnaces and forges and the shops where cannon balls were made for the American army, in a long, low building almost directly opposite the present Norton House. These munitions were carried by a circuitous route through the Ramapo valley or Paramus, and hence locally known to this day as "the Cannon Ball road." Gen. Heard kept a sharp lookout for Tories and British soldiers on every hand, but in view of the arrival, June 2, of additional mercenaries from Hesse-Cassel, etc., and threatened advances of the enemy, Washington directed him, May 24, to "move down part of his militia towards Aquackanoc." We have no account of this march, but on June 25 Gen. Washington requested Gen. Philemon Dickinson, in command of the New Jersey militia, to "send up Gen. Heard with about 500 men to Pompton, to take his old station." Under the orders of the ever-vigilant commander-in-chief, detachments of his armies frequently marched to and fro through Pompton, as the exigencies of the situation demanded.

A very difficult old wood-road leads on top of the mountain directly north of the Pompton Lakes railroad station northerly to Ringwood, and local tradition says that this was used during the Revolution by the Ryersons, great iron-masters, for the secret transportation of cannon balls to the British. In answer to this it may be noted that while this section of five or six miles of road might serve for secret transportation, there would



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

remain twenty miles or more of open country through which to cart the cannon balls. Second, the Ryersons did not own the iron mines during the Revolution. Thirdly, the story had its origin during the War of 1812. In 1821 Jacob M. Ryerson, who then owned the mining property, traced the report to two well known citizens, and compelled them to acknowledge, in a Newark newspaper of the day, over their own signatures, that they did not believe there was any basis for the rumor. When the late Jacob S. Rogers, by the erection of a dam, increased the area of Rotten pond from eight acres to 102 acres, he rebuilt a part of the Cannon-Ball road.

The most important military operation in this vicinity in 1777 was the sudden and well-planned invasion of New Jersey from New York, under Sir Henry Clinton, on the night of September 11, the object being partly to create a diversion in favor of the British army at Philadelphia, partly to surprise and carry off any stray body of American troops, but mainly to strip the country of cattle. The invaders were divided into four columns. The first, under Brig.-Gen. John Campbell, made up of the 7th, 26th and 52d Regiments, the Ansbach and Waldeck (German) Grenadiers, and 300 of the Provincials (New Jersey Loyalists), landed at Elizabethtown Point at 4 o'clock in the morning of September 12. The second column was commanded by Sir Henry Clinton in person, and consisted of two pieces of cannon, 250 recruits of the 71st regiment, Bayard's corps, some convalescents, and a battalion of the New Jersey Volunteers (Loyalists), 250 strong, the whole detachment being led by Capt. Robert Drummond, the erstwhile patriot merchant of Acquackanonk. This column sailed up the Hackensack river on the morning of September 12, to Schuyler's Ferry, and thence marched across the Neck to Schuyler's, at the Passaic, opposite Second River, where they found Capt. Sutherland, with 250 men, who had been there some time. The cannon were put in position on the Schuyler heights, back from the river, so as to command the road on the Second River side of the stream. The third column, led by Maj. Gen. Vaughan, and comprising Capt. Emmerich's chasseurs, five companies of grenadiers and light infantry, the 57th, 63d and Prince Charles's regiments, and five pieces of very light artillery, effected a landing at Fort Lee, and marched to New Bridge, where a battalion with two pieces of cannon remained, to cover that



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

important pass; the rest of the corps proceeded to Hackensack, leaving a post there, while the main body marched down to Sloomerdam, to receive and coöperate with the two columns which had landed at Elizabethtown Point and at Schuyler's Ferry, and which were to advance from those points to Acquackanonk. The fourth column, under Lieut. Col. Campbell, crossed at Tappan, there being 200 Provincials and 40 marines in this party; he was to remain at Tappan, but being pressed fell down to New Bridge.

Gen. Campbell met with much success at Elizabethtown Point and vicinity, and marched northward to Newark and thence to Second River, which he reached in the night of Friday, September 12, with large droves of cattle, gathered on the way. By direction of Sir Henry Clinton he halted there until morning. On Saturday, September 13, the Americans had rallied in considerable force, and had three pieces of artillery in position on the heights west of the river. There was a brisk skirmish during the day, between Col. Van Buskirk's battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, and the patriot militia, comprising part of Col. Philip Van Cortlandt's regiment and other companies, under command of Gen. William Winds, of Morris county. The country was becoming so thoroughly aroused that Clinton deemed it prudent to move on, and at daybreak of Sunday, September 14, the invaders started northward, proceeding through the Third River neighborhood and Acquackanonk to Sloomerdam, where Gen. Vaughan was in waiting. Needless to say, the whole country was scoured for cattle and plunder of every kind. Having assembled his little army and the cattle, Clinton directed Gen. Vaughan to march to New Bridge, and Gen. Campbell towards Hackensack, and thence to New Bridge, where both columns assembled on Monday, September 15th, and thence retired, (September 16) to New York, having lost eight men killed, eighteen wounded, ten missing, and five taken prisoners. They carried off 400 cattle, 400 sheep, and a few horses.

The theatre of military operations was now transferred to the neighborhood of Philadelphia, and both armies were hastened thither, the American troops from the North River marching via Pompton, Morristown, etc. Col. Aaron Burr took the same route with his regiment from Paramus. Gen. I. Varnum wrote him, October 1, 1777, that he feared the enemy intended marching via the Clove to Fort Montgomery, and he accordingly directed him to





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

“keep a good lookout towards Newark, Elizabethtown, &c., or those places from whence they can march into Pumpton. Should you be in danger of being interrupted there, throw your party across the river in Pumpton, and defend the bridge, if practicable.”

The enemy's incursions in September, 1777, having shown the need of some system of alarming the country, the New Jersey Council of Safety requested the Rev. James Caldwell to set up one or two beacons “to the Northward of New Ark, and that he be requested to appoint proper persons to take the care of & attend them & that the person so provided, Shall be exempted, when known, from Military duty—” There is a somewhat vague local tradition to the effect that one of these beacons was on that summit or peak of the First or Wesel mountain on the north side of the Great Notch. The character of these beacons is thus described: “Near Morris Town, a Beacon 40 Feet high has been erected in form of a Block House (with a 6 Pounder on the Top) filled with Dry Wood and other Combustible Stuff, for the Purpose of catching fire soon, in order to the more quick discharge of the Cannon, on the Report of which, and the Light from the Building, the Country is to take the Alarm.”

\* \* \* \*

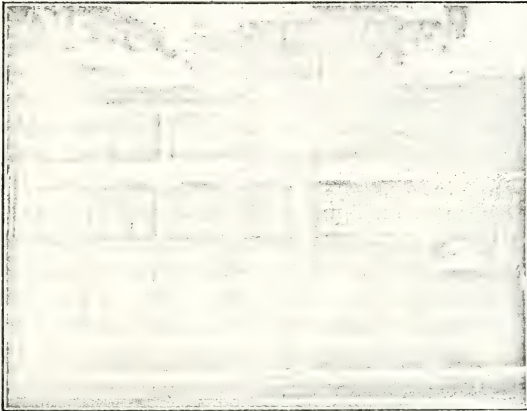
When Washington broke camp on June 18, 1778, after the long and dreary sojourn at Valley Forge, it was his original intention to send the 1st, 3d and 5th Divisions, under Gen. Charles Lee, the Marquis Lafayette and Lord Stirling, respectively, via Morristown, Pompton Bridge, Sufferns, etc., to Newburgh; but the enemy's evacuation of Philadelphia, and retreat across Jersey, prompted him to pursue and engage the British, with the battle of Monmouth, June 28, 1778, as the result. On Sunday, July 5, his army left Brunswick, to carry out his first plan of marching to the North River, proceeding by easy stages: “1st, to Scotch Plains; 2d, Springfield; 3d, Wardiston [Watsessing]; 4th, Acquackanonk; 5th, Paramus; 6th, Cakaryatt [Kakeat]; 7th, King's Ferry, where the army crossed.” The weather was excessively hot all the way from Monmouth Court House, July 1, until July 11, which made short marches advisable. Washington was at Newark on July 8, and had his headquarters at Acquackanonk on July 9. He probably marched the next day to Paramus, where he halted until the 15th, with two of his divisions, the court martial for the trial of Gen.





Lee (for his entrance)

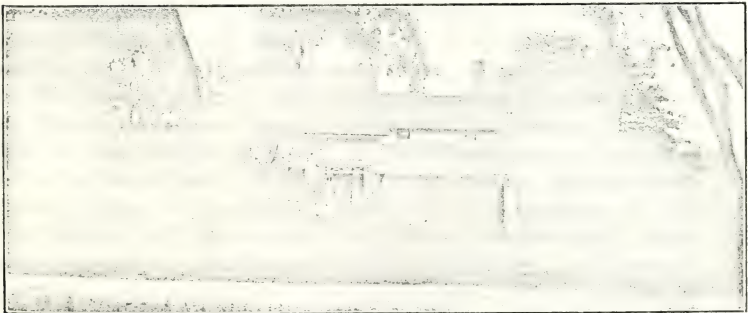
(small)



COLONIAL HOUSE, HADDONFIELD

Here, Sept., 1777. New Jersey changed from a Colony to a State

farm



BONNELL HOMESTEAD OF REVOLUTIONARY TIMES, CHATHAM



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

Charles Lee (for his extraordinary behavior at Monmouth) meanwhile sitting in the Paramus church.

On September 22 a large body of the enemy came across the North River from New York, on an extensive foraging expedition, and marched to New Bridge, where they fortified, while sending out parties in all directions for forage and fresh provisions. Another party came down to Polifly, where they also threw up entrenchments. A number of vessels were sent up the Hackensack and Passaic rivers at the same time, to facilitate the carrying away of the plunder. Gen. William Winsor's brigade took post at Paramus, convenient to the enemy's redoubt at New Bridge, but presently fell down to Acquackanonk, whence they marched to Hackensack on the morning of September 27 with upwards of one thousand men, in high spirits. The fort at Polifly was captured after a brief skirmish. Upon reaching Hackensack he found the enemy had retired to New Bridge, whither he followed, and offered them battle, which they declined. Having cleared the country of the invaders, Gen. Winsor returned with his men in fine feather to Acquackanonk. He chased another party of the enemy down the road toward Second River, having a sharp encounter with them on the way.

In order the more readily to check other forays of this kind, Lord Stirling established his headquarters at Acquackanonk for some weeks, his troops being located at convenient intervals between Wesel and Second River. Some of his men were stationed on the farms of Henry Garritse, Peter Peterse, and others, along the west side of the Wesel road, near Clifton, between that road and the present Erie railroad. The stone floors of their huts, and their rude bake-ovens, were plainly discernible thirty or forty years ago.

Another raid of the British in October having been repulsed, Lord Stirling wrote from "Aquakanoc," October 13, ordering Col. Elias Dayton to move with two regiments from Second River to Elizabethtown; and he removed his own headquarters two days later to the latter town. Gen. Woodford's brigade marched from Paramus, October 16, to Newark, doubtless via Acquackanonk. On October 29 they left Newark again and "set out for Pompton, where they took quarters and detached parties to repair the road between Morristown and King's Ferry" on the Hudson. About the end of November the American army left the Hudson river on the way to winter quarters at Middlebrook, New Jersey. Washington set out



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

for that place on November 28, and on December 3 reached Elizabethtown. He doubtless passed through Acquackanonk on December 2 or 3.

On December 5 Washington made a hasty trip from Elizabethtown to Paramus, whence he returned in a few days to Middlebrook, where the army went into winter quarters. He undoubtedly passed through Acquackanonk on his way to Paramus, on December 5, and probably on December 8, also, on the return to Middlebrook, although the latter journey may have been taken via Pompton, Pacquanae and Morristown. The Pennsylvania Line, under Gen. Anthony Wayne, left Paramus on December 9, and doubtless camped that night at "Acquackanaek Bridge," where they remained December 10 and 11. Perhaps it was from a desire to make a specially good impression on the fair maidens of Totowa and Acquackanonk that before leaving Paramus this division was ordered out on parade "in the most Soldierly manner Possible, their arms and a Cou-trements in the Best Order. The Quartermaster will draw flour for the men to Clean their jacoots & Breches and to Powder their hair."

It was not until May, 1779, that the march of hostile bands again disturbed the peace of old Acquackanonk. On the 17th of that month a considerable body of British troops (a detachment of the 71st, and 100 men from the 17th and 57th regiments each), under Capt. Ferguson, crossed the Hudson river, intending to march to Paramus and cut off a party of Americans there, while the 63d and 64th regiments marched to New Bridge, to support the movement. The troops got separated in the night, however, and the expedition was unsuccessful. Some of the detachments appear to have taken the road below Paramus, which brought them into the present Paterson, probably by the ford at the foot of Park avenue.

On May 29 Washington's army broke camp at Middlebrook and started with all speed for West Point, to check a British advance in that direction. The Pennsylvania division, commanded by Gen. St. Clair, marched first, reaching Springfield by May 30, Troy on June 1, Pompton Plains on June 2, Pompton on June 4, Ringwood on June 5, and Galloway's the next day. The Virginia division, commanded by Lord Stirling, started on June 2 for Pompton, and the Maryland division, under Baron de Kalb, on June 3. The strictest discipline was enjoined on the march. "No Horses must be put into any Incloser, But such as the forrage Master Provides, and, in





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

Gen<sup>l</sup>, every species of Injury to the Inhabitants Must be Carefully avoyded. \* \* [Pompton, June 4:] All the Flour that is Drawn this day to be Cooked Imediatly, and the Beef, likewise, with the Greatest Dispatch \* \* [Ringwood, June 5:] No Rails to be Burned on any Pretence. The Grass Guard must be very alert to Prevent the horses to exceed the Bounds allowed them. Soldiers are Positively forbidden Stragling or leaving the Camp." Gen. St. Clair was at Pompton on June 3, and Gen. Nathanael Greene, then quartermaster-general, on the evening of the 4th, who found the troops entirely without provisions, although they were to march early the next morning. Washington followed without delay, on June 3, and on June 6 wrote from Ringwood Iron Works to the President of Congress, imparting his latest intelligence regarding the enemy's movements.

The army remained in the vicinity of West Point until November, when Washington ordered it into New Jersey, for winter quarters, intending to locate the main body in the neighborhood of Scotch Plains. The Maryland Line started from West Point on November 26, says Capt. William Beatty, who adds: "On Which day We march'd as far as Smith's Clove through a heavy Snow that Was falling on our rout to Winter Qrs. We Continued our march by the Way of Ramapough Clove Pumpton Bottle Hill," etc. Washington followed by the same route, arriving at Morristown by December 4, and there had his headquarters during the winter in the handsome residence erected by Col. Jacob Ford, and now maintained, in honor of the general's occupancy, by the Washington Association of New Jersey.

Washington's main army, half-frozen and half-starved, remained in their winter quarters about Morristown until summer, and there was little to disturb the welcome peace within the present Passaic county. The first military movement through Totowa and Acquackanonk this year is indicated in a letter from Washington, at Morristown, January 14: "I have directed Lieutenant Colonel Dehart," he says, "with a detachment of two hundred and fifty men, to move from Paramus to Newark," etc. A more interesting event was the arrival of the Marquis de Lafayette, who upon landing in America hastened from New England with all speed, to tender to Washington in person the assurances of his royal master's support. The commander-in-chief wrote him, May 8, from Morristown: "Major



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

Gibbs [commandant of Washington's Life Guards] will go as far as Pompton, where the roads unite, to meet you, and will proceed from thence as circumstances may direct." We may be sure that the patriotic people of Pompton and vicinity gave an enthusiastic greeting to the gallant young Frenchman as he passed through the village a day or two later. On June 21, Washington broke camp, and marched slowly toward Pompton, arriving there probably on June 26, and at Ramapo the next day, where he remained until June 30. The movements of the army were greatly hampered by the lack of transportation facilities. "We have at Pompton, and Mount Hope furnaces," writes Col. John Lamb, June 29, 1780, "between five and six thousand eighteen pound balls, and three thousand shells, for the French 9 inch mortars, but I have not been able to have them transported to West Point, by reason of the utter inability of the Quarter Master General's department." It was two weeks later before they were forwarded. Major Samuel Shaw wrote, July 14, 1780, from "Camp at Pracaness," to Col. John Lamb: "A number of carcasses [shells] go on to-day from Pompton to the commanding officer of artillery at Stoney or Verplank's Point, who has orders to forward them to you at West Point, where the General [Knox] wishes to have them filled as soon as possible." Lieut. W. Price, at Stoney Point, July 16, writes: "I have just received 65 Carcasses from Pompton Furnace \* \* \* and there Is more a Comeing tonight."

On July 4, 1780, Washington had arrived from Ramapo with his army at Totowa, where he spread out his troops, while he established his headquarters in the handsome and spacious residence of Col. Theunis Dey, at Lower Preakness. Two brigades which he had left at Morristown under Gen. Greene to protect the country, marched thence on June 25 and reached Preakness on July 1. The main body of the army was encamped along the Totowa heights, near the Great Falls, the centre on the high ground back of the present Laurel Grove cemetery, the right toward Little Falls, and the left at or near Oldham (Haledon). Col. Stephen Moylan's Pennsylvania dragoons occupied an advanced position, at Little Falls, southeast of the river, toward the Notch. The Marquis de Lafayette had his headquarters at the grist-mill of Samuel Van Saun, near the race track at Lower Preakness, about a mile and a half north of Washington's headquarters.



MAP  
SHOWING THE LOCATION  
OF THE  
AMERICAN ARMY  
AT  
TOTOWA AND PLEAKNESS, N. J.,  
AND VICINITY,  
OCTOBER AND NOVEMBER,  
1780.





The Dey house is on the road leading from Laurel Grove cemetery westerly and northwesterly toward Lower Preakness and Mountain View, being about four miles west of the Paterson city hall, and about two and a half miles from the Passaic river at the cemetery mentioned, and is one hundred yards north of the road which it faces. When Washington honored it with his presence the dwelling must have been one of the finest in New Jersey, for it is yet remarkable for its architectural symmetry and the artistic finish of its masonry. It is two stories in height, with a double pitch roof, through which dormer windows were thrust about 1875, giving it the appearance of a mansard. The building is about fifty-two feet long and thirty feet deep. The front is of brick, the doorway and windows framed in polished brown sandstone, squared and set in the most accurate manner; the sides and rear are of rubble work, the windows and doors trimmed with brick, the end walls above the eaves being also carried up in brick. All the masonry is laid up in yellow clay, pointed on the outside with mortar, yet the walls are perfectly firm, and are apparently good for another hundred years. The timbers, where exposed, in the cellar and attic, are of hewn oak, of the most massive description, and all morticed and fastened together with wooden pins. Through the centre, from south to north, runs a hall twelve feet wide, on either side of which are two rooms, a fireplace faced with rubbed sandstone in each. The arrangement of the second floor is the same, so that there are eight large apartments, besides a large open attic. The ceilings on the first floor are about nine feet, and on the upper floor eight feet high. Nearly all the rooms are decorated with neat wooden cornices, fluted in the colonial style. According to the Marquis de Chastellux, Washington occupied four of the rooms—probably two on each floor. Tradition has mainly preserved reminiscences of one room—in the southeast corner of the first floor; this is pointed out as "Washington's room." It was his audience chamber and dining room; the family dined in the spacious hall. The wall above the fireplace in the general's office is ornamented with elaborate wooden paneling and pilasters, rayed and fluted, to correspond with the cornices. Washington is said to have papered the walls at his own expense, and the paper was not removed until about 1870.

"The distresses of the officers and soldiers have become intolerable," writes Gen. Knox, from Preakness, July 27, 1780. Washing-





ton's letters while at Preakness are variously dated, perhaps to mislead the enemy should they fall into hostile hands; in some cases, no doubt, the location was designated in the manner most likely to be understood by the person addressed. For example: July 10—"Head Quarters, near Passaic;" July 14—"Bergen County;" July 20—"Head Quarters, near Passaic;" the same day—"Head Quarters, Colonel Dey's;" July 22—"Head Quarters, Preakness," and "Head Quarters, Bergen County." Gen. Knox wrote, July 12, from "Camp at Prakenis." In a letter from "Camp Precaness," July 28, the latter complains bitterly of the delay by the States in furnishing men and equipments, which neglect had frustrated many hopeful plans of the commander-in-chief. Lafayette wrote to his wife: "Human patience has its limits. No European army would suffer the tenth part of what the American troops suffer. It takes citizens to support hunger, nakedness, toil, and the total want of pay, which constitute the condition of our soldiers, the hardest and most patient that are to be found in the world." These tributes to the heroic endurance, the incomparable patience, of the soldiers, would seem to be sufficient answers to Lee's sneering suggestion that the Pennsylvania Line ought to be called the "Irish Line," and to Bancroft's exaltation of the New England troops, on the score of their alleged native Americanism, over those of Pennsylvania and New Jersey. The revolt of the Connecticut Line in the ensuing May showed that the appreciation of hardship and injustice was as keen among the heroic soldiers of one State as of another.

Those who were paid received Continental currency which, despite legislative fiats, had depreciated until a silver dollar would equal seventy-five paper dollars. Vainly had the New Jersey Legislature endeavored by solemn enactments to regulate the prices of labor and products; nor had the courts been more successful. To add to the discontent, the men who had enlisted for "three years or during the war," and who had endured the dangers and privations of army life for three full years, discovered to their dismay that there was a disposition to hold them to the other alternative of their enlistment, or "during the war." While the veterans were unpaid, new recruits received bounties in silver. Under the rankling sense of injustice from these causes, fomented no doubt by paid agents of the British, and stimulated by an unusually generous allowance of liquor for the celebration of New Year's Day, the



Pennsylvania Line mutinied at nine o'clock at night, on January 1, 1781, and the next day marched, under the command of their sergeants, toward Philadelphia, to compel Congress to redress their grievances. The Pennsylvania State authorities sent commissioners to treat with the mutineers, and after several days of temporizing adjusted matters. Gen. Wayne ordered the Jersey Brigade to Chatham, on January 2, and the militia were called out, to check any attempt of the enemy to take advantage of the revolt, and invade the State.

The effect of the Pennsylvania mutiny and its essential success was to increase the discontent elsewhere. Gen. Washington, on January 7, significantly suggested to Gen. Heath the wisdom of sending a reinforcement of 100 men from West Point "towards Pompton, to cover the stores at Ringwood, and to act as occasion might require." The same day, Gen. St. Clair reported that some appearance of a disposition in the Jersey troops to revolt induced Lieut.-Col. Francis Barber, of the Third Regiment, who commanded the brigade, to move 300 or 400 of them to Chatham. Part of them, however, about one hundred and sixty in number, remained at Pompton, nursing their grievances. Some of the officers waited on the Legislature and insisted that their arrears of pay should be settled on the basis of seventy-five paper dollars for one in specie. That body hastily complied, and ordered all the money in the treasury to be sent up to the men. Commissioners—the Rev. James Caldwell and Col. Frederick Frelinghuysen—were also appointed to inquire into the claims of such soldiers of the brigade as conceived themselves entitled to a discharge on account of the expiration of their enlistments, but the men had not been informed of this action. As day after day went by and nothing was done, the men at Pompton finally got tired of waiting. Having received a part of their pay in almost worthless paper, they spent it for rum. On Saturday evening, January 20, they rose in arms and placed themselves under the command of Sergt.-Maj. George Grant, of the Third New Jersey Regiment, a deserter from the British army. Grant appears to have been an unusually intelligent fellow. He was in Gen. Sullivan's campaign against the Indians in 1779, and kept a journal of the expedition, which is published. Sergt. Jonathan Nichols, of Capt. Alexander Mitchell's company, First New Jersey Regiment, was second in command, and the third in command was



Sergt.-Maj. John Minthorn, also of the First Regiment. Some of the more reckless of the men declared that unless they got redress in the matter of pay, clothing, etc., they would join the enemy. The house where one of their officers lodged was surrounded and broken open, and with threats of immediate death in case of refusal they compelled him to give up the muster rolls. Col. Israel Shreve, of the Second Regiment, vainly urged them to desist, nor would they obey his orders to parade. Next they seized two fieldpieces, and marched off to join the rest of the brigade at Chatham. The movement excited no little uneasiness among the friends of America, and much exultation on the part of the enemy. It was rumored that the mutineers were about to march to Elizabethtown. This was interpreted as meaning that there they would receive overtures from Sir Henry Clinton. He ordered Gen. Robertson, with two or three thousand men, from New York to Staten Island, to be in readiness to cross over to Elizabethtown and coöperate with the revolting Jersey soldiers. He also sent one Uzal Woodruff, of Elizabethtown, a cousin of Sergt. Nichols, with proposals to the mutineers. They, however, when they left their quarters at Pompton, had adopted a solemn resolution to put to death any one who should attempt or even propose to go to the enemy's lines, and hang up without ceremony every Tory who should presume to say a word tending to induce any of them to desert. Woodruff, finding the men would not listen to treason, prudently gave the papers to Col. Elias Dayton, of the New Jersey Line, and convinced that officer of his patriotic zeal. On Monday, January 22, the commissioners from the Legislature arrived in the camp of the mutineers, with assurances that every grievance should be redressed. Col. Elias Dayton, commander of the New Jersey Line, and Col. Shreve, in both of whom the troops had great confidence, joined in these promises, but insisted that the soldiers must return to their duty ere they could hear and treat with them. The insurgents urged that their own oaths should be admissible in determining the terms of their enlistment, as it had been conceded to the Pennsylvania mutineers, but Dayton and Shreve would not consent, and the men reluctantly yielded that point. Upon the assurance of obedience, Col. Dayton granted pardon.

Most of the men were glad to accept pardon, and on Thursday, January 25, they were persuaded to return to their huts at Pomp-







## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

ton, with Col. Shreve, promising to put themselves again under the command of their officers. But the spirit of insubordination was still rife. They marched back in a disorderly fashion, yielding a semblance of obedience to some of their officers, "more like following advice than obeying command," while they flatly refused to acknowledge the orders of other officers. "They condescended once to parade when ordered, but were no sooner dismissed than several officers were insulted. One had a bayonet put to his breast, and upon the man being knocked down for his insolence, a musket was fired, which being their alarm signal, most of them paraded under arms. It seemed, indeed, as if they had returned to their huts simply as a place more convenient for themselves, and to negotiate with a committee appointed to inquire into their grievances, and to whom they were to have dictated their own terms." On Friday, January 26, the last of them straggled back from Chatham into their former camp at Pompton. The men felt better for their bit of an outing, and all slept soundly that Friday night. But what an awakening was theirs!

As soon as Washington heard from Gen. St. Clair that the spirit of mutiny was apparently rife among the Jersey troops, he called a council of war at New Windsor on January 11, at which it was determined to organize a special detachment of one thousand men, or five battalions—two from the Massachusetts line, one from the New Hampshire line, one from the Connecticut line, and one chiefly from Col. Hazen's regiment. These were selected and arranged by Gen. Heath, and were ordered to be ready to march with four days' provisions at the shortest notice. The command devolved upon Gen. Robert Howe by seniority. It was the intention of the commander-in-chief to order these men forward to suppress the insurrection among the Pennsylvania troops, but as he hesitated at this juncture to withdraw 1,000 men from the garrison at New Windsor, and as the mutineers were numerous, he refrained from decisive measures until the Pennsylvania State authorities adjusted the matter, contrary to his own ideas of the military requirements of the case. When the Jersey Brigade followed the pernicious example, he determined to tolerate no half-way measures. On January 22 he ordered Gen. Howe with the special detachment of 1,000 men to march against the Jersey mutineers. He was directed to rendezvous the whole of his command at Ringwood or at Pomp-

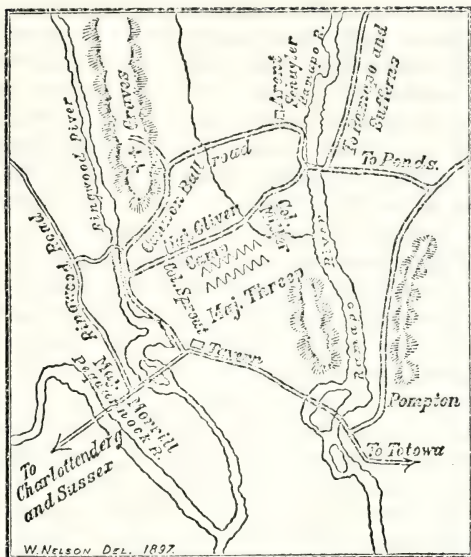


## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

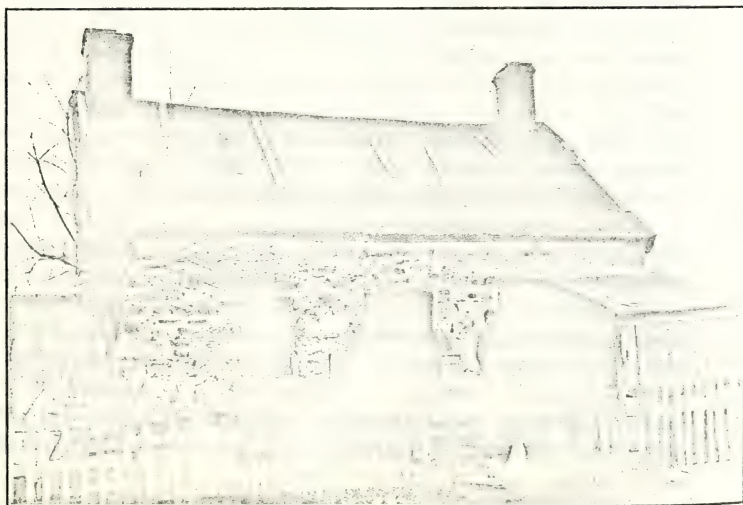
ton, as he might find best from the circumstances. "The object of your detachment is to compel the mutineers to unconditional submission; and I am to desire, that you will grant no terms while they are with arms in their hands in a state of resistance. \* \* \*

If you succeed in compelling the revolted troops to a surrender, you will instantly execute a few of the most active and incendiary leaders." Gen. Howe at once moved forward with about 600 Continental troops, and arrived at Ringwood on Friday evening, January 26, where he was speedily joined by Capt. Stewart, with three three-pounders. Major Morril, with the New Hampshire detachment, marched at the same time from King's Ferry and arrived about the same time, doubtless via the Ponds. Gen. Howe found the Jersey mutineers mostly back in their huts, but the spirit of insubordination unquelled. Having ascertained the precise situation of their encampment, he silently marched from Ringwood at one o'clock on Saturday morning. It was a dreadful march—a distance of eight miles, on a bitterly cold night, over rough and mountainous roads, rendered almost impassable by deep snow. At early dawn they arrived within sight of the insurgents' huts. A halt of an hour was made, for further preparations. Could the troops be relied on? They had the same grounds for complaint as the mutineers. Their officers were anxious. But when they were ordered to load their arms they obeyed with alacrity. It was evident they could be trusted. Gen. Howe briefly addressed them on the heinousness of the crime of mutiny, and the necessity of bringing the insurgents to unconditional submission. The march was resumed, and the troops quietly surrounded the mutinous brigade. Major Morril was posted on the Charlottesville road, about half a mile above the bridge crossing the Ringwood river, or a short distance above the present Pompton Reformed Church. Lieut.-Col. Com. Sprout, with one party and a piece of artillery, was ordered to take post on the left of the mutineers; Lieut.-Col. Miller, with another party and two pieces, on the right; Maj. Oliver, with his men, in front of their encampment; and Maj. Throop, with his party, in the rear. Thus all the roads leading to and from the camp were effectually guarded—the road afterwards known as the Paterson and Hamburg turnpike, running west to Bloomingdale, and southeast to Totowa; the roads leading northerly to Wanaque and Ringwood; and the road leading northeasterly to the Ponds and the Ramapo valley. This





SCENE OF MUTINY AT POMPTON



OLD STONE HOUSE OF 1776

Built of stone, mortar and mud. Torn down to clear bed for Jersey City Reservoir





was the situation as daylight appeared. What terror must have leaped into the hearts of the mutineers when they awoke on that still Saturday morning to find their camp surrounded by a stern cordon of soldiers true to their faith. Lieut.-Col. Barber was sent to them with orders immediately to parade without arms, and to march to the ground pointed out to them. Some were willing to yield at once. Others, the more guilty, exclaimed, "What! no conditions? Then if we are to die, it is as well to die where we are as anywhere else." Some sought flight by the road to Sussex, but were unable to pass Maj. Morril's guard. As the main camp hesitated to obey the order to parade without arms, Col. Sprout was directed to advance from the left, with his gun unlimbered and ready to pour its destructive fire into the insurgents. They were given five minutes to yield. There was no escape. Sullenly they succumbed to the inevitable, and, to a man, marched unarmed to the designated field. Their officers furnished Gen. Howe with a list of the more conspicuous offenders, and out of these, three men—one from each regiment of the brigade—were selected as the guiltiest of all. These were Sergt.-Maj. George Grant, who had acted as the commander of the revolvers; Sergt. David Gilmore, of the Second Regiment; and Priv. John Tuttle, of the First Regiment. A field court-martial was promptly held, "standing on the snow," as the record says—with unconscious pathos. Col. Sprout presided. The proceedings were brief. The three men named were immediately tried, convicted and sentenced to death. The Jersey officers, however, assured Gen. Howe that Grant had not voluntarily taken the command, and that he had urged the men to return to their duty. On this account his life was spared by the general. But the other two were ordered to be shot at once. With a stern sense of poetic justice, twelve of the most guilty mutineers were selected to be their executioners.

In a thick wood, on the bleak and desolate summit of a rocky knob of the Ramapo mountains, overlooking the Pompton Lakes station on the New York, Susquehanna & Western railroad, the hardy traveler may find two rude piles of weather-beaten field-stones. These are pointed out as marking the lonely, unhonored graves of the two Jersey Mutineers.

After the execution, the men were ordered to parade by regiments, and then by platoons, and obliged to make proper apologies





to their officers, and promise of good behavior for the future. They showed the fullest sense of their guilt, and Gen. Howe was so assured of their contrition that he marched back to Ringwood the same day. Gen. Washington returned thanks, January 30, to Gen. Howe and his officers and men for their conduct in this affair. "It gave him inexpressible pain," he added, "to be obliged to employ their arms on such an occasion, and he is convinc'd that they themselves felt all that reluctance which former affection to fellow soldiers could inspire." The general had deemed this occasion so critical that he went to Ringwood himself on January 26. The next day he wrote to the commissioners appointed by the New Jersey Legislature to consider the grievances of their troops, informing them of the suppression of the mutiny. "Having punished guilt and supported authority, it now becomes proper to do justice," he remarked. He therefore urged them to hasten an adjustment.

On February 7, 1781, Washington directed that a mere captain's guard of the Jersey Brigade be posted at the entrance to Smith's Clove, and another at Pompton and Ringwood, while the rest of the brigade was ordered to Morristown. In pursuance of his plan to send more of his troops south, Colonel Pickering reported to him, February 18, that he proposed to impress horses and teams at Pompton and Ringwood, to transport the tents as far as Somerset Court House [Somerville]. This was to facilitate the movement of a detachment of 1200 men, including the Jersey Brigade, under the command of Lafayette, to the Chesapeake, where he was directed to fall upon and destroy Arnold's troops, then ravaging that vicinity. The Marquis passed through Pompton on February 23, with the men detached from the main army on the Hudson, and during the next few weeks there was a considerable movement of troops through that important post, as Washington distributed his army with a view to an attack upon New York and Brooklyn with 20,000 men. A captain's guard of thirty men was left at Pompton, to guard the stores, and a few militia were ordered out at Second River, and probably at Acquackanonk, with the like object. Christian Lozier and Richard Van Riper, of Acquackanonk, who went into New York, presumably for trading purposes only, were questioned by the British, and reported some of these movements. James O'Hara, a spy, who came in from Warwick via Acquackanonk, confirmed the rumors, and gave other information, all tending to con-



## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

vince Sir Henry Clinton that New York was threatened. These mysterious manœuvres were kept up during the summer. About the middle of July, however, Washington felt constrained to abandon his main project, and concluded to move his forces in conjunction with the French army, against the enemy in Virginia. On August 20-21 the American troops crossed the Hudson river in force and encamped at Haverstraw. On the 22d Col. Alexander Scam-mel's Light Corps of specially-selected New England men, marched south, passing through Paramus, Acquackanonk and Springfield. On Saturday, the 25th, the American Light Infantry, under Gen. Lincoln, followed by the same route, together with the First New York, and on the same day Colonel John Lamb, with his artillery regiment, park and stores, covered by Lieut.-Col. Olney's Fourth Rhode Island Regiment, marched through Pompton and Two Bridges to Chatham and Springfield. The Second New York Regiment, Col. Philip Van Cortlandt, took the same route, probably the same day. This regiment was accompanied by thirty-four boats, which had been collected and mounted on carriages at King's Ferry, by Washington's direction. The country people about Pompton must have stared at seeing such strange paraphernalia among the impedimenta of an army on the march on inland routes. Sir Henry Clinton naturally regarded this preparation as indicating an attack on Staten Island, in which he found additional evidence in the threatening movements of the Americans at Springfield. Washington himself rode through Ramapo and Pompton on the 26th.

Pompton was destined to be favored with a still more imposing display of the panoply of war. The French army, under the Count de Rochambeau, crossed the Hudson at King's Ferry (opposite Stony Point) on August 24-25, and proceeded via Kakeat to Sufferns, where they camped the first night. On August 25 the First Division or Brigade moved from Sufferns to Pompton, and there went into camp for the night. What a profound sensation this splendidly uniformed and thoroughly-equipped French army created among the country people! First there came the Legion of the Duke de Lauzin, two squadrons of hussars and lancers, his tall grenadiers and his chasseurs—six hundred men in all, mostly Germans, and fit match for the dreaded Hessians. Little recked the Duke, that brilliant, gallant soldier of fortune, that in a dozen years his head would be laid on the guillotine to appease the greedy thirst of



his fickle mistress, the French Republic. After this noble legion the parks of field guns rumbled heavily along, manned by selected detachments from the second battalion of the regiment of Auxonne, and from the second battalion of the regiment of Metz, the whole under the command of the Count d'Aboville. Then came the regiment of Bourbonnais (formed in 1595), Col. the Marquis de Laval, the Viscount de Rochambeau (younger brother of Gen. the Count de Rochambeau) being the colonel en second. The famous Royal Deux-Ponts regiment next swung jauntily along, led by its gallant young colonel, the Count Christian de Deux-Ponts, his younger brother, the Viscount Gillaume de Deux-Ponts, being his colonel en second, with Lieut.-Cols. de Haden and the Baron d'Esebeck. The Baron de Vioménil commanded this entire division. Says a French officer: "We went from Sufferns to Pompton, four miles this side of which the river of this name is crossed three times and there are bridges at each passage; the first and third are fordable; the road is superb. This is an open and well cultivated country, inhabited by Dutch people who are almost all quite rich."

The next day this brigade left Pompton and marched to Whippany, Morris county, where it halted for the Second Division. The latter camped at Pompton on the night of August 26. It was commanded by the Viscount de Vioménil (the baron's brother), and comprised the regiment of Soissonnais, Col. the Count de Saint-Maime, with the Viscount de Noailles as colonel en second; and the regiment Saintonge, under Col. the Count de Custine-Sarracks, the Count de Charlus being colonel en second.

The commander-in-chief of the French army, the Count de Rochambeau, accompanied the troops through Pompton on this momentous journey, and the two corps were officered by the flower of the French nobility. What a striking contrast did these magnificent troops present to the ill-clad Americans who had marched through the village a day or two before. How different this spectacle, mirroring forth the glory of war, from that pitiful scene of six months earlier, when the half-starved, barefooted little band of Jersey soldiers at Pompton were summoned to parade on the winter snow, to attend the drum-head court-martial and summary execution of their unfortunate comrades whose long-suffering had been tried beyond endurance!

But the brilliant pageant swept by. The American commander-







## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

in-chief by a masterly movement outwitted Sir Henry Clinton, hurried the allied armies against Cornwallis, and on October 19, 1781, received the surrender of the British forces on the Virginia peninsula. It is pleasant to know that the Jersey brigade there retrieved the disgrace of the Pompton mutiny, and that among the participants in the crowning victory at Yorktown were Sergt.-Maj. Grant and Sergt. Nichols, two of the leaders in the revolt at Pompton.

The victorious army was conveyed by water from Yorktown to the head of the Elk river, and thence, November 20, 1781, began the march back to the northern encampments, crossing the Hudson river at King's Ferry on December 7. "On account of the inclemency of the season," says Surgeon Thacher, "we have suffered exceedingly from cold, wet, and fatigue, during our long march. But we return in triumph to rejoin our respective regiments, and enjoy a constant interchange of congratulations with our friends, on the glorious and brilliant success of our expedition which closes the campaign." The gallant Maj.-Gen. the Chevalier (afterwards Marquis) de Chastellux commanded the First Division of the French army as it marched through Pompton on this return journey. Two New York regiments, under the command of Gen. James Clinton, went into winter quarters at Pompton, and immediately proceeded to make themselves comfortable by the erection of huts. The men were so expert in constructing these shelters that they could finish one in twenty-four hours. The walls were of stones laid up in clay, with roofs of planks, logs or bark, a stone chimney on the outside, a small door being next to it, which kept out cold winds. De Chastellux says that the men sometimes constructed barracks, or double log houses, each large enough for eight men, the logs being put together with wooden pins. The weather was extremely cold, and the troops were poorly provided with clothing or provisions, so that it was with difficulty that they could keep warm, although there was an abundance of wood in the adjacent hills. The Rev. John Gano, a noted Baptist preacher, was chaplain of the brigade at this time, but as there was no opportunity for him to preach he was given a furlough. Returning at the close of the winter a private soldier made him uncomfortable by addressing him thus: "Dear Doctor, we have had tolerable health, but hard times otherwise; we have wanted almost everything, scantied in clothing, provisions and money, and, hardest of all, we have not even had the word of



God to comfort us." The good clergyman was much disturbed in his conscience at this reproof, until he learned that his critic was one of the most incorrigible jokers in the camp, and had been simply making fun at his expense. A number of the soldiers had enlisted for six months or nine months, and Col. Van Cortlandt, commanding one of the regiments, was anxious to have them reenlist. The use of the Reformed Dutch church on Pompton Plains was secured for the chaplain on his return, and on the first Sunday thereafter he preached to the men. He was apt in selecting significant texts, and doubtless chose on this occasion the words. "There is no discharge in that war." Certain, it is, that he assured his hearers that it always gave him pleasure to preach to soldiers, especially when he had good tidings to communicate, and he could aver with truth that our Lord and Saviour approved of all those who had entered in his service for the whole warfare. He had no six or nine months men in *His* service! The whole camp greatly enjoyed the apropos address, and the short-term men were so chaffed by their comrades that most of them reenlisted.

The troops encamped at Pompton at various times during the Revolution did not always occupy the same location. Tradition asserts that during two winters their encampment was on the southern slope of the Pompton Lake, where "Sunnybank," the charming home of "Marion Harland," is now situated. In clearing the wooded hillside on her place, remains of huts have been unearthed, together with bullets, flints, gunlocks, and a sword of British workmanship, in perfect preservation, with the royal arms of England engraved on the blade, and on the hilt, rudely scratched, the initials, "E. L." At one point on the "Sunnybank" premises there was a paved roadway for the use of the horses and wagons going to the water's edge. It is probable that the huts of the Jersey mutineers were located on the northern slope of the Lake (then much smaller than now, the dam having been raised in 1837), near the Schuyler bridges. The New York Brigade who wintered at Pompton in 1781-82 probably occupied substantially the same site, but extending over more ground and more to the south. Col. Van Cortlandt—who seems to have been in command of the brigade much of the time—doubtless had his headquarters in a small frame building facing southerly on the road to Paterson, at the junction of the Hamburg road and the Wanaque road, in the present Borough of Pompton



Lakes. This house was small, the main part being thirty feet in front and twenty-four in depth, two stories high in front, with roof sloping almost to the ground in the rear, a small covered porch in the middle leading to quaint old-fashioned half doors. There was a kitchen extension on the east end, about sixteen feet square, one story high, with attic, a covered verandah extending all along its front. From its color the building was known in later years as the "Yellow House." In the roof of the verandah, and in the massive oaken beams of the kitchen, were to be seen for a century and more, the marks where the rude soldiers had thrust their bayonets, by way of "stacking arms," in the war times. In the summer of 1878 a silver spur was dug up in the garden. The building was removed about 1890, to permit the changing of the roads. In the early part of the Revolution it was the residence of Casparus Schuyler, grandson of Arent Schuyler, who settled at Pompton about 1701. In the summer of 1780 the house was leased to a young man named Curtis, from Morristown, who conducted it as a tavern, with the assistance of his two handsome sisters. The Chevalier de Chastellux, who put up there on the night of December 18, 1780, on his way from Philadelphia to New England, says the inn had been but lately established, and "consequently the best parts of the furniture were the owner and his family." On entering the parlor, where the sisters were wont to sit, he found on a great table the works of Milton, Addison, Richardson, and other writers of like fame. "The cellar was not so well stored as the library," he sarcastically observes, "for there was neither wine, cyder, nor rum; nothing in short but some vile cyder-brandy, with which I must make grog."

To this modest tavern came Gen. Washington and Mrs. Washington, on Thursday, March 28, 1782, and remained there the guests of Col. Van Cortlandt, until the following Sunday morning, when they resumed their journey toward Newburgh. The general had an escort of an officer, a sergeant and twelve dragoons, and we may be sure that as they galloped along the road they were looked upon with great interest by the inhabitants. Many an aged citizen treasured up in his memory in after years as a most precious recollection the fact of having seen Washington stand in the simple porch of the old yellow tavern on those March days of 1782. When the distinguished party left Pompton they were furnished with an addi-





## NEW JERSEY IN THE REVOLUTION

tional escort by Col. Van Cortlandt, on the way through Ringwood toward Newburgh.

In General Orders of June 1 it was directed that the New York Brigade should pass muster and inspection on June 4. Col. Van Cortlandt, for the better display of his troops, moved them to the "flat fields" (probably Pompton Plains), where they underwent the inspection of that military martinet, the Baron von Steuben, who declared himself delighted with their efficiency. The brigade was soon after ordered to Verplanck's Point. So ended the military occupancy of the present Passaic county.







# Chapters in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia

By ARTHUR WENTWORTH HAMILTON EATON, M. A., D. C. L.

No. XV

THE CUNARD STEAMSHIP LINE, OCEAN TERMINALS, THE WORLD WAR



HE honour of being the pioneer in regular ocean steamship travel and traffic belongs, as is well known, to a Halifax merchant, whose business was started and continued on the harbour of Halifax, the famous Sir Samuel Cunard. The war of the Revolution brought to Halifax, probably between 1780 and 1784, a man of Pennsylvania German stock named Abraham Cunard.<sup>1</sup> Obtaining work as a master carpenter in the Engineers' department of the military service, at the "Lumber Yard," he settled somewhere in the north end of the town, and there, having married, it is said, a woman named Murphy, he reared a family of sturdy sons and daughters. After many years of service for the government in the Engineers' department, he received a pension from the crown, and then began a modest trading business on Water Street, on or near the wharf that has long been known as Cunard's wharf. His eldest son was Samuel Cunard, who when he grew up also entered the employ of the government as a clerk in the civil branch of the Engineers' department. There he remained for some years, but when his father opened his business he associated himself with him.

In the early stages of their business the Cunards had the good fortune to purchase cheaply a derelict brig or prize ship, and with this vessel they were able to make a good start in the shipping trade.

<sup>1</sup>It has long been supposed, from the statement of Sabine in his "American Loyalties," that the Halifax Cunard family started in the Maritime Provinces with Robert Cunard, who at the time of the Revolution settled at St. John, New Brunswick. This is not true. Abraham Cunard of Halifax was not a son of Robert, as Sabine states, but a first cousin, the fathers of the two men being brothers. The Cunards descend from a German settler in Pennsylvania named Thones or Thomas Kunders, who transferred himself and his family across the sea in 1683. The youngest son of this German emigrant was Henry Kunders, who when he grew up changed his name to Cunreds. His wife's maiden name was Catherine Streypers.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

The acquaintance the son had gained in the Engineers' department with the commercial affairs of the government service, and the friendship he had formed with army and navy men, were of great help to him, and his native ability and enterprise soon began to lift the business to the first importance along the harbour side of the town. By 1830, as the Hon. William Stairs in his reminiscences tells us, Cunard's wharf was the principal West India goods depot in Halifax, and the firm had forty vessels under their control.<sup>2</sup>

For about twenty years previous to 1838 vessels propelled by steam had crossed the ocean at intervals,<sup>3</sup> but in this year, probably, the British Government resolved to sever the transatlantic mail service from the Admiralty and transfer it to the Post Office Department. Following the march of improvement, the Government determined to discard the old gun brigs or "coffin brigs" sailing

---

A son of Henry and Catherine Cunreeds was Samuel Cunreeds, one of whose sons was Abraham Cunard of Halifax, whose wife according to Appleton's "Encyclopaedia of Biography" was a daughter of a certain Thomas Murphy. Whether Abraham Cunard married at Halifax or not we do not know, but his children were probably all born there. As the father was a Quaker, his children we suppose were not baptized, but it is said that he had five sons and one or more daughters. His son Samuel, afterward Sir Samuel Cunard, Bart., was the founder of the great steamship line that bears the family name. Edward Cunard, another son, it is said was in early life employed in "the dockyard surveying ship," and also had a small share in his brother Samuel's business. A third son, John, born probably in 1800, sailed as a master of one of Samuel's ships, but died on Sunday, April 14, 1844, aged 44. Two other sons, Henry and Joseph, "conducted a large timber business in connection with Samuel, at Miramichi." Abraham Cunard, father of these men, died at Rawdon, Hants County, Nova Scotia, January 10, 1824, in the 70th year of his age.

The lumbering enterprise of Samuel, Henry, and Joseph Cunard at Miramichi, says *Occasional*, in the *Acadian Recorder*, proved most disastrous and brought Samuel to the verge of ruin, and indeed for a time caused a suspension of his business. "To most men such a misfortune would have proved irretrievable, but Samuel Cunard was not to be put down, and assisted by his friend Mr. Stephen DeBlois, the Bank of Nova Scotia, and others of his creditors, all of whom sympathized with him in his misfortunes and had great confidence in his ability and integrity, he managed to shake off the incubus and to resume his business." Sir Samuel at his death left his family, says the writer in question in the *Acadian Recorder*, little short of a million pounds sterling. For the Kunders, Cunreeds, or Cunard family of Pennsylvania, see "Thones Kunders and His Children," etc., by Henry C. Conrad. Wilmington, Delaware, 1891.

<sup>2</sup>"Family History, Stairs, Morrow, including Letters, Diaries, Essays, Poems, etc.," compiled from writings by Hon. William James Stairs, Halifax, 1906. Mr. Stairs says (p. 192): "About the year 1830, when Mr. Cunard was forty years of age, he was estimated to be worth not less than two hundred thousand pounds. The firm had forty vessels under their control, and the purchase of large tracts of land in Prince Edward Island, almost townships . . . helped to make the estate of his family what it is now, a very rich one."

<sup>3</sup>The first steamship to cross the Atlantic was the *Savannah*, a United States ship, in 1819, the first steamships to undertake regular transatlantic voyages for traffic were the British ships *Sirius* and *Great Western* in 1838. The *Savannah* was propelled largely by the help of sails, she was followed in 1828 by the Dutch steamship *Curacoa*, and in 1832 by the British *Royal William*, and this latter, as we have said, by the *Sirius* and *Great Western*.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

from Falmouth, and to employ steamships sailing from Liverpool to Halifax, and thence to Boston. For this purpose the Lords Commissioners advertised for a small class of steam mail boats to be built. It is said that Mr. Cunard was in England when this advertisement appeared, and at once the idea came to him of presenting tenders for these ships. Returning to Halifax he tried to raise capital there for the enterprise but failed. He then recrossed to England, where his intimacy with admirals and other important men who had visited Halifax made his approach to the chiefs of the Admiralty and the Post Office Department, and to leading capitalists, an easy matter, and made efforts to enlist sympathy and capital for the enterprise there. Meeting with as little success in London as he had done in Halifax, he went north to Scotland, armed with a letter from Sir James Melville of the India House to Robert Napier, Esq., of Glasgow, an eminent Clyde shipbuilder and engineer.

After carefully discussing with Mr. Cunard the details of the projected enterprise, Mr. Napier promised him his cordial assistance, and gave him a letter of introduction to Mr. George Burns, a ship owner largely engaged in trading along the coasts of England, Scotland, and Ireland, a shrewd business man of great experience and very influential with the leading capitalists of Glasgow. By Mr. Burns he was introduced to David MacIver of Liverpool, a partner of the former in his trading ventures, another Scotsman of much practical business ability, and in a short time the energetic Halifax merchant found himself with no less a sum than £270,000 subscribed for the enterprise he had come to Britain to advance.

To the Admiralty he now made an eligible offer to convey the English mails once a fortnight from Liverpool to Halifax and thence to Boston, and his offer was soon accepted and a contract signed. In 1839, in partnership with Messrs. Burns and MacIver, Cunard to reside at Halifax, MacIver at Liverpool, and Burns at Glasgow, he formed the British and North American Royal Mail Steam Packet Company, and in 1840 this enterprising firm built on the Clyde four wooden paddle-wheel steamships, which they named respectively the *Britannia*, *Acadia*, *Caledonia*, and *Columbia*.

The contract between Mr. Cunard and the British Government, made on the 4th of May, 1839, was for the period of seven years, and at an annual rate of payment by the government of £60,000 a





year. The ships to be built for carrying the mails were to be large and strong enough to be used as troop ships in case need for their appropriation for this purpose should ever arise. The first ship to leave Liverpool under this contract was the *Britannia*, which left on the 4th of July, 1840, and arrived at Boston in fourteen days and eight hours.<sup>4</sup> On this initial trip Mr. Cunard himself sailed, and on the 22nd of July he was given a banquet at Boston to celebrate the establishment of regular steam communication and postal intercourse between Great Britain and the American continent. For seven years after the inauguration of this service only six steamships in all were employed, the two added to the original four being the *Hibernia*, completed in 1843, and the *Cambria* in 1845. A brief historical sketch of the founding of the Cunard Company published by the Company in 1899 describes the *Britannia*, the pioneer vessel of the Cunard fleet, as having measured 207 feet in length by 34 feet 4 inches in breadth and 22 feet 6 inches in depth, with a tonnage burden of 1,154 and an indicated horse power of 740. Her cargo capacity was 225 tons and she was fitted for the accommodation of 115 cabin, but no steerage, passengers. Of the other three ships built in 1840, the sketch says that in horse power and passenger and cargo accommodation they were identical with the *Britannia*, while in dimensions and tonnage they varied from her but slightly. The average speed of all four was eight and a half knots an hour, on a coal consumption of thirty-eight tons a day.

In 1847 the Government determined to double the mail service between England and America, and a new contract was accordingly made with the Cunard Company in which it was stipulated that a vessel of not less than four hundred horse power and capable of carrying guns of the then largest calibre should leave Liverpool every Saturday for Halifax, and thence for New York and Boston alternately, the subsidy in view of this increased accommodation being raised to the substantial figure of £173,340 per annum. For the adequate performance of this new contract four new ships were built, the *America*, *Niagara*, *Canada*, and *Europa*, which, all probably, came into service in 1848. In 1850, still another ship, the *Asia*, was added to the fleet, and this was followed by the *Arabia*

---

<sup>4</sup>The first ocean steamship that ever sailed into Halifax harbour was the *Unicorn*, whose visit occurred on the 1st day of June, 1840. The second was the Cunard steamship *Britannia*, which left Liverpool, as we have said, on the 4th of July of that year and arrived at Halifax on the 17th of July, after a voyage of twelve and a half days.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

in 1852, and the *Persia* in 1855. After 1862 no more paddle-wheel steamships were built, but the screw was used exclusively to propel.

The subsidy given the Cunard enterprise by the British Government was at first \$425,000 a year, this sum being about twenty-five per cent. of the gross operating expenses of the service. As the service expanded to New York, the subsidy was increased at intervals until it reached \$850,000. American sailing packets continued to run, but in decreasing numbers and with lessening profits, until the Civil War. In 1845 Congress authorized the Postmaster General to make contracts with the owners of American vessels for the transportation of United States mails to Europe.

In November, 1863, Mr. George Augustus Sala, a famous British newspaper correspondent and author, long a conspicuous writer for the London *Daily Telegraph*, started from England in the Cunard steamship *Arabia* for Boston, Massachusetts, via Halifax, where after Queenstown the ship made its first port. In a letter to the *Daily Telegraph* describing his voyage and its termination he speaks pleasantly of his twelve hours visit at Halifax. In a two volume work of this writer bearing the title "America Revisited," published in 1882, he says of his second voyage across the Atlantic, in the Cunard steamship *Scythia*, in November, 1879, just sixteen years after his first voyage, and of his second brief visit to Halifax:

"Sixteen years ago, at nine o'clock on a foggy November night, I went away from Euston Terminus by the famous express popularly termed 'the Wild Irishman.' We sped to Holyhead, whence we crossed, in what seemed to me a terrible storm, but which was pronounced on competent nautical authority to be 'only a capful of wind,' to Kingstown. If I remember aright we contrived to snatch some breakfast in Dublin; and then we raced away by another express southwards to Cork, and so to Queenstown, where with our luggage, a tender conveyed us on board the British and North American Royal mail steamer *Arabia*, Captain Cook commanding, bound for Halifax, Nova Scotia, and Boston, United States of America.

"How we tossed and tumbled during our ten days voyage! What desperate attempts did I make to acquire the use of my 'sea legs'—attempts which only resulted, after infinite staggerings about and 'cannoning' against one's fellow-sufferers, in the humiliating conviction that the legs which had been found tolerably efficient in the Mediterranean, the Adriatic, the Baltic, and the Black Sea, were miserably unserviceable in Mid-Atlantic. How strongly did I 'make



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

believe' in November, 1863, that I liked my trip, that I was enjoying myself immensely, and that I felt 'awfully jolly:' the pusillanimously concealed truth being that I was intensely wretched, and that had a big fish come that way I should not have very much minded to have voluntarily played Jonah's part by way of a change. Oh! the wearisome iteration of the remark: 'How rough it was last night!' Oh! the intolerable monotony of the boiled mutton and caper sauce. There was of course plenty more to eat on board (indeed you are rather over than under fed in a Cunard steamer), yet one always gravitated, one knew not why, to the salubrious yet somewhat insipid diet on which, it is stated, Lindley Murray composed his English Grammar.

"How grateful I was on that first transatlantic voyage for the few hours respite from pitching and tossing which we enjoyed at Halifax. One shaved, one posted up one's log, one scribbled complacent letters to friends at home, one paced the deck with a confident stride, as though one had been born with 'sea legs.' Vain pretender! Next morning you could not have 'toed a line' had it been as wide, even, as a church door. There was a large military garrison—the 'Trent affair' was then to the fore—at the Halifax of those days; and the British 'soldier officers' in astracan-lined pelisses, and escorting beauteous damsels in sealskin mantles and pork-pie hats of sable and beaver, came on board to peep at us as folks fresh from strange and fearful experiences of the melancholy ocean."

As Mr. Sala intimates, the arrival at Halifax of a Cunard steamship with mails for the whole continent was always a notable event, not only for the Nova Scotia capital but for the greater cities of the United States. "It seems only the other day," writes Mr. A. Martin Payne, "that New York was dependent on the Halifax route for its European dispatches. When the signal gun sounded the approach of the ship, our people of all classes, citizens and soldiers, from the Governor and his staff down to old man Hayes in his donkey cart, might be seen making their way to the various wharves to watch the great ocean liner hauling into its dock."

With the beautiful harbour in front of the town and the superb inlet known as the North West Arm behind, boating for pleasure has always been conspicuous among the sports of Halifax, and regattas on one sheet of water on the other have been among the most picturesque sights to be seen on the American Continent. In 1837 the still existing Halifax Yacht Club was formed, the admiral commanding on the station and the governor, who was then Sir Colin Campbell, being its patrons. The general management of the club's





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

affairs was entrusted to a committee comprising seven members from the town, one each from the two regiments of the line in garrison, the Royal Engineers, Royal Artillery, Ordnance, and Commissariat, one from the staff, and three from the navy.<sup>5</sup>

The first regatta under the auspices of the club was held on the 31st of August of this year, and was a brilliant success. "The scene at the dockyard was of the most animated description. Crowds of all classes and colours, upper, middle, and lower, white, red, and black, enjoyed the beautiful weather and the sports of the day. The water was dotted with craft of every sort, and the flag-ship *Cornwallis*, decked with the flags of all nations and crowded with company, looked like the presiding genius of the scene. The *Pyramus* hoisted the signals of the day and fired the guns for preparation, starting, and victory. A hearty invitation was given to all, without respect of persons, to visit the flag-ship, and there refreshments were served. Boats were in attendance to convey people on board, and they were received with the utmost politeness by the officers and shown every attention. In the evening a brilliant ball was given at 'Masons' Hall.' " On the morning of the day a fine ship built by Mr. Lyle at Dartmouth<sup>6</sup> for Messrs. Samuel Cunard and Company was

---

<sup>5</sup>This committee comprised Hon. T. N. Jeffrey, Sir Rupert Dennis George, Messrs. William A. Black, Edward Cunard, Sr., E. Wallace, John Leander Starr, and Michael Tobin, Jr., for the town; Captain Byron, 24th regiment, Lieutenant Blackburn, 85th regiment, Lieutenant Gordon, Engineers, Lieutenant McLean, Artillery, Ince, Ordnance, and ——— Hewetson, Commissariat; Captain Sir Thomas Usher, Captain Sir R. Grant, and Lieutenant the Hon. K. Steward for the navy; and ——— Glover for the naval department. (These facts are taken from one of the letters of "Occasional" in the *Acadian Recorder* newspaper of a date that we do not now remember.)

<sup>6</sup>Mr. George Mullane in the *Acadian Recorder* of April 8, 1916, says: "In the days of wooden shipbuilding, Nova Scotia turned out many splendid specimens of marine architecture. In the forties and fifties of the last century shipbuilding was a flourishing industry at Dartmouth. Lyle's and Moseley's ship yards launched some very fine vessels. Mr. Lyle built a number of ships for S. Cunard & Co., and for D. & E. Starr & Co., and Ebenezer Moseley was famous as a designer and builder of fast clipper ships. The renown of the barque *Stag* has come down to the present time. In the Provincial Museum there is a photograph of a painting, by John O'Brien, of this famous clipper barque. The *Stag* was considered the fastest sailing vessel ever built in Nova Scotia. On two occasions she made the run from Halifax to the line in 21 and 22 1-2 days by her log. This performance has never been excelled by any sailing vessel. She was designed by the late Ebenezer Moseley, and built by him and his brother, Henry (the registry erroneously gives Geo. A. McKenzie, of Dartmouth, as the builder, but he was the vessel's captain). The vessel was built at LaHave, Lunenburg Co., N. S., in 1854, for John Strachan, merchant of Halifax. She was registered on the 9th of Dec., 1854; burthen, 209 tons; length from inner part of main stem to fore part of stem, 103 feet; width amidships, 22 feet; depth in hold amidships, 12 feet, 6 inches. On 15th January, 1855, she was registered anew on her transfer to John Esson. She was finally wrecked at Bermuda, in 1859 or 1860. Captain Ettenger commanded her when lost. He had made several successful voyages to the East Indies."





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

launched, this interesting event leading to general comment on the great enterprise of the Cunards, and its importance to Halifax in creating activity and circulating money in quarters where otherwise there would have been stagnation and poverty. "When some one complained to George the Third that General Wolfe was mad, he remarked that he wished to Heaven he would bite the rest of the generals of his army. The wish was sometimes expressed in Halifax that the Messrs. Cunard would bite some of the capitalists who seemed reluctant to risk a pound for fear they might never see it again."

On Saturday, August 18, 1860, the *Great Eastern* steamship (which was completed in 1858), so famous in her day for great size and such a burden, consequently, on the hands of her owners, called at Halifax on her way from New York to England. She had left New York forty-six hours before she docked at Halifax, and of the 104 passengers who came in her she landed fifty at this port. This ship was 680 feet long, a measurement not reached by another ship until the completion of the *Oceanic* in 1899. Her size was too great for existing traffic and general harbour depths, and she proved a commercial failure. At ten o'clock on Sunday forenoon, August 19th, she sailed out of Halifax harbour, and to the shores of America she never returned.

For three-quarters of a century, Nova Scotians of foresight, beginning with such men as Hon. Joseph Howe, Judge Haliburton, and Samuel Cunard, have seen that Halifax has the chief facilities on the Atlantic seaboard for becoming the great winter port of the whole of Canada. Two decades or so ago, an able Halifax writer said: "We have two ports in eastern Canada not equalled for easy approach and capacity of harbour by any other two ports on the Atlantic seaboard of this continent, Halifax and North Sydney, both intended by God and nature to fulfil their destiny in the commerce of half a continent, to be the gateway for mails and passengers between Europe and America,—Halifax in winter and North Sydney in summer. This is not a utopian idea, it is sound logic and common sense. It may involve Canada in the direct expenditure of four or five millions of dollars, or perhaps more, to complete and equip our Canadian lines of railway connected with this service, and a further sum of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars for annual subsidies to steamship lines in connexion therewith for the first ten



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

years after the inauguration of that service, but the money will be well spent, it will be returned to Canada with compound interest inside of ten or fifteen years from the day of its inception. . . . With such steamship and railway service as I have outlined it would be no difficult task to deliver transcontinental mails at Boston, New York, Washington, and all other points south and west, much ahead of the mails by their own regular lines. At northwestern points like Buffalo, Chicago, and Minneapolis, they could be delivered from twenty-four to thirty-six hours earlier than by the present lines of transportation."

With the marked industrial and commercial progress, and the future certain promise along these lines, of the Dominion of Canada, has come in the opening years of the present century a full recognition of the superior advantages the port of Halifax has for becoming an even greater terminal port for transatlantic shipping than such men as we have mentioned have prophesied as a possibility. To make her the great terminal port for the whole Dominion, the base in the development of an entirely Canadian control of the rapidly extending trade between the Dominion and the whole European world, the Canadian Government since 1914 has constructed, at a cost of not four or five millions but more than thirty millions of dollars, on the lower harbour, a vast system of quays, piers, and basins, that will raise Halifax to the position of an ocean terminal port of the first magnitude on the continent of America.<sup>7</sup> In the summer of 1912, plans for these quays, piers, and basins were actively set on foot by accomplished engineers, a prospectus issued at the time making strong declaration of the aims and scope of the enterprise. "The advantageous geographical position of Halifax," said the prospectus, "is evident to any one who has studied the map. The harbour, while contiguous to the North Atlantic route to Europe, is sufficiently removed from the open shores of the ocean for ample protection. At the same time it is open all the year, and is two hundred and fifty miles nearer Europe than any point on the mainland of America. All vessels plying between Europe and such important ports as New York, Boston, Philadelphia, Portland, and St. John pass close to Halifax, particularly in winter, and it is there-

---

<sup>7</sup>"My opinion is that it would be useless to consider any place this side of Halifax for an all-the-year-round Atlantic port." Lord Strathcona, in an address at Montreal January 7, 1907.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

fore most favourably situated as a port of call on the North Atlantic. . . . Different writers have pointed to its convenient situation on the probable main route from Europe to the Panama Canal. Halifax is the nearest Canadian port and is also nearer than Boston, New York, or Philadelphia to seaports on the east coast of South America, Mediterranean ports, and seaports on the west coast of Africa."

From early in the history of Halifax, with the almost unparalleled advantages which the harbour offers for shipping, the subject of wharfage and terminal facilities at the port has been one of constantly recurring urgency. In recent years the principal wharfage facilities have been furnished by a number of timber piers constructed at the northern portion of the water front, known as the "Deep Water Terminals." In addition to these, of late there has been a reinforced concrete pier, but even with this addition, it has been constantly felt that there was no sufficient provision for the existing and prospective needs of the port. Since the opening of the century there has been not only a marked increase in the dimensions and speed of ships sailing between Canadian and European ports, but also in the class of ships employed, and there is every reason to believe, now that the great war of nations is ended, that this improvement will keep pace with the certain rapid development of the Canadian Dominion.

After careful consideration and comparison of the several plans for the prospective terminals which the Government had decided to build, the committee of construction fixed on a site for them on the western shore of the harbour, near Point Pleasant, much further towards the ocean than any of the old piers stood, and in March, 1914, the work of building the terminals began. The site extends southward along the water front for a distance of one and a quarter miles, eighty-five acres of the shore land having been expropriated by the government and a hundred and fifteen acres reclaimed from the harbour. The area of water to be occupied by shipping inside the new pierhead line is sixty-two acres. The quays and piers have been planned to provide for twenty-seven berths for ships varying in length from five hundred to seven hundred feet each, but ships with a measurement up to twelve hundred feet in length can equally well be accommodated. Provision has also been made for the berthing of coasting vessels and other small craft. The basins are suit-







## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

ably arranged for ships to pass in and out, and for the use of coal and other barges alongside. A breakwater at the extreme south protects all the piers and basins from the heavy seas from the south and south-east, these being the only directions from which seas of any force can enter the harbour. The scheme of piers, basins, sheds, and railway terminal facilities has been planned with a view to a progressive development extending over a period of many years, so that the future traffic requirements of the port for a long time shall be fully met. In an advanced stage of construction or already quite completed are five piers and six basins, each 1,250 feet long, and tapering from 320 to 360 feet wide. The basins have a minimum depth of forty-five feet at low water, which is five feet greater than the depth provided for ships at New York or Southampton, and ten feet greater than at Boston.

Of these great terminal piers, a writer in the *Halifax Morning Chronicle* describes "Pier 2" as having played the most important part of any of the wharves of Halifax in relation to the embarkation of troops for the late war. "The Pier," says this writer, "was started in 1911, and completed in the fall of 1914, shortly after the outbreak of the war, and so its first use was to facilitate military movements. The cost was \$1,250,000. The Pier is of concrete, 700 feet long by 245 feet wide, containing two tracks within the shed, and one on either side without. The concrete shed is of two stories, and on the lower floor has two freight platforms, ninety feet wide, the entire length of the Pier. The Pier rests upon some 1,800 piles of reinforced concrete, thirty to sixty feet long. The upper floor of the shed is fitted for immigration quarters. During the war there was ample room to hold several thousand troops, officers of administration, spacious canteens, and hospital quarters. Will Pier 2 mean anything to the future of Halifax? If it does not it will be a very strange thing. Its worth has been demonstrated during the war, and its existence in the city will add to the inducements that the harbor—not lightly termed the finest in the world—offers to transatlantic traffic. The largest liners can dock here with ease, and a tremendous number of passengers can be expeditely handled. It is unlikely that these advantages, proven in the past, will be allowed to count for nothing in the future. Pier 2 is one of the chief assets of the Port of Halifax. It is one of the best equipped piers in the world."



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

In the closing years of the last century a spacious Dry Dock was built on the Halifax side of the harbour, a little north of the Dock-yard, which is one of the largest and best equipped Dry Docks on the Atlantic Seaboard. More recently this has been extended in dimensions to accommodate the ever increasing size of ocean liners.

It remains to describe in some detail the conspicuous part Halifax as a great seaport has played in relation to the recent world war. On Friday, December 12, 1919, the renowned Admiral Viscount Jellicoe, commander of the British fleet during two years of its severest ordeal by fire in the war, arrived at Halifax after a six months tour of the British dominions for the purpose of stimulating naval coöperation in the Empire, and in his reply to the address of welcome given him by the leading officials said: "Halifax has had a long and a close connection with the Royal Navy, and whatever the views of Halifax on the renewal of this connection may be, the officers and men of the Navy will welcome it. \* \* \* Halifax has done great work during the [late] war in a naval way. From this port have sailed many thousands of Canadians, escorted by His Majesty's ships, to play their part in the glorious struggle, and no more gallant account was given by any section of the Empire than by brave sons of Canada. Halifax provided officers and men not only for the Royal Navy, but also to carry out the patrol in the waters of the vicinity of this great port."

Such flattering testimony to the value of this port as a base of naval operations during the war is indeed amply merited. Halifax was by far the best qualified of any Atlantic port for the embarkation of Canadian troops for the vast conflict, and it was here that Canadian troops in greatest numbers came to embark. From every portion of the Dominion they were brought in long train loads, from the populous cities and the smaller towns of Ontario, from the farms of the prairie provinces of the northwest, and from the far away shores of the Pacific, and at Halifax they took ship for the various European ports to which they were destined, to serve heroically in the great struggle to preserve the British Empire, and in the end to uphold the freedom of mankind. When the United States at last saw her duty, too, to the cause her Constitution was framed to support, her troops, also, in great numbers were rushed to this port, and from Maine and Mississippi, from Delaware and Dacota, from New Jersey and North Carolina, regiments passed



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

almost daily for a long time through Boston and Portland to the historic Nova Scotia seaport capital. Here, month after month while the war lasted, with a secrecy and silence that were wonderful, ocean steamers, many of them among the greatest ships afloat, came up the harbour and anchored, and in a few days or a few hours passed down again as stealthily as they had come, bearing thousands of young soldiers, the best blood and brains, and with the finest devotion to high causes, of the generation into whose hands is now rapidly passing the power to control the manifold destinies of the great continent on which we live. "Sometimes," says a recent writer, these ships came at noonday, "sometimes in gray twilight, or in still grayer dawns, when mists brooded low upon the water. Sometimes the blue sheen of summer was upon the waves, at others the hills of Dartmouth gleamed with snow, and cutting north winds lashed fringes of white upon the black surface. Often the convoys, long strings of troopships, glided seawards while the eastern skies were faintly flushed with the pink of the afterglow. There was no strident choiring of sirens; yet the very silence of it all was impressive. It was a drama of heroism and sacrifice, wordless, heart-rending."

It is doubtful whether exact figures concerning the number of troops that embarked at Halifax for European ports in the course of the war can ever be obtained, for in the early days of the struggle every effort of the naval authorities was directed to the immediate work of getting men safely on board the transports and away to their destinations, and the task in every case was gigantic, consequently it is probable that no records of the numbers embarked were kept. According to the files of railway officials, which have been carefully examined by a local reviewer,<sup>a</sup> between February 21, 1915, and August 23, 1918, no fewer than 305,655 troops sailed from Halifax, this being three-fifths of the slightly over five hundred thousand men who composed the total Canadian expeditionary force. Besides these there were with little question several thousand of whom no record is kept who sailed before February 21, 1915, and after August 23, 1918. The number of United States troops, besides the Canadians, who passed through Maine to Hali-

---

<sup>a</sup>This reviewer is Mr. John O'H. Mitchell, who published in the *Halifax Morning Chronicle* of January 1, 1920, an eloquent article giving many of the facts we have incorporated above. His review was entitled "Pier Two's Epic Part in World Drama of Heroism and Sacrifice."





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

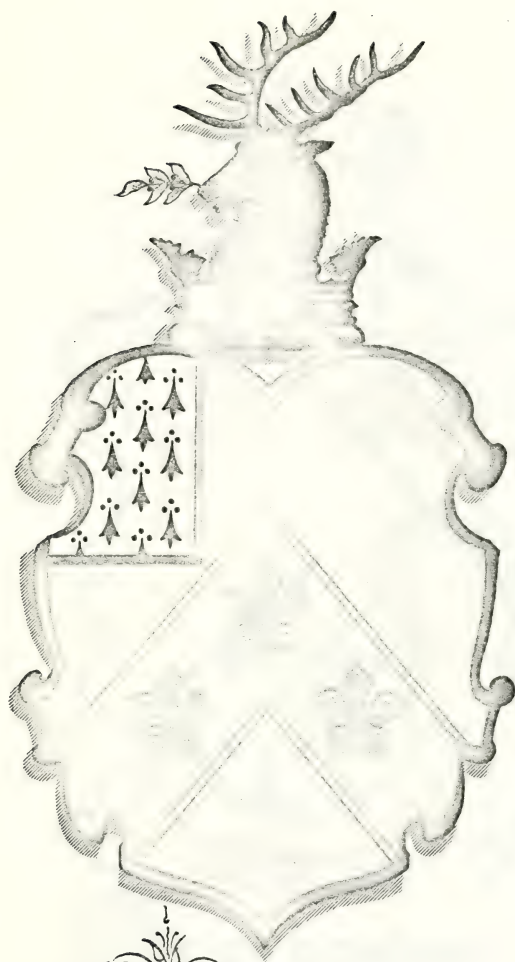
fax and embarked here, we have no facts to enable us to estimate. The outward sailings of transport ships bearing soldiers to the war between the dates we have given, February 21, 1915, and August 23, 1918, numbered a hundred and sixty-five. Of these, the *Olympic* sailed many times, "performing this titantic ferry service without mishap, in spite of the ever present menace of the lurking German submarines," some of her companions among the largest ships being the *Baltic*, the *Carnarvonshire*, the *Empress of Britain*, the *Lapland*, the *Mauretania*, the *Metagama*, the *Missanabie*, the *Saxonia*, the *Scandinavia*, and others. The first outgoing transport ship of whose sailing the railway officials kept record, was the *Megantic*, which on her trip of February 21, 1915, carried 1,207 men, and the last, the *Carnarvonshire*, which on her trip of August 23, 1918, carried 1,921. The largest number carried by any steamer at one sailing was 5,999; this being the number carried by the *Olympic* on her trip of December 20, 1916.

Before the signing of the armistice, it is probable that at least seventy-five thousand wounded and repatriated men reached Canada again through Halifax; and in the year 1918, as is estimated, 251,405 brave youths who had done their duty with manly courage and fortitude and had earned laurels on the fields where they had fought, surviving their comrades who had fallen, disembarked here for their widely scattered homes, to enter in quieter scenes on peaceful though no less manly service in the great fields of industrial enterprise which God has commissioned them nobly to till.



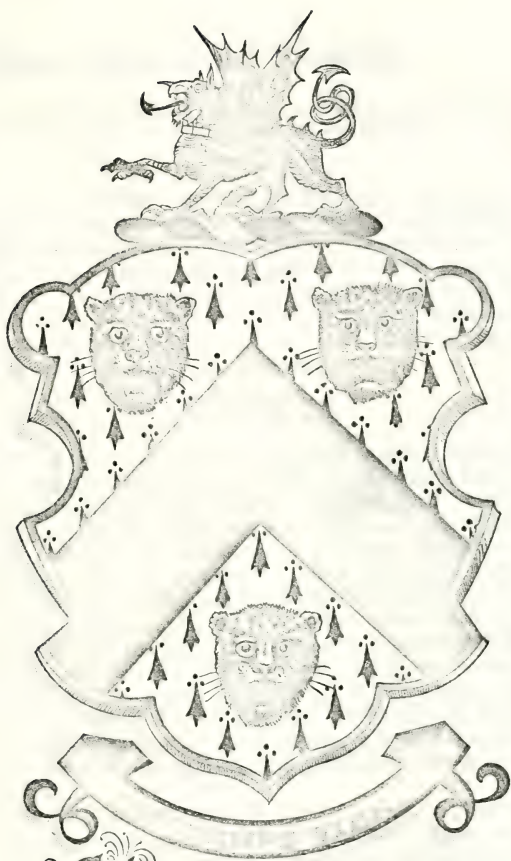






**Hawes**





Harrington



## Hawes and Allied Families

*Hawes Arms*—Azure on a chevron or, three cinquefoils gules a canton ermine.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, a stag's head proper, holding in the mouth a sprig of laurel vert.



THE surname Hawes is of early English origin, and was derived from the place name haw, which signified a hedge, garth, yard, or enclosure. It is of local origin and means literally "at the haw." We find recorded the name of Alen del Hawes, in the Hundred Rolls in the year 1273, and also use of the word in its local sense in Chaucer:—"and eke ther was a polkat in his hawe." An interesting verse concerning the name Hawes runs as follows:

"Thy name is not of German born,  
But of the fragrant English thorn."

The name has been variously spelled through successive centuries, though the forms most commonly used to-day in England and America are Hawes, Hayes, Haighs, and Hay. At least four immigrants of the name came to the Massachusetts Bay Colony prior to 1650. Edmund Hawes, of Plymouth, was later of Duxbury and Yarmouth, and was the founder of a large progeny; at a later date came Edward Hawes, founder of the line herein considered; Richard Hawes, of Dorchester, followed him, and at still a later date came Robert Hawes, of Roxbury. The progeny of these early founders is numerous, and has attained distinction throughout the East, some of its branches spreading to the West. The town of Wrentham, Massachusetts, has been the home of the branch of the family of which the late Dr. Amos Bradish Hawes, of Providence, Rhode Island, was a member, for five generations, covering a period of about two centuries.

*I. Edward Hawes*, immigrant ancestor of most of the Hawes families of Massachusetts, and especially of those which are long established in what is now Norfolk county in that State, came from England, where he was probably born about 1620. He settled in Dedham, Massachusetts, about 1648, when the records show that he was engaged to plaster the meeting house there. Edward Hawes was a mason by trade, and became a prominent and respected member of the community at Dedham, where he died June 28, 1686.

He married, April 15, 1648, at Dedham, Massachusetts, Eliony Lombard. They were the parents of the following children: 1.





## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Lydia, born Jan. 26, 1649. 2. Mary, born Nov. 4, 1650. 3. Daniel, mentioned below. 4. Hannah, born Feb. 1, 1654-55. 5. John, born Dec. 17, 1657. 6. Nathaniel, born Aug. 14, 1660. 7. Abigail, born Oct. 2, 1662. 8. Joseph, born Aug. 9, 1664. 9. Deborah, born Sept. 1, 1666.

*II. Daniel Hawes*, son of Edward and Eliony (Lombard) Hawes, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, February 10, 1652. Later in life he removed to the town of Wrentham, Massachusetts, where he purchased property and became a prosperous farmer and prominent citizen. He married (first) on January 23, 1678, Abigail Gay, daughter of John and Joanna (Baldwich) Gay, who was born April 23, 1649, and died June 17, 1718. (See Gay II.) After her death he married (second) Bridget —, who married (second) April 24, 1739, William Man. She died January 1, 1747.

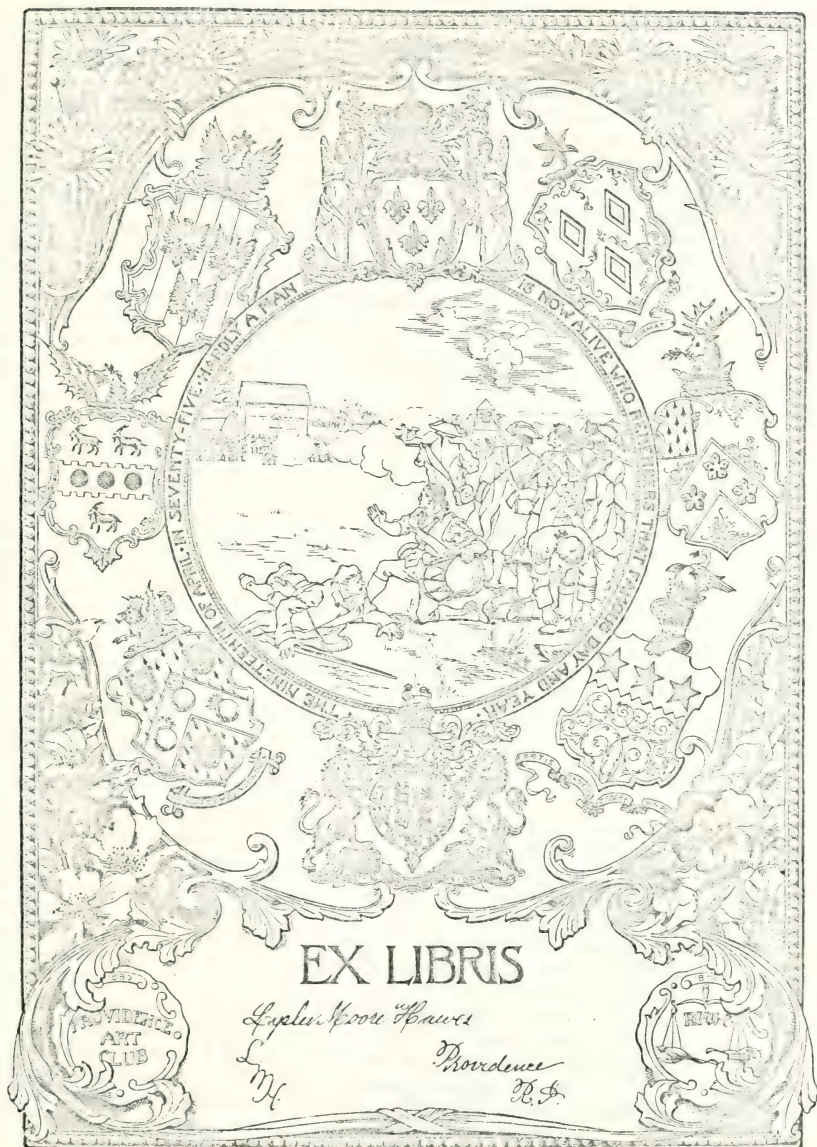
Children of the first marriage: 1. Mary, born Sept. 17, 1679. 2. Abigail, born Nov. 15, 1681. 3. Daniel, mentioned below. 4. Josiah, born April 6, 1687. 5. Hezekiah, born Nov. 22, 1688. 6. Ruth, born July 9, 1691. 7. Benjamin, born March 14, 1696.

*III. Daniel (2) Hawes*, son of Daniel (1) and Abigail (Gay) Hawes, was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, March 30, 1684, resided there all his life, following the occupation of farmer. He died in Wrentham, Massachusetts, January 15, 1763. Daniel Hawes married (first) December 20, 1710, Beriah Man, born March 30, 1687, daughter of Rev. Samuel and Esther (Ware) Man, who died February 28, 1734. (See Man III.) He married (second) December 2, 1734, Jane, widow of Michael Ware and daughter of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Hawes) Wight, born September 6, 1688, and died April 26, 1754. Mr. Hawes married (third) December 11, 1754, Hannah Fisher.

Children of Daniel (2) and Beriah (Man) Hawes: 1. Daniel, born Oct. 24, 1711. 2. Samuel, mentioned below. 3. Peletiah, born Oct. 8, 1714. 4. Moses, born Aug. 28, 1716. 5. Aaron, born April 13, 1718. 6. Ichabod, born Sept. 12, 1720. 7. Timothy, born June 21, 1722. 8. Beriah (son), born March 20, 1724. 9. Josiah, born March 20, 1724, twin of Beriah. 10. Mary, born Feb. 11, 1726. 11. Joseph, born March 21, 1728.

*IV. Samuel Hawes*, son of Daniel (2) and Beriah (Man) Hawes, was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, January 7, 1713. He resided in the town all his life, a successful farmer, and well-known citizen. He married, December 17, 1741, Priscilla Ruggles, who, according to the inscription on their gravestones in the West Wrentham Burial Ground, died on the same day as her husband: "In memory of Mr. Samuel Hawes and Priscilla his wife, who died October ye 5th 1795. Samuel in ye 83rd year of his age, and Priscilla in ye 72nd year of her age." They were the parents of the following children: 1. Samuel, mentioned below. 2. John, born Dec. 8, 1745. 3. Lois, born





EX LIBRIS

Ephraim Moore Haws

Providence

R.I.



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

April 6, 1748. 4. Elisha, born June 1, 1750. 5. Jabez, born Oct. 20, 1755. 6. David, born Aug. 4, 1758. 7. Chloe.

1. *Samuel (2) Hawes*, son of Samuel (1) and Priscilla (Ruggles) Hawes, was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, November 5, 1743. He served at the outbreak of the American Revolution as one of the minute-men, who were organized toward the close of 1774 and early in 1775. He was in the force which on the 19th of April confronted the British at Lexington and, according to a tradition long established in the Hawes family, was the first soldier to fall in the battle. If, however, we accept his journal as authentic, and all evidence points to the fact that it is a historic and true record, it is impossible to believe the tradition. Samuel Hawes' journal, begun by him in Wrentham, Massachusetts, April 19, 1775, gives a brief account of the battle of Lexington, but makes no mention of any participation in it. The first entry is dated Wrentham, April 19:—

About one a clock the minute-men were alarmed and met at Landlord Moons. We marched from there the sun about half an our high towards Roxbury for we heard that the regulars had gone out and had killed six men and had wounded some more that was at Lexinton then the kings troops proceded to concord and there they were Dedicated and Drove Back fting as they went they gat to charlestown hill that night. We marched to headens at Walpole and their got a little refreshment and from their we marched to Doctor Cheneys and their we got some victuals and Drink and from thence we marched to Landlord clises at Dedham and their captain parson and company joined us and then we marched to Jays and their captain Boyd and company joined us and we marched to Landlord Whittings we taried their about one hour and then we marched to richardes and Searched the house and found Ebenezer aldiss and one pery who we supposed to Be torys and we searched them and found Several Letters about them which they were a going to cary to Nathan aldiss in Boston but making them promiss reformation We let them go home then marching forward we met colonel graton returning from the engagement which was the Day before and he Said that he would be with us amediately then we marched to Jamicai plain there we heard that the regulars Were a coming over the neck then we striped of our coats and marched with good courage to Colonel Williams and their we heard to the contrary. We staid their some time and refreshed our Selves and then marched to Roxbury parade and their we had as much Liquor as we wanted and every man drawd three Biscuit which were taken from the regulars the day before which were hard enough for flints. We lay on our arms until toward night and then we repaired to Mr. Slaks house and at night Six men were draughted out for the main guard nothing strange that night.

The journal is chiefly interesting in that it is a chronicle of the life of the soldier at the time of the Revolution, and gives an insight into conditions in the Continental army, the drilling, marching from town to town on alarms, billeting at the inns, the food and quarters, the reports of skirmishes, the killed and wounded, attendance at church services. Recurring frequently throughout the journal, as simple entries without comment, we find mention of severe punishments. Flogging, as high as a thousand stripes, although seventy were considered a very severe punishment, was common in both the English and American armies, for the slightest breach of military discipline. Samuel Hawes' journal runs on until February 10, 1776, when it stops with "Nothing Strange this day."

Samuel Hawes married at Cumberland, Rhode Island, September 20, 1772, Rebecca, daughter of John Farrington, of that town.





## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*Farrington Arms*—Ermine on a chevron gules between three leopards' faces sable, as many bombs or, fired proper.

*Crest*—A dragon, wings elevated, tail nowed, vert, bezante, gorged with a mural crown argent, and chain reflexed over the back or, charged on the body with two gallops fesseways of the last.

*Motto*—*Le bon temps viendra.*

We have not the date of the death of Samuel Hawes, but it must have been before 1780, when the records state that Ichabod Thompson and Rebecca Hawes were married, November 10th of that year. Samuel and Rebecca (Farrington) Hawes were the parents of the following children: 1. Polly, born December, 1773, mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Samuel (1) Hawes, 1795. She married, Dec. 15, 1796, Daniel Richardson, of Attleboro. 2. Samuel, mentioned below.

*VI. Samuel (3) Hawes*, son of Samuel (2) and Rebecca (Farrington) Hawes, was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, January 25, 1775. He was a farmer, and owned considerable farming property in the town, some of which was inherited from his father and some of which he acquired by purchase. He took no active interest in the public life of Wrentham, although he maintained always a deep concern in its welfare. Samuel (3) Hawes married Polly Moore.

*Moore Arms*—Argent three greyhounds courant, in pale sable, collared or.

*Crest*—A moor-cock proper.

*Motto*—*Fortis cadere non potest.*

Samuel (3) and Polly (Moore) Hawes were the parents of the following children: 1. Samuel, married and had two daughters. 2. Mary, who became the wife of Amory Cook. 3. Sarah, who married Pliny Ray. 4. Eliab. 5. Mehitable, married Albert Ware. 6. Melita, married Lewis Leander Rockwood. 7. Levi, married Lucetta Bond. 8. Amos Bradish, mentioned below. 9. Arnold C., who became a doctor of dentistry, practising at Providence; he married (first) Hannah Jane Wardlow, and (second) Eliza Cooke Wardlow; he died at Noroton, Conn., April 7, 1895. 10. Eleanor Farrington, who became the wife of Ellis Norcross.

*VII. Dr. Amos Bradish Hawes*, son of Samuel (3) and Polly (Moore) Hawes, was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, May 15, 1811. He spent the early years of his life on the old Hawes homestead in the town of Wrentham, and received his education in the local public schools. After completing his schooling, he entered the mills at Lonsdale, Rhode Island, in the capacity of machinist, where he made excellent progress through a native inventive and mechanical genius. He was, however, ambitious to enter professional life, and having earned enough money to enable him to start on a course of dentistry, severed his connection with the Lonsdale Mills. He entered upon the practice of his profession in the city of Providence, meeting almost at once with a very great degree of success. Dr. Hawes rose to prominence in the dental profession in Providence,







*Ames Bradish Hawes*



1810-1811

From the original

Mary Thidden Hawes



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

becoming one of its leaders, a position which he held unchallenged for more than half a century. He was highly respected both as a man and as a citizen, and was favorably and well known throughout the city. Dr. Hawes was a prominent figure in the Masonic order in Rhode Island. He was a member of St. John's Lodge, of Providence, and had attained to the thirty-second degree of Masonry. His religious affiliation was with the Westminster Unitarian Society of Providence.

Dr. Amos Bradish Hawes married, September 18, 1853, in Saratoga, New York, Mary Hidden Wardlow, daughter of James and Eliza (Cooke) Wardlow, and a member of a very old and distinguished Massachusetts family. She died in Providence, Rhode Island, January 17, 1905, aged seventy-nine years. Dr. Hawes died in Providence, December 11, 1890. The children of Dr. and Mrs. Hawes were: 1. Lyslie Moore, born June 9, 1855; Miss Hawes resides at the old family home at No. 428 Pine street, Providence; she is administratrix of the estates of her father and mother and a business woman of ability. 2. Lewis Clinton, born November 12, 1857, was educated in the schools of Providence, and at Lapham Institute, Scituate, Rhode Island; now owner of a prosperous twenty-two hundred acre ranch in Ford, Kansas; married Lutie M. Dempsey; children: Amos Wardlow and Mary Wynthorpe. 3. Earl Palmer, mentioned below.

*VIII. Earl Palmer Hawes, D.D.S., M.D.*, son of Dr. Amos Bradish Hawes and Mary H. (Wardlow) Hawes, was born in Providence, Rhode Island, June 1, 1860. He received his early education in the public schools of the city, and later matriculated at the University of Pennsylvania, where he pursued a course in dentistry. He was graduated with the degree of Doctor of Dental Surgery in the class of 1881, and in 1883, on further study, received the degree of Doctor of Medicine. During his college course, Dr. Hawes became a member of the Chi Phi fraternity. While pursuing his studies, Dr. Hawes aided his father in his dental practice during his vacation periods. In 1883 he entered into active practice with his father, succeeding him at the time of the latter's death, which occurred in Providence, Rhode Island, December 11, 1890.

Dr. Hawes married Mary Lilius Pearce, daughter of Samuel Pearce, and a descendant of one of the oldest and most prominent of New England's Colonial families. They were the parents of one child, Geoffrey Weed, born June 24, 1889, died January 23, 1905. Dr. Hawes is a member of the Rhode Island Dental Society and the National Dental Association. He is also a member of the Rhode Island Yacht Club, the Unitarian Club, and the Central Club.

(The Gay Line).

*Arms*—Or, a chevron between three escallops azure.

*Crest*—On a chapeau gules turned up ermine a lion passant guardant or, charged on the breast with an escallop azure.





## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Gay as a surname had its origin in the nickname "the gay," "the light-hearted," the application of which is obvious. At the time of the wide-spread adoption of surnames in England, this name became firmly established throughout the kingdom. Many families of the name rose to prominence in English life and affairs. The family was established at an early date in New England.

*I. John Gay*, immigrant ancestor and founder of the American family, was a native of England, and came to the American Colonies, in the ship *Mary and John*, in 1630. He arrived on the 30th of May and was landed at Nantasket. Part of the ship's company located at what was known among the Indians as "Mattapan," and others, among them John Gay, proceeded up the Charles River, engaged an interpreter from among the Indians, made a small settlement at Charlestown, and continued on until they reached a place near where the United States arsenal now stands at Watertown, Massachusetts. There they found an encampment of some three hundred Indians, hastened to declare their peaceful intentions through their interpreter, and were allowed to settle there, thus becoming "the first settlers of Watertown." John Gay received a grant in the Beaver Brook plow lands, and had in all about forty acres. A few years after the settlement of Watertown, he, with eighteen other settlers, pushed on up the river, and settled a plantation which they called "Contentment," which became in course of time, Dedham. He was one of the petitioners for the establishment of the town of Dedham, September 6, 1636, and was among the original proprietors of the town, where he served as selectman in 1654.

John Gay died in Dedham, Massachusetts, March 4, 1688. His wife, Joanna, said to have been a Widow Baldwin at the time of her marriage to him, survived him over three years, dying August 14, 1691. The inventory of his estate amounted to £91 5s. 8d. The children of John and Joanna (Baldwin) Gay were: 1. Samuel, born March 10, 1639. 2. Hezekiah, born July 3, 1640. 3. Nathaniel, born Jan. 11, 1643. 4. Eliezer, born June 25, 1647. 5. Abigail, mentioned below. 6. Judith, twin of Abigail, born April 23, 1649. 7. John, born May 6, 1651. 8. Jonathan, born Aug. 1, 1653. 9. Hannah, born Oct. 16, 1656. 10. Elizabeth, married Richard Martin.

*II. Abigail Gay*, daughter of John and Joanna (Baldwin) Gay, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, April 23, 1649. She married, January 23, 1678, Daniel Hawes, of Wrentham, Massachusetts, and died June 17, 1718. (See Hawes II).

(The Man Line).

*Arms*—Azure, on a fesse counter-embattled, between three goats passant argent, as many pellets.

*Crest*—A dragon's head between two dragon's wings expanded gules, gutté d'or.

Man, in its most ancient form as a surname, written with a single n, can be traced in Germany to a very remote period. The earliest



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

notice of the name in England is found in the Domesday Book, A.D. 1086, where mention is made of Willelmus filius Manne, meaning William the son of Man. "Patronymica Britannica" inclines to the opinion that the name Man signifies in the old French, Norman. The family is one of the most ancient in England, dating from the time of William the Conqueror, when the above-mentioned Willelmus Manne was a landholder in County Hants. At a subsequent period the name became a very prominent one in England, and its bearers were numerous. There were for a long period fifteen distinct and notable branches of the house, each entitled to bear arms. For a long period the king's private secretaries were selected from a family of this name, which was also the family name of Lord Cornwallis, commander of the British at Yorktown. Various branches of the English family are found in counties Norfolk, Northampton, Gloucester, Lincoln, and York. The principal seat seems to have been at Bramley, County York, and from this branch springs, it is believed, the ancestor of the American family, William Mann, who settled at Cambridge, in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. At least two of the surname Man, or Mann, were among the original founders of New England: Richard, who settled in Scituate, Massachusetts, and William, of Cambridge, who was the progenitor of what is known as the Wrentham branch of the family. Others of this name are found in the early vital records of Boston, Lexington, and Rehoboth, Massachusetts; Providence, Rhode Island; Portsmouth, New Hampshire; also in Virginia, Connecticut, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, some of whom were natives of England, and others descendants of English immigrants. The name is to be found in the muster rolls of the Continental army, and during the past century a large number of its bearers attained prominence in professional and religious and business life.

*I. William Man*, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Wrentham branch of the American family, was born in England, probably in County Kent, about 1607, and was the youngest of eleven children. Students of the history of the family have advanced the opinion that he was the son of Sir Charles Mann, of Hatton Braddock, County Kent, who was knighted in 1635 by Charles I. William Man immigrated to the New England Colonies in 1634, or perhaps prior to that date. He was a proprietor of the town of Cambridge, in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1634, and was prominent in the life of the early settlement. He married (first) in 1643, Mary Jarrad, who came from England, and (second) June 11, 1657, Alice Tiel. His will, dated December 10, 1661, was proved April 1, 1662. It bequeathed to his wife and only son, Samuel, and was unsigned.

*II. Rev. Samuel Man*, son of William and Mary (Jarrad) Man, was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, July 6, 1647. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1665, and began to teach school at



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Dedham, Massachusetts, May 13, 1667. He taught for five years, and preached to the small society in that part of Dedham, now Wrentham, until March 30, 1676, when the people fled from the town on account of Indian hostilities during King Philip's War. He was again at Dedham as a teacher in 1676 and 1678. In the fall of 1677 the town of Dedham voted to invite him to become their minister for the winter, and early the following spring he was engaged to preach at Milton, but returned to Dedham in the summer of 1680. Here he continued his ministerial labors until a church of ten members was gathered, and April 13, 1693, he was ordained and preached his own ordination sermon. On October 26, 1699, "In the dead of night" his dwelling house with the church records was burned. It is said his mind was afflicted with infirmities, and for twenty-five years before his death he did not go out of his own town. One of the first men of the province writes of him: "He was not only a very good but a very learned man." He wrote a work containing advice to his children, who were soon to be married. "His ordinary sermons were fit for the press," and "yet such was his humility that he thought nothing of his worth publishing." He was beloved by his people. His last sermon was from the text, "I have seen all the works that are done under the sun, and behold all is vanity and vexation of spirit." He died at Wrentham, May 22, 1719. He married, May 19, 1673, Esther Ware, born September 28, 1655, died September 3, 1734, daughter of Robert and Margaret (Hunting) Ware. They were the parents of eleven children, among them Beriah, mentioned below.

*III. Beriah Man*, daughter of Rev. Samuel and Esther (Ware) Man, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, March 30, 1687. She married, December 20, 1710, Daniel Hawes, son of Daniel and Abigail (Gay) Hawes, and died February 28, 1734. (See Hawes III.)

(The Wardlow Line).

County Antrim, Ireland, has been the seat of the Wardlow family for several centuries. Stoneyford, the original Wardlow estate, was located in County Antrim, near the great city of Belfast, and was a manor of consequence in the life of the surrounding countryside. Descendants of the early Wardlows were gentlemen and squires well known in Antrim, active in the public affairs of the large cities, and wielding large influence in the rural districts in the vicinity of Stoneyford. The family, however, is of French Huguenot stock, and was one of the many that left France for England, Ireland, and America during the latter half of the sixteenth century. In 1555 the term "Huguenots" was first applied to the adherents of the Protestant faith in France. The terrible massacres of 1572 were followed, as time passed, by more vigorous and severe measures against the unfortunate Huguenots, deprived of a political



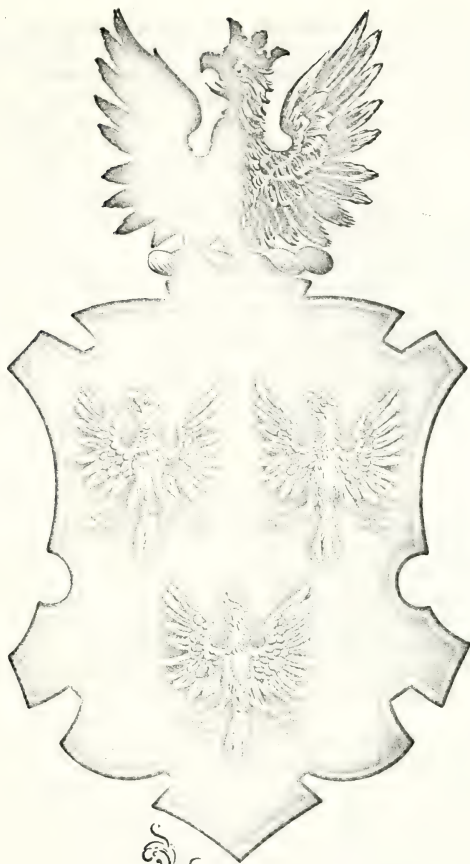




Wardlow







Cooke



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

voice since the fall of Rochelle and the entrance of Richelieu into power; their persecution, revived strenuously under Louis XIV., at last culminated, following a gradual deprivation of civil rights, in the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, to procure the original promulgation of which perhaps no body or nation ever fought harder or more stubbornly than did the Huguenots. With many of their places of worship demolished (according to Anquetil seven hundred between 1657 and 1685), thousands of French refugee Protestants, of lineages illustrious in the great and heroic deeds of world history, escaped to Switzerland, the Netherlands, Germany, and the British Isles, many coming also to the New England Colonies in the New World. The Wardlows of County Antrim, Ireland, were of that heroic body of French Huguenots, who, for the sake of religious principle, severed the ties of home and country, and sought liberty of conscience in foreign lands. In the centuries since the founding of the line in Ireland, branches have spread to many parts of the world. Streets are named for the family in Burton, Wales, Victoria, British Columbia, in England, and in the United States.

*Wardlow Arms*—Azure, three mascles or.

*Crest*—An estoile or.

*Motto*—*Familias firmat pietas.* (Piety strengthens families.)

*I. James Wardlow*, the first of the direct line whom it has been possible to trace, was born in Ireland, the son of parents in excellent circumstances, and the descendant of a long-established and time-honored family of County Antrim. He married and remained in Ireland all his life, a substantial gentleman and highly honored member of the community. James Wardlow married Hannah Wilson, and they were the parents of four children: 1. John. 2. William, married and had four children. 3. James, mentioned below. 4. Jane, married — English.

*II. James (2) Wardlow*, son of James (1) and Hannah (Wilson) Wardlow, was born in County Antrim, Ireland. At an early age he came to the United States, and settled in the town of Pawtucket, Massachusetts, now Pawtucket, Rhode Island. He was one of the pioneer merchants of the town, well known and highly respected in business circles, and greatly esteemed as a citizen. He married Eliza Cooke, daughter of Robert and Bethiah (Hyde) Cooke, and member of an old New England family. Their children were: 1. Hannah Jane. 2. Eliza Cooke. 3. Mary Hidden, mentioned below. 4. Rachel Jackson. 5. Charlotte Cooke. 6. James Henry. 7. John Edwin. James Wardlow died at Noroton, Conn., at the home of his daughter, Eliza (Cooke) Hawes, wife of Arnold C. Hawes.

*Cooke Arms*—Pale of six gules and sable three eagles displayed argent.

*Crest*—A demi-eagle, per pale gules and sable with wings displayed and ducally crowned or.

*III. Mary Hidden Wardlow*, daughter of James (2) and Eliza



## HAWES AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(Cooke) Wardlow, was born in Pawtucket, Massachusetts, October 17, 1826, and died in Providence, Rhode Island, January 17, 1905. She married, on September 18, 1853, Dr. Amos Bradish Hawes, of Providence, and they were the parents of Lyslie M. Hawes, of Providence. (See Hawes VII.)

### ARMORIAL DESIGNATIONS

**COOKE**—The shield is red and black. Red represents in heraldry fire, blood, war, fortitude. Black—sorrow, grief, calamity. Silver denotes purity of thought, sincerity, etc.

The fact that the red and black are shown in perpendicular stripes alternately only means that they were arranged that way to suit the fancy of the grantee and to show in a pleasing form.

The eagle is deemed the king of birds, and is extensively used in heraldry on account of its swiftness, courage, and surety of eye. It is said that the female exposes her young against the beams of the sun, and such of them that cannot look at the brightness are cast out. The ancestor was probably granted the right to adopt the eagle as his arms and crest on account of his quickness and surety of action and an overtowering intellect, being a prince among men. The crown on the eagle's head denotes noble blood.

**MAN**—Blue field—faithfulness. The fesse in this case resembles a wall with embattlements. The black roundles are also called gunstones, and resemble cannon balls. The goat is calculated for liberty more than for confinement, and as it undertakes the most dangerous enterprises, it is appropriately applied in armory.

The dragon is an imaginary monster, represented as a strong and fierce animal and may be deemed an emblem of viciousness and envy. In armory it is properly applied to tyranny, or the overthrow of a vicious enemy.

**FARRINGTON**—The shield is ermine, the royal fur. The chevron exemplifies the rafters of a roof, an allusion to the building of a home and family. The color, red, charged with burning bombs, denotes war and battle.

Leopards are animals not possessed with the good qualities of the lion, being fierce without provocation and cruel without cause. The dragon, an imaginary monster, is supposed to be a strong and fierce animal and is deemed the emblem of viciousness and envy. In heraldry they are properly applied to tyranny or the overthrow of a vicious enemy. The mural crown around the dragon's neck signifies the storming of a wall or castle.

**WARDLOW**—Blue, faithfulness; three mascles gold, wealth. A mascle is the

*Motto—Le bon temps viendra.* (There is a good time coming.)

same as a lozenge, only avoided so as to leave a narrow frame. It has no special meaning; the arms of a lady, whether she be maid or widow, are always displayed on a lozenge. The crest, an estoile (a wavy star) means that the bearer of the arms was rewarded for some valorous service, a service which put him on a plane above his fellows. Stars mean grandeur, power, etc.

*Motto—Familiās firmat pietas.* (Piety strengthens families.)

**HAWES**—The shield is blue and gold. Blue denotes loyalty, truth, devotion; its jewel is the sapphire. Gold denotes nobility, respect, authority, greatness; its jewel the topaz. Blue and gold, placed the way they are, denote joy and pleasure. The cinquefoils (five leaved leaves) are emblematic of the protection and shelter a man and soldier owes his country and its widows and orphans, because the leaves protect the fruit from wind and rain. The crown denotes noble blood.

The stag's head in the crest signifies gentleness and meekness. The antlers denote strength, and are also emblematic of fearlessness and skill. The laurel twig in the stag's mouth denotes victory.

**MOORE**—The shield is gold and blue. Gold is emblematic of nobility, greatness, authority and power; its jewel the topaz. Blue represents loyalty, faithfulness and devotion; the jewel, the sapphire. The combination of gold first and blue second indicates avarice and a tendency to hoard. Red represents fire, fortitude, blood or war.

Stars in heraldry, special honor, splendor, brilliancy; a man above his contemporaries in bravery, intelligence or prowess is considered a star.

The crown is the symbol of nobility. The swan was always regarded as the symbol of peace and prosperity.

*Motto—Fortis cadere non potest.* (The brave man may fall, but cannot yield.)







Browning



## Browning and Allied Families

*Arms*—Barry wavy of six argent and azure.

*Crest*—A sinister arm from the elbow, issuing from a cloud in the dexter, holding the hand above a serpent's head, erect from the middle, and looking towards the sinister proper.



THE surname Browning is Anglo-Saxon, and in its older form would appear to be the German word Bruning, which later came to be rendered in various ways, as Bruning, Bruening, Browneing, Brimming, Brininge, Browninge, etc. The earliest form of the name, according to the poet, Robert Browning, was "De Bruni," which was the name in Norman French of one of the ancient German tribes which inhabited the northern part of the country on the shores of the Baltic Sea. According to the scholar, John Aaron Browning, the form of the word in High German is Brauning and in Low German Bruning, names still often found. In the English home of the family the name was anglicized to Browning. The word Bruning probably refers to the complexion of the skin or the hair of the people originally so-called. The "brun" meaning brown, and the suffix "-ing" meaning relating to, the significance of the name would be relating to those of brown complexion. Some scholars, however, contend that "-ing" is a diminutive signifying "less," so that those designated Bruning would be described as less brown than their neighbors. The Anglo-Saxon word Browning may have the same meaning ascribed to Bruning, but "ing" in Anglo-Saxon is the word for meadow or low pasture land, such as surrounds the shores of the Baltic. As the Brunings originally came from that locality, the word may have referred to them as the inhabitants of the low meadows or pasture lands whence they came.

*I. Nathaniel Browning*, son of Mrs. Elizabeth Browning, of London, England, was born in London, England, about 1618. Mrs. Browning and her husband would appear both to have been Non-conformists, and the persecution that followed them was probably the inducing cause that led Nathaniel Browning to embark for America soon after he came of age, or in the year 1640, when he was about twenty-two years old. He landed in Boston, and from there went to Portsmouth, Rhode Island. The reason for his going was probably that his subsequent father-in-law, William Freeborn, was also a Puritan, or Non-conformist, and had sailed from Ipswich, England, in 1634, when he was forty years old, and his wife Mary thirty-five years old. The first mention we have of Nathaniel Brown-



ing in the records of Rhode Island is in 1645, when it is stated that he purchased a dwelling house and two lots in Warwick, for three pounds of wampum. The wampum consisted of strings of carefully selected shells, considered and used as money by the Indians. In 1654 he was made a freeman. This implied a good deal at the time, as the colonies were very young, and not only the Indians were in the vicinity, frequently visiting the settlements, but also, what was more to be dreaded, many persons of uncertain character, were continually coming from England to America who threatened the peace and quiet of the settlements. As any person who was made a freeman was taken into the council and government of the colony, such persons were only admitted by the General Court after having taken an oath of allegiance to the government here established; and it was very important for the protection of their wives and children as well as their property that no persons should be admitted as freemen. This custom continued until the second charter in 1692 made Massachusetts a royal province.

He died at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, about 1670, when about fifty-two years old. He married, about 1650, Sarah, second daughter of William and Mary Freeborn, who sailed from Ipswich, England, in 1634, with their children: William, of whom further; and Jane, born about 1655.

*II. William Browning*, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Freeborn) Browning, was born about 1651, at Portsmouth, Rhode Island. He was a farmer, and lived at North Kingston, Rhode Island. In 1684 he was made a freeman, and the records show that he exchanged lands in 1685. The record also shows that on February 26, 1688, he sold to Robert Fisher twenty acres.

He died in 1730, in the eightieth year of his age. His will, dated January 12, 1730, proved February 8, 1730, reads in part as follows: "To wife, Sarah, thirty pounds yearly for life; to eldest son, Samuel, two hundred and fifty acres in south Kingston, one hundred pounds, and to have also ten pounds paid him by his brother William, and fifty pounds by his brother John; to son William two hundred and fifty acres in South Kingston on which he now dwelleth; to son John a hundred acres at Point Judith, where he dwelleth; to daughter Sarah three hundred pounds; to deceased daughter Hannah Knowles, children, Rebecca and Hannah, a hundred pounds at eighteen equally divided; to three sons the rest of the estate equally."

He married (first) in 1687, Rebecca, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Porter) Wilbur, granddaughter of Samuel Wilbur and John Porter, both of whom were original settlers of Portsmouth. He married (second) Sarah, surname unknown, who died in 1730. Issue (all by first marriage): 1. Samuel, born Feb. 9, 1688. 2. Hannah, born July 16, 1691. 3. William, born Sept. 29, 1693. 4. Sarah, born April, 1694. 5. John, of whom further.





## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*III. John Browning*, youngest son of William and Rebecca (Wilbur) Browning, was born March 4, 1696, at South Kingston, Rhode Island. He was a farmer and lived in South Kingston, near the seacoast. In 1744 he was made a freeman, and the records show that on March 8, 1738, he bought of Jeffrey Hazard a tract of two hundred acres, giving £2,000 for it. He sold, October 20, 1741, to Stephen Hazard, for £3,000, a tract of land of a hundred acres, and April 27, 1741, he deeded to his son Jeremiah forty acres of the land bought of Jeffrey Hazard, a relative of his wife. In later years the Hazard family became very wealthy by manufacturing woolens, their principal mill being at Peacedale, Rhode Island. In his will, dated August 23, 1770, proved April 14, 1777, he deeded to his grandsons, Thomas and William, sons of Thomas, deceased, all his lands in South Kingston, being part of his homestead farm, about a hundred acres, and to them fourteen acres salt marsh in Charleston. John Browning was buried in the little Quaker burying ground at South Kingston, Rhode Island, near the factory, a small grey granite headstone, dug from the hills nearby, marking the spot where he lies. The name "John Browning" is all that is carved upon it, while at his side a small mound of earth marks the resting place of his wife, Ann Hazard, with no tombstone at all to mark the spot. John Browning died in 1777, at Exeter, Rhode Island, in his eighty-first year.

He married, April 21, 1721, Ann, daughter of Jeremiah and Sarah (Smith) Hazard (see Hazard Line). Issue: 1. Thomas, of whom further. 2. Sarah Elizabeth, born 1724. 3. Jeremiah, born 1726. 4. Hannah, born 1728. 5. Martha, born 1732. 6. Ann, born 1734. 7. Eunice, born 1740. 8. John, born Sept. 15, 1742. 9. Mary, born 1744. 10. Ephraim, born Sept. 20, 1746.

*IV. Thomas Browning*, eldest son of John and Ann (Hazard) Browning, was born in 1722, at Kingston, Rhode Island. He was a farmer at Hopkinton, Rhode Island, and was made a freeman in 1742. In religion he was a Quaker. He was ensign of Company I, South Kingston Third Regiment, in May, 1743, and was made captain of his company in May, 1747. He is mentioned as justice of the peace at Little Compton in June, 1749. He died in 1770, at South Kingston, Rhode Island, aged fifty-two years. He left no will, but the inventory of his personal estate showed that it amounted to £650.

He married (first) Mary, daughter of William and Mary (Wilkinson) Browning. He married (second) July 2, 1769, Anna, daughter of Solomon and Mary Hoxie, of Richmond, Rhode Island. Issue (by first marriage): 1. Robert, born 1757. 2. Thomas, born 1761. 3. William Thomas, of whom further. 4. Annie, born 1767. Issue (by second marriage): 5. Joshua, born 1770.

*V. William Thomas Browning*, third son of Thomas and Mary





## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

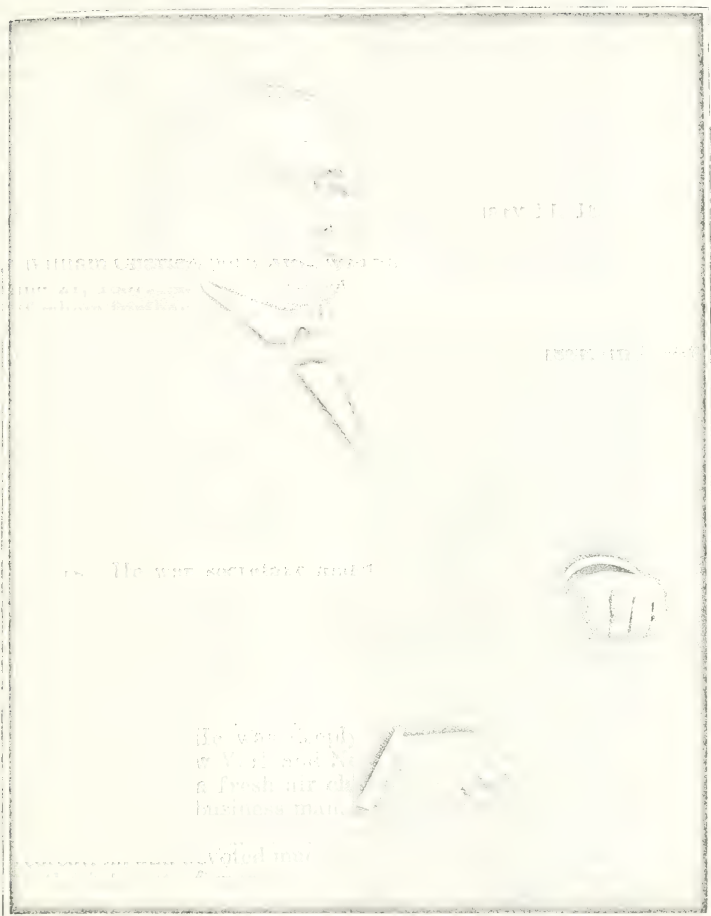
(Browning) Browning, was born at South Kingston, Rhode Island, May 11, 1765. He was left an orphan when he was six years old, and went to live with his uncles, who were also his guardians. He lived part of the time with his uncle, Jeremiah Browning, and part of the time with his uncle, John Browning. When eleven, his guardians sold a farm for him for a very large amount for those days, and the money was stored in his guardians' house in South Kingston, in gold and silver coins. This was during the war of the Revolution, and the state government sent officers with soldiers and took the money, leaving in its place continental currency, which was stored in barrels in the garret of the house. When he moved from South Kingston he went to Preston township, Connecticut, and bought a farm there. He built a new farmhouse on the dividing line between the townships of Preston and North Stonington, so that one-half of the house was in one township and one-half in the other. This afterwards became known as the old Browning homestead, and is still standing in very good condition, occupied by a Mr. Richardson. The barrels of continental money he took with him and stored in the garret of his new house. He died January 2, 1826, on his farm in Preston.

He married, December 29, 1784, Catherine, daughter of Robert Morey, of Newport, Rhode Island. Issue: 1. Catherine, born Jan. 28, 1786. 2. Mary, born Feb. 4, 1788. 3. Thomas, born April 21, 1790. 4. Elizabeth, born July 1, 1792. 5. Sarah, born Aug. 9, 1794; twin. 6. Ann, born Aug. 9, 1794; twin. 7. William, born Aug. 25, 1796. 8. Thomas M., born June 17, 1798. 9. Joshua, born July 17, 1800. 10. John Hazard, of whom further. 11. Latham Hull, born April 13, 1804. 12. Oren, born March 31, 1806. 13. Benjamin Franklin, born Feb. 18, 1808. 14. Susan A., born Nov. 8, 1810.

VI. *John Hazard Browning*, son of William Thomas and Catherine (Morey) Browning, was born July 28, 1801, at the Browning homestead near Preston City, Connecticut. He grew up on his father's farm near Preston City, and when about five or six years old met with an accident by falling into a deep well, which nearly cost him his life. He taught school for several years before starting in business, and began his commercial career at Milltown, Connecticut, in 1821, where he ran a general store, dealing largely in yarn spun by the farmers' wives. Shortly after his marriage he moved to New London, Connecticut, and there continued a general merchandise business. In 1833 he moved to New York City and started in the dry goods business at the corner of Fulton and Water streets, as Browning & Hull. In 1849 he closed his business and went into the general merchandise business in California, along with Oliver Jennings and Benjamin A. Brewster, whom he sent out to California for the purpose. He remained in New York City manufacturing cloth and buying other supplies which he shipped to the store in California. The store was burnt three times without fire insurance,



# BROWNING AND ALLIES



*Arnell Browning*



## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and the stock was a total loss. This business was very prosperous, but he withdrew from it and all active affairs in 1857, except as a special partner with his eldest son in the clothing business, which was conducted by Hanford & Browning. Afterwards this firm became Browning, King & Company, and now has stores in nearly all the principal cities of the United States. He died March 22, 1877.

He married (first), September 21, 1829, Eliza (Smith) Hull, of Stonington, Connecticut, daughter of Col. John W. Hull and Elizabeth (Smith) Hull, the latter of Waterford, Connecticut; she died April 21, 1875 (see Hull Line). He married (second) Isabella, daughter of William Rutter, of New York City, January 11, 1876. Issue (all by first marriage): 1. John W., born March 5, 1831, died in 1833. 2. William Charles, born Nov. 13, 1835. 3. Edward Franklin, born June 21, 1837. 4. Ann Elizabeth, born Feb. 13, 1839. 5. John Hull, of whom further.

*VII. John Hull Browning*, youngest child of John Hazard and Eliza Smith (Hull) Browning, was born December 25, 1841, in Orange, New Jersey, where the family has been for some time established. After pursuing a course in the New York Academy, he embarked upon a business career in his twentieth year, entering the wholesale clothing firm of William C. Browning & Company, which business was very successful, and John Hull Browning ultimately became interested in various financial and business enterprises. Soon after 1883 he succeeded the late Charles G. Sisson as president of the Northern Railroad of New Jersey, which position he occupied twenty-two years. He was secretary and treasurer of the East & West Railroad of Alabama, and for twenty years was president of the Richmond County Gas Company, in what is now Greater New York. For some time he was treasurer of the Cherokee Iron Company of Cedartown, Georgia, and he was a director in the Citizens' National Bank of Englewood, New Jersey. Mr. Browning made his home in New York City, but maintained an attractive summer home at Tenaflly, New Jersey. He was deeply interested in organized charitable work, both in New York and New Jersey, and in association with his wife erected a fresh air children's home at Tenaflly. While he was essentially a business man, a director in many profitable enterprises, Mr. Browning always had time for a reasonable amount of recreation, and devoted much thought and care to benevolent work in the interest of mankind in general. He was twice a presidential elector, and prior to his marriage was active in the Masonic order. He died suddenly in the Erie ferryhouse at the foot of Chambers street, New York, October 26, 1914, on his way home.

John Hull Browning married, October 19, 1871, Eva B. Sisson, daughter of Charles Grandison and Mary Elizabeth (Garrabrant) Sisson. Mr. Sisson was a projector, contractor and railroad president, one of the most useful citizens of New Jersey during more





## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

than a quarter of a century's residence in that State, left a most honorable record.

*Sisson Arms*—Per fesse embattled or and azure three griffins' heads erased counter-changed.

*Crest*—A griffin's head erased.

*Motto*—Hope for the best; the motto, *Si sonent tubæ paratus*, has been sometimes used over the crest.

Sisson, a family originally from Normandy.

Mr. and Mrs. John Hull Browning were the parents of a son, John Hull Browning, born October 6, 1874, died June 10, 1917.

(The Hazard Line).

*Arms*—Azure, two bars argent, on a chief or three escallops gules.

*Crest*—An escallop gules.

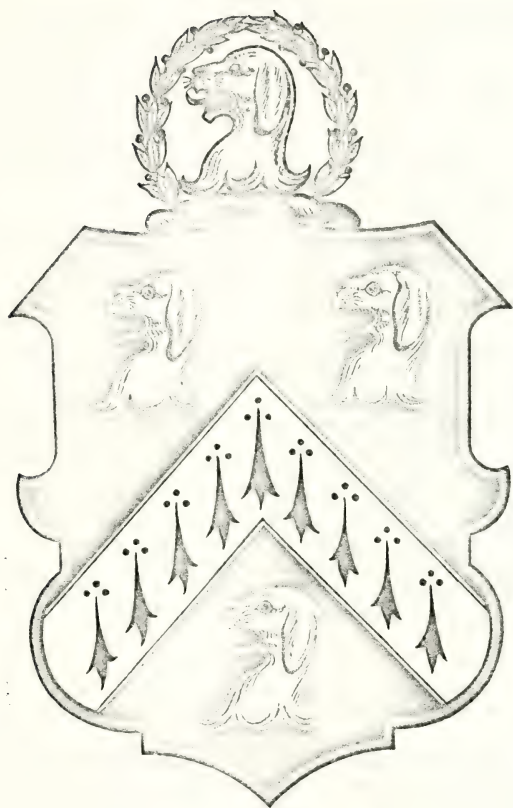
The family of Hassard, Hassart or Hazard, is of Norman extraction. At the time of the Conquest they were living on the borders of Switzerland, and were distinguished by the ancient but long extinct title of Duke de Charante. Two bearing this title visited the Holy Land as crusaders. The Hazards in this country belong chiefly to Rhode Island, where the original Thomas settled in 1639. Tradition says that Thomas was accompanied by a nephew, the ancestor of the New York and southern branches of the family. In Rhode Island the name is one of the most numerous in the State. Mrs. Mary Hazard, of South Kingston, Rhode Island, grandmother of Governor Hazard, died in 1739, at the age of one hundred years, and could count up five hundred children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, and great-great-grandchildren, of whom two hundred and five were then living.

*I. Thomas Hazard*, the first American ancestor, born in England, in 1610, came from England, some say Wales, and settled in Rhode Island, in 1635. His name is first found in Boston in 1635. In 1638 he was admitted a freeman of Boston; in 1639 he was admitted freeman of Newport, Rhode Island, and in 1640 he was appointed a member of the general court of elections. He died in 1680.

He married (first) Martha, surname unknown, who died in 1669. He married (second) Martha, widow of Thomas Sheriff, who died in 1691. Issue (probably all by first marriage): 1. Robert, of whom further. 2. Elizabeth, married George Lawton. 3. Hannah, married Stephen Wilcox, son of Edward Wilcox. 4. Martha, married (first) Ichabod, son of Nathaniel and Dorothy Potter; (second) Benjamin, son of Roger and Mary Mowry.

*II. Robert Hazard*, eldest child of Thomas and Martha Hazard, was born in 1635, in England or Ireland. In 1635 he was admitted freeman of Portsmouth, Rhode Island, appears to have been a prominent man in the colony, and was a large landowner. He built a big house in Kingstown, Rhode Island, which stood for a century and a half. The house had a long L in which was a capacious chimney





the sea

**HULL**

HULL, 1700, 1710



## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

with two stone seats where, tradition says, the little slave children were wont to sit. Robert Hazard, according to the deeds given to his sons and others, owned more than a thousand acres of land. He died in 1710.

He married Mary, daughter of Thomas and Ann Brownell. She died January 28, 1739, at the age of one hundred years, having lived to see five hundred of her descendants, as previously mentioned. She appears to have been remarkable in more than one way, for the "Boston Gazette," dated February 12, 1739, says of her: "She was accounted a very useful Gentlewoman, both to the Poor and Rich on many accounts, and particularly amongst Sick Persons for her Skill and Judgment, which she did Gratis." Issue: 1. Thomas, born in 1660, died in 1746; married Susannah Nichols. 2. George, married Penelope, daughter of Caleb and Abigail Arnold, died in 1743. 3. Stephen, married Elizabeth Helme, died September 20, 1727. 4. Martha, married Thomas Wilcox, died in 1753. 5. Mary, married Edward Wilcox, and died before 1710. 6. Robert, married Amey, surname unknown, died in 1718. 7. Jeremiah, of whom further. 8. Hannah, married Jeffrey Champlin.

III. *Jeremiah Hazard*, fifth son and seventh child of Robert and Mary (Brownell) Hazard, was born March 23, 1675. He lived at Kingstown, Rhode Island, and like others of the family he owned much land, some of which remained with his descendants for generations. He died February 2, 1768, aged ninety-three years.

He married Sarah, daughter of Jeremiah and Mary (Geready) Smith. Issue: 1. Mary, born March 16, 1669, died in 1771. 2. Ann, born Feb. 28, 1701; married John Browning, of South Kingston (see Browning). 3. Robert, born April 1, 1703, married Patience Northup. 4. Sarah, born Jan. 11, 1706; married, October 24, 1728, Robert Moore. 5. Martha, born Oct. 8, 1708. 6. Hannah, born in April, 1714; married Samuel Watson. 7. Susannah, born May 21, 1716.

*Coat of Arms*—(The Hull Line).

*Arms*—Sable, a chevron ermine between three talbots heads erased argent.

*Crest*—A talbot's head erased argent between two laurel branches proper united at the top.

It is claimed by some that people who spell their name Hull are derived from the same stock as those who spell their names Hill and Hall, etc. In support of this theory, old records are cited, showing the spelling of names as de la Hille, de la Hall, de Hill, de Hall, de Halle, Hall and Hill and de Hulle and de la Hulle, Hule, and Hull. It is also claimed that the Saxon word "atte" is the equivalent of the Norman word "de" or "de la," and the surname Hill, Helle, Hulle or Hulls mean a hill or hills. Atte Hull therefore would appear to mean, of the Hills or from the Hills. The probabilities are, however, that Hull, Hill and Hall are and have always been the





## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

names of separate and distinct families, themselves divided into other families of the same name, having no connection with each other except where they belonged to the same locality. The ancestors of those bearing the name of Hull were among the settlers and founders of this country. They took part in the formation of the government in the early colonies as well as in the first war of the colony of Connecticut against the Pequot Indians; their descendants again served in King Philip's war, and later in the Colonial and Revolutionary wars, and have held in both civic and military affairs of this country positions of which their descendants may be proud.

*I. Rev. Joseph Hull*, the immigrant ancestor of one well known American line bearing the name of Hull, was born in Somersetshire, England, about 1594. He matriculated at St. Mary Magdalen Hall, Oxford, May 12, 1612, aged seventeen years, and was installed rector of Northleigh diocese of Exeter, Devonshire, England, April 14, 1621. On March 20, 1635, he sailed with his family, consisting of his wife Agnes, aged twenty-five years, who was his second wife, and two sons and five daughters and three servants, from Weymouth, bound for New England, with a company composed of sixteen families and numbering one hundred and four persons, chiefly west country people. They arrived in Boston Harbor, May 6, 1635. On their arrival at Boston a grant was obtained to establish a plantation at Wessagusset, and here, with others from Boston and Dorchester, they soon gathered into a church organization with Mr. Hull as their pastor. In September of the same year Mr. Hull, with other prominent residents of his community, took the freeman's oath, and their plantation was erected into a township and "decreed hereafter to be called Weymouth." The new church did not meet with favor from its Puritan neighbors. Dissension quickly arose within the church itself, instigated by the authorities outside, and in less than a year the Separatists had called the Rev. Thomas Jenner, of Roxbury, to be their pastor, and Mr. Hull relinquished his charge and withdrew. He obtained a grant of land in Hingham, the adjoining town, and after a brief season of preaching at Bass River, now Beverly, he gave up his ministerial labor and turned his attention to civic affairs. He evidently possessed the confidence of his fellow townsmen, for he was twice elected deputy to the general court, and in 1638 was appointed one of the local magistrates of Hingham. In June, 1639, the Plymouth court granted authority to Mr. Joseph Hull and Thomas Dimoc to erect a plantation at Barnstable, on Cape Cod. Mr. Hull was elected freeman and deputy for Barnstable at the first general court held at Plymouth. For a time he supported his family by agriculture and the raising of cattle and horses. Turning once more to the ministry, he preached for a long time at the Isle of Shoals. Returning to Barnstable, he accepted a call at Yarmouth and moved his family there; but as the call was





## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

not for a recognized church organization, it aroused the hostility of the authorities and Mr. Hull was excommunicated by the Barnstable church in 1641. He withdrew to the more friendly association of the Maine colony. For a time he was settled at the Isle of Shoals, and in 1643 was called to York, Maine, as minister. In 1652 Mr. Hull returned to England and was given the living at St. Burian, in Cornwall, where he remained until after the Restoration. In 1662 he returned to America and was settled as minister at Oyster River, now Dover, New Hampshire. Here among his old friends he passed the closing years of his life in quietness and esteem. He died at York, Maine, November 19, 1665.

He married twice, but the names of both of his wives remain unknown. The first died in England, and he married again about 1635. Issue: 1. Joanna, born in England; married, at Sandwich, Mass., Colonel John Bursley, of Barnstable; (second) Dolor Davis. 2. Joseph, born in England; settled at York, Maine. 3. Captain Tristram, of whom further. 4. Temperance, born in England. 5. Elizabeth, born in England. 6. Grisselds, born in England. 7. Dorothy. 8. Benjamin, born in Hingham. 9. Naomi, born in Barnstable. 10. Ruth.

*II. Captain Tristram Hull*, second son of Rev. Joseph Hull, was born in England, in 1626. He was a selectman of Barnstable, a military officer, and left property to the value of £1150 2s. 5d., sterling, a large amount in those days. In February, 1656, he was fined for relieving some persecuted Quakers of Boston. He joined the Society of Friends.

He married, but the name of his wife is unknown. Issue: 1. Mary, born in Yarmouth, Sept. 16, 1645; married Joseph Holley, of Sandwich. 2. Sarah, born in March, 1650, at Barnstable; married Robert Burgess, of Linn. 3. Joseph, of whom further. 4. John, born in Barnstable, in March, 1654; married, in London, Oct. 23, 1684, Alice Tidemann. 5. Hannah, born in Barnstable, Feb., 1656; married, Sept. 15, 1674, Joseph Blish, and died Nov. 15, 1733.

*III. Joseph Hull*, eldest son of Captain Tristram Hull, was born at Barnstable, June, 1652. He was made a freeman in 1696, and was governor assistant in 1699 and from 1701 to 1703. He suffered much persecution because he was a member of the Society of Friends, of which community he was a minister. In 1681 he was fined for beating the sheriff who had persecuted him as a Quaker. He died at South Kingston, Rhode Island, about 1709.

He married, in October, 1676, Experience, daughter of Robert Harper, who was one of the first Quakers to suffer in body and estate, and was in 1660 banished from Boston.

*IV. Tristram Hull*, son of Joseph and Experience (Harper) Hull, was born in 1677, lived in Westerly, and owned land there. He died in 1718. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Charles Dyer, a son



## BROWNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

of William Dyer, whose wife Mary was executed on Boston Common, January 1, 1660, because she was a Quakeress.

V. *Stephen Hull*, son of Tristram and Elizabeth (Dyer) Hull, was born at Westerly, Rhode Island, in 1715. He lived at South Kingstown, and witnessed many stirring events during the Revolutionary War. He died in 1798. He married Martha Clark.

VI. *Latham Hull*, son of Stephen and Martha (Clark) Hull, was born at South Kingstown, Rhode Island, in 1750. He died at North Stonington, in 1807. He married (first) Anne Wheeler. He married (second) Desire Williams, born January 24, 1751, a lineal descendant of John and Elizabeth Tilley, both of whom were passengers on the *Mayflower*. Issue: 1. Heremiah, married Keturah Randall Williams. 2. John W., of whom further.

VII. *John W. Hull*, son of Latham and Desire (Williams) Hull, was born in January, 1789. He lived at North Stonington, Connecticut, and served in the army, being colonel.

He married (first) Elizabeth Smith, of Waterford, Conn., and granddaughter of Hannah Williams and Charles Stewart Smith. He married (second) Nancy York. Issue (by first marriage): 1. Eunice, married Benjamin Franklin Browning, brother of John Hazard Browning. 2. John Pomeroy, married Harriet Jane Argall, of New York City. 3. Eliza Smith, of whom further. Issue (by second marriage): 4. Jesse Y. Lathrop. 5. Charles S. 6. Ann, married (first) Erastus Hewitt; (second) Latham Stewart. 7. Elmira, married William Argall.

VIII. *Eliza Smith Hull*, daughter of John W. and Elizabeth (Smith) Hull, was born May 26, 1812. She was a woman of great literary accomplishments. She died April 21, 1875. She married, Sept. 21, 1829, John Hazard Browning, when she was seventeen and he was twenty-eight years old (see Browning).



## Wood and Allied Families

*Arms*—Argent, an oak tree vert, fructed or.

*Crest*—Ademi-wildman, on the shoulder a club, holding in the dexter hand an oak branch, all proper, wreathed about the middle vert.



OOD is a name local in its derivation and signifies "at the woods." It is common to every medieval register in England.

The late William H. Wood, of Providence, Rhode Island, was in every respect a self-made man, a success in every sense of the word in the field of endeavor which he had made his work in life, and in which he had striven from early manhood to become a figure of influence and importance. From earliest childhood he was thrown upon his own resources, and compelled to make his own way unaided in the world, and not only to support himself but to contribute to the support of his family. Despite this handicap at the outset, he rose gradually to a position of prominence in the real estate world and became a leading factor in the real estate and financial interests of the city of Providence, Rhode Island.

To the man who possesses within himself the desire to succeed, there is no obstacle too great to block the path to achievement. The men who fail are those who attack the problems of life and work with a half-hearted willingness to succeed if the effort so to do be not too great. In addition to the necessity to work for his maintenance, Mr. Wood possessed the desire for achievement which would have made him a success in life without the spur to ambition which the former circumstance offered. Unless the necessity to work is aided and abetted by the desire to work, success is impossible.

*William H. Wood* was born in Providence, Rhode Island, November 13, 1849, the son of William and Delia (Bundy) Wood. His father, who was a native of England, came to America scarcely under a century ago accompanied by his wife. They settled in Providence, Rhode Island. When the gold fever caught the country, with its accompanying whirl-wind of prospecting and mining, William Wood, Sr., joined the ranks of the "forty-niners" and went West to California, where he died shortly after his arrival. The death of his father occurred when William H. Wood was but a small boy, and necessitated his adding to the support of the family as soon as he was able. He was given, however, the greatest chances possible for gaining an education in the local public schools. This was cut short early, however, but he continued his studies at home and after hours, becoming a man of sound education and cultured





## WOOD AND ALLIED FAMILIES

tastes in the field of literature. Appreciating education as only those who are barred from its privileges can, he made every effort to supplement his work in the public schools, and succeeded admirably. He possessed a strong ambition to succeed, and into every position which he held put the best which was in him. Mr. Wood secured his first employment in the office of Jason Stone, a dealer in sewing machines, and he continued in that line of work for a period of several years.

Fitted with a keen intellect and analytic mind, he was strongly desirous of entering the legal profession, and made every effort to complete the studies toward that end. He was unable, however, to realize this ambition, and abandoned the idea finally. Mr. Wood entered the field of real estate, in which he later became a power in the city of Providence, at the suggestion of the late Daniel Lyman, of that place. He began his career as an agent for the large real estate holdings of Mr. Lyman, and from this comparatively unimportant beginning gradually rose to the position of prominence which he later held. Mr. Wood was eminently fitted for success in this line. He was a keen judge of business values, and foresaw in many cases with great accuracy the trend of development of property in Providence, and the surrounding country. He was noted for the fairness of his business principles and was entrusted with many of the largest real estate deals which were put through in the city of Providence in his day. He carried on a most extensive business, and a very lucrative one. At the time of his death he had in his charge the large properties of the Vinton and Barnaby estates, and the Nancy K. Bishop estate. Mr. Wood's first office was located in Providence, on the corner of Exchange and Westminster streets, and he continued to do business there until his death. As one of the leading figures in the real estate world, Mr. Wood was intimately identified with the largest business and financial interests of the city. He was treasurer of the Rhode Island Investment Company and of the Beckwith Land Company. He was appointed by the heirs of the Lemuel Bishop estate administrator of the funds received from the French spoliation claims, rising out of the destruction of the brigantine *Nancy* in the year 1799.

Mr. Wood was also identified with the political and public life of the city of Providence, and always active in any movement which had for its end the betterment of conditions in the city of Providence. He served as a member of the City Council from 1883 to 1885, and in the latter year was elected to the State Legislature, where he served honestly and well the interests of the people, unswayed by partisan lines of influence. He was defeated for reelection to this office by which is known in the politics of Rhode Island as the "May Deal." The obvious unfairness of this treatment was the direct cause of Mr. Wood's premature retirement from public



life, and was responsible for a loss to the city of Providence, and the State of Rhode Island, of a man who had conserved with all his strength the interests of both, and gave promise of greater achievement in the future. Mr. Wood was a Republican in political affiliation, and upheld the finest and best of the traditions of the Grand Old Party.

He was also active in the social and club life of Providence. He was a man of magnetic personality and fine character, and possessed numerous friends in all walks of life. He was a member of the Masonic fraternity, and was prominent in the affairs of the What Cheer Lodge and St. John's Commandery. He was a member of the Hope Club, and the Metacomet Golf Club of Providence.

William Henry Wood married, October 2, 1872, Adele S. Remington, daughter of William H. and Jane (Smith) Remington. Mrs. Wood is a native of Providence, and actively identified with the social life of the city. She is a woman of wide culture, and has also greatly travelled, having made a trip around the world in 1910. (See Remington IX.) Mr. and Mrs. Wood were the parents of two children: 1. William Remington, born in Providence, Jan. 14, 1876; received his education in the Providence High School, and was graduated from Massachusetts Institute of Technology; on completing his training he became a naval architect, gaining a position of prominence in this field, in which he was engaged at the outbreak of the war; upon America's entry into the conflict he offered his services to Secretary Daniels and was commissioned assistant superintendent of the Hull division buying department at the Mare Island Naval Base, San Francisco; Mr. Wood is now engaged in this work; he married Caroline Jonsen, of Boston, Massachusetts; Mr. Wood owns a large ranch in California. Children: i. Remington, who after making a determined effort to enlist in some branch of service in the United States army or navy, who is now but sixteen years of age, went to Canada, enlisted in the Canadian army, and served with Canadian troops; ii. Richard; iii. Elizabeth. 2. Florence, born Jan. 28, 1878, in Providence; married George Owen, an instructor at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, in the department of marine architect; they reside at Newton, Massachusetts. Children: i. George; ii. Florence.

Mr. Wood died suddenly on May 8, 1905, at Wilmington, Delaware, while on his way from Washington to Providence, passing away on the train.

(The Remington Line).

Remington is an English surname of local derivation, meaning "of Rimmington," a township in the parish of Gisburn, West Riding, York. It has also been found in Lancashire for a number of centuries.



## WOOD AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*Arms*—Barry of twelve argent and azure, over all a bend gules.

*Crest*—A hand erect, holding a broken tilting spear, all proper.

The Remington family was established in New England in the early part of the seventeenth century, and has been prominent in the life of the State since that time, leading figures in its industrial life and public affairs. The family in England of which the American Remingtons are a branch, was well known throughout the United Kingdom, possessing in all its lines men of mark in the affairs of the country. The Remington family is of the landed gentry, and entitled to bear arms. The American branch was established here in 1637 by John Remington, and is connected through marriage with some of the finest and oldest families of New England.

*I. John Remington*, progenitor of the branch of which the late William Humphrey Remington was a member, was a native of England, and emigrated to America from Yorkshire. He arrived in the Massachusetts Colony in 1637, and settled first in Newbury, where he was made a freeman, May 22, 1639. He later removed to Rowley, where he remained for considerable period. About 1662 he removed to Roxbury, Massachusetts. In the early Colonial records of Massachusetts he calls himself late of Rowley, now of Roxbury. He became a man of prominence in the community. John Remington received a two-acre lot in the division of public lands in Rowley. His home was located on Wethersfield street. In 1647 he was a lieutenant of militia under Captain Sebastian Brigham. He died at Roxbury, June 8, 1667.

He married (first) in England, prior to his coming to America, and his wife, Elizabeth, accompanied him here. She died on December 24, 1658. He married (second) Rhoda ——. John Remington had two sons, John and Thomas, whose names are not found on the records of Rowley. Children, whose names are recorded in Rowley: 1. Jonathan, born Feb. 12, 1640. 2. Daniel, born Oct. 2, 1641. 3. Hannah, born June 19, 1643. 4. Elizabeth, born April 5, 1645, died in 1646. 5. Elizabeth, born about 1648. 6. Mary, born March 31, 1653, died in 1654.

*II. John (2) Remington*, son of John (1) and Elizabeth Remington, was born about 1628 or 1630 in Yorkshire, England, and accompanied his parents to America. He resided first in Rowley, Massachusetts, but later removed to Andover, where there is record of him from 1654 to 1656. He settled in Haverhill, Massachusetts, as early as the year 1661. Shortly after 1664 he was a member of the colony at Jamestown, Rhode Island, and later removed to Warwick, Rhode Island, where he took up his permanent abode, and died in 1709. He married Abigail ——. Their children were: 1. John, born in Rowley, March 12, 1651. 2. Abigail, born in Rowley, Sept. 14, 1652. 3. Joseph, born Nov. 29, 1654. 4. Thomas, born Feb. 4, 1656. 5. Prudence, born in Rowley, July 14, 1657. 6. Joseph,





mentioned below. 7. Daniel, born Oct. 18, 1661. 8. Hannah, born July 3, 1664, in Haverhill, as was also David.

III. *Joseph Remington*, son of John (2) and Abigail Remington, was born about the year 1658, according to Rhode Island records. He was a resident of Jamestown, Rhode Island. Records, further than the fact that he served on the jury at Jamestown, on September 5, 1682, cannot be found of him.

IV. *John (3) Remington*, son of Joseph Remington, was born in Jamestown, Rhode Island, on April 12, 1680, and resided there all his life.

V. *John (4) Remington*, son of John (3) Remington, was born in Jamestown, Rhode Island, and resided there during his entire life-time. He married Susanna —. Their children were: 1. Benjamin, born Sept. 19, 1733. 2. Peter, born July 1, 1737. 3. Penelope, born April 15, 1739. 4. Sarah, born March 21, 1741. 5. Abigail, born in May, 1743. 6. John, born Jan. 6, 1745. It is thought within a reasonable degree of certainty, that he, John (4) Remington, was also the father of Enoch Remington, mentioned below.

VI. *Enoch Remington*, son of John (4) and Susanna Remington, was born in Jamestown, Rhode Island, about 1735. He later removed to Warren, Rhode Island, with his wife, Molly. Two children are recorded in Warren: 1. Molly, born Nov. 11, 1757. 2. Lydia, born July 20, 1765. They are thought to have been the parents also of Enoch, mentioned below.

VII. *Enoch (2) Remington*, son of Enoch (1) and Molly Remington, was born in Warren about 1768. He resided in the town of Barrington, Rhode Island, and died there on January 1, 1795. He married in Barrington, Rhode Island, August 5, 1790, Ruth Armington, daughter of John and Ruth (Kent) Armington. (See Armington IV.) Their children were: 1. Samuel Watson, born Jan. 4, 1791. 2. Enoch, mentioned below. 3. Ruth, born Dec. 28, 1794. Ruth (Armington) Remington was a member of a prominent New England family established here in the early part of the eighteenth century. She was born in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, June 29, 1771.

VIII. *Enoch (3) Remington*, son of Enoch (2) and Ruth (Armington) Remington, was born in Barrington, Rhode Island, May 3, 1792. He was a citizen of considerable prominence in the affairs of the community, and was a farmer on a large scale. He died in Providence, August 6, 1864. Enoch Remington married, March 13, 1814, Phebe Short, daughter of John and Betsey (Scott) Short. She was born April 9, 1797, and died July 31, 1870. John Short was born in Warren, Rhode Island, February 14, 1757, the son of John and Phebe Short; married in Barrington, September 30, 1779, Elizabeth (Betsey) Scott, of Cumberland. Their daughter, Phebe Short, married Enoch Remington. Children: 1. Samuel Watson, born Sept. 30, 1817. 2. Lucretia S., born June 15, 1820. 3. William





## WOOD AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Humphrey, mentioned below. 4. George A., born Sept. 26, 1824. 5. Jeremiah S., born Sept. 6, 1827. 6. Daniel S., born March 3, 1829. 7. Phebe A., born March 12, 1831. 8. George A. (2), born March 31, 1833.

*IX. William Humphrey Remington*, son of Enoch (3) and Phebe (Short) Remington, was born in Barrington, Rhode Island, March 29, 1822. He received his early educational training in Barrington. Early in life he embarked on a business career for himself, and secured his first employment in the dry goods business in Providence, Rhode Island, to which city he went because he realized that it presented greater opportunities. He entered the business in the capacity of a clerk, and solely through his own efforts and energy, intelligently applied, he became a proprietor. After a period spent in learning the business in every detail, and in becoming thoroughly grounded in its inner workings, he engaged independently as a fancy dry goods merchant. Shortly afterward he went into partnership with his brother, Jeremiah S. Remington, and opened a store in the Arcade, in Providence. This business prospered greatly, and came to have a reputation for the highest principles of business dealing. The one store was found inadequate to meet the demands of the trade, and another was added to it. At the time of Mr. Remington's death the one store had grown to four, and it is highly probable that he would have been influential in increasing his business to greater size had he lived longer. His death occurred in the very prime of life, at the age of forty-two years, on September 9, 1844. William Humphrey Remington was one of the most thoroughly respected and honored business men of his day.

He married Jane Smith, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth (Phillips) Smith, of Providence, Rhode Island, a descendant of one of the oldest families of New England. (See Smith VIII.) Mrs. Remington died July 17, 1902. She was a devoted member of the Baptist church. Their children were: 1. Florence, died 1860. 2. William R., died in 1873. 3. Adele S., married William H. Wood, of Providence, (deceased); resides in Providence, Rhode Island. (See Wood).

(The Armington Line).

*Arms*—Per chevron or and azure, in chief two lions rampant combatant of the second, in base a lion rampant of the first.

The Armington family in America dates from the opening years of the eighteenth century. Joseph Armington, the founder and ancestor of all of the name in America, whose ancestry is traced to the Colonial period, was a native of England. It is judged from the fact that he returned to the mother country on affairs of business that he was a man of large interests. A genius for mercantile and



## WOOD AND ALLIED FAMILIES

financial affairs has been largely evident in one line of his descendants. There have been professional men among them also. Southeastern Massachusetts and that part of the Colony and later the State of Rhode Island which borders upon it has been the home of the family since the time of its founding in America. The family, though comparatively small, contributed many of its sons to the defence of the Nation in the American Revolution, the War of 1812 and the Civil War.

*I. Joseph Armington*, immigrant ancestor, was born on the Island of Guernsey, Great Britain. He came to the New England Colonies from England in 1714, settling in Boston, where he remained for a year. In 1715 he returned to England, and died there in that year. His wife, who had accompanied him to America, was a woman of excellent education, well-born and cultured. After her husband's death she established a school in Roxbury, Massachusetts, where she taught French.

*II. Joseph (2) Armington*, son of Joseph (1) Armington, was born in the year 1707 on the Island of Guernsey, Great Britain, and accompanied his parents to New England in 1714. He settled in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, on attaining his majority, and followed the trade of brickmaker there until his death. He married, May 27, 1729, Hannah Chaffee, daughter of Jonathan and Hannah (Carpenter) Chaffee, who was born October 3, 1707, and died February 22, 1799, at Rehoboth. Joseph Armington died in Rehoboth, August 15, 1746.

*III. John Armington*, son of Joseph (2) and Hannah (Chaffee) Armington, was born June 12, 1735, at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, where he resided during the greater part of his life. In his latter years he removed to Waterford, Vermont, where he died. He married (first) January 11, 1757, Ruth Kent, born March 3, 1737, daughter of Hezekiah and Ruth (Cooper) Kent. He married (second) January 13, 1788, Chloe Newman, of Rehoboth.

*IV. Ruth Armington*, daughter of John and Ruth (Kent) Armington, was born June 29, 1771, in Rehoboth, Massachusetts. She married, August 5, 1790, Enoch Remington, of Barrington, Rhode Island. (See Remington VII.)

(The Smith Line).

*Arms*—Quarterly, first and fourth, barry argent and gules; second and third, quarterly, first and fourth, gules on a chevron or, between three bezants, as many crosses formee fitchee sable; second and third; azure a fesse between three urchins argent.

*Crest*—Out of a castle argent a wolf's head sable.

*Motto*—*Boutez en avant.*

The Smith immigrants to America in the seventeenth century were numerous, and their progeny forms one of the greatest of American families of Colonial date. Rhode Island, which has been the home of



the family herein under consideration since the year of the founding of Providence, when John Smith, called the Miller, to distinguish him from others who came after him, was one of the five men who accompanied Roger Williams to Rhode Island in the spring or summer of 1636, and made the first settlement of white persons in the territory.

*I. John Smith*, immigrant ancestor and founder, was a native of England, born in 1595. He came first to Dorchester, Massachusetts, where however, he soon fell under the displeasure of the Puritan authorities because of his religious views. On September 3, 1635, it was ordered by the General Court of Massachusetts "that John Smith shall be sent within these six weeks out of this jurisdiction, for divers dangerous opinions which he holdeth and hath divulged, if in the meantime he removes not himself out of this plantation." In 1636 Roger Williams and John Smith and four others came to Providence and made the first settlement there. John Smith was one of the most prominent figures in the years' decades of the history of Providence. In 1641 he held the office of town clerk. On March 1, 1646, an agreement was made at the monthly court that he should have the valley wherein his house stood in consideration for which he was to set up a mill. It was also agreed that no other mill would be permitted in Providence. In 1647 twenty-two acres were laid out to him, a portion for the mill, and at the time of his death he was in possession of one hundred and fifty acres. He was one of the most prosperous men of the community, which fact is evidenced by the tax list. On September 2, 1650, his widow Alice was taxed two pounds and ten shillings.

*II. John (2) Smith*, son of John (1) and Alice Smith, was born probably about 1630 in England, and died in Providence, in 1682. He was a miller and succeeded his father in the management of the property, which was confirmed to him and his mother by the town after the father's death. He purchased two shares in the town, April 27, 1655, and drew twenty-one acres in his father's right at a division made February 19, 1665. He had various parcels confirmed to him by the town, May 24, 1673. His house was burned by the Indians, March 30, 1676, and with difficulty he saved the town records which were in his custody, by throwing them into the mill pond. John Smith was ensign of the military company, November 6, 1654; in 1661 he was juryman, deputy 1666 and 1672, and town clerk, from 1672 to 1676. He married Sarah Whipple, born in 1642, died after 1687, daughter of John and Sarah Whipple.

*III. William Smith*, son of John (2) and Sarah (Whipple) Smith, was born in 1682, and died December 11, 1753, in Smithfield, Rhode Island. He built the county court house, for which he received six hundred and sixty-four pounds, nine shillings. For many years he was major in the militia, and one of the foremost men in the colony.







## WOOD AND ALLIED FAMILIES

He was deputy to the General Court, in 1714-16-20-21-24-27-29, assistant in 1729-30-31; moderator of Smithfield in 1733-34-35-40, and deputy from Smithfield to the General Court, in 1735-44. The inventory of his estate amounted to £547, 6s. Major William Smith married Mary Sayles, born May 30, 1689, died after 1754, daughter of John and Elizabeth Sayles.

*W. Daniel Smith*, son of Major William and Mary (Sayles) Smith, was born September 28, 1712, in Providence. He resided in Smithfield, and in Burrillville, which was a part of the original town of Smithfield. He married in Smithfield, August 3, 1735, Mary Aldrich, who was born in Mendon, Massachusetts, February 15, 1714, daughter of Moses and Hannah (White) Aldrich.

*V. Martin Smith*, son of Daniel and Mary (Aldrich) Smith, was born October 15, 1747, in Burrillville, and was married in Smithfield, November 4, 1764, to Mary Mowry, who was born October 30, 1745, daughter of Uriah and Urania Mowry.

*VI. Pitts Smith*, son of Martin and Mary (Mowry) Smith, was born October 10, 1766, in Smithfield, Rhode Island, resided there all his life, and married, May 31, 1795, Susanna ——. (No record of the surname of his wife has been found; it was possibly Steere).

*VII. Richard Smith*, son of Pitts and Susanna Smith, was born May 15, 1796, in Smithfield, and died in Providence, August 28, 1864. In early life he resided in Gloucester, and when a young man, in 1820, removed to Providence, and took possession of the Bull Dog Tavern, which was built in 1798 at Bull Dog Square, now known as Randall Square. He succeeded Calvin Dean in the management of the hotel, and continued until 1840, when it was sold to Mary Ann Madden. During the time Richard Smith conducted the hotel, the large assembly room in it was devoted on Sunday to religious meetings, with steadily increasing congregations, until the attendance was gathered into the Fourth Baptist Church Society. Baptisms were performed in the Moshausick river, which flowed near the tavern. Later, Colonel Smith conducted successively the Franklin House, the Eagle House and American Hotel, and was one of the best known hotel men in the State in his day. He was among the "forty-niners," who went to California in search of gold, but soon returned to Providence, and continued to make his home there until his death. He married Elizabeth Phillips, daughter of David Phillips. The Phillips coat-of-arms is as follows:

*Arms*—Gules, a chevron argent, between three falcons proper, ducally gorged, beaked and membered or.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, an arm embowed in armor, the hand holding a broken spear proper, powdered with fleur-de-lis gold.

*VIII. Jane Smith*, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth (Phillips) Smith, married, April 17, 1850, William H. Remington, of Providence. (See Remington IX.)



## McWilliams and Allied Families

The following arms were granted to William MacWilliams, whose daughter and heir, Isabel, married Sir John Seymour, Knight of Hache, high sheriff of County Southampton, A. D., 1434:

*Arms*—Per bend argent and gules three roses bendways counterchanged.

*Crest*—A pair of wings conjoined, the dexter or, the sinister gules, surmounted by a ducal coronet per pale counterchanged.



HERE is no name more widely known among shipping circles in and about New York City than that of the late Owen James McWilliams, president of three great towing lines operating in New York harbor and neighboring waters, whose death on April 23, 1918, at his home on Jewett avenue, Jersey Heights, Jersey City, removed from the community a figure whose career, though all too brief, was most intimately identified with the growth and development of the transportation facilities of the community. Owen James McWilliams was of Scotch-Irish extraction on the paternal side of the house. He was a son of James and Sarah E. (Daniels) McWilliams, of New Haven, Connecticut, and a grandson of Andrew and Tilenah (Drumheller) McWilliams, tracing his descent through his paternal grandmother from the old and distinguished Pennsylvania families of Drumheller and Houck.

*I. Andrew McWilliams* was born at Carnmony, County Londonderry, Ireland, February 13, 1797, and came to this country as a young man. He settled finally at Mt. Carbon, Pennsylvania, and there his death occurred March 11, 1873. He married, March 28, 1828, Tilenah Drumheller, and they were the parents of the following children: Charles, John, George, James, the father of the Mr. McWilliams of this sketch; Frank, Daniel, Kate, Isabella, and Mary Jane.

*II. James McWilliams* spent most of his life at New Haven, and had large transportation interests on Long Island. He was the owner of the James McWilliams Towing Line, which later became one of the three great concerns controlled by his son, and was a prominent figure in the shipping world of that day.

*III. Owen James McWilliams* was born April 1, 1879, at New Haven, Connecticut, and as a lad attended the local schools of his native city. His parents later removed to Jersey City, New Jersey, and there the youth became a student at St. Peter's College, where his



11

11

Barry J. McAllister



McWILLIAMS AND



McWilliams





## McWILLIAMS AND ALLIED FAMILIES

studies were concluded. He left college in order to engage in business with his father, who was operating a fleet of towing steamers and barges in New York harbor and Long Island Sound. In the large establishment of his father he learned the business from top to bottom in all its details, and became an expert on the subject of transportation by means of barges in the coastwise trade. He also gained considerable experience with steamships which later proved of value to him. The elder Mr. McWilliams died in the year 1904, and Owen James and his brother, Charles McWilliams, took over the management of the great business which, large as it was, was yet in process of rapid growth. The former became president of the James McWilliams Towing Company, the James McWilliams Blue Line, and the New Haven Towing Line, and these three concerns, consolidated by him, are now doing the largest single business of the kind in local waters. Under the management of Mr. McWilliams, whose organizing and executive ability was remarkable, the development of the enterprise continued rapidly, but recently another factor has entered into the situation that has given a still greater acceleration to its growth.

With the entrance of the United States into the great World War, and the consequent herculean task of transporting and maintaining modern armies of millions, three thousand miles from their base, the entire shipping situation of the world was profoundly altered. Even with no additional problems to face, to perform such a task adequately would prove almost too heavy a burden for the total facilities of the allied nations, and when, in addition, the ravages of piratical submarines must be countered, the problem necessarily became acute. In order to deal with the situation it became necessary that every type of transportation known should be impressed into service in order to release such vessels as were available for overseas use. This, of course, at once increased to a tremendous degree the burden upon barges in local traffic, and the companies of which Mr. McWilliams was the head were obliged to call upon all their resources. The genius displayed by him in organizing his forces to meet this unexpected pressure was most notable, and called forth the highest praise from all who observed its results. The difficulties which he had to face were great from the outset, but these were immeasurably increased during the first winter (1917-18) of the war, owing to the cold, which in intensity and duration was unprecedented here and turned New York into a sort of arctic region temporarily. The waters of the harbor and Long Island Sound were frozen to such an extent that traffic was well-nigh impossible, while owing to the congestion of the railroads the demands for barge transport became greater than ever. In the face of such discouraging conditions, Mr. McWilliams kept a cool head and firm hand and succeeded in keeping a steady stream of tows between the city and



## McWILLIAMS AND ALLIED FAMILIES

other important points which largely relieved the congestion and was a great factor in saving what might have proved a very grave situation. As a matter of fact, the acuteness of war conditions succeeded in forcing a modification of the transportation situation which is, in some ways, desirable and which Mr. McWilliams had foreseen. The barge as a means of transporting goods, although somewhat slow, has many advantages, especially in the case of large and heavy material, such as machinery or construction steel, and this fact was gradually coming to be realized by shippers of such commodities even before the war had made their use a necessity. What, therefore, Mr. McWilliams had foreseen and worked for has now been realized in a measure, and more barges are in use between Atlantic ports than ever before and between points at a greater distance from one another than had before been thought feasible. Of these various circumstances Mr. McWilliams was quick to avail himself, and the growth to its present enormous proportions of the business has been the result, while a large additional development to be expected in the future has been foreseen and provided for. Mr. McWilliams' interest in the business in which he was engaged was never a selfish one, for he always kept the welfare of the entire system of barge transportation at heart and strove to advance it by every means in his power. One of these means was the organization of the Long Island Sound Barge Operators, for which he was chiefly responsible, and of which he was the supervisor until the time of his death. This organization, which is under the supervision of the United States Shipping Board, includes all the Long Island Sound shipping interests and is devoted to the purpose of promoting the business generally of all its members.

Owen James McWilliams was united in marriage, December 18, 1899, with Josephine L. Hogan, of Tuxedo Park, New York, a daughter of Edward J. and Elizabeth (Fadden) Hogan. Mr. and Mrs. Owen James McWilliams are the parents of one child, Clara Elizabeth, born March 23, 1901, who resides with her mother at No. 130 Jewett avenue, Jersey City, New Jersey.

Through her mother, Elizabeth (Fadden) Hogan, born in 1848, at Hanwell, Middlesex county, England, Mrs. Josephine L. McWilliams is descended from the old and distinguished Tierney family of Middlesex and Sussex counties, England. Margaret (Tierney) Fadden, mother of Elizabeth Fadden, was born in Ireland and came to the United States in 1866, accompanied by her daughter, Elizabeth Fadden, and settled in New York. The Tierneys were very noted in England and Ireland, where the members gained distinction in the service of those countries. A coat-of-arms was granted by the English Government to Sir Matthew-John Tierney, M. D., who was born November 24, 1776, at Brighthelmstone, Middle-



Josephine Williams

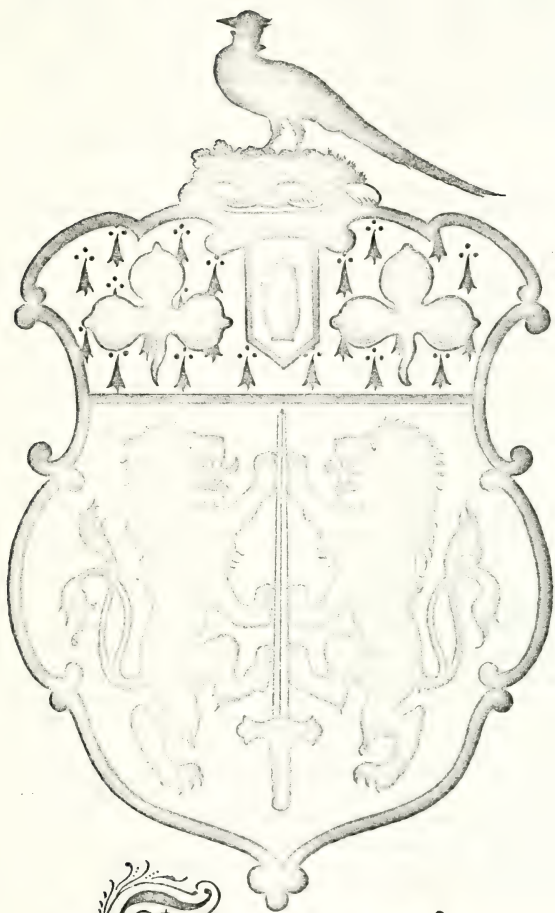






Clara Elizabeth McWilliams





Jersey



## McWILLIAMS AND ALLIED FAMILIES

sex county, England. Sir Matthew obtained a second patent dated May 5, 1834, with remainder to his brother, Edward Tierney, of Fitzwilliam street, Dublin, Ireland, Esquire, one of the crown solicitors for Ireland. Sir Matthew created a Baronet, December 19, 1818; was physician in ordinary to his Majesty. He was a great physician and noted man. Members of the Tierney family early migrated to Ireland, and later returned to Middlesex county, England. The Tierney coat-of-arms is as follows:

*Arms*—Azure, a sword in pale, proper, pommel and hilt, gold, supported by two lions, counter-rampant, double queued, or, on a chief, ermine, two trefoils slipped, vert.  
*Crest*—On a mount, vert, a pheasant, proper, ducally gorged, or.

The record of Mr. McWilliams' achievements is truly an extraordinary one in view of his comparatively short life. A career begun so brilliantly could not but promise still more brilliantly for the future, and when it was cut so abruptly short, his powers and faculties having only just reached their full development, his energy at its prime, his accomplishment but in the threshold, it came as a terrible shock to his many friends and associates, and was felt, indeed, as a loss by the community generally. But although the mere record is remarkable enough it cannot give a fully adequate idea of the place held by him in the community. It was not only that he held responsible and important posts at an extremely youthful age, it was not only that he was so active in carrying out really valuable works, but rather in virtue of a certain vitality in the man which made him seem an essential part of everything that he undertook and kept him the virtual leader in a hundred diverse matters. His work in the cause of organizing local shipping facilities not only affords a most striking example of this quality, but has proved a public benefaction, an advantage to his country in the time of its supreme emergency. In all his relations with his fellows he took and held the generous and altruistic position, the manly position in which every man of right thinking and energy might wish to find himself, striving for the common weal with a splendid enthusiasm and a self-forgetfulness that won the trust of all men. So many were the interests with which he was associated, so many the movements with which his activities were identified, that no account of the community's affairs during this epoch would be complete without reference to him and his work, and his death has left a gap that will not readily be filled or soon forgotten.

(The Drumheller Line).

*I. Dewalt Drumheller*, the founder of this family in America, arrived in Pennsylvania in the year 1751 or thereabouts. He received a grant of land from the Colonial authorities consisting of



fifty acres in Berks county, the survey of which was returned to the surveyor-general of the Province, October 25, 1752. The old records show that he was living in Ruscomb Manor township, Berks county, in 1858, and later removed to Rockland township in the same county, but the fact that the name of Dewalt Drumheller appears on the tax list of Williams township, Northampton county, from 1777 to 1788, seems to point to the likelihood of his having eventually made his home there. He married Anna Maria Lattick, and they were the parents of the following children: 1. John. 2. John Leonard, born 1734, died about 1809. 3. Jacob, of Exeter township, Berks county, who served as a private in the company of Captain John Reese in the Second Pennsylvania Battalion, Continental Line, commanded by Colonel Arthur St. Clair, from January 5, 1776, to November 25 of the same year; then as private in Captain Bower's company, First Pennsylvania Regiment, Continental Line, commanded by Colonel Daniel Brodhead, and finally in Captain Finney's company in the Second Pennsylvania Regiment; he died prior to March 2, 1784, when his estate was administered. 4. Nicholas, mentioned below. 5. John George, born July 10, 1756, baptized at the Mertz Church, Berks county; he served as a private in the militia of Northampton county, Pennsylvania, and with the Rangers on the frontiers, 1778 to 1783. 6. Adam. 7. Catherine. 8. Elizabeth.

*II. Nicholas Drumheller*, son of Dewalt and Anna Maria (Lattick) Drumheller, was born in the year 1750, and according to the "Collections" of the Rev. A. Stapleton, D. D., of Jersey Shore, Pennsylvania, where the birth is recorded, he was a soldier in the Revolution. In 1777, Nicholas Drumheller took the oath of allegiance to the State of Pennsylvania, and two years later was living in Earle township with his wife. Sometime after 1790 they removed to Upper Mahanoy township, Northumberland county, where his death occurred March 27, 1823. He married Catherine —, and they were the parents of the following children: 1. David. 2. Philip. 3. Abraham, of Little Mahanoy township, Northumberland county, died prior to November 6, 1837, when his friend, Frederick Baker, was appointed guardian of his four children, David, Jesse, Isaac and Nicholas, whose mother was also deceased at that time. 4. Daniel. 5. Martin, of Jackson township, Northumberland county, died about 1853, when Adam Drumheller was appointed guardian of his two children, Senary and Susannah. 6. Nicholas, died intestate in Jackson township, Northumberland county, prior to November 6, 1854, leaving a widow Elizabeth. 7. Susannah. 8. John, of further mention. 9. Jacob.

*III. John Drumheller*, son of Nicholas and Catherine Drumheller, of Upper Mahanoy township, Northumberland county, was born about 1785, in that place. He removed to Catawissa township, Columbia county, Pennsylvania, where he owned one hundred and





## McWILLIAMS AND ALLIED FAMILIES

seven acres of land upon which he settled. He died there November 17, 1836. He married Catherine Houck, a member of the old Houck family which is also mentioned in this sketch, and they were the parents of the following children: 1. Jacob, married Elizabeth ——. 2. Elizabeth, became the wife of George Hardesty, of Schuylkill county. 3. Susan, became the wife of Conrad Beidleman, of Schuylkill county. 4. Mary, married (first) a Harman, (second) a Smith, and (third) a Vogel. 5. John, who resided in Schuylkill county. 6. Tilenah, of further mention. 7. Sarah, who became the wife of Daniel Geiger.

*IV. Tilenah Drumheller*, daughter of John and Catherine (Houck) Drumheller, was born April 3, 1812. She married, March 28, 1828, Andrew McWilliams, as given above.

(The Houck Line).

*I. John Houck*, of Earle township, Berks county, Pennsylvania, was born about the year 1750, and served in the company of militia commanded by Captain John Jacobs in the Revolution. The time of his service is not known, but his name appears in connection with a record stating that this company was in need of supplies. Earle township, in which he lived, was formed from a part of Oley township and there, in 1784, John Houck was living on a tract of one hundred and fifty acres of land owned by him. He subsequently removed from Berks to Columbia county and settled in Catawissa township, where his death occurred some time prior to November 25, 1819, when letters of administration on his estate were granted to John Drumheller. John Houck married Christina Storg, and they were the parents of the following children: 1. John, Jr., born May 21, 1778, and baptized in Oley Church, June 28, 1778. 2. Daniel, born June 25, 1780. 3. Catherine, of further mention. 4. Jacob, born July 26, 1784. 5. Elizabeth, born Dec. 10, 1786. 6. John Stephen, born Sept. 16, 1789. 7. Anna Maria, born Jan. 21, 1791. 8. Abraham, born June 5, 1793. 9. Susannah, born March 19, 1795.

*II. Catherine Houck*, third child of John and Christina (Storg) Houck, was born about 1782, at Catawissa township, Columbia county, Pennsylvania, and became the wife of John Drumheller, about 1809. They were the parents of Tilenah Drumheller, the paternal grandmother of Owen James McWilliams.



## George Henry Corliss



HE assertion is sometimes made that in spite of certain notable exceptions the type of mind possessed by inventive geniuses is rarely capable of dealing with the commercial or business aspect of life, and we have the popular and familiar picture of the unsuspecting ingenuous inventor fleeced of the well-earned profit from his devices by the sophisticated and scheming business man. If this be so it is strange enough, for, to the layman at least, there seems to be no incompatibility between the mind that can grasp the highly practical problems of physical and mechanical science and the very similar problems of everyday business relations, but rather a parity such as to suggest that they are of one and the same kind. However this may be, it is certain that the remarkable group of American inventors of the generation just passed, whose achievements have given rise to the widespread respect for "Yankee genius," were not afflicted with any such one-sidedness of character. They, at least, were not deprived of their just deserts, and were quite equally capable of producing their masterpieces of mechanical skill and of marketing them to their own best advantage and to that of the world at large. And if they thus prove this belief as to the one-sidedness of genius to be false, they no less dispose of another fallacy, the notion, namely, that such a union of abilities shows a man to have developed the material side of his nature at the expense of the spiritual. Nothing could be further from the truth, as these men have well shown in their lives, wherein were displayed that essential spirit of democracy that is but another form of the Christian virtue of charity, and even those higher reaches of idealism expressed in religion and art. Such, for example, was the character of the late George H. Corliss, of Providence, Rhode Island, whose death there on February 21, 1888, deprived that community of one of its most prominent and highly honored citizens, and the world at large of a benefactor and one of its foremost inventors. Mr. Corliss was sprung from one of the best and most ancient of the old Colonial families which had spent the years previous to the Revolution in New England, but after that epoch-making struggle lived in New York State.

*George Corliss*, the founder of the family in this country, a native of Devonshire, England, where he was born about 1617, was a son of Thomas Corliss. The young man came to the colonies when about twenty-two years of age and settled at Newbury, Massachu-





Yours truly  
Geo H. Corliss.





GEORGE



Yours truly

Geo H. Corliss.



## GEORGE HENRY CORLISS

settles, in 1639. This was but temporary, however, and he shortly after removed to Haverhill in the same colony, this town becoming the permanent home of the family until the time of John Corliss, five generations later, the grandfather of the Hon. George Henry Corliss of this review. George Corliss, the immigrant, became the owner of a handsome farm at Haverhill and it was here that several generations of the family carried on the occupation of farming and finally died, George Corliss and his son and grandson, by a very strange coincidence, meeting death while seated in the same chair. The grandfather of Mr. Corliss, already mentioned, Captain John Corliss, as he was called, served with distinction in the Revolution and some years later, sometime in the early nineties, removed to the town of Easton, Washington county, New York. The depreciation of the currency following the Revolution made a great difference in his fortune and that which followed the War of 1812 proved another blow, but he and his sons were extremely energetic and enterprising and their fortunes were recouped. His wife was Lydia Haynes, of Haverhill, and they had eleven children, of whom Hiram, the father of Mr. Corliss was the youngest.

*Hiram Corliss* was a physician and became a very prominent figure in Easton and the surrounding region, and practiced medicine until he was over eighty years of age. He was three times married, but it was his first wife, Susan (Sheldon) Corliss, who was the mother of the Mr. Corliss of this review.

*George Henry Corliss*, the second child of Dr. Hiram and Susan (Sheldon) Corliss, was born June 2, 1817, at Easton, New York. His educational advantages were decidedly meagre in the first instance, although he afterwards supplemented them, for the district schools of that period, especially in the rural neighborhood, were anything but adequate. An intelligent mind such as that of Mr. Corliss' did not take long to absorb all they had to offer, and he was but fourteen years of age when he turned from his studies and began his business career. Like so many of the great Americans, Mr. Corliss made this beginning in the general store at Greenwich, as a clerk, and here remained for upwards of three years, a thoughtful, serious lad, with dreams of things beyond his horizon. As he grew older he came to feel more and more the great need for further study and he determined at length to compass this ambition in spite of every obstacle. Accordingly, in 1834, he gave up his position in the store and entered an academy in Castleton, Vermont, where he remained the full four years and proved himself a student of intelligence and a scholar of attainments. As yet, however, he had no idea in taking up the line of work in which he was later to become so famous, and with the exception of a youthful exploit in the planning and building of a temporary bridge across Batten Kill, had displayed no talent whatsoever in that direction. And now, upon



leaving his studies at the academy, and having attained his majority, instead of turning his thoughts and energies in what would naturally be supposed a congenial direction, he returned to the business he had already attempted, only this time as an independent enterprise, and early in 1838 established a general store of his own at Greenwich, New York. For nearly three years he continued in this line with considerable success and actually passed his twenty-fourth birthday without ever having seen the inside of a machine shop. In these years, however, he had begun to come to a more definite knowledge of himself, and his tastes and opinions began to form and crystallize. More and more the mechanical side of every question interested him and he found himself solving mechanical problems and devising mechanical contrivances almost spontaneously. Finally, about 1841, he decided to take up what was so obviously his bent, and in spite of the very uncertain character of the returns which a young and unknown inventor can count upon, gave his whole attention to his new tasks. His work during the better part of the following four years was upon the invention and perfection of a machine for sewing boots, shoes and heavy leather of all kinds. But Mr. Corliss was laboring under the disadvantage that has beset so many young inventors, that of not having sufficient capital to place his device upon the market at the outset, and so it was that, although the machine itself was both ingenious and practical, he abandoned it and turned his attention to other things. How great a disappointment such seeming failure is, how it operates to discourage in spite of the knowledge that in the essential matter one has succeeded, no one can judge who has not passed through the experience, but Mr. Corliss's courage was not of the kind to fail him for discouragement, and he immediately set to work upon another matter that had long attracted his attention, namely, the improvement of the steam engine. But Mr. Corliss possessed a faculty even rarer than courage, and in the matter of material success not less valuable, that is, he was able to persuade his fellows of the things of which he was himself convinced and so enlist their sympathy and aid. In the year 1844 he came to Providence, Rhode Island, to live, the city which remained his home from that time to the time of his death, and he there associated with two gentlemen, John Barstow and E. J. Nightingale, who felt so much confidence in his ability that a partnership was formed under the style of Corliss, Nightingale & Company, and for the next four years Mr. Corliss worked indefatigably upon his inventions. In 1848 these were practically complete and he was able to construct and operate an engine which, save for some minor improvements in application and finish, was essentially the famous Corliss engine of later years. Feeling now that the task was consummated and that all that remained was to reap the fruits of his endeavors, Mr. Corliss and his associates began the erection of the works of the Corliss





## GEORGE HENRY CORLISS

Steam Engine Company, on a scale, however, that gave but little indication of their later huge proportions. These works were sufficiently progressed for the production of the new engine by the early months of the year 1849, and on March 10 of that year patents were granted by the United States government covering the improvements made. The engine was then placed upon the market and from that time until after his death has held a foremost place in the engineering world. In 1856 the Corliss Steam Engine Company was incorporated with Mr. Corliss as president and his brother, William Corliss, as treasurer. A modest factory at the time of its erection, the Corliss works grew rapidly until, at the time of their founder's death, in 1888, the floor space included in the buildings amounted to about five acres, and over a thousand hands were employed there. The works grew in response to the great increase of the market for these remarkable engines, which in a few years had spread all over this country and reached to Europe. Indeed, Europe eventually became a great purchaser of the Corliss engine, and it was copied by engine builders who placed upon their imitations the name of the American maker.

The first great international triumph of Mr. Corliss, when his success began to be recognized upon something like the scale that it deserved, was at the World's Exposition held at Paris in the year 1867, when he won the highest award that was granted in that department, the first prize in a competition of the one hundred most famous engine builders in the world. The words of J. Scott Russell, the designer and builder of the huge steamship, *Great Eastern*, that afterwards laid the Atlantic cable, and who was sent by the English government as one of its commissioners to the exposition, deserve quotation, written by him, as they were, in the report sent by him to his government. Speaking of the valve gear of the Corliss engine Mr. Russell said: "A mechanism as beautiful as the human hand. It releases or retains its grasp on the feeding valve, and gives a greater or less dose of steam in nice proportion to each varying want. The American engine of Corliss everywhere tells of wise forethought, judicious proportions and execution and exquisite contrivance." On January 11, 1870, just one hundred years after Watt had patented his steam engine, Mr. Corliss was awarded the Rumford medals and it was upon this occasion that Dr. Asa Gray, the president of the academy that awarded the medals, remarked that "no invention since Watt's time has so enhanced the efficiency of the steam engine as this for which the Rumford medal is now presented." In 1872 the State of Rhode Island appointed Mr. Corliss its commissioner to take charge of the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia, and he was chosen one of the executive committee appointed to look after the preliminaries. Upon the great task of arranging the exhibition, he worked with his usual inde-





fatigable energy and it was his suggestion that the Centennial Board of Finance be organized, a body which had no little to do with the insurance of the financial success of the exhibition. It was also in his own department as engineer that Mr. Corliss contributed largely to the success of the great fair, and it was he that supplied, after the plans of all other competitors proved inadequate, the great fourteen hundred horsepower engine which supplied the power used in Machinery Hall. This engine, unequalled in size at that time, was installed by Mr. Corliss at a cost of one hundred thousand dollars to himself and without additional expenditure to the exposition. The great engine was afterwards used to operate the Pullman Car Works at Chicago. The Corliss Company supplied the United States government with machinery during the Civil War. When the *Monitor* was being constructed it was found that a large ring must be made, upon which the turret of the *Monitor* could revolve, and the Corliss Engine Works was found to be one of the very few plants in the country that had the necessary machinery large enough to "turn" up the large ring. When Mr. Corliss found out what the work was for he put aside other work, worked his plant day and night to get this important ring completed, which was done on time, sent to New York, placed on the *Monitor* and the *Monitor* was thereby enabled to go forth and meet the *Merrimac* in that historic naval fight. Mr. Corliss always took pride in the fact that he was in no small measure responsible for the successful outcome of that historic fight.

The practice, already noticed, among some European manufacturers of imitating the Corliss engine in their own shops and then placing the name on them led them to a remarkable and somewhat amusing event which redounded greatly to his honor. This was the award to Mr. Corliss of the Grand Diploma of Honor by the Vienna Exposition at Vienna in 1873, although he was not even an exhibitor. This surprising action was explained by the fact that the European manufacturers above mentioned exhibited their engines with the Corliss name upon them, and displayed so great a superiority over all their competitors that the authorities held it to be fitting that the original designer should get the benefit of genius. Another honor, perhaps the greatest of all done to Mr. Corliss, was the conferring upon him by the Institute of France by public proclamation, March 10, 1879, of the Montyon prize for the year 1878, the most coveted prize for mechanical achievement awarded in Europe. He received this honor, by a peculiar coincidence, on the thirtieth anniversary of the granting of his first patent.

Although it might be well supposed that the demands made upon his time and energies by the inventive work, the superintendence of the great industrial works, and the business with every part of the world would have been so exacting as to have precluded the



possibility of Mr. Corliss taking part in any other activity, yet, as a matter of fact, he was keenly alive to everything that was going on in his adopted city and State and took a leading part in many movements undertaken there. Especially was this true in the case of politics in which he was a leader in the Republican party, of the principles and policies of which he was a strong supporter. He was elected three consecutive times to the Rhode Island General Assembly as the representative from North Providence, his term of service including the three years 1868-69-70. In 1876 he was chosen presidential elector, casting his vote for President Hayes. In the matter of his religious belief he was a Congregationalist, and attended the Charles Street Church in Providence from the time of its organization. He was keenly interested in the cause of religion and gave liberally both to his own and to other churches.

Beyond doubt the service done by Mr. Corliss for the material advancement of his fellows was a great one; for the material advancement directly, and indirectly for the intellectual and spiritual advancement, for all material progress reacts upon the mind and spirit particularly such as tend to bring the ends of the earth into communication and teach strange people tolerance first, and then love for each other. And truly there are few of the devices of men that have done more to bring this about than the steam engine. Those men, therefore, who have labored at the perfection of this and the other wonderful contrivances of the great scientific epoch of history may certainly lay claim to much of the credit for the growth of sympathy and understanding among people that has taken place during the same period, and of these Mr. Corliss deserves to stand high in our regard. Of him a local publication said, immediately after his death, that: "The community loses one of its master minds and a man who has done more for the development of the steam engine than anyone who has yet lived in this country. His fame was world-wide and his years were devoted to the very end to the one purpose of his life. To say that he has left a void which it is impossible to fill is simply to reveal the poverty of language in the presence of an irreparable loss."

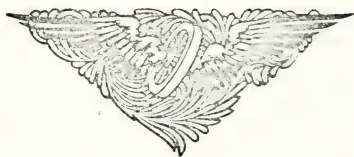
But there was another manner in which the influence of Mr. Corliss was effective, namely through the subtle medium of personality. No one could look into the well marked, expressive face without feeling himself in the presence of a man of strength, of one who had fought and mastered difficulties which might have overcome another man, or without perceiving the still rarer quality of tolerance and charity for all men. In his relations with his fellows was realized the earthly part of the message to the waiting shepherds of peace and good will toward men. It has already been mentioned that he possessed the power of persuasion, but this was by no means confined to the realm of business, extending rather into every depart-



## GEORGE HENRY CORLISS

ment of life so that others hearkened unto and believed him with an instinctive dependence upon his wisdom and honor.

Mr. Corliss married (first) in January, 1839, Phebe F. Frost, a native of Canterbury, Connecticut, and a daughter of Daniel and Louisa (Clark) Frost, of that place. Mrs. Corliss died on March 5, 1859, and in December, 1866, he married (second) Emily A. Shaw, of Newburyport, Massachusetts. Mr. Corliss was the father of two children, both of whom were born to his first wife. They are Maria Louisa, now residing in Providence; and George Frost, who makes his home in Nice, France.



with



of Canada and of the United States

## Editorial

The Editor

James M. COMMENDATORY

The plans upon which this magazine was founded and in accordance with which it has been and will be conducted, provides for consideration of events and individuals of the past rather than of the present—the preservation of annals which are not only tributes to worthies of old, communities and personal figures, but serve as useful lessons for the present and inspiration for the future.

These purposes bring from time to time fervent expressions of appreciation, in the same line with the following addressed to the editor, by a prominent antiquarian and litterateur living in a distant city of the State of New York:

I agree with you that we are living too much in the present nowadays, and that from the rich and mellow past spread out widely before us, where may be seen the desirable and undesirable features of human experience, are to be culled the ripe lessons we need. The present is a deceitful commodity, largely raw, superficial and transitory, and a very unsafe guide to life and conduct. The past has in its archives vast treasures of unappropriated literary and historic values which wait only the deft hand of the appreciative scholar to make them the sources of entertainment, instruction and inspiration. It is the province of the intelligent writer to select from the great masses of verbiage those facts and sentiments which have a direct and positive appeal to the common heart and conscience of humanity.

## STORIES OF ACHIEVEMENT

Of much interest, as relating to the Great World War, is our present installment of Dr. Arthur W. H. Eaton's "Chapters in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia"—this presenting some important facts concerning the use of this historic old port for the assembling and dispatching overseas hundreds of thousands of men not only



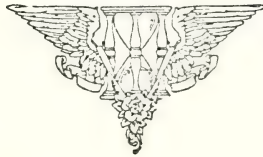
## EDITORIAL

of Canada but of the United States, and, immense quantities of war munitions and supplies of every description.

Fitting in most properly with the above, though not parts of that narrative, on following pages are references to individual achievements in the same great struggle, and each typical of a great multitude of non-armsbearers whose services were highly necessary in the great struggle. Among these may be named the late Owen James McWilliams, president of three great towing lines operating in New York Harbor and neighboring waters. In the period of great railroad congestion, the multitude of craft which Mr. McWilliams assembled and controlled, made possible speedy and safe transportation, on the Atlantic Coast and in Long Island Sound, for great quantities of supplies essential to the prosecution of the war beyond seas.

Another worthy of mention is William Remington Wood, who during the period of hostilities was prominently identified with the Mare Island Naval Base at San Francisco, California.

Properly may be linked in connection with such men of modern achievement, a worthy of an earlier day whose accomplishments went far toward making possible the victory of yesterday—George Henry Corliss (1817-1888) the designer and constructor of the wonderful steam-engine which bears his name, and which evoked from Dr. Asa Gray the pregnant eulogy, "no invention since Isaac Watt's time has so enhanced the efficiency of the steam-engine as this, for which is now presented the Rumford Medal, by the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, of which distinguished body Dr. Gray was president at the time."







CAPT. JOHN SMITH

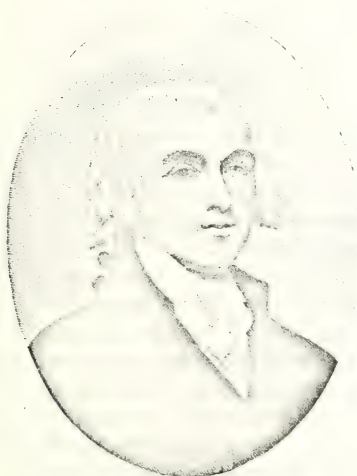




GEORGE WASHINGTON



THOMAS JEFFERSON



JAMES MADISON



JAMES MONROE

Virginians of the Revolutionary Period who came to the Presidency





# AMERICANA

JULY, 1920

## Romance in American History

THE BEGINNINGS OF THE UNITED STATES IN THE COLONY OF VIRGINIA.

CONTRIBUTED



IT IS conceivable that, in some far-off day, some great disaster may come upon the world,—as once did come by water, and, as prophets have foretold, will come by fire—to the destruction of all the works of human hands; of all cities, of all monuments, muniments and libraries. That the human race itself may disappear, save for a chosen or fortunate few. That the few so preserved, when age shall have come upon them, will tell to their children and grandchildren what they had seen or heard of in those former days. That these stories descend by word of mouth from generation to generation, until they come to one with a gifted pen, who weaves out of such traditions a story so strange, so unusual, that it comes to be regarded as mythological. So, it is fairly believable, did Homers of old learn of men so mighty, of deeds so stupendous, that they must needs ascribe them to Gods. So, too, should chaos come in this twentieth century of the Christian era, may not other Homers arise; what marvellous verse would they need in which to adorn the person and the achievements of Washington, of Lincoln, of Grant; of the great statesmen, orators and scientists of this our own day; and with what poetry would they not invest the land which gave them birth, and was the scene of their mighty works! Well might it be said, "There were giants in those days!" Such an epic might rival the Iliad and Odyssey of Homer, the Æneid of Virgil.

While an heroic poem might be based upon many of the individual States of the American Union, a peculiar interest attaches to Vir-

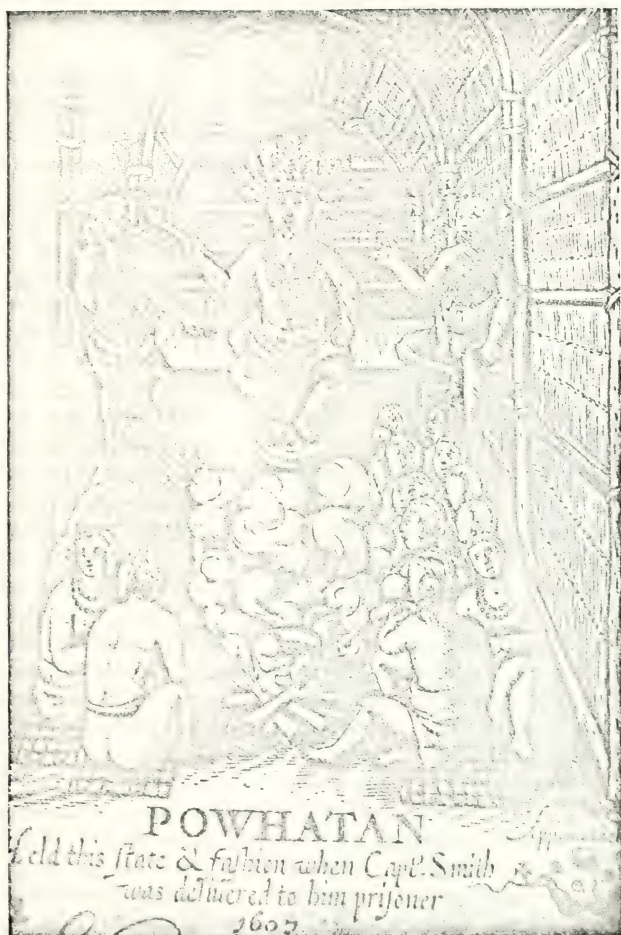


## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

ginia, as, in some respects, the earliest stone in their foundation. The narrative abounds in scenes and incidents which have been the frequent theme of poet and romancist. Hither came the first Englishmen to America, and a key to their thought at the end of a dangerous voyage, fraught with privation, is found in the name they gave to their first landing place—Point Comfort—at the junction of the two rivers to which they gave the names James and York. Some forty miles up the first of these streams—in early records called “the river of Powhatan,” after the first of the Indian chiefs whom they met—they erected their first habitations, calling the place Jamestown, in honor of their monarch beyond the seas. This was the first spot in America settled by Englishmen, and here was erected the first English church in all the land, where, years later, the Indian maid Pocahontas was baptized and married. Here, at Jamestown, Governor Yeardley convened the first representative assembly ever held on the western continent. This first assembly drafted and enacted a code of laws, thirty-five in number. The first of these was intended to provide for the spiritual health of the people. Each plantation must have a house or room “for the worship of God, set apart for that purpose, and not to be for any temporal use whatever:” all services were to be in conformity to the canons of the Church of England; absence from public worship, “without allowable excuse,” was finable; the support of the minister was chargeable upon the people. Drunkenness and profane swearing were punishable offenses. A colonial seal was adopted—on one side the royal arms of Great Britain; on the other, the effigy of the monarch, Queen Anne, and, kneeling at her feet, an Indian presenting to her a sheaf of tobacco leaves, the principal product of the country. Inscribed upon the circumference of the seal was the legend: “Virginia in America . . . Sigillvm Provinciae” (Seal of the Province of Virginia in America).

Jamestown was an illfated settlement. It experienced two destructive fires; its people suffered from famine and pestilence; and in 1676, during Bacon's rebellion, it was extinguished by its last fire, and its people dispersed. The spot is yet marked by the ruins of the old church, and by the memory that here were first planted in America the seeds of a moral crime and a political blunder. Says Smith, in his “Generall Historie,” recalling a statement made by John Rolfe, “About the last of August (1619) came a Dutch man-of-









## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

war and sold us 20 Negars," and shortly afterward began importation of negroes from Africa, direct to American ports. Later generations were fated to atone for the awful mistake, in a war between brothers, the bloodiest of all earth's wars to that time (1861-65), and in which Virginia became the scene of more battles, and her soil drenched with more human blood, than any other of her sister States.

Yet even with the beginning of slavery in this country, was also the beginning of that opposition which in generations later developed into abolition, and culminated in the Civil War. It was opposition to the slave trade. Before the arrival in Virginia of the "20 Negars," Queen Elizabeth had rebuked Admiral Hawkins for instituting a slave trade between Guinea and the West Indies, but he succeeded in convincing her that it was not only a profitable enterprise, but that slavery was for the good of the Africans, as it introduced them to civilization and Christianity—a doctrine which people now living know to have been preached from many an American pulpit, by ministers of unimpeachable character. These sentiments were not exceptional, and doubtless there were many excellent people who feared God as well as honored the king, who perceived no incongruity between the name of one of the ships which sailed for Guinea in 1564, and its errand—the *Jesus*, on a voyage to bring back slaves. Even Whitefield, first of the New World's great missionaries, advocated the bringing into the country of blacks to be held as slaves; he proclaimed the benefits that had already accrued to bondsmen stolen from their native country and brought hither, saying, "many of the poor slaves in America have already been made freemen of the Heavenly Jerusalem." In 1761, Virginia endeavored to suppress the importation of blacks, but the British government would not tolerate the idea. In 1770 the King in Council commanded the Governor of Virginia, "upon pain of his highest displeasure, to assent to no law by which the importation of slaves should be in any way prohibited or obstructed." The Virginia Assembly in 1772 earnestly discussed the question, "How shall we get rid of the great evil?" Washington, Jefferson, Patrick Henry, Lee, and other leading men, were earnestly desirous of ridding the colony of it, but the King remained implacable, despite the most earnest appeals. This conduct of the monarch led Jefferson,



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

in his first draft of the Declaration of Independence, to indite this strong count in his indictment of the royal tyrant: "He (the King) has waged cruel war against human nature itself, violating its most sacred rights of life and liberty in the persons of a distant people, capturing and consigning them into slavery, or to incur a miserable death in transportation hither. . . . This piratical warfare . . . this execrable commerce." This paragraph, however, was stricken out in committee, before the final draft of the Declaration was brought before the Congress. Washington abominated slavery, and he and Jefferson were largely instrumental in saving from it the great Northwestern Territory by the famous ordinance of 1787. To Jefferson is ascribed that noble provision of this great document: "There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in the said Territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes."

To Roanoke belongs distinction as the seat of "The Lost Colony" sent out by Sir Walter Raleigh. It numbered somewhat more than a hundred souls, including seventeen women and two children. It was headed by John White, who was commissioned governor, and in his company were William Dare and his young wife, who was the governor's daughter. To the young couple was born, shortly after they had landed, a daughter who was the first child of English parents born in the New World, and to whom they gave the name Virginia. The settlers were in sore straits, and Governor White returned to England for supplies. On his homeward voyage he touched Ireland, where he left some potatoes which he had brought from Virginia, the first of this edible ever seen in Europe. His return to his colony was delayed for more than three years on account of the war between England and Spain. Finally reaching Roanoke, he found no trace of the people he had left there, and the place which had been their home was a scene of desolation. While there is no authentic information as to their fate, it has come to be believed that the Indians took them far inland, and with whom their blood came to be mingled. Reasons for such a belief are to be found in the fact that for many years families of the Hatteras tribe exhibited unmistakable traits of the whites. It is believed that the lost colonists were safeguarded as to life by the Indian chief Manteo, whom Governor White had at his coming persuaded to be baptized and to profess Christianity. A curious circumstance is preserved in connection with this incident. Governor White, with what authority is



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

not known, made Manteo a baron, giving him the title of "Lord of Roanoke"—the first and last peerage ever created on the soil of what has become the United States of America.

Meanwhile, with the extinguishment of the Jamestown and Roanoke colonies, Williamsburg was laying the foundations of a history in certain respects the most interesting and the most important of any in America. Settled in 1632, it was the first seat of the colonial government under the Crown, and after Virginia became a State of the Union it was its capital until 1780, when Richmond was made the seat of government. The government building in Williamsburg, occupied in turn by the House of Burgesses and the Assembly, burned down in 1752 and again in 1831. The edifice erected after the first fire was the scene of some of the most notable acts which marked the creation of the State of Virginia, and the beginnings of the United States as a sovereign and independent nation. It was there, in May, 1765, that Patrick Henry, from his seat in the House of Burgesses, offered his resolutions denying the right of Great Britain to enforce the odious Stamp Act in Virginia. Sentiment had not yet crystallized. Peyton, Randolph, Pendleton, Wythe, and others, opposed, in what Jefferson characterized as "a most bloody debate," and Henry carried the day by a mere majority of one. It was later and elsewhere that he gave out an utterance which will never be omitted from history: "Caesar had his Brutus, Charles the First his Cromwell, and George the Third ——" "Treason, treason!" was shouted from every part of the house. Without faltering, but rising to a loftier attitude, and fixing on the speaker an eye which seemed to flash fire (so writes one who was almost a contemporary, who probably had his information from an eyewitness), Henry completed his defiance: "May profit by their example. If this be treason, make the most of it!" The story was familiar to the youth of the whole country, North and South, of the several generations down to the opening of the Civil War, and was a favorite piece for schoolroom declamation. It were a custom well worthy of perpetuation.

Later sat a convention of one hundred and thirty delegates, and which adopted resolutions drafted by Edmund Pendleton, enumerating the chief grievances of the people, and declaring "we have no alternative but an abject submission, or a total separation" from the mother country. The same instrument directed their delegates in Congress "to propose to that body to declare the United Colonies





## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

free and independent States, absolved from all allegiance to or dependence upon the Crown or Parliament of Great Britain; and that they give the assent of this Colony to such declaration, and to measures for forming foreign alliances and a confederation of the Colonies; provided that the power of forming government for and the regulation of the internal concerns of each Colony be left to the respective colonial legislatures." We know of no earlier pronouncement as to the peculiar rights of the individual State, as distinguished from those pertaining to the Nation then in course of formation.

The size and form of the famous old government building in Williamsburg are yet discernible in the foundations, overgrown with grass and weeds, which accurately follow the lines laid down by the builders, and through which, at intervals, the materials may be seen. It was in the general form of a capital letter H; the arms of the letter represent the wings, connected by a corridor. It was of two stories, with a tall cupola, in the base of which was a clock. The ruins mark one extreme of Williamsburg's principal street, called Main street by the natives, but the official name of which is Duke of Gloucester street. At the other extreme stand the venerable buildings of William and Mary College. About midway between these extremes is the old colonial parish church, known to the present day by the same name as at its founding—Bruton Parish Church, named for the town in Suffolkshire, England, whence came many if not all of the original settlers. Its clock and bell are said to have been gifts from Queen Anne. There is authentic evidence that she was the giver of the communion service. The organ, a modern instrument, yet contains some of the pipes which were in the original instrument when it was brought from beyond seas, very soon after the erection of the church edifice. The pulpit is of the old style of two hundred and more years ago, high perched, over it a sounding board, and beneath and in front the "clerk's desk." To one side of the pulpit is the throne formerly occupied by the royal governor—a heavy carved chair, within a purple canopy whereon is emblazoned in massive golden bronze the royal arms of Great Britain. A "President's Pew," well in front, has been from the time of Washington reserved for the President of the United States, and herein have sat Presidents Washington, Jefferson, Madison, Monroe, and Tyler—all Virginians, during their official terms. In recent years it has

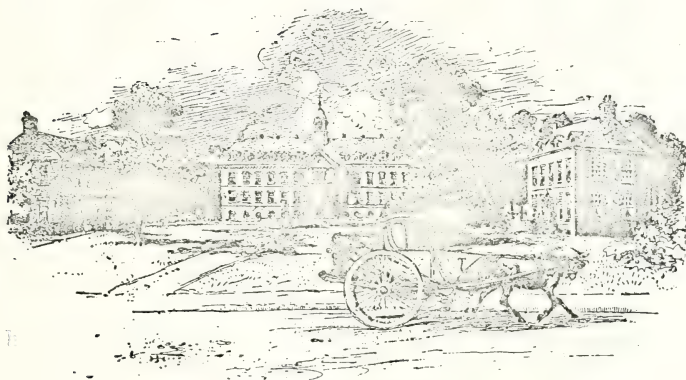




# ROMAN



RALEIGH TAVERN.



WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE IN 1723.



ST. JOHN'S CHURCH.

Brady, Paris, France



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

been open only to descendants of Presidents, and friends accompanying them. The writer of this narrative had the happy fortune to be seated there on several consecutive Sundays, the guest of Dr. Lyon Gardiner Tyler, then president of William and Mary College, and son of President John Tyler. In the vestibule of the church is a fine bronze tablet commemorating the baptism of Pocahontas, in the old church in Jamestown. Still preserved in the church, with religious care, is a splendid service of church plate which was presented to the church at Jamestown by Governor Francis Moryson (1661-62), and which was brought to Williamsburg when the Jamestown settlement was abandoned.

Farther up Duke of Gloucester street are the remains of the Raleigh Tavern; over its door was a carved wooden bust of the famous sailor, courtier, scholar and wit, for whom it was named. Its largest apartment was known as the Apollo Room, named for that one in the "The Devil's Tavern," Fleet street, London, which was a favorite resort of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, and other literary celebrities. The Apollo in Williamsburg was the gathering place for the wit and fashion of the town. That there was mirth and jollity is revealed by word pictures in old letters, and from tradition. There are visions of a huge Japanese bowl redolent with the aroma of Antigua rum punch; of wreaths of smoke from the "counsellors," long stemmed clay pipes, in other company known as "church wardens." A central figure in the merriment is Philip Freneau, a vigorous versifier and spirited singer, who was beginning to make his fame as "the Poet of the Revolution." He had a good second in Alberti, the Italian violinist, who taught the "fiddle" to Jefferson at Monticello; it is said of Jefferson on one of these meetings, he being present, that while in his absence from home some of his books were burned in the fire which destroyed his father's house, "Mars Torm's fiddle was saved," so told by his colored servant, much to his satisfaction.

There were occasions when the Apollo Room was the scene of the stateliest social events; when in brilliance of wit and array of beauty, with all the outward adornments known to the age, it vied with the great functions at the mansion of the Royal Governor. There were such even down to the times that began to try men's souls; when war was known to be imminent; when Patriots and Loyalists jostled each other on the street, and when blows were struck



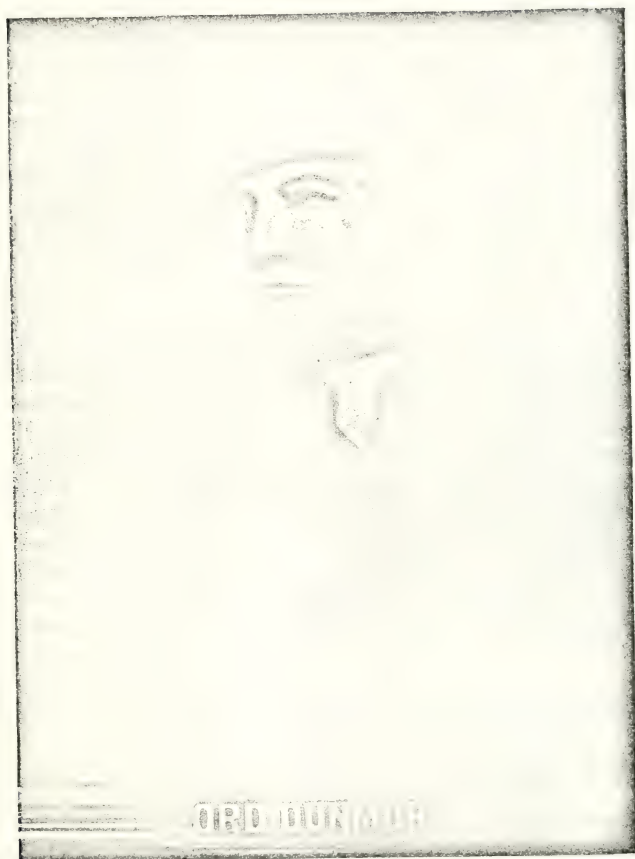
on occasion; when the women of the respective factions, silent of speech, with disdainfully uplifted heads, passed each other without recognition. Yet these same antagonistic elements, on occasion, until war had actually broken out, met on state occasions at the Governor's Mansion, or in brilliant ball at the Apollo Room,—met with graceful carriage and well-feigned cordiality, to drink toasts without meaning or with double meaning, and to mingle in the stately minuet. But all this studied politeness was forgotten when the merrymaking was over, and the people had taken their homeward way.

Those were brilliant assemblages. The Royal Governor and the members of his official family and domestic household, whether in public on the street, at church, or in social function, bore themselves with stately magnificence, their carriage proclaiming that they were giving a by no means contemptible reproduction of the scenes at the Court of St. James. As a matter of fact, the dress worn at such times was probably little if any less rich than in the home country, for fine foreign fabrics were arriving by nearly every ship. The men lent a gayer touch to the picturesqueness of these society tableaux than they do today. Then there were no sartorial mechanics to lay down a style of cut and quality of garb that reduced one to the ignoble distinction of wearer of what is almost a uniform, so lacking in variety as to make him scarcely distinguishable from his fellows. Then was a great variety of color and cut. Men wore coats of velvet and other rich cloths—of crimson, of blue, of purple, of green, or other shades, adorned with massive buttons of gold or burnished gilt. Beneath embroidered waistcoats and on the wrists were ruffles of fine lace. Then, with their immaculate white silk stockings, their knee-breeches in color contrasting harmoniously with their coat; their shoes, with buckles set with precious stones or fair imitations; their small swords with embroidered scabbards and hilt shining with cut steel; finally, the well powdered wig, and surmounting it a rich chapeau adorned with a fine feather—all this made an appearance most startlingly in contrast with the gentleman of today, who is scarcely distinguishable from him who waits upon him in the cloak room or serves him at the table.

The Raleigh Tavern has often been spoken of as "The Cradle of Liberty in Virginia," being to that State what Faneuil Hall in Boston was to Massachusetts. When Lord Dunmore dissolved the







only second Governor



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

House of Burgesses on account of what he deemed its disloyalty to the Crown, those of the members who were not in sympathy with him repaired to the Raleigh Tavern, where they made loud proclamation of their devotion to the cause of liberty, and elected delegates to the first Continental Congress. Later, on hearing of the fight at Lexington, Lord Dunmore ordered the removal of powder from the magazine in Williamsburg, for which he was called to account by an armed body of men led by Patrick Henry. Matters had now reached a crucial point, and he fled from the palace to a man-of-war. His furniture and books were seized by the State authorities and sold at public vendue. After leaving Williamsburg, he made his headquarters at Norfolk, from which place he proclaimed freedom to all negroes and servants who would join his ranks. This early emancipation act was a *brutum fulmen*, for he soon sailed for England, and never returned; he was the last of the Royal Governors of Virginia.

But the Apollo was much more than the scene of wit and conviviality. Here assembled habitually, beginning with the disputatious days leading up to the actual outbreak of the Revolution, a company of young men of high spirit, whose watchword was "Resistance to Oppression." These were they whose stirring declamations gave the Royal Governor enraged moments when he anathematized Williamsburg as "the heart of the rebellion," and "a hell's broth of sedition." In one of his utterances may be discerned a precedent for President Lincoln's emancipation proclamation of nearly a hundred years later, based upon war necessities and war powers. Said the Governor, in a tone threatful of dire punishment, "I will proclaim freedom to the slaves." But he went farther than did the Great Emancipator of the Civil War period, for he added, "and lay Williamsburg in ashes."

Of this company were Jefferson and Freneau, beforenamed. Jefferson and Patrick Henry were the most demonstrative among them, and Henry the most impassioned of all. Jefferson was not long out of William and Mary College, where he studied law. There was nothing in him to give promise of the great distinction he was to achieve as author of the Declaration of Independence; father of the Virginia Code, a most beneficent instrument safeguarding religion and education, and mitigating the worst evils of human slavery; second Governor of his State; President of the United States,



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

and acquirer of the immense Territory of Louisiana; to whom the immense Northwestern Territory owed its immunity from slavery; him of whom it was said by a ripe scholar and well equipped historian (Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, late president of William and Mary College): "From the day of his death to the present time, no other public man has been so often quoted. In originality of mind, versatility of talent, general sweep of intellect, universality of knowledge, power over men, and conception of the rights of mankind, he stood easily head and shoulders above all his great contemporaries. Washington alone surpassed him in moral force."

The contrast was marked between Jefferson and Henry; the one's was a logical mind; he analyzed every mental process of his own and every proposition laid before him, with mathematical thoroughness. Henry, not an accomplished scholar, not even a considerable reader, save as to history, went to the bottom of any vital question almost on the instant, and his verdict came to him by intuition. He was the most vehement, the most fearless, orator of the Revolution, and the simple mention of his name recalls to every American impassioned utterances of his which have no equal in patriotic oratory. Jefferson said of him: "I heard the splendid display of Mr. Henry's talents as a popular orator. They were great indeed, such as I have never heard from any other man. He appeared to me to speak as Homer wrote." In a way, Henry was the soul of the Revolution; among the very first of the advocates of independence, his was the great voice which led all others, and gave inspiration for the lofty deeds without which Virginia and her sister colonies would have remained abject vassals of a feeble old monarch—a monarch whose ire he excited to such a degree that when pardon was offered to repentant rebels, Patrick Henry was by name specifically excepted. Terrified at conditions which he could not control, "the royal governor fled," and in May, 1776, Henry was elected the first governor of the free and independent State of Virginia. He acquitted himself with great ability, and he displayed statesmanship of the first quality when he conceived the conquering of the great western territory then held by the French—a scheme which was carried to success by that indomitable man to whom he committed the task—George Rogers Clarke.

Others of the Apollo coterie may be briefly mentioned. George Mason was an intimate friend of Washington, and was one of the



re  
y

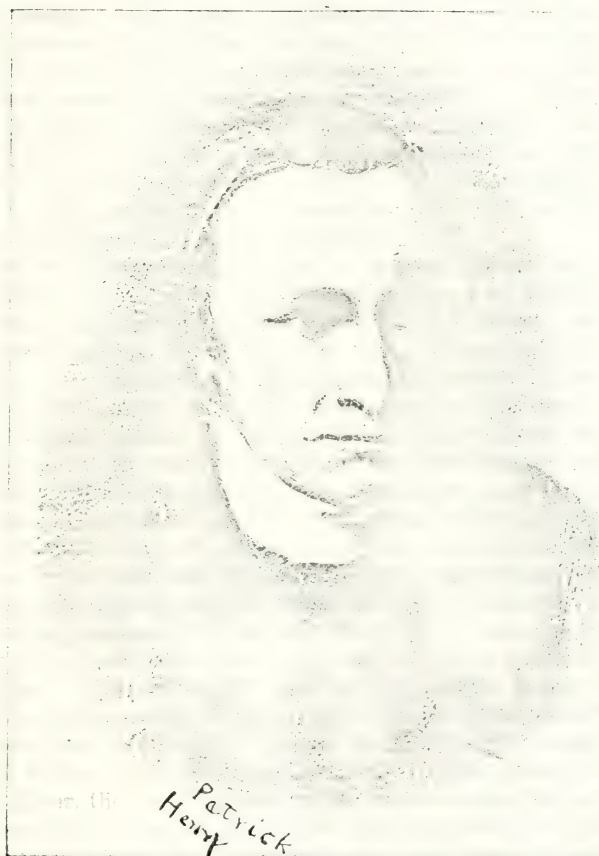
American  
flood with  
slavery, a  
Proposa

There w  
erings, w  
Henry, at

a  
re  
H

re  
H

and gave  
cently nu  
life from



Patrick  
Henry





## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

sturdiest of his supporters. He served with distinction in various conventional, legislative and congressional bodies in the days leading up to and during the Revolution; and as early as 1787 he denounced human slavery as a source of national weakness and demoralization. Paul Carrington was almost as active as Mason, and along similar lines in great part. One of much the same heart as these, was St. George Tucker, who went lame for life from wounds received in the siege of Yorktown. He was a leader among his youthful friends, loved for his "taste, wit and amiability." He became one of the finest legal minds of his day, and was called "The American Blackstone." He wrote much, verse as well as prose. He stood with Washington, Jefferson and others, in his abhorrence of slavery, and in 1796 published "A Dissertation on Slavery, with a Proposal for its Gradual Abolition in Virginia."

There were others, fit to be companions in the Apollo Room gatherings, who were thrilled by the impassioned philippics of Patrick Henry, armed by the deliberate logical utterances of Jefferson, and made more secure through the sage counsel and persistent example of Washington, who was no infrequent attendant. A rare old School of Patriotism was that informal one which occupied the Apollo Room in the Raleigh Tavern, in Williamsburg. Its members matured rapidly, and there were among them those who, almost ere they had entered upon the years of manhood, had taken upon themselves civil and military duties, and through which distinction was to come to them as founders of a State, and of the American Union.

Among those who listened to Patrick Henry's fiery utterances, and gave him vigorous support, was John Tyler, who had but recently finished his studies at William and Mary. He was in public life from his entrance upon manhood; became governor, and later a Federal judge. Jefferson said of him that "he had the firmness to preserve his independence on the same bench with Marshall," and tribute could not be stronger. He was the father of President Tyler, also a William and Mary graduate, who was the father of Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, the last president of the college under the old regime. These three—grandfather, father and son,—were all devoted friends of the college, and their association with it for a period of one hundred and sixty-five years forms a most unusual item of family history.



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

One of the chiefest friends of Williamsburg during its formative period, was Alexander Spotswood. Born in Scotland, and brought up as a soldier, he was a colonel in Marlborough's army, and was wounded at the battle of Blenheim. Coming to Virginia in 1710 as lieutenant-governor, he devoted his energies to the upbuilding of Williamsburg. He levelled the streets, built the magazine for the safe keeping of the public arms, aided in rebuilding the church, and also the college after its burning, and granted a charter of incorporation to the city. Overbearing, and with great ideas of the royal prerogative, he became involved in disputes with the Assembly, the Council, and also with Dr. James Blair, president of the college, and these led to his removal from office in 1722. As chief executive of the colony, he acquitted himself with wisdom and energy. He established a postal service in Virginia. He treated the Indians with consideration. He erected forts on the frontiers as protection against the French and Indians; and he anticipated Governor Patrick Henry and George Rogers Clark as to the western country, urging upon the mother country the desirability of establishing a chain of forts from the Great Lakes to the Mississippi river. After his removal from office he was given command of an expedition to Carthagera, but died just before embarking with his troops at Annapolis, June 7, 1740.

Often at Williamsburg was Lord Thomas Fairfax, a fine type of the loyalists of Revolutionary days, Tories, as they came to be called. He was a man of literary attainments, a graduate of Oxford, and a contributor to Addison's "Spectator." He came from England to Frederick county, Virginia, to the inheritance of a ten thousand acres estate from his mother, a daughter of Lord Culpeper. Here he built a lodge which he called "Greenway Court," in which he lived a solitary life, never marrying. It was there that he and Washington first met, and a strong friendship ensued, the two hunting and surveying together. He took no part in public affairs, but remained a staunch loyalist to the last. In his ninetieth year, the news came to him of the surrender of the British commander, Cornwallis, to the friend of his young manhood, Washington. Overcome by his emotion, he summoned his body servant to take him to his bed, saying, "I am sure it is time for me to die." A pathetic ballad narrating the event, appeared soon after his death, and the friendship of the old loyalist for Washington, and his pathetic end.



United States.

as a town or ar

below 21

by

est 1800-

he



ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD





have been woven into several romances in both England and the United States. *(printed but the manuscript of 1857 is*

A principal attraction of Williamsburg, to the real visitor—him who views a town or an edifice in the light of its relations to the history of his country—is the College of William and Mary. The history of this venerable institution is most unique, even thrilling. It was the second in the country among the higher schools of learning—second in point of years, but first in importance. The Harvard school preceded it by several years, but William and Mary came first as a university, though not under that name. While Harvard had not grown beyond what would now be known as a modest high school, really not grading that high, under only a president and a few tutors, William and Mary had for some years possessed a capable faculty teaching the higher mathematics, law and medicine, as well as divinity, its professors graduates of English and Scotch universities. To the Virginia Society of the Colonial Dames of America belongs the credit of properly preserving a recognition of the importance of this famous old school, in having executed and placed in the vestibule of the college building proper, a fine tablet to the memory of James Blair, founder and first president, and to the seventeen Virginia gentlemen who were his associates in the establishment of the institution. The tablet is of Florentine marble, fashioned in a style to correspond with the date of the foundation of the college. The armorial bearings awarded the college by the College of Heralds of England also appear upon the tablet. William and Mary is the only college in America to possess such a distinction.

In this connection may properly be mentioned an object of great interest, the marble statue of Norborne Berkeley, Baron de Botetourt, Governor-in-chief of Virginia at the time of the founding of the College, and one of its earliest benefactors. He provided for two gold medals to be awarded annually, one for excellence in classical learning, the other for excellence in philosophy. Eight of these prizes were bestowed, and they are said to be the earliest of their kind in the United States. The Lord Berkeley statue was executed in England and sent over shortly after his death, and stands immediately in front of the college building proper. Lord Berkeley's funeral was conducted with much pomp. His remains repose in a vault under the college chapel.



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

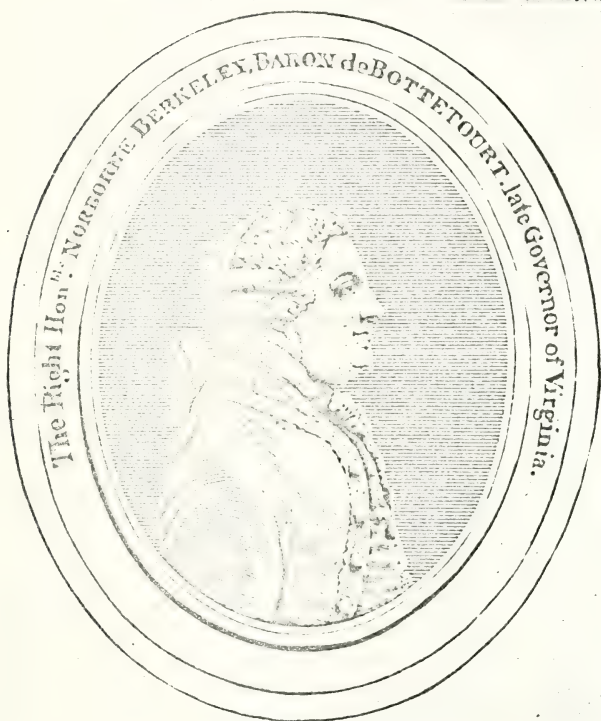
As early as 1619 an effort was begun for the establishment of a college in Virginia, but the massacre of 1622, which annihilated several of the towns in the colony, put an end to the project. In 1660-61 Dr. James Blair revived the matter. He was a Scotch clergyman who had come to Virginia as a missionary. His first nine years were passed in Henrico parish, and while there he appealed to the governor, the council and the clergy, to lend their aid to the cause he held so dear to his heart. In 1693, William and Mary of England granted a charter to the college, which was to bear their names, and to the founding and maintenance of which they made liberal appropriations. The buildings were designed by the famous Christopher Wren, the architect of the noble St. Paul's Church in London, England. They comprised the college proper, at the head of the campus, and a president's mansion and a school for Indians (for whom special provisions were made in the educational scheme of the colony), facing each other on avenues radiating from the college proper. The first college edifice was destroyed by fire in 1705, but was soon rebuilt on the original plans. The college was the recipient of liberal gifts from time to time by the General Assembly and by individuals, and at the time of the outbreak of the Revolutionary War it was acknowledged to be the wealthiest college in America. That war, however, was its undoing. The young men who in times of peace would have thronged its halls, were performing military service, and the buildings were alternately occupied by American and French troops, during which time a wing of the college building and the president's house were destroyed by fire. The college was closed in 1781. After the Revolution the institution was resuscitated, with the aid of the General Assembly. In 1859 the college building and the library were destroyed by fire, but were restored on the original plans before the close of the next year. The Civil War caused another closure, and the buildings were used as barracks and hospital, in the early days by the Confederates, and afterward by the Union troops. It was during the stay of the latter in 1862 that the college was again burned from accidental causes. In 1869 the edifice was substantially restored and reopened, and from that time the institution has been continued on a collegiate basis, (the university features having disappeared), with State aid, which includes provisions for a Teachers' Normal School.

Dr. James Blair became the first president of William and Mary



KUMA

1100



DAVIDSON 2007



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

College, being at the same time the rector of Bruton Parish Church, and he discharged the duties of both these positions until his death, April 18, 1743, in the fiftieth year of his collegiate presidency. At the first, the instructional work of the college devolved upon himself, a grammar master, an usher, and a writing master. In 1712 was appointed a professor of mathematics, this being seven years before Harvard had a regular professorship. In 1729 the conduct of the institution was transferred from a board of trustees to a fully equipped faculty, all university graduates, consisting of the president and six professors. The instructional course comprised a grammar or classical school, leading to the school of philosophy, and thence to the school of divinity. Graduates from the latter were for many years, under existing laws, obliged to journey to England for ordination. It is worthy of mention that the designs of Dr. Blair and his coadjutors, as to the college being successful in its instruction of "pious ministers," were not unfruitful. Dr. Dawson, the immediate successor of Dr. Blair in the presidency, writes: "The best ministers in Virginia are those educated in Virginia, and sent to England for ordination. It is chiefly the foreign-born and foreign-educated ministers who brought discredit on the church in the colony."

Want of space forbids any extended array of all the distinguished scholars who presided over the famous old college, and only an unusually conspicuous few may be named. Among these is William Stith, known to historical students as the author of "A History of Virginia from the First Settlement to the Dissolution of the London Company," printed in 1747, in Williamsburg, that place then having the only printing press in the colony. The criticisms passed upon this work have been many and conflicting. While Hilliard praised "his accuracy," and Dr. Robertson pronounced him "the most intelligent and best informed historian of Virginia," Jefferson, on the other hand, censured him for "want of taste," and the famous Frenchman DeToqueville condemned him for "his diffuseness." Stith, however, in his preface, had acknowledged that he was "not wholly original," but in what respect it is not now profitable to inquire.

Some incidents in the administration of Dr. Thomas Dawson, the fourth president of William and Mary College, afford a sidelight on the social life of those days. Dr. Dawson's troubles were various.





He was also the pastor of Bruton Church, and the church influence upon the college of which he was the head led to much dissatisfaction on the part of many Virginia students, who, by way of protest against the Established Church autocracy, as they regarded it, resorted to Princeton and Philadelphia colleges. Worse yet, "the habits of intemperance to which several of the college professors were unfortunately addicted, and from which he (the president) was not exempt," produced impressions which injuriously affected the college for a number of years. Dr. John Camm was the seventh and last of its colonial presidents. On the outbreak of the Revolution, he remained loyal to the mother country, and was summarily removed from his presidency.

The administration of Dr. James Madison, the eighth president of William and Mary College, was notable in many respects. He is not to be confounded with him of the same name who was President of the United States. He was an excellent classical scholar, studied law, but abandoned the profession after a single case, took orders in the Church of England, at the age of twenty-six became Professor of Natural Philosophy at William and Mary, and at the age of twenty-eight entered upon its presidency. Thomas Jefferson was at this time a member of the board of visitors. The two were in hearty accord, and they revolutionized the instructional methods of the institution, by the introduction of the elective system of studies. They created the chairs of law and medicine, giving the college university character, and making the institution the first in America to practice the elective system, and to institute a law department. In this is discerned the germ of the idea which Jefferson was to bring to fuller fruition many years later in the University of Virginia, at Charlottesville, which he considered the crowning achievement of his life, and of which he was so proud that he directed that the following inscription should be placed upon his tombstone: "Father of the University of Virginia." Magnificent institution that it is, and Jefferson worthy of highest honor as its founder, many a Virginian has expressed his regret that he had not withheld his hand, and devoted his lofty enthusiasm and great energies to the expansion and broadening of William and Mary, with all its inspiring history, his own *alma mater* from which he received both his classical and his law degrees, into a real and enduring University, and which, with such ancient prestige and modern appreciation and support, might possi-



bly now stand foremost of all America's educational institutions. For, pitiful to relate, this famous old school, hallowed with recollections of the mighty men who laid the foundations of American institutions, remains but an ordinary college and normal school, instead of being as it could and should be, one of the chiefest educational institutions in all America.

John Augustine Smith, tenth president, was the first to hold the office who was not a clergyman. He was an alumnus of the college, took his medical degree in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York City, and established himself in practice in that place. In 1814 he was called to the presidency of William and Mary. In his tenth year he made a determined effort to remove the college to Richmond, and probably would have succeeded had it not been for the determined opposition of two strong characters—John Tyler, afterward President of the United States, who had a warm personal attachment for Williamsburg; and Thomas Jefferson, who was engaged in his University of Virginia project at Charlottesville. Defeated in his purpose, Dr. Smith resigned in 1825, and returned to New York City, where his splendid talents shone preëminently. He was brilliant in every feature of his career—as practitioner, as president of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and as an author.

Under Dr. Thomas R. Dew, thirteenth president of the college, the chair of history and political law, established some years earlier, was developed into one of first importance, for the subject had been almost altogether neglected elsewhere. Dr. Dew argued strongly in favor of slavery as not only a social advantage to the slaves as well as to their owners, but as a divine appointment. He contributed much to the discussions and aggressive spirit which found vent in the heated controversies out of which came the nullification doctrine, and ultimately the Civil War. His lectures on "The Restrictive System," in which he depicted what he regarded as the evils of the tariff system, were given wide publication and were received with great favor. They had much to do in shaping the opposition to the tariff laws of 1828 and 1832, and to the nullification and State rights doctrines espoused by Calhoun, and which would certainly have led to serious national disturbances had it not been for the heated threats of President Andrew Jackson: "I would hang them (the nullificationists) as high as Haman! They should be a terror



to traitors to all time, and posterity would have pronounced it the best act of my life"—an utterance before which the nullifiers quailed, and relapsed into inaction.

During the long period of 1854 to 1919, sixty-five years, William and Mary College had but two presidents—Benjamin Stoddert Ewell and Lyon Gardiner Tyler. President Ewell was a West Point graduate, and for four years after his graduation was an instructor there, resigning in 1836, and devoting himself in turn to civil engineering and instructional work in Hampden-Sydney College. In 1848 he was called to the presidency of William and Mary, in addition to a professorship therein; he declined the former position, but served as president until Bishop Johns was installed. Bishop Johns resigned in 1854, and Mr. Ewell succeeded him. In 1857 the faculty was reorganized, Mr. Ewell retaining his professorship, while a South Carolina clergyman was called to the presidency. The latter declining, Mr. Ewell was again made president, and held that position until 1888, when he was made president emeritus, an honor which remained with him until his death, June 19, 1894, in his eighty-fourth year. During his administration, which covered the entire Civil War period, the college experienced many vicissitudes. In 1859 occurred the disastrous fire in which the college building, library and scientific buildings were destroyed. In May, 1861, one month after the breaking out of the Civil War, the college was suspended, President Ewell and nearly all the professors and students entering the Confederate army. Mr. Ewell entered the military service as colonel of the Thirty-second Virginia Infantry Regiment, and later became assistant adjutant-general to General Joseph E. Johnston, who subsequently made him chief-of-staff, in which capacity he served until the close of the war, leaving the service with the rank of brigadier-general.

Returning to the college, President Ewell gave his entire energies to its resuscitation. In 1862, while occupied by Union troops, it had again experienced a disastrous fire. While overseeing the work of rebuilding, he also found annoyance in a determined effort for the removal of the college to Richmond, as had been also attempted more than forty years previously. The work of restoration was costly, and the war had exhausted the endowment, hence, out of necessity, the institution closed in 1881, and the period of suspension was lengthened out for seven years. During this time the rev-





## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

venues were well husbanded, but the institution had lost much of its prestige, and other colleges had gathered to themselves many who otherwise would have given themselves to it. An old idea was now renewed—in addition to the regular college course, the institution of a normal school for the training of teachers for the common schools. This innovation, it was very properly contended, should be at the expense of the State, accordingly the matter was laid before the General Assembly, which with warm approval passed an act carrying an annual appropriation of \$10,000. The faculty was now reorganized, General Ewell voluntarily retiring on account of age.

Came now to the presidency, Dr. Lyon Gardiner Tyler, in 1888. He was a son of John Tyler, President of the United States, 1841-44; his mother, Julia Gardiner, of New York, was a descendant of Lyon Gardiner, commandant of Fort Saybrook, Connecticut, and first proprietor of Gardiner's Island, near the head of Long Island Sound. Dr. Tyler was a graduate of the University of Virginia, where he was twice elected orator of the Jefferson Society, and obtained the best editorship scholarship. After leaving the University, he became Professor of Belles-Lettres in William and Mary, relinquishing the position in little more than a year to accept the principalship of a high school in Memphis, Tennessee. While a university student he had read law under the masterly John B. Minor, and in 1882 he resigned from the Memphis school and took up his residence in Richmond, Virginia, where he engaged in a legal practice. He was elected in 1887 to the House of Delegates, and was sponsor of the \$10,000 college appropriation act referred to in that portion of this narrative which relates to President Ewell. The faculty was now reorganized, with Dr. Tyler as president. At the first, there were even friends who were doubtful of the future of the college, even with this State aid, but the results speedily vindicated the expectations of President Tyler and the legislative action, the scholarship rolls, from the year of this revival, being largely augmented. Dr. Tyler succeeded in 1891 in securing an act of the legislature increasing the annual appropriation from \$10,000 to \$15,000, and later he was primarily instrumental in procuring the passage of an act in the Fifty-second Congress, indemnifying the college for damage done to its property during the Civil War. In 1919 Dr. Tyler retired from the presidency, leaving in capable hands the venerable institution over which he had so long presided, and to whose wel-



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

fare he had contributed in eminent degree. In a well deserved retirement, he is by no means idle, but continually adds to the great mass of historical and antiquarian lore which has flowed from his facile pen. He is a favorite lecturer and speaker on occasion, and the author of numerous valuable works, among them one published in 1915, (Lewis Historical Publishing Co., New York), comprising five volumes: "Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography," a compilation which with the passage of the years will have an ever-increasing value, dealing as it does with practically every family from the days of the first colonists to the year of publication.

The foregoing grew out of a few weeks' stay in famous old Williamsburg, in course of which the writer visited all the spots mentioned in this rambling narrative. As the guest of Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, then president of William and Mary College, his most delightful hours were those passed at that institution, and perhaps more particularly on the porch of the president's house, and in the dusk of evening. Mention has herein been made of the various disasters which had befallen the ancient buildings. All had been replaced on exactly their old grounds, after the original plans, and, in large part, in brick and stone out of the original materials. Dimly outlined through the stately old trees, it would seem as though nothing new had taken place these two hundred and more years past; that the visitor was a spectator of the scenes of that remote past. He seemed to be so near worthies of old that he could by a slight effort touch their garments. He could see Washington leaving this very building, having just received his surveyor's warrant, which marked the beginning of his wonderful career; and Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall and Patrick Henry, with their certificates of graduation in law—all these but a few of the multitude who passed from within these walls to engage in the active concerns of life, many of them destined to write their names indelibly and high on the rolls of fame.

Turning out at the gate opening upon the great road, the visitor halts for a moment to see "in his mind's eye" the passage of phantom armies—the Continentals of the Revolution pressing on to victory at Yorktown; then, many years later, over the very same route, the advance and retreat, in turn, of Unionists and Confederates—enemies then, soon to become brothers once more, and fathers and



## ROMANCE IN AMERICAN HISTORY

grandfathers of another generation which was to rescue Liberty on a foreign soil.

Passing down the street, seems to come from old colonial mansion the strains of music, and, shadowed upon the window curtain the forms of Washington and the Widow Custis walking the stately minuet. At the Raleigh are heard sounds of jollity and impassioned declamation alternating; at Bruton Church, psalm and prayer, and responses, from voices long stilled, and then, faintly, the ages-long benediction.

Then, without sense of the eternal fitness of things, the raucous blast of an automobile horn! Sacrilege has done its work. The charm of the daydream is gone, and the dreamer, with regret, turns from the past, which is hallowed and eternal, to the present, which is disturbing and transitory.





## Letters of a New England Exile

BY CAROLINE CLIFFORD NEWTON, NEW HAVEN, CONN.



HERE IS a story of very early times in this country which tells how a fencing master appeared one day in the little new town of Boston, how he set up a platform in the sight of everybody and walked to and fro upon it like Goliath of Gath, challenging the passersby. He was a good fencer, "a gallant person," so the story says, and one opponent after another went down before him until, at last, a countryman, roughly dressed, carrying a mopstick for a sword and a cheese wrapped in a napkin for a shield, stepped up boldly to the platform and proposed to try conclusions with him. The crowd laughed, and the indignant fencing master, ruffled in his dignity, called him an impudent fellow, made a pass at him with his sword, and bade him be gone. But the countryman stood his ground. Once, twice, three times, he caught and held the fencer's sword in the soft cheese, while he gently rubbed the blackened mopstick over his face and gave him a fine pair of whiskers. The crowd laughed louder and, at last, the fencing master lost his temper altogether, dropped the foils and seized his broadsword. "Stop, sir," thundered the countryman with sudden authority, "until now I have but played with you and have not attempted to hurt you, but if you come at me with the broadsword, know that I will certainly take your life." "The firmness and determinateness with which he spake," says the old story, "struck the gentleman who, desisting, exclaimed, "Who can you be? You are either Goffe, Whalley, or the devil, for there was no man in England that could beat me."

As a character sketch, a presentation of definite personality, this quaint old tale stands out almost alone from the mass of traditions relating to the regicides. There is, of course, the well-known and somewhat similar legend of the "Angel of Hadley," the deliverer who appeared in the midst of an Indian attack and was supposed to have been Goffe. But the sudden appearance of a mysterious cham-





pion on a battlefield is a myth (or a truth) common in history from the early days of Rome to those of the Battle of the Marne, and a distinction shared with too many, ceases to be a personal one.

The odd little story of the fencing master, on the other hand, while it may not be literally true, seems to prove by its very existence that a distinct and vivid impression was made on the good people of Massachusetts Bay Colony by the character of the two regicide judges who sought refuge among them in the summer of 1660. The reputation of these men had preceded them; they were known not only to have held important positions under Cromwell's government, (Whalley was a cousin of the Lord Protector, and Goffe had married Whalley's daughter), but to have been brave and trusted officers in the Parliamentary army, an army which, whatever fanatical qualities it sometimes called for, never tolerated either fear or weakness in its commanders. In the little story we find one of the "two colonels," as they were called in America, Goffe probably, as younger and more active than Whalley, proving himself, as might have been expected, not only a good swordsman but a man of quick resource, ready for adventure and loving it, accustomed to the exercise of authority, having, perhaps unexpectedly, a latent sense of fun—altogether, a strong man to be respected.

To us the regicides are legendary. The traditions about them, familiar to us from our childhood, deal almost entirely with outward events, with the incidents of their flight from justice, and the long persistent hunt for them. There is little play of character, the men themselves have no personality, they are simply the wooden pegs on which their story hangs. Taken just so, merely on the surface, it is a great story, a wonderful tale to find bound up with the first struggling years of a new colony. The very breath of those early days blows through it out of our primeval forests; it has the perennial interest of the game of hide and seek, the close call of danger, the thrill of pursuit, the excitement of hairbreadth escapes, the marvel of the unexplained. The mystery of it still hangs about the hills of New Haven, hiding behind the bare, impassive face of West Rock beyond the salt marshes, and hovers over the Connecticut Valley as far north as Hadley. It is not strange that each generation since that time has fallen under its spell and has seldom stopped to question what manner of men they were to whom the story happened.

Yet, after all, what mystery is so great as the mystery of person-



ality? What adventure so big as the adventure of temperament and character? What search so full of interest as the search for our fellowmen behind the masks they wear, or the myths they have become? and the search for the regicides is not over. The real regicides are still undiscovered, and we shall perhaps never find them, for they have left few traces. It is true that one of them, Goffe, has given us a clue in a few written records of himself, but most of his papers, including a journal which he kept for seven years, were unfortunately lost or destroyed when Governor Hutchinson's house was plundered in the Boston Stamp Act riots of 1765. However, Goffe was a methodical person and during his long exile he made careful copies of all his letters, written and received. Some of these copies have been found in other collections, together with a few pages of the journal, and there are, besides, letters of his among the state papers of the time in England which, bare and businesslike as they are, yet add their unconscious witness to the writer's personality, for no man puts pen to paper, however briefly, save at the peril of self-revelation. Here and there, too, we find hints of the impression he made on those who knew him or had read his journals. From these various fragmentary sources it is possible to get just a suggestion, broken, but true, of his real character.

William Goffe was the son of Rev. Stephen Goffe, an English clergyman who was said to be "a very severe Puritan." We do not know the date of his birth. Two, at least, of his brothers were, like the father, graduates of Oxford, but he himself, although he received years later the degree of Master of Arts from Oxford, was not sent to the University, but was put to a trade in London. That career did not appeal to him, however, and when his time as apprentice was up, he broke away to become a soldier. He entered the army of the Parliament, married a daughter of General Edward Whalley, and, with his father-in-law, followed Cromwell's fortunes, holding various commands under Cromwell and sitting more than once in Parliament. As a member of the High Court of Justice, he signed the king's death-warrant. Step by step he rose through the stern ranks of the "Ironsides" until he reached a position of so much influence that after Cromwell's death he was mentioned as a possible successor. When Cromwell's son became the second "Protector," Goffe remained faithful to him, and a letter from Richard Cromwell about a grant of land shows the esteem in which he was



held by both father and son. "Calling to mind," the letter says, "the great worth and merit of our trusty and well-beloved William, Lord Goffe, Major-General of the foot in our army, and of his many eminent, constant and faithful services, and with what singular valor and prudence he hath done and performed the same to these nations in time of the late wars and otherwise; and also being made acquainted with the gracious intentions of our most dear and entirely beloved father, his late highness of blessed memory, towards the said William, Lord Goffe; and to compensate his desert, we are well-pleased to grant, etc."

It was not only as a soldier that Goffe made a name for himself. In the language of those days, he was known also as a "prayer-maker, preacher, and presser for righteousness." We hear of him exhorting in meetings of army officers, and it is evident that he greatly enjoyed preaching, or "exercising," as he himself expressed it. His religion was a part and a most important part of himself. As to its precise shade, in those complicated times, President Stiles, in his "Book of the Three Judges," says that he was "the pious Congregational Puritan, exactly agreeing in religious sentiments with the first settlers of Boston and New Haven."

In 1655, Cromwell appointed him one of ten or twelve major-generals in command of the militia, with large powers, and set him to govern the three counties of Sussex, Hampshire and Berkshire. We learn from his letters to Cromwell's secretary that administrative work was new to him, and he seems to have doubted his fitness for it. But Goffe was a soldier and ready to obey orders. "Where his highness shall think me most serviceable," he writes, "there I desire to be . . . I have not been formally acquainted with this kind of work, but I shall do my utmost and leave the success to God." These few words sum up his life's attitude.

Soon after he assumed office he writes to Secretary Thurloe:

Yesterday I spake with all the commanding officers of the three militia troops . . . and after I had let them know his highness' pleasure concerning my command of them, I proceeded to communicate to them so much of my instructions from his highness as did relate to them; which they all seemed very well to approve of as also to embrace that counsel I was told to give them in reference to their carriage towards all men but especially towards one another and all saints. I have drawn out some directions suitable to my instruc-





## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

tions from his highness which also I delivered to the chief officer of each troupe who is to communicate them to the rest, all promising the diligent observation thereof; which, if they do, I shall have a better knowledge of these blades I am to deal with than yet I have. . . . I was desirous to propagate union as much as I could; and therefore desired the officers of my own troupe and those of the militia to dine together and much good correspondence appeared and I hope will continue. They do willingly acknowledge themselves (I mean the militia) as a new quickset hedge that will for a time need an old hedge about it, and I hope his highness will be so good a husband as not to take away the old one till the new be grown very substantial.

A few days later he says, "I have received many outward civilities from the gentlemen in and about this city (Winchester), and I hope the Lord will bless the sincere endeavors of those that labor in his good work, in which I have hitherto had some encouragement." And in a postscript, "For the present I lodge in Mr. Whitfield's house, who is a godly minister in this place." This is the Rev. Henry Whitfield, who later came to Guilford, in the New Haven Colony.

"I hope I shall be watchful in the station God hath set me," he writes in another letter. . . . "I desire to do my duty with faithfulness and to as good effect as I can." No one who reads the letters can doubt Goffe's sincerity and faithfulness or his honesty. And his task is simplified for him by the fact that he, like all the men of his sect, can see but one side to the great questions of the day, his own side, the side of God's saints. Now if a man is firmly convinced that he is right and all those opposed to him are wrong, it strengthens his arm mightily. "We have just cause to bless God for his continued goodness in discovering the bloody and wicked designs of our enemies," Goffe writes. "I hope the Lord will teach those whom it concerns to make a wise improvement thereof. . . . I hope the Lord will in mercy prevent the mischief intended by them." He says in another letter, "Fox and two more eminent northern Quakers have been in Sussex and are now in this county doing much work for the devil and delude many simple souls. . . . I have some thoughts to lay Fox and his companions by the heels if I see a good opportunity."

Of course he is often in trouble about money for necessary expenses and the arrears of pay for the troops. "Sir," he writes to Thurloe, "I have so often pressed you about this business that I am ashamed to be so troublesome to you and were I not extreme



poor, I would lay down the money myself rather than that his highness' word and promise should be thought to be so little worth. . . . Pray let me hear from you by the Thursday post, and let me have something about the militia troops that may enable me to look them in the face, which I have not yet done, nor shall be able to do without six months pay. . . . I am sorry to be thus scraping for money, knowing your necessities, but your affairs cannot go on without it." Neither can his own, apparently. In an early letter to Thurloe he says:

I being put upon the command of a regiment of horse and the major-generalship at once, found the necessary preparations thereunto very chargeable so that the hundred pounds appointed me by his highness was spent before I received it, and therefore I was forced to leave my wife bare of money and to take but a little with me, though by reason of lying always in inns, I find the expenses of this service will be great if I carry it any way honorably, and truly I would not willing prejudice the service nor be too prodigal of my master's purse. I never yet had a design to grow rich, and I do think it less seasonable now than ever. Whatever is allowed for my public service I shall, God willing, spend it. God that hath hitherto, will still provide for me and mine. And therefore I can the more freely be bold to desire you to speak to his highness that there may be one hundred pounds more delivered into the hands of my wife for which I will be accountable. . . . I desire my wife may be enabled to make punctual payment of my bills. Sir, I beseech you pardon this boldness of your very affectionate friend and servant.

In a letter written in February of that year, 1656, he writes, "I have almost taken a house in this place. If you have anything for or against my doing it, pray speak it." Apparently there was nothing against it, for a few months later, putting aside official business for the moment, he says, "Sir, I shall now trouble you with a word about myself and shall most humbly and earnestly beg your friendship in the business. I did yesterday receive a letter from his highness whereby I am commanded to be at London on Saturday, the 17 May. Now, Sir, having brought my wife and family to this place, I should have been very glad to have stayed with them till my wife were a little better acquainted with this place, which she dothe not very much rejoice in at present; and my leaving her here alone is the thing at present she greatly dreads; and therefore my humble desire is that you would be pleased to gain a dispensation for me till



## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

the beginning of June, if it may be without prejudice to the public affairs. . . . My wife doth not yet know I am sent for. Pray pardon me that I trouble you with my private affairs. He is miserable that hath no friend, and I think myself most happy to be free with you as a friend upon all occasions." This letter is interesting in view of later ones from America giving some account of Goffe's family and of his great grief in the separation from them.

Running through these dry reports and lifting them out of the common-places of official routine, there is a strain of beautiful humility. "If you think fit," he writes, "I beseech you present my most humble service to his highness for whom I pray without ceasing and can, I hope, cheerfully sacrifice my life in the service if it need be; but I wish he do not repent the laying so great a trust upon so poor and inconsiderable a creature. . . . I am very much a stranger in these counties, especially Hampshire and Berkshire . . . and therefore I fear I shall not answer the expectation of his highness." And again, "I tell you by the way of my intended proceedings, that if you like them not, I may be helped by your counsel, for I am here much alone. . . . If I be mistaken in this my way of thinking, I hope I shall be better advised by you. . . . You see how fully I deliver my thoughts to you, which I do in the discharge of my duty, and having so done, I leave the issue to God. I am not altogether without hope that the Lord will manifest His presence with me in this difficult affair, to me difficult, because I am weak. . . . But I have troubled you too long with my little intelligence; therefore I shall here end, only let me beg your prayers, your fervent prayers for your affectionate friend and servant."

With due allowance for a difference of form, for a day in which men signed themselves "poor creatures" and "humble servants," meaning no more by it than we by "Yours truly," we still feel as sure in reading these letters, of Goffe's genuine humility as we do of his courage or his honesty. The keynote of his character is sincerity. But, while he is humble, he is also perfectly aware of his own qualities and powers. He had carved out his career for himself and had hewn his way through difficulties with his own good right arm. "I bless God," he says, "I have not wanted the civil respects of all sorts of persons with whom yet I have had to do. . . . I am very sensible of my inability to manage this great trust as I ought, yet am not convinced of any unfaithfulness."





## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

Humility is a rather difficult quality to define or even to recognize at first sight. The counterfeit is so common, and the real so rare. True humility has nothing whatever to do with a lack of self-confidence; it is no more akin to self-depreciation than it is to presumption or pride. Men call it a virtue, but it is certainly not on the common and regular list, it is a thing altogether too lovely and irresponsible. Perhaps it is not really a virtue at all, but just a rare gift of the gods to a chosen few. Why, then, should we be surprised to find it hiding in the heart of a Puritan soldier, and its fragrance lingering, faint yet unmistakable, about the old forgotten letters of an unrepentant regicide?

The same qualities with less, perhaps, of active resolution as time passes, and more of passive reliance on God, are found in his letters from America, and even in the bits of his journal which we possess. Although he kept this diary faithfully for seven years, we have left only a few entries from May to September, 1660. The first of these takes notice of the proclamation of the new king, Charles the Second, at Gravesend. By that time Goffe and Whalley, under assumed names, were safe on board the ship which was to bring them to America. The next entry, two months later, tells of their landing. "We came to anchor between Boston and Charlestown; between 8 & 9 in ye morning; all in good health thro: the good hand of God upon us. Oh that men would praise the Lord for his goodness." His first care was to give thanks publicly, although anonymously, for his preservation:

Lds. Day. wee had opportunity of waiting upon God in his public ordinances, wh. wer solemnly performed by mr. Mitchel. I handed mr. Mitchel a paper, which I here insert, to mind my-selfe hereafter of my present purposes to cleave to ye Lord & to love him & serve him forever, which ye Lord by his own grace & Spirit enable me to do, now and alwayes.

Having received much mercy from ye Lord, at his leaving his Native country, & in his passage thro: ye great deeps; as also in ye congregation of his people, doth humbly desire that the praises due unto God, . . . may be rendered on his behalfe. And that ye Lord may be Entreated yet to follow his poor Unworthy Servt wth goodness & mercy; that he may walk as becometh the Gospel, & forever cleave to ye Lord; & Love him & Serve him, in all conditions.

A little later; Went to Boston lecture, heard Mr. Norton . . . went afterwards to his house where we were Lovingly Entertained with many Ministers, and found great respects from them. But





were thretnd by one that came in ye Scotch vessel . . . he sd, if it had not been for those that walked with us, he would have had us by the hair of our heads: but when I heard of it, I said all ye Haires of our Heads wer numbered by the Lord. . . . At night major Gookins (who came home in the same ship with them and was their host in Cambridge) showed us a printed paper yt was brought in ye Scotch ship, wherein ye Lds do order 66 members of the High court of Justice to be secured wth their estates . . . its dated 18th may 1660, But I will meditate Heb. 13: 5, 6. (Be content with such things as ye have; for he hath said, I will never leave thee nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, the Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.)

Another entry still later: Sup't at mr. Chauncey's; the good old Servant of ye Lord; Still Expressing much affection, & telling us, he was perswaded ye Ld had brought us to this Country for good both to them and or Selves.

For the story of Goffe's life in America we must go to Governor Hutchinson, of Massachusetts, into whose possession his letters and papers finally came, who read his diary and made use of these materials in his own "History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay." He tells of Goff's arrival with Whalley in Boston, and of their friendly reception there at first. "They appeared grave, serious and devout," he says, "and the rank they had sustained commanded respect." He describes the change of attitude toward them when the news came from England that they were proclaimed traitors with a price on their heads. He tells of their flight to New Haven and of their protection by the magistrates there; of the search for them; of their hiding in the woods and living in caves; of their secret journey by night to Hadley and the long years spent there. He gives us the few facts with which tradition has since been so busy and upon which the legends about them have been built. Hutchinson had no liking for the regicides, he was himself a royalist and he felt that they fully deserved their fate. He speaks of them half contemptuously as "persons of low birth and education," and says coldly, that their story as told in the papers which had come into his hands "must give some entertainment to the curious." Yet he is forced to admire their courage and the high sense of honor which held them ready to surrender at a moment's notice and face the horror of a traitor's death, rather than bring suspicion on the friends who sheltered them.

"Mr. Davenport," (the minister in New Haven) he says, "was



threatened with being called to an account for concealing and comforting traitors, and might well be alarmed," but "they had engaged to surrender rather than that the country or any particular persons should suffer on their account, and upon intimation of Mr. Davenport's danger they generously resolved to go to New Haven (from their place of concealment in the woods nearby) and deliver themselves up to the authorities there. The miseries they had suffered and the little chance they had of finally escaping in a country where every stranger is immediately known to be such would not have been sufficient to have induced them." Such an attitude could not fail to appeal to an honorable and courageous man like Governor Hutchinson. More than this, it is clear that the tragedy of Goffe's position—its pity and its terror—laid bare before him by the simple entries in his journal, touched him and moved him in spite of himself.

Of the letters he says, "there is too much religion in them for the taste of our day," and no later reader is likely to dispute his judgment. Many of them, those which Goffe received as well as those which he wrote, read like pages of the Book of Revelations, for the writers believed they were living in the last days, and revelled in prophecy and symbol. Yet these old letters, quaint and forbidding as they are, repay the effort of reading them, for they are full of other things too, of faithfulness and friendship and family affection. They show the simplicity of Goffe's character and his quiet strength and, gradually, as we make our long way through them, we come to believe that there must have been something loveable about him, something quite different from the stern severity associated with his memory as a regicide judge, to call out so much affection as he received. We learn of friends who never forgot and never failed him. One of these, Peter Tilton of Hadley, writes to him, "Yours of March 18, I received, crying how welcome and refreshing to my poor unworthy self, (which as an honeycomb, to use your own similitude, full of precious sweetness.)" William Hooke, his wife's uncle, begins a letter to him, "My beloved friend," and closes, "Yours, to love you to the last." These are samples.

His wife's devotion to him was unfaltering through years of separation. Her character as it comes out in her letters is very winning. Even Hutchinson says, "A letter from Goffe's wife, who was Whalley's daughter, I think worth preserving," and he gives it in full. She is "a poor scribe," as she admits herself. She could not



## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

spell and even in days before spelling had been exalted to its present lofty place as a criterion of education and social position, she could never have passed muster. But her letters show such true womanly qualities, such good common sense and deep affection, that one cannot help loving her and feeling that Goffe was fortunate in his choice of a wife. The letter to which Hutchinson especially refers was written in the early years of her husband's exile:

My dearest Hart, (and she spells it Hart,) I have been exceedingly refreshed with your choice and precious letter of the 29th May 1662. Those scriptures you mention, through mercy, with many others, are a great support and comfort to me in this day of my great affliction. Through grace I do experience the Lord's presence in supporting and providing for me and mine in this evil day. The preservation of yourself and my dear father, next to the light of his own countenance, is the choicest mercy that I enjoy. For, to hear of your welfare gives, as it were, a new life to me. Ah, what am I, poor worm, that the great God of heaven and earth should continue such mercys to me and mine as I at this day enjoy. Many others have lost their dear yoke-fellows, and out of all hope to see them in this life; but that is not my condition as yet, blessed be his holy name, for he hath made me hope in his word 10 Zech. 9. "And I will sow them among the people, and they shall remember me in far countries and they shall live with their children and turne again." . . . Oh my heart, I do, with my whole soul, bless the Lord for his unspeakable goodness to you and your dear friend, in that he hath been pleased to appear so eminently for your preservation. . . . Oh, my dear, let us henceforth make the Lord our refuge and our trust and then he shall cover thee with his feathers and be a sanctuary to thee wheresoever he shall cast thee. I shall now give you an account of your family as far as I dare. Through mercy, I and your little ones are reasonable health, only Betty and Nan are weakly and I fear will be lame a little, the others are very lusty. I am yet with my aunt, but how soon she may be forced to give up housekeeping I know not (for she is warned in to the bishops court) and we shall be dispersed; but I hope the Lord will provide for us, as he hath done hitherto. Oh my dear let our trust be in the Lord alone. I do heartily wish myself with thee, but that I fear it may be a means to discover thee as it was to ——— and therefore I shall forbear attempting any such thing for the present hoping that the Lord will, in his own time, return thee to us again; for he hath the hearts of all in his hands and can change them in a moment. I rejoice to hear that you are so willing to be at the Lord's disposal . . . let us comfort ourselves with this, though we should never meet in this world again, yet I hope through grace, we shall meet in





## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

heaven . . . and it will not be in the power of men to part us. My dear, I know you are confident of my affection, yet give me leave to tell thee, thou art as dear to me as a husband can be to a wife, and if I knew anything that I could do to make you happy, I should do it, if the Lord would permit, though to the loss of my life. As for news, I shall forbear writing of any, for I know not much, and you may hear it from better hands. . . . My dear, my aunt and many others are very kind to me, so that, through mercy, I have no want of food and raiment, though in a mean way. The Lord is pleased to suit my mind to my condition, and to give me strength, in some measure, to take pains with my children, which I look upon as a great mercy. I know not whether I may ever have another opportunity to send to you this season or no, which makes me the longer now; for I shall not send but by those I judge to be faithful, and I, being in the country, I may not hear of every opportunity; and although it is an unspeakable comfort to me to hear of thy welfare, yet I earnestly beg of thee not to send too often, for fear of the worst; for they are very vigilant here to find out persons. But this is my comfort, it is not in the power of men to act their own will. And now, my dear, with 1000 tears, I take my leave of thee, and recommend thee to the great keeper of Israel . . . who, I hope, will keep thee and my dear friend with thee from all your enemies . . . and in his own time return you with safety to your family. Which is the daily prayer of thy affectionate and obedient wife.

Many friends here desire to be remembered to you. It will not be convenient to name them. Frederick, and the rest of thy dear babes that can speak, present their humble duty to thee, talk much of thee and long to see thee.

My humble duty to my dear father, and tell him I pray for him with my whole heart; but I am so bad a scribe I dare not write to him. Pray be private and careful whom you trust.

This letter is written in her own character as his wife, but to avoid suspicion they were soon obliged to correspond as mother and son and to use assumed names—Frances Goldsmith, Walter Goldsmith. Her later letters are full of solicitude for his comfort. She says:

Dear Child, how greatly do I long to see thee. . . . Pray, child, be careful of yourself and friend and if you want a periwig to keep you warm, let me know it and I will send you one. . . . Pray want for nothing that may be good for you, for my happiness is bound up in your well-being. . . . Surely tobacco is very good for your friend, but by the next I hope to send some particular direction for I purpose to ask advice of an old friend, (which is a good proof that she was a wise woman in her day and generation). If you be good lads, (she continues, addressing these two grave, regi-



## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

eide judges, her husband and her father, in a pathetic attempt to hide their identity) if you be good lads and will send word what you want, there will be care taken to supply you. We are fain to be thrifty, and therefore I shall forbear sending till I hear what it is you want, but if in anything I can serve you, pray command me, for I shall do it to the utmost of my power, if the Lord permit. . . . The going of the ships are very uncertain and therefore I know not whether I may write any more this year or not, but I shall not cease to pray for you and all the people of the Lord with you, especially for those that show kindness to you.

She has already suggested a periwig in an earlier letter, and in a reply from Goffe written this same year (1672) and beginning "Dear and honored Mother," after several pages devoted chiefly to religion, he says:

I humbly thank you for your motherly affection towards me, most unworthy thereof, and in particular for your care to fence me against the cold air; but the way you propose will not do it, for I must tell you the air of this country in the winter is exceeding piercing that a sickly person must not dare to venture out of doors though never so well clothed except the Lord be pleased to make the climate a little more temperate, which also he is able to do. . . . All the things sent by Fairweather are come to hand. Besides what was written in a little paper by your own sweet hand, we have received six pair of gloves and forty shillings in silver not mentioned in any letter or paper that is come to us . . . the Lord is pleased to send in supplies for the carrying on of a little trade here among the Indians . . . the present stock in New England money (between my partner and myself) is somewhat above 100 lbs. all debts paid. . . . We hear there is another ship from England come into Boston but cannot hear from any good hand what intelligence they bring with them. . . . My dear Mother, I once again beg the continuance of your prayers, for I have great need for them. I know you cannot forget me, day nor night, if I may conclude from the workings of my own thoughts, affections and desires toward yourself . . . and the motherly affection you have hitherto shewed an unworthy child that hath caused you so much sorrow.

The picture of Hadley in the letter is dark and gloomy. This small settlement was then the outlying post on the edge of the wilderness that was its poor security for the hunted men. Beyond it was the unknown—threatening, overhanging. The story is set on the wide river meadows against a background of forests; not the



## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

historic forests of England, linked through centuries with the lives of men, holding, in their deepest recesses, echoes of human voices, but woods, thick and sombre, full of mystery, and still with the stillness of the beginning of the world. The sun has forgotten to shine and, as the slow years pass, insensibly the exiles' hope of release grows weaker. We can trace its gradual fading in the letters. Yet they were unwilling, as Hutchinson says, "to give up all hopes of deliverance." A few vivid sentences in the Governor's history give us an impression of the lost pages of Goffe's diary and show the terror of their life in Hadley, its bareness and its utter loneliness, in spite of the efforts of friends by means of letters and long copies of letters and papers to keep them in touch with the religious and political life of the world they had left. Continuing he says, "Their diary for six or seven years contains every little occurrence in the town, church and particular families in the neighborhood. These were small affairs, and they had . . . for a few years of their lives been among the principal actors in the great affairs of the nation; Goffe, especially, who turned the members of the little parliament out of the house, and who was attached to Oliver and to Richard to the last." To one who visits Hadley with their story and its strange contrasts in mind, the shadows of these "poor exile strangers," as they once described themselves, still fall across the wide, grassy streets and deserted spaces of the silent town.

But if life had stopped for them, for those they loved in England it moved rapidly. Goffe hears that one of his daughters is dead and another married, and, finally, that his wife is forced to leave the home where she had found refuge and to seek another. "I shall long to hear where you settle," he writes her. In the same letter he tells her of her father's failing health.

Your old friend, Mr. R., is yet living but continues in that weak condition of which I have formerly given you account, and have not now much to add. He is scarce capable of any rational discourse, his understanding, memory and speech doth so much fail him, and seems not to take much notice of anything that is either done or said, but patiently bears all things and never complains of anything . . . indeed he scarce speaks any thing but in answer to questions . . . the common and very frequent question is to know how he doth and his answer for the most part is 'very well I praise God,' which he utters with a very low and weak voice. . . . When he wants anything he cannot well speak for it because he for-





## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

gets the name of it, and sometimes his eye or his finger is oftentimes a better interpreter of his mind than his tongue . . . and its a great mercy to him that he hath a friend that takes pleasure in being helpful to him and I bless the Lord that gives me such a good measure of health and strength and an opportunity to use it in so good and necessary a work; for tho' my help be but poor and weak, yet that ancient servant of Christ could not well subsist without it and I do believe, as you are pleased to say very well, that I do enjoy the more health for his sake. I have sometimes wondered much at this dispensation of the Lord toward him. . . .

Thus far I proceeded yesterday, (the letter continues) but night coming on and having something else to do, I could proceed no further and so laid aside my paper intending, this morning, to finish (if the Lord pleased) my answer to yours of the 29 March. But now my first work must be to tell you that, through the great goodness of God, I did also last night after supper receive your welcome letter of the 8 May, (the birthday, as he stops to notice, of one of his daughters) wherein you let me know that you have received mine of October last, . . . which is a great satisfaction to me, for which I desire to bless the Lord. . . . I humbly thank you for your motherly love and care for me, in your being so desirous to supply my wants; and because you are pleased to lay your commands upon me, I shall make bold, when I need your help in that kind, to write to you for it. There is yet a little meal in the barrel and oil in the craise. The greatest thing I need is a heart to abide patiently in this condition until it be expended. . . . I bless the Lord, though I cannot deny but I feel, with you, the decays of nature, yet I have and do enjoy a competent measure of health and strength, and beg your pardon if I have been too slow in acquainting you with and giving you the comfort of it . . . I cannot but account it a great mercy that in these hard times you should be able to be so helpful to your poor children; but I beseech you let not your love to them make you to forget yourself in parting with that is necessary for your comfort in your old age. . . . My dear mother, let me entreat you to rejoice in the Lord alway, and again I say rejoice; and I beseech you to remember that weak eyes are made weaker by too much weeping. Pray do not hurt yourself thereby. But alas, I see my paper is almost done and I must reserve yet a little room for a postscript . . . and therefore I am forced here to break off abruptly and with my most affectionate remembrances to all friends as if I named them. . . . I recommend you . . . to the tender watchful care of Him . . . who will be our God and guide unto death. I am, dear Mother, Your most affectionate and dutiful son, Walter Goldsmith. (Extracts from the letter).

Then follows a long postscript, which was no doubt intended for





her alone, while the rest of the letter might be passed around among friends according to custom. Yet it is not only in his letters to his family that this Puritan soldier indulged in the so-called feminine luxury of postscripts, the same is true of his official correspondence. If we would be sure of the matter nearest to his heart at the moment of writing, we must read his postscripts. Here is the one in this letter to his wife:

P. S.—Now my dear mother, give me leave in a postscript to be a little merry with you, and yet serious too. There is one word in one of your letters that sounds so harshly and looks so untowardly that I cannot well tell how to read or look upon it and I know not how to write it, and yet I must, though I cross it out again. I suppose you do by this time sufficiently wonder what will follow, but the matter is this; after you had given me a loving account of a business wherein you have done your best, you were pleased to say that if I should be angry, you had many to bear with you, etc. Oh my dear Mother, how could you fear such a thing from me? Yourself knoweth I never yet spake an angry word to you, nay I hope I may say (without taking the name of God in vain) the Lord knoweth I never conceived an angry thought towards you, nor do I now, nor I hope never shall, and in so saying I do not commend myself, for you never gave me the least cause, neither have you now, and I believe never will; therefore, dear mother, the whole praise belongs to yourself, or rather to the Lord who, blessed be His name, hath so united our hearts together in love that it is a thing scarce possible to be angry with one another. But I shall now conclude with a request that you will not be angry with yourself for writing that word I have spoken so much against, for I suppose all your meaning was if I should not altogether approve of what was done, etc., and I am abundantly satisfied that the root from which that fear sprung was tender love, and that you speak your heart when you say you love and honor me as much as ever, which may well increase my longings after you for the exceeding grace of God in you. Now thanks be unto God for His unspeakable gift. (This letter was written after a separation of fourteen years).

A little later, Goffe, in his far exile, was left still more lonely by the death of Whalley. After this he seems to have left Hadley and to have made his way to Hartford with the help of Captain Samuel Nowell, who was chaplain to the troops sent into the Connecticut valley to protect the settlements there during King Philip's War (1675-6). Possibly it was the quartering of some of these troops in Hadley itself which made that place unsafe for him. In Hartford he found a refuge in the house of Captain Thomas Bull, but he appears



to have been even more of a prisoner there than in Hadley. "I find it very difficult to attain any solid intelligence of what is done abroad," he writes from Hartford, and he speaks of his "close call," and of being "separated almost from all human society." "Dear Sir, you know my trials are considerable," he says in one pathetic letter to a friend, "and did you know my weakness you would surely pity and pray earnestly for me, even as I am persuaded you do; but I pray you do it yet more and more."

Perhaps the greatest of these trials to which he refers was that, by reason of his own removal from Hadley and his wife's change of residence in England, he had lost touch with his family, and was without any news of them. "I shall long to know where you settle," he had written her but no reply had ever come. He had been in the habit of sending and receiving letters through Increase Mather, minister in Boston, and again and again in these last years he writes to Mather pleading for news of his dear ones and begging to be put once more in communication with them. He writes:

I am forced to send my letters to my mother with a naked superscription, because I am ignorant both of the place and person appointed, since Mr. Hooke's death, to direct them to. I beseech you, sir, to use your prudence in the safe conveyance of them, for though my letters be of little worth, yet my dear mother is pleased to esteem them a comfort to her in this day of her great and long continued affliction. . . . I should take it as a great kindness to receive a word or two from you. . . . It would be a great satisfaction to hear that you have received my letters and that you know the way of sending them to England and to be instructed by you how to direct them for the future. . . . I am greatly longing to hear from my poor desolate relations and whether my last summer's letters got safe to them. It was a trouble to me that I was forced to send them to yourself so barely directed, and hoped to have received a few lines from you concerning it, and how you would have me direct them for the future. I beseech you, sir, to pardon my giving you this great and long trouble . . . and let me receive a word or two from you by this bearer. If I have missed it in anything, upon the least intimation I shall endeavor to rectify it, or reform for the future. Dear sir, I earnestly beg the continuance of your fervent prayers to the Lord for me and mine, as such stand in great need thereof. . . . *Postscript:* I sent you three letters last summer and hope you received them.

There is no answer to these letters and we do not know why Mather found it impossible to reply or whether, indeed, Goffe ever



heard again from his wife and children. The mystery which has hung over the story from the beginning grows thick toward its close, and we see only the clouds that shadow the end, and are left with these pitiful pleadings in our ears. But one clear light shines out through the darkness, and it comes from the brave spirit with which Goffe, in his great loneliness, met each new blow of fate. In these same letters to Mather he says: "I beseech you, sir, not to interpret any expression in my letters as if I complained of God's dealings with me, for I am abundantly satisfied that He hath done all things well. Not any one ingredient which my tender-hearted and wise father hath put into my cup could have been spared. . . . The great thing I aim at is, that I may be more like the Lord Jesus . . . that I may live upon Him alone and think it a good living too, and I hope the Lord's purpose is to teach me that lesson by bringing and keeping me into this desolate state."

It is a comfort to know that in this desolate state, Goffe's faithful friends stood by him. Peter Tilton, in Hadley, wrote to him in July, 1679, sending money, "it being a token," he tells him, "of the love and remembrance of several friends who have you upon their hearts.

. . . Dear Sir," he adds, "I hope God is making way for your enlargement. . . . Remember before the Lord your unworthy friend, willing to serve you. Vale, vale,"—Farewell, farewell.

This is the last known word to or from the exile whose fate is so dimly outlined against the background of the wilderness in our earliest New England days, and pity for him makes its appeal, whether or not we share his political faith or approve the lengths to which it drove him. In his own day, friends who welcomed him on his arrival in America and showed him much kindness at first, came to believe later that "the action for which he suffered was never justifiable." We may agree with them, we may differ from him, but when we come to the heart of his story and see behind the traditions which have grown over it the man as he reveals himself in his own letters, we stand before him in silence and respect, not merely because of the tragedy—the dignity of disaster nobly borne—but because of his conscious rectitude of purpose, his uprightness of soul. He knew no fear and no regret. He may have had no brilliant gifts but he was capable of forming his own stern determination of the right and of holding to it to the bitter end. His was a very simple character, soldierly and sincere. He was uncompromising to evil as he



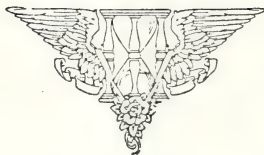


## LETTERS OF A NEW ENGLAND EXILE

saw it, loyal to his friends, and able to win from some of them their lasting love. Deeper than all else was his patient trust in God and a rare and touching humbleness of heart.

### REFERENCES

- I. Hutchinson, Thomas, *History of Massachusetts*, Salem and Boston, 1795.
- II. Hutchinson, Thomas, *A Collection of Original Papers relating to the History of Massachusetts Bay*, Boston, 1767.
- III. The Mather Papers, in *Massachusetts Historical Collections*, 4th Series, vol. VIII, also 3rd Series, vol. I.
- IV. Dexter, F. B. Memoranda concerning Edward Whalley and William Goffe in *Papers of the New Haven Colony Historical Society*, vol. 2.
- V. Thurloe, John. *A Collection of the State Papers of John Thurloe*, London, 1742.
- VI. Stiles, Ezra. *A History of Three of the Judges of King Charles First*, Hartford, 1794.
- VII. Goffe's Diary, in *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, 1863-4.









# Historic Ships

BY MARY LLOYD, PHILADELPHIA, PENN.

"O navis, referent in mare te novi Fluctus?  
O quid agis? Fortiter occupa  
Portum."—*Horace, Ode XIV.*



HE line is a long one. Not to speak of that ship famous in Greek legend, in which the Argonauts set out in quest of the Golden Fleece, there is Noah's Ark, of Bible story; and then, in thought taking a long leap forward into modern and recent times, there is the *Revenge*, with its record of chivalrous and almost incredible valour; the *Royal George*, the *Alabama*, the *Cumberland*, the *Kearsage*, the *Virginius*, the *Camperdown* and *Victoria*; and, lastly, the two whose tragic fate is so keenly fresh in the minds of all. But the plan of this paper forbids more than the bare mention of these, as it has to do with those ships connected with the discovery and early settlement of the North American continent.

A chance allusion, a stray snatch of song, a quotation striking in itself, but having no peculiar appropriateness in the connection where cited, will haunt the memory for years, and by some subtle association of ideas suggest times, events, places, which but for them would have vanished into utter forgetfulness. An imaginative girl in her school history came upon the name of Sir Humphrey Gilbert, with but the bare mention of his going down with all on board his ship in mid-Atlantic, that fine saying on his lips, "We are as near to heaven by sea as by land." The thought of this incident haunted her with a sort of subtle, reminiscent charm she could not away with. She lived in an inland town away from the great libraries and historical societies, where she could have consulted for herself "original authorities" so much made of in these days, or Hakluyt's "Voyages," or "Purchas, His Pilgrims." She asked her teachers, but they were no wiser than herself, and possibly they may have thought such questions trifling. A little further on in her history book, she read that slaves were first brought to America in



## HISTORIC SHIPS

1619, but there was no mention of the name of the ship that brought them, and still her wonder grew. Nor was her wonder or her curiosity in any wise abated for years as to the names of those memorable ships in the Boston Tea Party of 1773.

Not everything can be set down in the school histories. All the delightful little stories which serve as broideries and fringes to the tissue of main facts—which indeed serve to keep main facts together in our minds—must be left out for lack of time. Were those dear gossiping old chroniclers, Froissart and Pepys, to return to earth today—*revenants*—they would hardly find listeners, so crowded with facts is life nowadays, so hard pressed with things to do and to learn. Nevertheless we would give not a little to know something more definite of that hardy band of Norsemen who pushed so bravely forth on their adventurous voyage to these shores just nine hundred years ago. What was the name of their little craft, and what were the perils that beset them on that strange, unknown, untried ocean? Strange portents in sea and sky were what their imaginations brooded upon, no doubt. To the yawning gulf of waters that in reality encompassed them on every side, were added those grotesque and gigantic monsters conjured up by their fears as they caught momentary glimpses of strange shapes in sea and air. The glowing fiery clouds in the vast distance seemed to them the “flaming ramparts of the world,” while at other times the piles of mist along the horizon took the shape of battlemented cities luring them ever on.

From the journal of Columbus we know that such were the visions that met the astonished gaze of that band of seamen who set sail from Palos nearly five hundred years later, and which, working on the superstitious fears of a less brave and hardy race, proved so nearly disastrous to the enterprise. The improved seamanship of that time,—the result of knowledge and experience gained in the unwonted activity in marine discovery and the extension of commerce in the century preceding,—availed not to quiet the fears of the superstitious sailors as day by day increased the number of leagues of water that lay between them and the shores of Europe. It had needed all the authority of the royal rescript to enable the Admiral to equip his small squadron for the expedition. Twice before the Canaries were reached, had the rudder of the *Pinta* given way under circumstances that strongly pointed to the guilt of her





commander, Martin Alonzo Pinzon, who bitterly rued the agreement made with Columbus, and plotted so soon to get back into safe harbour again. The disorderly conduct of the crews was in large measure incited and encouraged by the self-seeking mutinous disposition of this man. When at last, however, the sorely baffled spirit of Columbus, his infinite tact and patience, were rewarded by that joyful cry which rang out from on board the *Pinta*, "Land ho!" how was the face of the world transformed! The old order was changed, giving place to new. How little could any foresee the mighty results which were to come about—the migration of peoples, the nations to be born, the new impulse to energies, the new hopes for mankind—all from the advent of three frail barks upon the shores of what proved, beyond the wildest hopes of the dreamer and enthusiast, a new world. Here was a *Pou Sto* for the enactment of a new drama in the history of man.

It does not detract from the magnitude of Columbus's undertaking that to Juan Caboto, probably another born Genoese, belongs the honor of first touching the main land of America. After Columbus had shown the way, others could follow in the same path; or, to apply his own illustration, all the wise doctors could set the egg on end after he had shown them how. But there was something "in the air" in those days. A spirit of unrest, of adventure, possessed the minds of men. It was the time of awakening after a long night of the Middle Ages; the beginning of that remarkable movement, the Renaissance, which according to Michelet's well-known aphorism, was the discovery of the world and of man, "*La decouverte du monde, la decouverte de l' homme.*"

The meager amount of information that we possess with regard to the expedition of John Cabot is tantalizing. We do know, however, that he set sail from Bristol early in May, 1497, under the patronage of Henry VII. His good ship *Matthew* was a stanch little vessel of fifty tons burthen, manned by a crew of sixteen. Sebastian, the son of John Cabot, has proved to be, as Mr. Charles Deane calls him, "the sphinx of North America for over three hundred years." To him have been attributed many of the voyages and expeditions of the father, and so honour rightfully belonging to the elder has been assigned to the younger. In the patent granted to John Cabot by the king, the three "sonneys" are explicitly named, the other two being Lewes and Sancto.



Cabot landed most probably on the shores of what is now known as Labrador—then what was thought to be the territory of the Great Cham,—on St. John Baptist's Day, June 24th, 1497. This being the first land discovered, it was named *Prima Terra Vista*, and to a large island lying near he gave the name of St. John. This is now known as Prince Edwards Island. No settlement was made, and the expedition returned to Bristol by the end of July. The voyage must have been a quick one, with no untoward accidents or adverse gales. Cabot rode upon the full tide of public favor. He was clad in silk attire; was called the "Admiral;" his name was in everyone's mouth, and men stopped to look after him in the street, and well they might. An "ytem" in the disbursement of the penurious monarch Henry VII. is jotted down as "To hym that found the New Isle, the summe of 10£." It is well to remember, however, that money was much more valuable in those days than now, its purchasing power being vastly greater.

One of the most picturesque characters of that most picturesque age, "the spacious times of great Elizabeth," was Sir Francis Drake. His whole life was crowded with a series of bold and dashing adventures, from the time he is first heard of in command of the *Judith*, in the third expedition made by his kinsman, Sir John Hawkins, to the coast of Guinea in quest of slaves, down to the day when he died on board his ship *Defiance*, off Puerto Bello. A fitting close to such a career was the burial of his body in a leaden casket in the deep seas over whose waters he had so proudly sailed. Yet there are some who have wished that some day the remains of the great seaman might find sepulture in the great Abbey where rest so many of English dead.

It is with Drake's ship, the *Pelican*, that we are now specially concerned,—that ship in which the intrepid sailor made the voyage around the world, the first Englishman to accomplish the feat. Indeed, though Magellan's *Victoria* had made the circuit of the earth, her brave commander did not live to complete the voyage with her. Drake had in the year 1573, sparkling in sunlight, beheld the glorious expanse of the waters of the Pacific, from the isthmus of Darien, presumably not far from the spot whence Balboa had obtained a like inspiring view. He had ascended a tree by steps cut in the bark for that purpose. He was so moved by the sight that he



breathed a prayer that God in His goodness "would give him life and leave to sail once in an English ship in that sea." In pursuance then, of this plan, a brave array of ships sailed forth on December 13th, 1577, from Plymouth, Drake commanding the little fleet, which consisted of his own flagship, the *Pelican*, the *Elizabeth*, *Swan*, *Marigold* and *Christopher*. The *Pelican* carried one hundred guns, and the men all told numbered one hundred and sixty-six. The *Pelican*, alone of the five that set out, returned to port at Plymouth on the 20th of September, 1580. The *Swan* and *Christopher* were condemned as unseaworthy and broken up for firewood after the passage through the Straits of Magellan. The others, before this, had either been lost or had deserted.

Many rich prizes were captured by Drake, sailing on this voyage. Spanish galleons returning home heavily laden with gold, silver, gems, rich stuffs, and other precious booty, were quickly lightened of their burden. In this and other cruises upon the Spanish main, Drake filled the Spaniards with a terror of his name. He dwelt with grim pleasantry and some complacency upon the name they bestowed upon him—Draco, the Dragon, comparing it with the name which was his by inheritance. The Spaniards must have felt that there was justice in his reprisals upon them for their cruelty and treachery to Englishmen in general, and to him and his companions in particular at San Juan d'Ullua. During the descent of the Armada upon English coasts in 1588, Drake as a vice-admiral commanded a part of the English fleet, and into his hands fell a large Spanish galleon, whose commander, Don Pedro de Valdez, struck his colors at once upon learning the name of his adversary.

The *Pelican* was fitted out with great state and splendor for this voyage in strange seas, to comport with the dignity of her commander, to throw lustre upon the expedition, and to impress with its magnificence the wild races whose lands might be visited. Rich hangings and other furniture, musical instruments, rare perfumes, had been contributed by the Queen, vessels of solid silver supplied the table of the Admiral, and even some of the cooking utensils were of the same precious metal.

After various difficulties from the watchful jealousy of the Spanish ships, dissensions and insubordination on board some of the vessels of his fleet, Drake proceeded on the voyage in his own ship alone, after passing through the Straits of Magellan. The name of his





## HISTORIC SHIPS

ship, the *Pelican*, was now changed to the *Golden Hind*, in compliment to his court patron, Sir Christopher Hatton, whose crest was a golden hind. Sailing west along the western coast of the continent, he discovered different points of the shore of what is now Oregon and California, to which he gave the name of New Albion, from a resemblance which he fancied he saw to the white cliffs of England. They anchored in a "fair and good bay," and Mr. Edward Everett Hale hesitates not to say that he is of the opinion that San Francisco Bay rightfully owes its name to Sir Francis Drake and not to St. Francis of Assisi.

The narrative of the ship's chaplain, Fletcher, gives an animated account of the simple-hearted natives, gentle and affectionate in manner, bringing their gifts to the strangers, joining in their worship with reverential looks and cries of joy, and evincing the greatest sorrow at their departure. It was at this time, on the first Sunday after Trinity, June 21, 1579, that the savages of the western part of the United States first heard the church's words of prayer and praise. To commemorate this event and to mark the spot where Sir Francis Drake landed near San Francisco Bay, a handsome memorial called the Prayer Book Cross was erected in 1893 by the late Mr. George W. Childs, of Philadelphia.

The honest Fletcher relates with great naivete, "there is no part of earth here to be taken wherein there is not some special likelihood of gold or silver." That his visit to the country should be marked by some visible token, Drake caused a post to be erected bearing a plate of brass, whereon were engraved the date of his landing, the gift of the country by the people, the name of his Queen, and in it was inserted a silver sixpence, as bearing her Majesty's portrait and arms. The description of the trees without leaves, and the "ground without greenness," in the summer months of June and July, has been much questioned, especially if the ship was in the latitude indicated. The ropes of the ship's rigging, stiff with ice, could have furnished suggestions to Coleridge for his "Ancient Mariner."

At last, after an absence of nearly three years, the bold navigator made his way home into port, 1580, at Plymouth, 26th of September; having come back by way of the Cape of Good Hope, after sailing across the Pacific. In April, 1581, Drake was with his ship at Deptford. Here Queen Elizabeth visited him on board ship, par-



took of a banquet, and conferred upon her faithful and loyal servant the honor of knighthood. But this is not the end. After serving for nearly a century as a place of entertainment and holiday resort at Deptford, the famous ship, or what was left of her decaying timbers, was made into a chair and presented by Charles II. to the Bodleian Library at Oxford, where visitors may see it today, and wherein, as it is said, the poet Cowley wrote his most famous poems. There is nothing at all preposterous excepting from an artistic point of view, in the idea of placing the old ship upon the steeple of St. Paul's, as was actually proposed by one affectionate admirer.

More allied in spirit to the gentler nature of Sir Philip Sidney was Sir Humphrey Gilbert, than to such stirring, impetuous ones as Sir John Hawkins, Francis Drake, or even his half-brother, Sir Walter Raleigh. One more fitted for the "still air of delightful studies" than to quell an insurrection of wild Irishmen, or to fight Spanish dragoons in the Low Countries, he seems to be one of those choice spirits whom Milton had in mind when he wrote, "enflamed with the study of learning and the admiration of virtue, stirred up with high hopes of living to be brave men and worthy patriots, dear to God and famous to all ages." Sir Humphrey, not content with drawing up a system or scheme of education for Queen Elizabeth's Academy, or writing a dissertation upon the feasibility of the North-west Passage to Cathay, was moved by his patriotism and the hope, perhaps, of being "famous to all ages," to lead in person an expedition having for its object the planting of a colony on the island of Newfoundland. Five ships, the *Delight*, the *Raleigh*, the *Swallow*, the *Golden Hind* and the *Squirrel*, set out from England in the summer of 1583. A landing was made at St. John's on Monday, August 5th, and Sir Humphrey took possession of the land for Queen Elizabeth. Thus was planted the first English colony in North America. The undertaking was not an auspicious one. The *Raleigh* had returned to Plymouth before proceeding far on the voyage, and now of those who formed the colony in Newfoundland, many were dissaffected. Some were sent back to England in the *Swallow*, and Sir Humphrey and the rest set sail in what was left of his fleet to make explorations to the southward. Sir Humphrey's fancy had been kindled by the glowing descriptions of that fabled city of romance, Norumbega. Visions of stately palaces whose



## HISTORIC SHIPS

towers and pillars were of crystal and silver, whose streets were paved with precious substances, floated before the imagination of the men of that day. Parmenius, a learned Hungarian, had joined the expedition of Sir Humphrey, "minding," as Hayes, the commander of the *Golden Hind* and the historiographer of the voyage, puts it, "to record in the Latin tongue the gestes and things worthy of remembrance in this discoverie." But alas! the *Delight*, in which he embarked, struck aground, and he perished among others who were lost, and

"Norumbega proved again  
A shadow and a dream."

After this disaster, Sir Humphrey directed the course of his vessels towards England, intending to return in the spring. He was on board the *Squirrel*, the smaller and worse fitted of the two vessels that now remained, not willing to adventure the lives of others on a bark in which he would not risk his own. The autumnal gales now impeded the course of the vessels, and after sighting Cape Race on September 2nd, Sir Humphrey paid a visit to the *Golden Hind*, and was entreated by his friends on board that vessel not to return to the *Squirrel*, but to abandon it to the winds and the waves. He had his own reasons for disregarding their affectionate entreaties, and once more went on board the ill-fated *Squirrel*. Then all sight of him was lost for several days, until about two o'clock in the afternoon of Monday, the 9th of September, when his frail ship emerged from the storm encountered south of the Azores. Gilbert was seen sitting abaft, with a book in his hands. When he came within speaking distance of those on the *Golden Hind*, he called out cheerfully "We are as near to heaven by sea as by land." Both vessels kept within sight of each other until about midnight of that same day, when the watch on the *Golden Hind* saw the lights of the *Squirrel* suddenly disappear, and he cried out, "the General is cast away!" It was too true; the *Squirrel* had parted amidships, and all on board went down. To quote once more from the narrative of Hayes, remarkable for its sincerity and pathos, "In that moment the Frigat was devoured and swallowed up of the sea." One would think that Mr. Longfellow, with all his fondness for old themes, and such a theme as this, could have made more of it than he has in his poem on Sir Humphrey Gilbert. There are but two lines in the whole poem which redeem it from absolute baldness:











## HISTORIC SHIPS

and made by (1) "Out of the sea mysteriously  
The fleet of Death rose all around."

Those who are wise after the event, can now, after this interval of time, afford to smile at the extravagant ideas concerning America which were prevalent, even among the most intelligent and sober-minded as late as the end of Elizabeth's reign, of that wonderful and fair city whose pillared walls were of "massive silver and some of gold," whose streets were far broader than any street in London," of the existence somewhere in the interior of a strait connecting directly with the South Seas, which afforded easy passage to Cathay, land of spicery, of gold, and gems of rarest beauty. Other strange notions concerning the country may be gleaned from passages in Shakespeare's "Tempest;" while as to the fabulous wealth which was to be had for the mere picking up, reference may be made to "Eastward Ho," a play written by Chapman in collaboration with Marston and Ben Jonson . . . "Gold is more plentiful there than copper is with us; and for diamonds and rubies, they goe forth in Holy dayes and gather them by the seashore to hang in their childrens coates, and stick in their childrens cappes as commonly as our children wear saffren gilt brooches and groates with holes in them."

Full of these notions then in their heads, a company of adventurers,—“gentlemen,” some of them gallants of a sorry sort, laborers, tradesmen, and mechanics,—rode out and down the Thames on December 19th, 1606, from Blackwall, below London, to begin their voyage to this brave new world, where they were to find their fortunes. They went forth under the charter of a company just formed in London under the auspices of some “firm and hearty lovers of colonization,” one of whom was Richard Hakluyt, our friend of the “Voyages,” then prebendary of Westminster. The three ships that sailed so proudly forth with our adventurers on board, with what proved to be the beginning of the first colony of the Old Thirteen, were the *Susan Constant*, of one hundred tons burthen, commanded by Christopher Newport; the *God-Speed* of forty tons, commanded by Bartholomew Gosnold; and the *Discovery*, a pinnace of twenty tons, under Captain John Ratcliffe. Not till the 1st of January, 1607, were they able to sail out on the main ocean, being detained at the Downs by adverse winds; “by unprosperous winds were kept six weeks in sight of England,” is the rec-



## HISTORIC SHIPS

ord made by Captain John Smith. They had a most tempestuous voyage, troublous in more senses than one. Going out of their way, they had touched at the West Indies, and had stood in some danger of being taken for pirates. Then the king, in his usual fatuous, obstinate way, had delivered his instructions concerning the colony in a sealed box to Newport, to be opened only when they had arrived at their destination. As no one had any knowledge of these regulations, but each one hoped for some share in the government of the colony, jealousies and dissensions were the inevitable result. John Smith had given a good deal of offense by his swaggering and braggadocio, and had been clapped into irons.

At last in a furious storm they were driven into Hampton Roads, on the 29th of April. They planted a cross on the point of land to the south, which they called Cape Henry, in honour of the Prince of Wales, and to the opposite point they gave the name of Cape Charles, after his brother. The next day they anchored, and with what feelings of relief after their long tossing upon the ocean may be conjectured from the name which they bestowed upon the spot, Point Comfort. After a time, continuing their way up the bay, and into a large river which they named after King James, they came to a peninsula on the north bank of the river, which seemed to offer them a suitable place for a settlement, and at the same time an anchorage for their vessels, which they tied to the trees. They had followed the course of this noble river for about fifty miles from its mouth, passing through what seemed to be enchanted land. Scenes of most ravishing loveliness met their eyes. Virgin forests stretched indefinitely away from the river banks, while at the foot of the trees bloomed flowers of fairest hues. It was now the 13th of May, and all would have gone merrily on, *if*—but, “much virtue in an *if*”—*if* a different set of rules had been devised for the government of the colony; *if* the colonists themselves had been of other and better stuff. Anarchy and dissension were once more rampant when the names of those who were to compose the council came to be known. Smith, who was named as one of them, was excluded from his seat until the 10th of June following, on account of his mutinous conduct on shipboard. It was ruled, too, that all the product of the colony was to be put into the common stock for five years. But the time was not yet for such altruism. Of the one hundred and five planters who had come out, more than half were



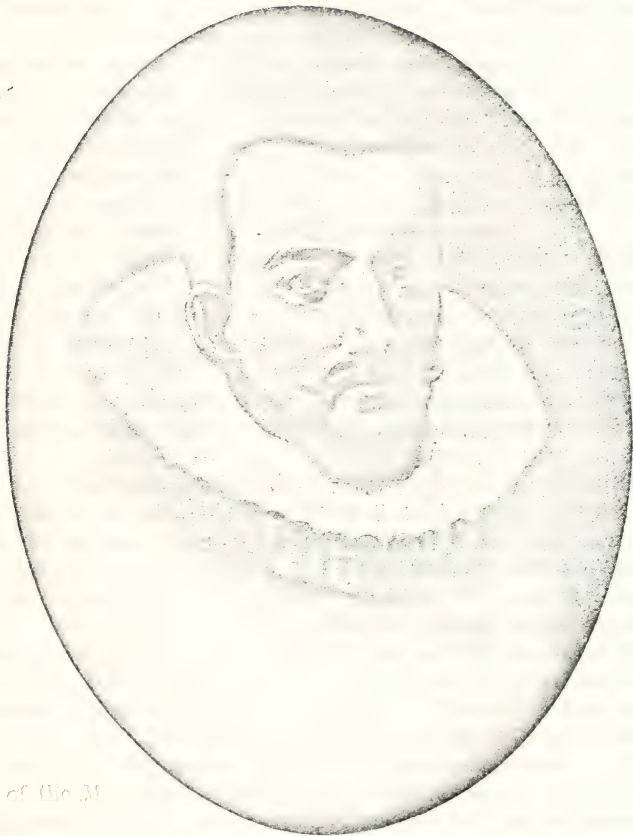
## HISTORIC SHIPS

ord made by Captain John Smith. They had a most tempestuous voyage, troublous in more senses than one. Going out of their way, they had touched at the West Indies, and had stood in some danger of being taken for pirates. Then the king, in his usual fatuous, obstinate way, had delivered his instructions concerning the colony in a sealed box to Newport, to be opened only when they had arrived at their destination. As no one had any knowledge of these regulations, but each one hoped for some share in the government of the colony, jealousies and dissensions were the inevitable result. John Smith had given a good deal of offense by his swaggering and braggadocio, and had been clapped into irons.

At last in a furious storm they were driven into Hampton Roads, on the 29th of April. They planted a cross on the point of land to the south, which they called Cape Henry, in honour of the Prince of Wales, and to the opposite point they gave the name of Cape Charles, after his brother. The next day they anchored, and with what feelings of relief after their long tossing upon the ocean may be conjectured from the name which they bestowed upon the spot, Point Comfort. After a time, continuing their way up the bay, and into a large river which they named after King James, they came to a peninsula on the north bank of the river, which seemed to offer them a suitable place for a settlement, and at the same time an anchorage for their vessels, which they tied to the trees. They had followed the course of this noble river for about fifty miles from its mouth, passing through what seemed to be enchanted land. Scenes of most ravishing loveliness met their eyes. Virgin forests stretched indefinitely away from the river banks, while at the foot of the trees bloomed flowers of fairest hues. It was now the 13th of May, and all would have gone merrily on, *if*—but, “much virtue in an *if*”—*if* a different set of rules had been devised for the government of the colony; *if* the colonists themselves had been of other and better stuff. Anarchy and dissension were once more rampant when the names of those who were to compose the council came to be known. Smith, who was named as one of them, was excluded from his seat until the 10th of June following, on account of his mutinous conduct on shipboard. It was ruled, too, that all the product of the colony was to be put into the common stock for five years. But the time was not yet for such altruism. Of the one hundred and five planters who had come out, more than half were







HENRY HUDSON

An Intrepid English navigator who made trips in 1607 and 1608 seeking an Arctic passage to India, and on the third sailed into the Hudson River. On Jan. 8, 1609, he signed a contract with the Dutch East India Co. to sail the Half Moon (60 tons) to America; started from the Texel, Holland, March 25th, entered The Narrows Sept. 6th, anchored at 42° 40' (Albany) Sept. 19th; sailed for England Oct. 4th. On subsequent voyage his crew mutinied and he was set adrift in Hudson's Bay, June 23, 1611.



## HISTORIC SHIPS

"gentlemen" who had never done a day's work; they could not swing an ax; besides, they had come out in the Merchant Adventurers' ships to pick up nuggets of gold, rubies, diamonds, and such like, not to hew down trees and grub up stumps. The self-assertion, the self-confidence, which had made John Smith so offensive to his fellow-voyagers, together with his courage and energy, his ever-ready ingenuity, his skill in affairs, qualities eminently useful in a new country, were the ones the colonists needed just then, and they stood them in good stead in the trying times that followed. On June 22nd, 1607, Newport sailed for England, taking with him in the *Susan Constant* specimens of the forest woods and mineral products of the new colony named after England's virgin queen.

An entry in a journal set down by one John Rolfe, reads, "About the last of August 1619, came in a Dutch man of warre that sold us twenty negars." Although the Dutch man-of-war did land the "negars," it seems the ship *Treasurer* brought them to this country. (See George W. Williams' "Negro Race in America." Such was the event fraught with dire results for America, one whose far-reaching consequences it is not yet possible to forecast.

Into a little more than four years are crowded the records of the life of a man whose name has been given to a large tract of land, a strait, one of the most magnificent bays, and one of the finest rivers of this western continent. An act of faith characterizes the man in the first existing record of Henry Hudson. He and the men who were to be his fellow-voyagers in the ship *Hopeful* in an expedition bound for the North Pole, assembled in the little church of St. Ethelburge, in Bishopsgate, London, to partake of the sacrament as a necessary preparation for the voyage. They set out on the 19th of April, 1607. The purpose of the voyage was to find a passage to Asia by sailing across the pole, and was undertaken in the interest of the Muscovy Company. A second voyage followed under the patronage of the same company, but was fruitless of results, except to prove that such a passage was impracticable. The Dutch, more eager at that time to extend their commerce than to increase their territorial possessions, learning of Hudson through the fame of these two voyages, engaged him in their service. He sailed early in April, 1609, from the Texel, in the *Haalve Maan*, an awkward, heavy, square-sailed Dutch yacht or galliot, manned with a crew



## HISTORIC SHIPS

of eighteen or twenty, partly Dutch and partly English sailors. He skirted along the shores of Newfoundland, after being driven by stress of weather and floating masses of ice from more northern latitudes, touching points on the coasts of Maine and Massachusetts, going so far south as the entrance to Delaware Bay. Changing his course, he entered what is now New York Harbour on September 4th. He sailed up the river a distance of one hundred and fifty miles, to about the spot where Albany now stands, trading with the Indians, and making on the whole a favorable impression upon them. He was at last convinced of the futility of continuing his search in this direction for the northwest passage to Cathay, and concluded that it would be best to return and report that what he had taken for the entrance to this passage was "the River of the Mountains," the "Great North River of the New Netherlands," to mention some of the many names by which this river was then and afterwards known. Verrazzano had, in his ship *La Delfina* (the *Dauphine*), entered the mouth of this river as far back as 1524.

While Hudson was reaching this conclusion, at most likely the northern limit of his voyage up the river, Champlain, who was sailing in an opposite direction on the smooth waters of the lake since known by his name, was actually at this time only a few miles distant. Most apposite here are the eloquent words of Mr. Berthold Fernow in his monograph on "The Dutch in America," contained in Winsor's "Critical and Narrative History of North America:" "Little did Hudson think while he was navigating the waters named from him, that Champlain, another explorer, had recently been fighting his way up the shores of the lake now bearing his name, and that a century and a half later the great battle for supremacy on this continent between France and England, between the old civilization and the new, would be fiercely waged in those peaceful regions."

On October 4th, a month later than the day he had entered the mouth of the Great North River, Hudson weighed anchor there for his return voyage to the Texel. On November the 7th, the *Half Moon* put in at Dartmouth, where she was seized by the English government on the charge that Hudson had in the service of the Dutch made use of maps and knowledge gained in their service, which he had no right to communicate. She was at last permitted to proceed to Amsterdam, but by this time Hudson had again set out in the employ of the Muscovy Company.



On April 17th, 1610, Hudson, still in quest of the northwest passage, sailed from Gravesend, London, in the *Discovery*, fitted out at the expense of Sir Thomas Smythe, Sir Dudley Digges, and John Wolstenholme. This was a vessel of fifty-five tons, and according to some authorities was the same ship in which Weymouth had made the voyage in 1602, and in the same direction. Hudson passed through the straits now bearing his name, and on August 3rd entered upon the waters of the bay beyond. Here he passed the winter, being frozen in so early as November 10th, and not till June 18th was the good ship able to break through the icy fetters in which she had been so closely locked. On the 24th of the month, when the crew learned that it was the determination of their master to push his explorations still further, a mutiny broke out, in which Juet, the mate, was leader. Hudson was seized, bound, and put into a small boat or shallop, with his son John, a youth of eighteen or twenty, and six others, who were judged by the mutineers as too feeble to aid them. After a short struggle in which four men were killed, the boat was cut adrift, and the helpless men were abandoned to the winds and waves, or doomed to perish by starvation. The mutineers, after many perils and privations, reached the coast of Ireland, and, after the ringleaders had died, the others were allowed to go free, as it was judged they had suffered punishment enough.

In 1612, the *Discovery* was again fitted out, and with the *Resolution* sailed under the command of Sir Thomas Button, to try to discover some trace of the lost explorer and his little company. But the fate of the poor little craft with its freight of precious lives has never been learned, for never more did tidings of it reach the ear of man. Henry Hudson is only one of many instances of the sad irony of fate—of defeated purposes, which, though barren of result to those who wrought, their hearts flushing high with hope, were productive of advantage and profit for those who shared not in the toil, who endured none of the agony of shame and trial and defeat. "Other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours."

While not one of the four voyages of Henry Hudson was successful in its immediate object, the knowledge gained through them proved of great value to other navigators and explorers; for as he had pushed his exploration further than any of his predecessors had done, it was demonstrated through the accounts he left of his voyages that the passage to Asia could not be accomplished through a strait in North America.





## HISTORIC SHIPS

It is not the purpose of this paper to do more than briefly outline in its most salient points the history of such ships as have been connected with events in the discovery or settlement of this country. The voyage of the *Mayflower* has been so often described that it is necessary to say but little of it here. While negotiations were pending for the purchase of the *Mayflower* in England, the *Speedwell* had been procured in Holland to convey the Pilgrims from Leyden. Accordingly, after journeying by canal to Delft-Haven, they embarked in the *Speedwell* and proceeded thence to Southampton, England, where they were awaited by those who were to cross the Atlantic with them. From here the two ships and their companies, numbering one hundred and twenty persons, put out to sea on August 5th, 1620 O. S. They had not gone far before the *Speedwell* sprang a leak, and both vessels returned to port at Dartmouth. After a week's delay, an attempt was made to resume the journey. When about one hundred leagues beyond Land's End, they were obliged a second time to return to port, this time at Plymouth. The *Speedwell*, belying her name, was pronounced unseaworthy, and the *Mayflower*, a stout vessel of one hundred and eighty tons, made preparations to take the voyage alone. Those who felt faint-hearted after so many discouraging mishaps, were weeded out, and one hundred and two passengers embarked on the *Mayflower*. All this shilly-shallying was the result of duplicity on the part of the master and crew of the *Speedwell*, who had repented of their part of the agreement and took this despicable method of dissolving it. By the time the *Mayflower* finally sailed from Plymouth, it was September 6th. An accident to the mast of the *Mayflower* when well out to sea, was one that might have dismayed the stoutest hearts; but happily it was repaired, and the little band of exiles again breathed more freely.

It was on the 9th of November that the wearied voyagers beheld with feelings of joy the low, flat shores of Cape Cod, at that time densely wooded. On the 11th, in the cabin of the *Mayflower*, was signed that remarkable Compact, upon which a great deal of vapid sentiment has been expanded. This document assured the little colony a stable and righteous government, but it was not, as so many think, the sheet-anchor of American liberties. It did not in any wise guarantee civil or religious freedom. The Pilgrims, pious, austere, heroic souls, crossed the ocean to found for themselves and their



## HISTORIC SHIPS

children a state where they could worship God as they liked, without hindrance from any; not to accord the same privilege to others. Small consideration from them for Anne Hutchinson, Roger Williams, Mary Dyer or other sectaries. It must be remembered, however, in justice to the Pilgrims and Puritans of the New England colonies, that the actions of these sectaries were often such as could not be condoned by the civil authorities, being subversive of the public peace.

On account of the lateness of the season and the shoals off Cape Cod, which rendered navigation difficult and dangerous, Mr. Jones, the master of the *Mayflower*, decided to bring her to land soon, instead of going farther south to seek a more genial climate, as had been the original intention. It is not absolutely certain that there was ground for the suspicions raised fifty years later that the captain had been bribed by the Dutch not to bring his vessel any nearer to them, as they did not wish the English for neighbours.

A pretty story has been handed down by tradition to the effect that when the Pilgrims landed on the 11th of December, the honor of first setting foot on Plymouth Rock belongs either to John Alden or Mary Chilton. The pictures seem to have decided the question in favor of the maiden. One death and one birth having taken place on shipboard, the same number of souls that set forth from Plymouth in old England, entered the harbour of Plymouth in the New World. Notwithstanding the terrible privations and hardships of that first winter, not one of the colony went back with the *Mayflower* when she sailed homeward in April, 1621. John Cooke, who died in 1695, was the last male survivor of those who came over in the *Mayflower*. Mary Allerton, who became the wife of Elder Thomas Cushman, lived to 1699, dying at the age of ninety.

The *Fortune*, a ship of fifty-five tons, arrived from London, November 11th, 1621; and the *Ann*, of one hundred and forty tons, and the *Little James* of forty-four tons, arrived in 1623, bringing in additions to the little colony. It has been asserted that the *Mayflower* brought in a cargo of slaves in her next voyage to this country, but McDexter in his chapter on the Plymouth Colony in Winsor's history, says that *Mayflower* was a common name for vessels at that time; that the slave-ship *Mayflower* was a larger vessel, and that the Pilgrim *Mayflower* was in the service of the Massachusetts Colony, ten years later, when Winthrop was governor.



## HISTORIC SHIPS

The *Ark* and the *Dove*—auspicious names, standing for shelter and peace and rest, which, though long delayed, were at last realized in homes in the New World, by that company of men who set sail in these two ships from Cowes in the Isle of Wight, on St. Cecilia's Day, November 22nd, 1633. This, as one writer has remarked, "was an era in the progress of mankind." It had been the intention of George Calvert, the first Lord Baltimore, to found a refuge for Catholics, and for this purpose had obtained a grant of land north of the Potomac, to which Charles I. gave the name of *Terra Maria*, in honour of his queen. In confirming the grant to Cecil, the second Lord Baltimore, who wished to carry out his father's design, Charles reserved to himself one-fifth of all the gold and silver that should be found in the province, and a yearly tribute of two Indian arrows. The expedition was sent out under the command of Leonard, a younger brother of Cecil, who was also to be governor of the province. The voyagers all told numbered about two hundred, gentlemen and labourers. "Twenty gentlemen of good fashion" is how Cecil described them in a letter to a friend. Fathers Andrew White and John Altham, two Jesuit priests, were of the ship's company. Father White's Mss., the "*Relatio Itineris*," furnishes the data for the history of the voyage. They had need of the care of St. Ignatius and all other saints who had been invoked in their behalf at the outset of the journey; for they were sore beset by trials by sea and by land. At first they were in danger from the Turks, who threatened to capture the two ships; but a London merchantman, the *Dragon*, convoyed them for a time and that danger was averted. After this escort had returned to London, they stood greatly in fear of an attack by pirates; and, to add to their distress, the *Dove*, which was not so good a sailer as the *Ark*, was separated from the larger vessel for some weeks, and did not again rejoin it until the Antilles were reached. In the meantime, tempests had tested the worth of both vessels; the billows had rolled over them mountains high. A timely discovery prevented both vessels from putting in at Barbadoes, where mutiny and massacre held high carnage, and where no doubt for the sake of their ships and cargo they would have been murdered.

At last they reached the mouth of Chesapeake Bay, and thankful that they had escaped so many and great dangers, they paid a visit to Governor Harvey, of the Virginia Colony. They then proceeded





## HISTORIC SHIPS

up the bay and into the Potomac, where they first landed on one of a group of islands which they named St. Clement's, known, too, at one time, as Herons Islands, from the large number of these birds which repaired thither. Those that now remain of the group, some of them being washed away, are called Blackstone Islands. From here an exploring party, Leonard Calvert at the head, set out in the *Dove* to seek a suitable place for a settlement. They finally came to an Indian village situated on a high bluff on the bank of a stream which they afterwards named St. Mary's. Most advantageous terms were made with the Indians, who agreed to give up to the white men half the village and half the growing crops for the summer, and at the end of the harvest to leave the place entirely. The *Ark* was sent for; and on the 27th of March, two days after the Feast of the Annunciation of the B. V. Mary, amid the blare of trumpets and salvos of artillery from the ships, the emigrants went ashore to take possession of their new home. The sacrifice of the Mass was celebrated, Leonard Calvert at the head of the procession bearing a large cross hewn from the trunk of a tree. The natives, gentle and simple-hearted, gathered round and regarded the newcomers with admiration. They wondered where grew the tree from which so large a vessel as the *Ark* could be fashioned. The Indian village, Yaocomico, thereafter to be called St. Mary's, and the country for thirty miles was bought from the Indians, and payment made in hatchets, axes, knives, and gaily-colored cloths.

After the ingathering of the harvest, the colony at St. Mary's, finding they had enough and to spare, sent the *Dove* laden with corn to the Massachusetts Colony for the purpose of trading and cultivating relations of amity with that colony, a fact duly noted in Winthrop's history. The same urbane and friendly disposition which prompted this act is still a characteristic of the fair State then founded.

Such was the beginning of a Commonwealth in which from the first, perfect freedom of Christian worship was guaranteed to all comers. The second Lord Baltimore from the outset determined that his province should be "free soil for Christianity." In this he was but carrying out the design of his father, the first Lord Baltimore, who, deeply religious, showed his conscientiousness by resigning his position as Secretary of State to James I. Wishing to provide a refuge for Catholics in Newfoundland, he attempted to estab-



lish there, at a considerable loss of fortune, the colony of Avalon. The *Ark*, a goodly ship of three hundred and fifty tons, had been engaged in this, Lord Baltimore's first colonial undertaking.

On the broad basis of religious toleration and civil rights, the colony in the Province of Maryland grew and prospered; its history under the Baltimores does not present the sad spectacle of internal discord and persecution too frequently witnessed in other colonies. There are those who see in the magnanimous spirit of Lord Baltimore only a shrewd, sagacious policy; who see in him, viewed in the light of an ambiguously worded charter, a sort of Mr. Facing-Both-Ways. Let him go down in history as a generous, far-sighted friend of humanity, whose plans were carried out by his successor in the same liberal spirit they were devised.

What an irrepressible as well as subtle thing is spirit! When checks are imposed upon freedom of thought, when bounds are prescribed for the aspirations of the soul, it is this same spirit that bids a man defy, if not gods and the elements on a lonely peak in Caucasus, then all the terrors of the Inquisition; that bids him seek exile in strange lands in forest wilds, with severance of home ties and all sweet relationships; rather than submit to what he considers the disfranchisement of the mind. It was this impatience with constraint in matters pertaining to civil and religious freedom that led to the "Holy Experiment" of William Penn. It was his wish to plant a colony that might become "the seed of a nation," to quote his own words. Again, in writing to those who were about to cast in their lot with him, he wrote, "You shall be governed by laws of your own making, and live a free . . . people." It will be noted, as Mr. Bancroft has pointed out, how much greater liberty was enjoyed under the government of the Lords Proprietary than under the charter governments. The Puritans in New England, though they had hotly withstood every attempt to encroach upon their rights, were not of such yielding stuff as to concede the same rights to others. Claiming the widest liberty of thought for themselves, they were unwilling to accord the like privilege to others. To say the least, they had a way of making it decidedly uncomfortable for those who were not of the same mind as themselves in matters of religious faith. Mr. Blackstone wittily said, when invited to join the Puritan Colony, that he had left England and fled into



## HISTORIC SHIPS

the wilderness to escape the Lord Bishops; he would hardly now submit to be under the lord brethren.

But the voyage of the Lord Proprietor of Pennsylvania must not be lost sight of. It was his desire to make a visit to the infant colony on the banks of the Schuylkill and Delaware to inquire into their condition more closely, and with parental solicitude make due provision for their future. After arranging his affairs with the most tender and loving concern for his wife, and many a godly admonition for the bringing up of their children contained in that Epistle written at his home in "Worminghurst," he embarked at Deal in the ship *Welcome*, of three hundred tons, Robert Greenaway, captain. He set sail on the 31st of August, 1682. There were one hundred passengers aboard, mostly Quakers from Sussex, Penn's own place of residence. From on board ship, Penn addressed "A salutation to all faithful friends in England," wherein he assured them of his concern in all that related to their temporal and spiritual welfare. The voyage would have been a prosperous one had not the smallpox appeared among the passengers, and decreased their number by one-third. In this trying calamity, Penn commended himself to the affection of all on board by his "godly conversation advantageous to all the people." Robert Pearson, too, endeared himself so much to them by his tender ministrations to the sick and dying, that, when the ship arrived at Upland, Penn gave him the privilege of renaming the town, which he did, calling it Chester, after his native city.

Penn arrived at Newcastle on the Delaware, October 27th, having been greeted with every demonstration of joy by the Dutch, Swedes, and Indians, who appeared on the banks of the river on the way up. Here he exhibited his deeds from the Duke of York, and received possession of the town and country by the inhabitants delivering unto him "turf and twig, water and soyle, of the river Delaware." Penn assured them that whatever rights and privileges should be possessed by the citizens of Pennsylvania should be theirs also. From Newcastle he sailed up the river to enter into the fair province which the Duke of York had granted to him in fee simple as quitclaim for the debt of £1600 due him as the heir and representative of the late Admiral, Sir William Penn. The Duke as feudal lord reserved to himself one-fifth of the gold and silver found in the land, and an annual tribute of two beaver skins. In the charter the province was named "Pennsylvania," and Pennsylvania it re-





mained, notwithstanding the efforts of the Lord Proprietor to have the name of New Wales substituted instead, fearing it might be "looked upon as a vanity" in him.

Here at last was an outlet for Penn's best energies. Here was to be established a government having for its corner-stone liberty of conscience and civil freedom. Penn had for some time been engaged upon a Frame of Government for his colony, in which he had the assistance of Henry Sidney and other philosophic and able statesmen. As soon then as Penn had again landed from the *Welcome*, this time in his own city of Philadelphia, which he wished to be forever "a greene country towne," where plots of ground were marked out for the settlers, he began to make immediate provision for the enactment of such laws as should insure indeed "a free colony for all mankind;" where liberty, not license, should be the happy rule. Whether Penn's scheme was Utopian, let history decide. Let him be remembered, with the ruler of the adjacent province, as a friend to humanity, a wise, liberal, and enlightened statesman.

Only a few other ships call for brief mention here. First, the *Gift of God*, and the *Mary and John*; the former commanded by Captain Popham, and the other by Raleigh Gilbert, son of the accomplished scholar, that brave and gentle knight, Sir Humphrey Gilbert. Both ships rode out from Lizard Point on a May morning in 1607. Losing sight of each other soon after leaving the Azores, they encountered various dangers—pirates were still the scourge of the ocean—and did not again see each other until near Monhegan Island, where Weymouth, cruising along those shores in the *Archangel* in 1605, had planted a cross. The crews of both ships, overjoyed at meeting again, landed, and there, enfolded about by the silence and shadows of the primeval forest, they offered to God their service of thanksgiving. Their chaplain, the Rev. Richard Seymour, by the first service performed upon the soil of New England, "formally consecrated the country to Christian civilization." But here is the quaint narrative of one who joined in that first service of prayer and thanksgiving, quoted by the Rev. Dr. DeCosta in one of his charming and learned discourses on Norumbega: "Sundaye beinge the 9th of August, in the morninge, the most part of our holl crew of bothe our shipes landed on this Iland weh we call St.





## HISTORIC SHIPS

George's Iland, whear the crosse standeth, and thear we heard a sermon delevvred unto us by our preacher, giving God thanks for our metinge and saffe aryval into the country and so returned aboard aggain."

The *Onrust* (the *Restless*), a yacht of sixteen tons built by Adrian Blockthen, 1613-1614, in the service of the Dutch, on Manhattan Island, was one of the first ships built in this country. It was to take the place of his ship, the *Tiger*, which had accidentally perished by fire. Earlier than this, in 1607, at the mouth of the Kennebec, the *Virginia* had been built, probably by some of the crew of the *Gift of God* and the *Mary and John*. She crossed the Atlantic several times.

The *Arbella*, the *Talbot*, the *Ambrose*, and the *Jewel*, were the ships that composed the fleet which sailed out of Yarmouth, March 30th, 1630, to convey John Winthrop, the governor of the Massachusetts Colony, and a band of emigrants, across the sea to their homes in the new settlement. The former name of the *Arbella* was the *Eagle*. It had been renamed in honour of the Lady Arbella, daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, who, with her husband, Mr. Isaac Johnson, were passengers with the Governor on the *Arbella*. A tender and mournful interest is attached to this young couple. In a short time after her arrival on these shores, the Lady Arbella took quick passage to another world, whither her husband in short time followed her.

Though not connected with the discovery or settlement of the country, the Boston Tea Ships are so intimately a part of the early history of the Republic, that an extension of purpose, so as to include them here, may not be amiss.

Englishmen in America were not slow to learn the lesson taught them by a long line of ancestry across the seas. Magna Charta, the Petition of Rights, the Bill of Rights, had some meaning for them also. When, May 10th, 1773, Parliament passed the new tea act, and it was clear beyond all doubt that Great Britain still held that she had the right to tax the colonies; it was determined to make a stand. As soon as it was known in Boston that a consignment of tea from the East India Tea Company in London was on the way, and that the ships bearing that "same detestible commodity," the tea, might be expected any day to appear in the harbour, the whole town was in a mighty ferment. Meetings were held in Faneuil Hall,



## HISTORIC SHIPS

and it was voted by all that the tea should not be landed. The Massachusetts men were encouraged to resist by advices received from Philadelphia, New York and other places. Thomas Mifflin, of Philadelphia, on a visit to Boston, said, "Will you engage that the tea shall not be landed? If so, I will answer for Philadelphia."

On Sunday, November 28th, the *Dartmouth*, Captain Hall, with one hundred and fourteen chests of tea on board, arrived in Boston Harbor. Immediately, though it was the Sabbath, a committee waited upon her owner, Francis Rotch, a Quaker, and demanded that he should send the vessel back to England. He promised to apply to the Governor, Thomas Hutchinson, for permission to clear the harbour. The next day, Monday, large handbills appeared posted up in different parts of the town, beginning: "Friends! Brethren! Countrymen! That worst of plagues, the detested tea shipped for this port by the East India Company, is now arrived in the harbour." It closed with a summons to meet at Faneuil Hall to devise means to resist "this last, worst, and most destructive measure of an administration."

In vain was the Governor appealed to for a pass for the vessel. He, governed by what he thought to be his duty, remained inflexible. Governor Hutchinson's late biographer has done much to remove from his name the unmerited obloquy which has rested upon it for so long. If a man's politics differ from those of another man, it surely is not necessary to conclude him to be a knave.

In the meantime two other vessels, the *Eleanor*, Captain Bruce, and the *Beaver*, "Captain Coffin's brig," each with one hundred and fourteen chests of tea, had arrived and were lying alongside the *Dartmouth*. A watch of twenty or more men had been appointed to keep guard over them. At last the crisis came. The last of the twenty days was about to terminate when, if the ships had not cleared, they would be seized by the town authorities. On December 16th, 1773, it was a Thursday, seven thousand men flocked into the Old South Meeting House; two thousand of them had come in from the country and town for twenty miles, despite the rain which had been pouring for twenty-four hours. At a quarter before 6 o'clock in the evening of that dark December day, the Quaker, Rotch, appeared to report that the Governor had refused permission to pass the Castle. Samuel Adams then rose and said, "This meeting can do nothing more to save the country." Dr. Thomas Young



had before this given as his opinion that "the only way to get rid of the tea was to throw it overboard."

When Samuel Adams' doleful assertion was pronounced, a voice in the gallery was heard inquiring,\* "Who knows how tea will mingle with salt water?", and another called out, "Boston Harbour a teapot tonight; hurrah for Griffin's Wharf!" Soon shouts were heard outside, and a motley crowd disguised as Indians, their faces smeared with grease, soot, or lamp-black, rushed to Griffin's Wharf, now Liverpool Wharf, where the three tea ships were moored. The moon was now shining brightly, and in grim silence, for they were much in earnest, the "Mohawks" in less than three hours emptied into the sea the whole cargo of tea, three hundred and forty-two chests in all, worth £18,000. The next morning, the sea from the wharf to Castle William appeared like a huge windrow. There were over fifty men who engaged in the work, among them Paul Revere, Molineux, and others of mark among the citizens of Boston. Indeed, it was declared that John Hancock was among them; that he was recognized by his lace ruffles and his queue, but the assertion has been disproved. David Kinnison is supposed to have been the last survivor of the Tea Party; he died at the age of one hundred and fifteen, in Chicago, in the year 1852. The character of the men composing the party may be judged from the fact that a padlock, accidentally broken, was replaced. They indulged in a few little jokes; one of them was that they were brewing a large cup of tea for the fishes.

Admiral Montague, who was attending an evening company at the house of a Tory nearby, witnessed the whole affair, and as the men marched two and two past the house, he raised the window, and said, "Well, boys, you have had a fine pleasant evening for your Indian caper; but mind you have got to pay the fiddler yet." "Oh, never mind!" said a man named Pitts, who was commanding the party. "Never mind, 'Squire! Just step out here, if you please, and we'll settle the bill in two minutes."

Some of the tea was picked up on the coast near Boston by Dr. Thaddeus M. Harris, and is now preserved in the Cabinet of the Antiquarian Society of Worcester, Massachusetts. Another sam-

---

\*For much of what immediately follows, the writer is indebted to Mr. Francis I. Drake's "*Tea Leaves*," a most entertaining and exhaustive account of the Boston Tea Party.





## HISTORIC SHIPS

ple, which fell out of the shoes of one engaged in throwing over-board the "pestilential," "pernicious," "poisonous," "devilish," "villainous," "baleful weed," has been preserved in a vial, and is now in the possession of a lady in Galena, Illinois. . . . "About ten p. m., all was finished; the Mohawks gone like a dream, and Boston sleeping more silently even than usual." (Carlyle).

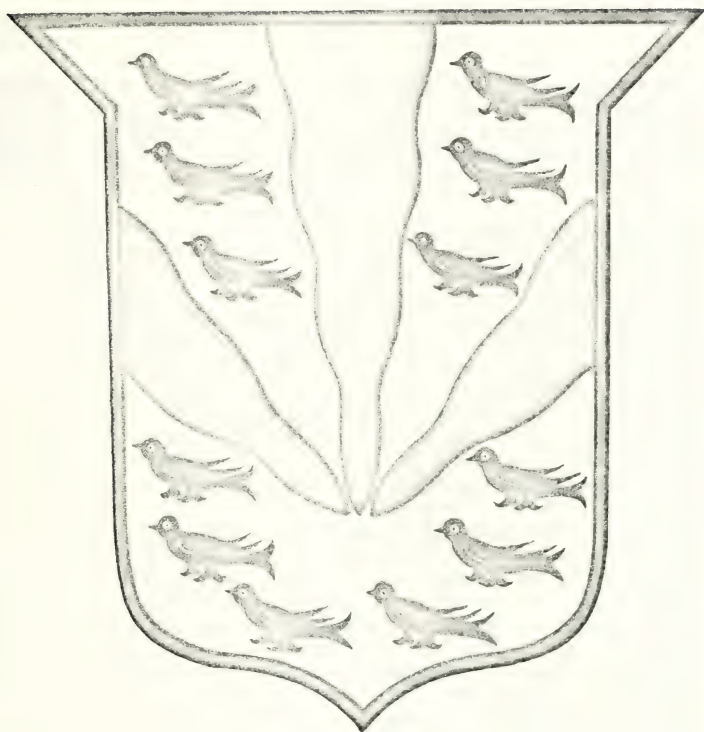
On October 14th, 1774, the brig *Peggy Stuart*, owned by Mr. Anthony Stuart, with a cargo of tea consigned to Messrs. Thomas Williams and Company, arrived at Annapolis, Maryland. The owner paid the duty, but was advised by Charles Carroll of Carrollton to burn the brig and cargo, to save himself and property from the violence of the people. The brig was run aground, and "the flame did what the Mohawks had accomplished in Boston Harbour."

It may be asked in conclusion, why, at the present day, is ship nomenclature so uninteresting, prosaic, and wanting in picturesque association. There is a flavour of romance in the very names of the ships of older times. There was, however, a manifest incongruity between the purpose and the name of Sir John Hawkins' ship *Jesus* in which he went in 1564, to the coast of Guinea to catch slaves. A line of steamships plying on the Sound bear on their prows names pleasantly suggestive of passages in New England history—Pilgrim, Plymouth, Puritan, Priscilla. Those in turn, suggest the P's of the Gilbert and Sullivan Operas.





Co. 17



**Coe**



## Coe-Harthorn Families

*Coe Arms*—Argent, three piles wavy meeting near the base gules, between twelve martlets sable.



THE family of Coe is an ancient and distinguished line which traces its ancestry back to the fourteenth century in England, and to one John Coe, a native of Gestingthorpe, in the County of Essex, England, where he was born probably about 1340 A. D., during the reign of Edward III.

This period was one which marked about the height of chivalry in Europe, and the lives of the historical characters of the time read more like romances than like plain facts as we know them today. The general public is very familiar, through the delightful novel of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, with the "White Company," which was founded about 1360 by Sir John Hawkwood, one of the famous commanders under the Black Prince during the time of the French wars, and which under his command had a long and brilliant career in Italy, fighting in the almost continuous wars of that country, attached to the forces of one or another of the Italian States, but principally, it would appear, to those of Florence. The "White Company," or "Campagna Bianca," as it was called, was among the most famous of the bodies of free lances of the period, and membership in it presupposed high courage and great military ability. In this Company was an Englishman, called in the Italian chronicles "Coe," "Cok," or "Cocco," who won his spurs as a knight by his extraordinary valor in the fierce battle of San Gallo, May 1, 1364, and afterwards was one of Hawkwood's principal captains. The evidence is conclusive that this soldier of fortune was Sir John Coe, who afterwards returned as a wealthy man to his native place of Gestingthorpe, and who in association with Robert Rykendon, the elder, and Robert Rykendon, the younger, founded a chantry in honor of Sir John Hawkwood, his old leader, in the parish house of Hengham Sibille. From this redoubtable warrior are the Coes of America descended, the line running from John Coe, through his son, John Coe, and descendants of Robert Coe, the founder of the family in the New England colonies.

I. It was at Thorpe-Morieux, a small rural parish in Suffolk county, that Robert Coe was born, and baptized in the picturesque church there, the latter event occurring October 26, 1596. According to the genealogy of the Coe family, this Robert Coe "became imbued with the faith and desire for religious liberty of the Puritans, and joined



## COE-HARTHORN FAMILIES

the throng that left their homes and braved the perils of the deep and the hardships of pioneer life in a wilderness infested with hostile savages, to found a nation in the New World." He sailed from Ipswich for America, April 30, 1634, he and his family being among the eighty-three passengers to embark on the good ship *Francis*. He resided at Wethersfield, Connecticut, for about five years, and afterwards at several other settlements in Connecticut, and on Long Island, and finally at Hempstead, Long Island, where his death occurred, probably in 1689, at the venerable age of ninety-two years. The line continues through Robert (2) Coe.

II. *Robert (2) Coe*, son of Robert (1) Coe, was born in England, in 1627. He accompanied his father to Watertown, Wethersfield, and Stamford. From there he moved to Stratford, Connecticut, and married Hannah ———, according to Rev. David B. Coe. He died in 1659, aged thirty-two years. His widow married (second) Nicholas Elsey, of New Haven. She died April 2, 1702. That her name was Hannah is proved by the inventory of her estate. Nicholas Elsey died December 20, 1691. He gave all his property to his wife Hannah and three children. Robert Coe's character may be inferred from the following, written after his death by Rev. Abraham Pierson:

Rest, blessed Coe, upon thy bed of ease,  
The quiet grave with thee is no decease,  
All, all our anguish hath its period fixed,  
E'er hence we go not any joy but mixed;  
Rare grace which makes the life of man the best,  
This young man lived to God, and now is blest,  
Come parallel this saint, now far exceed,  
Omit no means that may true goodness breed;  
E'er trials came, he stowed for days of need,  
The Lord his widow bless and take his seed.

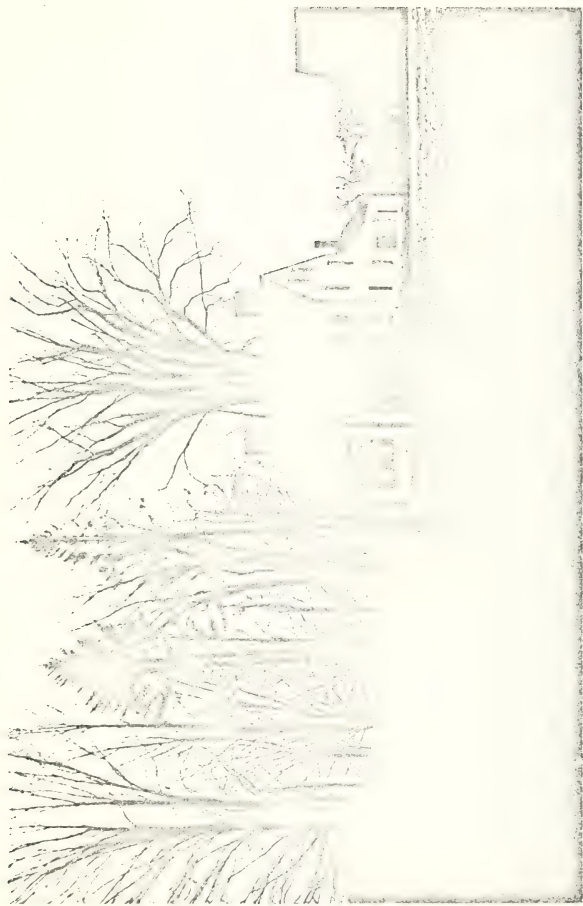
III. *Captain John Coe*, son of Robert (2) Coe, was born May 10, 1658, died April 19, 1741. He married, December 20, 1682, Mary, daughter of Joseph Hawley. His father died when he was not two years old, and his mother married Mr. Elsey, of New Haven, where he was reared until he was twenty-one years old. He then returned to Stratford, and apparently took possession of the land which he inherited from his father, and became a prominent citizen. He was commissioned ensign of Foot, County Stratford, 1698; lieutenant, 1706; captain, 1709; was lister 1705; deputy to the General Court for Stratford, 1701-15; was in the French and Indian War. The following letter to his wife has been preserved in the family:

Westfield, Aug. 23d, 1708.

My Dear Wife:—Thies come to bring my harty love and eflections to you and to tell you of my earnest desire to imbrace you in the arms of my love, hoping they may find you and ouers in health. I have bene very well eve sins I left you for which I prays God. The post from Albani last week brings news that the enemy disagree and the French Indians are turned bak. The scouts from Dearfield have not yet discovered the army. We look for a post from Albani to-morrow after which we are in







*Head of the White River, Springfield, N.H.*







## COE-HARTHORN FAMILIES

great hops of being drawn ofe or the greater part of us. I am just now a going to north hampton to wait on our governor which make me in so much haste so I remain til death your loving husband,

JOHN COE.

Our soldiers heare are all well.

His wife died September 9, 1731, aged sixty-eight years. She was born July 16, 1663, the eighth and youngest child of Joseph and Catherine (Birdsey) Hawley.

*IV. Captain Joseph Coe*, son of Captain John Coe, was born February 2, 1686, died July 15, 1754. He was one of the early settlers of Durham, Connecticut. His brothers John and Ephraim also settled in Durham, and his brother Robert settled in Middletown. Captain Joseph Coe was deputy to the General Court, 1728; commissioned ensign, 1722; lieutenant, 1725; captain, 1729. In 1738 "liberty was granted to those in the north end of the town to set up a school in the highway not far from Captain Joseph Coe's house." He married, November 21, 1708, Abigail Robinson, born April 3, 1690, died July 6, 1775, daughter of David Robinson.

*V. Deacon Joseph (2) Coe*, son of Captain Joseph (1) Coe, was born in Durham, Connecticut, September 5, 1713, was reared on his father's farm, but soon after becoming of age settled in that part of Middletown, now the town of Middlefield, which was his home the remainder of his life. He was a thrifty and prosperous farmer, a man of strong character, for many years a deacon in the Congregational church, and highly respected. He died June 10, 1784.

Deacon Coe married (first) December 23, 1736, Hannah Parmelee, born about 1716, died January 19, 1737-38.

Deacon Coe married (second) in December, 1739, Abigail Curtis, born September 28, 1719, daughter of John and Hannah (Johnson) Curtis, of Stratford. She died in Middlefield, September 22, 1776. *Rev. Curtis Coe*, through whom the line continues, was a child of the second marriage.

*VI. Rev. Curtis Coe*, son of Deacon Joseph (2) and Abigail (Curtis) Coe, a native of Middletown, Connecticut, born July 21, 1750, was a graduate of Brown University, and a prominent clergyman in his day. He was pastor of the church at Durham, New Hampshire, in which capacity he served for more than a quarter of a century. It was during his pastorate that the Unitarian faith began to gain strength in that region of New England, and so bitter were the dissensions in Mr. Coe's congregation that he finally resigned. An amusing story is told of him in this connection, it being stated that upon the occasion of his last service in the Durham church he requested the congregation to join in singing the CXXth Psalm, as follows:

Thou God of Love, thou ever blessed,  
Pity my suffering state.  
When wilt thou set my soul at rest  
From lips that love deceit?





## COE-HARTHORN FAMILIES

Hard lot of mine! My days are cast  
Among the sons of strife,  
Whose never-ceasing brawlings waste  
My golden hours of life.

O, might I fly to change my place,  
How would I choose to dwell  
In some wild, lonesome wilderness,  
And leave these gates of Hell.

Mr. Coe afterwards removed to South Newmarket (now Newfields) New Hampshire, where he became the owner of a good farm and continued his religious work, preaching in various parts of Maine and New Hampshire until his death, June 7, 1829.

*VII. Eben Coe*, son of the Rev. Curtis and Anne (Thompson) Coe, and father of Dr. Thomas Upham Coe, was born December 6, 1785, at Durham, New Hampshire. He was a successful merchant and business man of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and was president of the Laconia Bank there. He was also conspicuous in the public affairs of the community.

Eben Coe married (first) November 4, 1813, Mehitable Smith, daughter of the Hon. Eben and Mehitable (Sheafe) Smith, of Durham, New Hampshire. Eben Coe married (second) November 30, 1835, Mary (Upham) Barker, daughter of the Hon. Nathaniel and Judith (Cogswell) Upham, and widow of the Hon. David Barker. Of this second union two children were born:

1. *Thomas Upham*, with whose career we are here especially concerned.

2. Hetty Smith, born November 27, 1839, died May 13, 1842.

*VIII. Dr. Thomas Upham Coe*, son of Eben and Mary (Upham-Barker) Coe, was born at Northwood, New Hampshire, December 8, 1837. The first eight years of his life were spent in his native place, and he then removed with his parents to Bangor, Maine. As a child he attended the public schools of Bangor, and graduated from the high school there after being prepared for college. He then entered Bowdoin College, from which he graduated in 1857 with the degree of A. B., and received from the same institution the degree of A. M. three years later. As a youth he had determined upon medicine as a profession, and accordingly entered the Jefferson Medical College, of Philadelphia, from which he was graduated with the class of 1861, taking his medical degree. Not content with the usual studies, however, Dr. Coe went abroad and for two years studied in Paris, where he attended the hospital clinics and lectures at the Ecole de Medicine. In the year 1864 he returned to Bangor, Maine, and here began the active practice of medicine, which he continued for about fifteen years uninterruptedly. Dr. Coe then withdrew from his professional practice in order to give more time and attention to the large financial and business interests with which he had become associated.



View West of Elm Grove, Wisconsin, U.S.







*Elenor*

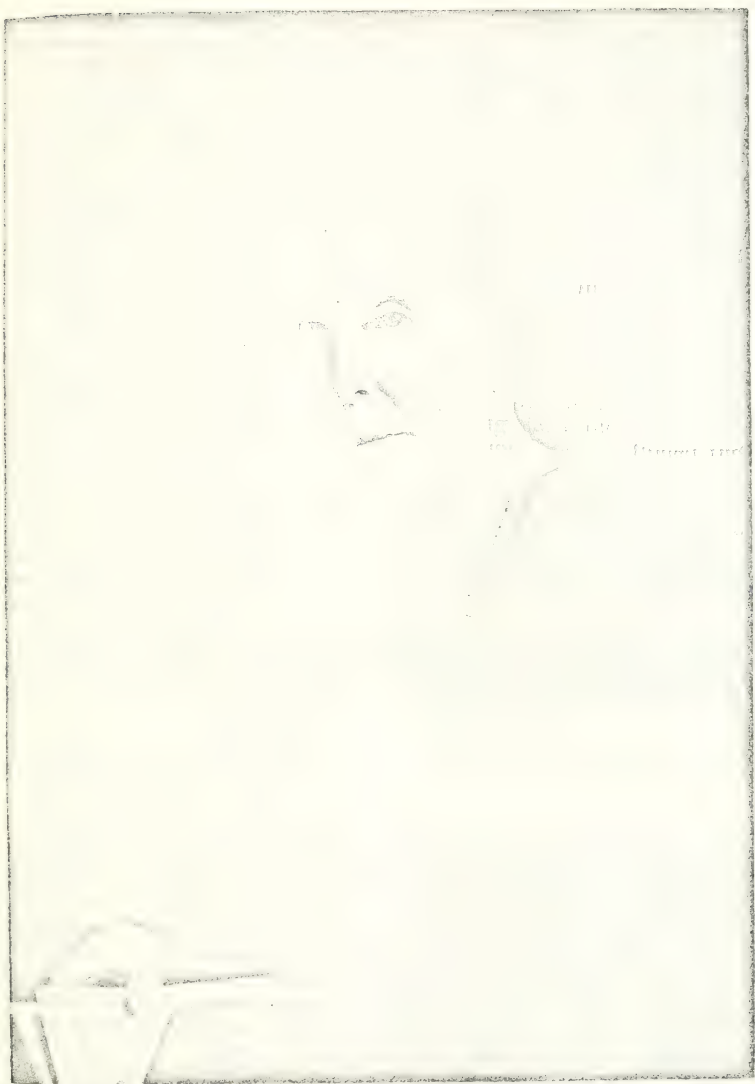




Thomas A. Phelps







Lada L. Coe



## COE-HARTHORN FAMILIES

Dr. Coe had become in the meantime a prominent figure in the business interests of Eastern Maine, and was the owner of large tracts of timber land in Maine and New Hampshire, as well as valuable properties at Bangor and elsewhere. Dr. Coe is president of the Bangor Opera House Association, a director of the Merrill Trust Company of Bangor, of the Bangor & Aroostook Railroad Company, of the European & North American Railroad Company, the Orono Pulp and Paper Company, and a trustee of the Penobscot County Savings Bank. He has also been a trustee of the Bangor Public Library for many years. Although entirely without ambition in the political world, Dr. Coe has taken an exceedingly prominent part in local affairs and served his city in a number of important posts, among which should be mentioned membership on the city school and water boards. Always keenly interested in historical and genealogical matters, Dr. Coe is an active and conspicuous member of the Maine Historical Society, the Bangor Historical Society, the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, and the National Geographical Society. Among scientific and other organizations with which he is connected should be mentioned the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and the Academy of Political and Social Science. His clubs are the Tar-ratine of Bangor, and the Alpha Delta Phi of New York. He is also vice-president for Maine of the Coe Association, and contributes largely to the valuable work done by this organization in collecting and publishing historical and genealogical matters connected with his locality and family.

Dr. Coe was united in marriage, May 23, 1867, with Sada Loantha Harthorn, a daughter of Paul Dudley and Loantha (Wyman) Harthorn. (See Harthorn). One son was born of this marriage, Dudley Coe, who died in 1887, at the age of fourteen years.

(The Harthorn (Hawthorn) Line).

*Arms*—Argent a chevron between two cinquefoils, in chief gules and a hawthorn tree in base, vert.

*Crest*—A hawthorn tree proper.

*Motto*—*Slabo.*

Tracing to a common ancestor in New England are families spelling their names in a great variety of manners, including Harthorn, Hathorne, Harthen, Harthon, Harthorne, Hathoorn, Hathorn, Hawthorne, Hawthorn, Hawthorne, Haythorne, Hearthan, Hothorn, Hothorne. The ancestor of the line herein followed was William Hathorne, from whom in the sixth American generation of the family came Nathaniel Hawthorne, immortal in American literature. William Hathorne, and John, his brother, were the only emigrants of the name of Colonial days. Both lived in Salem, and great difficulty has been found in distinguishing between their families. They were sons of William and Sarah Hathorne, of Binfield, Berkshire county, England.



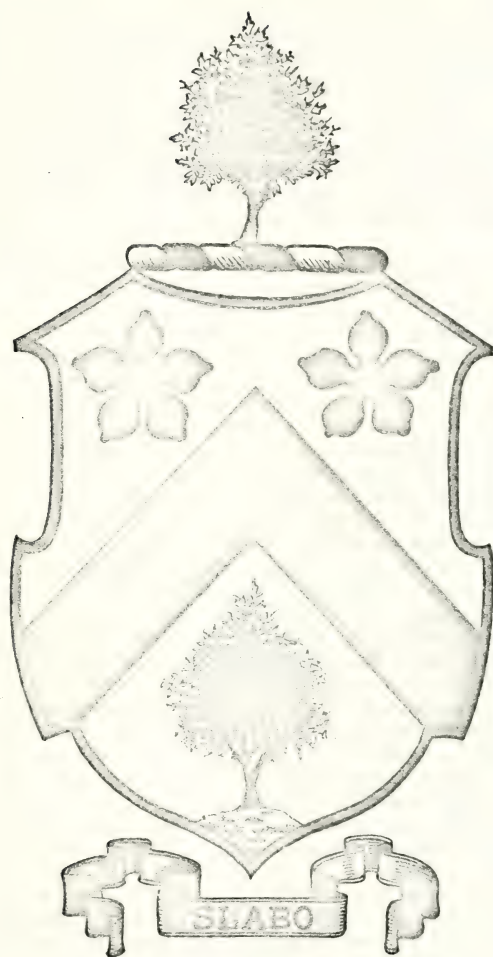
*I. William Hathorne* was born in 1607, and came with Governor Winthrop in the "Arabella" in 1630. He settled in Dorchester, Massachusetts, where he was a proprietor. He was admitted a freeman, May 14, 1634, and was a town officer there. He moved to Salem in 1636. He represented Dorchester in the General Court, 1635 and 1637, and Salem many years after his removal. He was elected speaker of the House of Deputies in 1644, and reelected a number of times. He had a grant of land of six hundred and forty acres, September 6, 1676, for extra services to the State. This was the first grant in Townsend, Massachusetts, and is probably the land occupied by his sons and grandsons in Stow, Marlborough, and Townsend later. He was elected assistant to the governor in 1662 and served until 1679. He was one of the most able, energetic, and widely useful men in New England. He was at the great training in Boston in 1639. He was captain of the Salem military company, appointed May 1, 1646, commissioned major, 1656. He was narrow and bigoted, arbitrary and intolerant in church and state, judged by present standards; but he was a zealous and fearless advocate of personal rights against the encroachments of the royal agents. A list of his children, written in his own hand, has been preserved. He died in 1681, in his seventy-fourth year. The estate was settled by his son, John, and son-in-law, Israel Porter. He and his wife Anne were the parents of: Sarah, Eleazer, *Nathaniel*, of whom further; *John*, of whom further; Anna, William, Elizabeth, and Mary.

*II. Nathaniel Hathorne*, son of William and Anne Hathorne, was born in Salem, Massachusetts, August 11, 1639. He settled in Lynn, Massachusetts. Among his children, the historian of Marlborough evidently believes were the two settlers, viz., Ebenezer and Nathaniel, though the Marlborough settlers may have been sons of Ebenezer Hathorne (III), son of Nathaniel Hathorne (II). The children of Nathaniel Hathorne (II) were: *Ebenezer*, of whom further, and Nathaniel.

*III. John Hathorne*, son of William and Anne Hathorne, was born in Salem, Massachusetts, August 5, 1641. He was distinguished in civil and military life. He was a captain in the war with the eastern Indians, later colonel of his regiment, and chief in command of the expedition in 1696 against the Indians. He was a magistrate, except during the brief administration of Sir Edmund Andros, and was a most cruel and intolerant judge during the witchcraft delusion. He married Ruth Gardner. Their children were: John, Nathaniel, Ebenezer, Joseph, Ruth, Benjamin. There is some doubt whether the Ebenezer and Nathaniel Hathorne, who settled in Marlborough, Massachusetts, about 1720, were sons of John (II) or Nathaniel (II), but there is more reason to think that they were sons of Nathaniel.







HARTHORN



III. *Ebenezer Hathorne*, son of Nathaniel Hathorne, was probably the father of Nathaniel and Ebenezer Hathorne, of Marlborough. There is no doubt that the Marlborough line is connected with the Salem family in one of the ways indicated. Ebenezer Hathorne married, in 1683, Esther Witt. The Witt and Hathorne families came to Marlborough together from Lynn and Salem.

IV. *Nathaniel (2) Hathorne*, son of Ebenezer Hathorne, was born in Lynn or Salem about 1690, and came with his brother to Marlborough. His first wife, Martha, bore him several children. He married (second) in 1728, Sarah Stevens. He settled on what is now the Marlborough town farm.

IV. *Ebenezer (2) Hathorne*, probably son of Ebenezer (1) Hathorne (III), was born in Salem or Lynn, about 1690. He came to Marlborough with his brother Nathaniel, about 1720. He married, in 1730 (Charles Hudson's "History of the Town of Marlborough, Mass."), Elizabeth Goodale, daughter of Benjamin Goodale. Children: Lucy, Silas, Micah, and *Solomon*, of whom further.

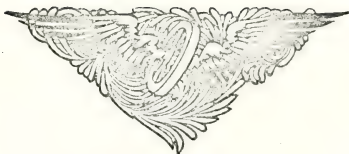
V. *Solomon Harthorn* ("Bangor Historical Magazine," Vol. VI), son of Ebenezer (2) Hathorne, was born in Marlborough, Massachusetts. He was a soldier in the French War in Nova Scotia. He was at Owl's Head prior to 1770, and about 1772 came to Bangor. That year he and his brother built for themselves or Major Robert Treat, a saw mill at the mouth of the Penjejawock stream, near Red Bridge, which was the first in Bangor. As an original settler he had Lot No. 26, which he sold to Robert Treat, and Lot No. 99, which he sold to William Forbes, and Lot No. 105, of which he had a deed of January 22, 1805. He moved directly across the river into what is now Brewer, about 1784. He was living there in 1785 with his wife and ten children. He was a petitioner to the General Court for land in 1785, and a grantee in 1788. He held town offices in Orrington from the time of its incorporation in 1788 to 1795. He moved to Sunkhaze, now Milford, in 1796, and settled on the first lot north of Sunkhaze stream. Park Holland, surveying the territory, found him there in 1797 with "a small house and nine acres cleared, four of which is corn: good land." He married, in Marlborough, Massachusetts, Mary Gates, and they were the parents of: Eber, Molly, Rheumah, Gates, Solomon, Jr., Eunice, Jesse, Betsey, and *Eli*, of whom further.

VI. *Eli Harthorn*, son of Solomon and Mary (Gates) Harthorn, was born in Brewer, Maine, January 17, 1785. He married, October 21, 1811, Hannah W. Dudley, born September 26, 1794, died October 24, 1841, daughter of Paul Dudley, and descendant in the fourth generation from Governor Joseph Dudley, in the fifth generation from Governor Thomas Dudley. Children: Solomon, *Paul Dudley*, of whom further; Martha, Matilda D., Rebecca, Eunice, Catherine, William, Nancy, Lucretia, Charles, and Lucy.



## COE-HARTHORN FAMILIES

*VII. Paul Dudley Harthorn*, son of Eli and Hannah W. (Dudley) Harthorn, was a successful manufacturer of lumber in Bangor, a man of high character, and was greatly esteemed in the community. He married (first) Loantha Wyman, who died August 12, 1850. He married (second) Martha Annie Wyman. The child of his first marriage was Sada Loantha, born July 17, 1849, married, in 1867, Dr. Thomas Upham Coe (see Coe). The children of his second marriage were: George Wyman and Paul Dudley.







*Martin A. Everett*





## Marvin N. Everett



HE passing of Marvin N. Everett removed from Jamestown, New York, one of the most highly respected and substantial citizens of that city. From the year 1850, when he came to what is now Falconer, Chautauqua county, until the end of his life, he was a resident of

Chautauqua county, save for a period of six years spent in California, 1854-60, and another two years in Kansas. The experiences through which he passed, beginning as a boy in Saratoga county, would constitute a deeply interesting narrative of adventure of those pioneer days when lumber and produce were sent down the river on rafts, and often a man's life was the price paid for his efforts to wrest a livelihood from forest, river, and mine. Mr. Everett finally located in Falconer, where he built a handsome residence, then the best in the town, there residing until 1895, when he sold it and removed to No. 105 West Second street, Jamestown, his home until February 4, 1909, when the Death Angel passed and beckoned him away.

Mr. Everett was a man of great energy, of broad, diversified tastes, delighting in the use of tools and mechanical work, yet equally fond of bees and their care. In his personal life he was a kind, generous neighbor, very fond of his home, and a man whose life was a benefit to the communities in which he lived. He prospered in his business affairs, and never failed in ascribing a fair share of his success to his capable wife, Mrs. Viola D. Everett, who survives him. She stepped forward when failing health incapacitated Mr. Everett, and for four years was the managing head, and since her husband's death has managed the estate with consummate skill, and has proved herself of strong executive and managerial ability.

*Marvin N. Everett*, son of John and Elizabeth (Walker) Everett, was born at Maxon Hill, Saratoga county, New York, March 24, 1828, and died in Jamestown, New York, February 4, 1909, aged eighty years, eleven months and twenty days, and was buried in Lake View Cemetery. His youth was passed in Saratoga county, in association with his father, who was a manufacturer of measures, their product being shipped to New York City. In 1850, at the age of twenty-two years, the young man left home and made his way westward, finally locating at Worksburg, now Falconer, Chautauqua county, New York. There with his brother he engaged in the building of flatboats, which they loaded with produce and sent down the Allegheny river to Pittsburgh. In 1854 he sold his business interest



## MARVIN N. EVERETT

at Falconer to his brother, and spent the following six years in the State of California, being employed as a millwright in Sacramento prior to locating in Trinity county, and becoming a successful gold miner. In 1860 he returned to Chautauqua county, New York, and bought a farm in the town of Gerry, which he owned and conducted for five years. In 1866 he married, and later went West on account of his wife's health, locating in Kansas. There Mr. Everett bought considerable land, and also engaged in the brokerage business in Minneapolis, Kansas. After two years in Kansas he again returned to Chautauqua county, locating in the town of Gerry.

After the death of his wife, he made his home in Falconer, where he married a second wife, in 1875, and in 1881 built the fine residence in Falconer, which he occupied until selling it in 1895, and moving to Jamestown. In 1887, Mr. Everett drew the plans for and built the Hotel Everett on West First street, Jamestown, at a cost of \$50,000. This was a substantial building of brick and stone, four stories in height, with basement, and well planned. He continued manager of the Hotel Everett until his health failed, when his capable wife succeeded him as manager. In 1892 he sold the Hotel Everett and retired from active business.

Mr. Everett was a good mechanic, and very fond of mechanical work. He also at one time had quite an extensive apiary and was deeply interested in bee culture. Strictly temperate himself, he strongly advocated the cause of temperance, and to his interest and generosity the building of the First Methodist Church in Falconer is due. The beautiful home on Main street, Falconer, was sold in 1895, and a home established at No. 105 West Second street, Jamestown, where he resided until his death. He was a Republican in politics, and always active in local affairs.

Mr. Everett married (first) June 23, 1866, Emily J. Perry, daughter of Ebenezer and Susan C. Perry. He married (second) at Falconer, New York, March 3, 1875, Viola D. Oburg, daughter of Oscar and Bebe (Wellman) Oburg, of Ashville, Chautauqua county, New York. Mrs. Everett survives her husband, a woman of forceful character, business ability, and womanly virtues. She was always a true partner and helpmate, and of real assistance to her husband in his business undertakings. When his health failed she assumed the management and acted as manager of the Hotel Everett until that property was sold. In 1908 she rented the Marvin House of twenty-one rooms, which she conducted until 1909. Later she bought the property of the heirs of the Isabelle Marvin estate, and has since operated the property with success. She also built, adjoining the Marvin house, a three-story brick block, the first story now occupied by the American Railway Express Company and the Williamson Veneer Company. The upper stories constitute the Lawrence Hotel. In addition to these properties, Mrs. Everett is the owner

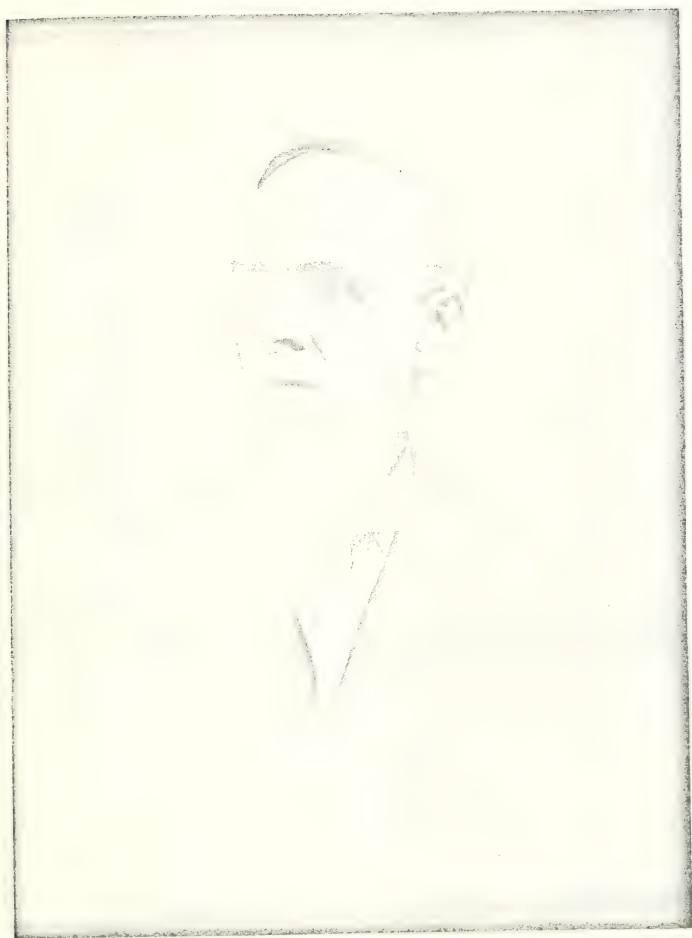




Viola D. Everett







Oscar Oburg





Bebe Oburg

1880, 1/10



## MARVIN N. EVERETT

of other valuable real estate in Jamestown, where she is known and recognized as a woman of rare executive ability. She is of deeply charitable impulse, and interested in all public movements for the good of her community. She has a host of friends and is highly esteemed.

## OSCAR OBURG

Mrs. Viola D. (Oburg) Everett is a daughter of Oscar Oburg, who was born in Sweden, February 25, 1833, son of Peter and Margaret Oburg. The family came to the United States, in 1849, coming *via* Buffalo by stage to Dunkirk, New York, thence to Jamestown. Oscar Oburg at that time, a lad of sixteen, found employment at the Shaw Hotel, located at the corner of Main and West Third streets, the Prendergast block now occupying the site. The Shaw Hotel was a regular stop for the stage coaches, then the only means of travel, a change of horses being made at the hotel. Later Oscar Oburg located in Ashville, Chautauqua county, New York, where for some time he was engaged in the tailor business, and while there he married, February 27, 1852, Bebe Wellman, daughter of Barnabas and Permelia (Bullock) Wellman, she born in Ashville, of old and highly respected Chautauqua county family. Later Oscar Oburg became interested in the shoe business, in which he continuously engaged until after the Civil War, when he turned his attention to farming, continuing until old age compelled his retirement. Mr. Oburg was a Republican in politics, and a devoted member of the Methodist Episcopal church, belonging to the Ashville congregation for more than sixty-six years.

His wife, Bebe (Wellman) Oburg, was the daughter of Barnabas and Permelia (Bullock) Wellman, who were among the early settlers of Chautauqua county, New York. Her grandfather was a soldier of the Revolution, her great-grandfather an English sea captain who made many voyages between America and China. On one of the return voyages he brought home a set of china dishes, a picture of his ship on each dish, these being long preserved in the family. Bebe Wellman Oburg was a devoted Christian, affiliated with the Ashville church from the age of fifteen. She died April 1, 1918, aged eighty-three years, eleven months and fourteen days. Oscar Oburg died at Ashville, April 9, 1919, aged eighty-six years, one month, and fifteen days. Both are buried in Maple Grove Cemetery at Ashville, where the parents of Bebe (Wellman) Oburg are also buried. Mr. and Mrs. Oburg are survived by their six children: Elon M., a resident of the town of Busti, Chautauqua county, New York; Viola D., widow of Marvin N. Everett, of Jamestown; Minnie N., who resides at the old homestead in Ashville; Lelia C., wife of Rollin M. Lee, of Ashville; Abbie D., wife of Charles Wellman, of Jamestown; Victor F., a resident of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania.



## MARVIN N. EVERETT

of other valuable real estate in Jamestown, where she is known and recognized as a woman of rare executive ability. She is of deeply charitable impulse, and interested in all public movements for the good of her community. She has a host of friends and is highly esteemed.

## OSCAR OBURG

Mrs. Viola D. (Oburg) Everett is a daughter of Oscar Oburg, who was born in Sweden, February 25, 1833, son of Peter and Margaret Oburg. The family came to the United States, in 1849, coming *via* Buffalo by stage to Dunkirk, New York, thence to Jamestown. Oscar Oburg at that time, a lad of sixteen, found employment at the Shaw Hotel, located at the corner of Main and West Third streets, the Prendergast block now occupying the site. The Shaw Hotel was a regular stop for the stage coaches, then the only means of travel, a change of horses being made at the hotel. Later Oscar Oburg located in Ashville, Chautauqua county, New York, where for some time he was engaged in the tailor business, and while there he married, February 27, 1852, Bebe Wellman, daughter of Barnabas and Permelia (Bullock) Wellman, she born in Ashville, of old and highly respected Chautauqua county family. Later Oscar Oburg became interested in the shoe business, in which he continuously engaged until after the Civil War, when he turned his attention to farming, continuing until old age compelled his retirement. Mr. Oburg was a Republican in politics, and a devoted member of the Methodist Episcopal church, belonging to the Ashville congregation for more than sixty-six years.

His wife, Bebe (Wellman) Oburg, was the daughter of Barnabas and Permelia (Bullock) Wellman, who were among the early settlers of Chautauqua county, New York. Her grandfather was a soldier of the Revolution, her great-grandfather an English sea captain who made many voyages between America and China. On one of the return voyages he brought home a set of china dishes, a picture of his ship on each dish, these being long preserved in the family. Bebe Wellman Oburg was a devoted Christian, affiliated with the Ashville church from the age of fifteen. She died April 1, 1918, aged eighty-three years, eleven months and fourteen days. Oscar Oburg died at Ashville, April 9, 1919, aged eighty-six years, one month, and fifteen days. Both are buried in Maple Grove Cemetery at Ashville, where the parents of Bebe (Wellman) Oburg are also buried. Mr. and Mrs. Oburg are survived by their six children: Elon M., a resident of the town of Busti, Chautauqua county, New York; Viola D., widow of Marvin N. Everett, of Jamestown; Minnie N., who resides at the old homestead in Ashville; Lelia C., wife of Rollin M. Lee, of Ashville; Abbie D., wife of Charles Wellman, of Jamestown; Victor F., a resident of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania.





## Lispenard-Witherbee and Allied Families



THE FOUNDER of this line of Lispenard was Antoine L'Espenard, who came of a family of French origin, descended from the ancient *noblesse*. Accompanied by Abeltie, his wife, he left Rochelle, France, in 1669, for America, and in 1670 his name was recorded as one of the settlers at Albany. On January 22, 1687, Governor Dongan was ordered to maintain friendly relations with the Marquis of Denonville, who in 1685 had been sent by Louis XV, King of France, to Canada as its governor. A treaty of neutrality dated November 16, 1686, had been signed at Whitehall, and by this treaty it had been agreed that the Indian trade in America should be free to the English and French. This treaty, which guaranteed non-interference by the two nations in wars against the savage Indian tribes, had been violated by the French, and, as a compromise between the governments, it was agreed that no act of hostility should be committed or either territory invaded until January, 1689. The documents relating to this negotiation were placed in the hands of Antoine L'Espenard, who was authorized to proceed to Canada and confer with Denonville relative to the condition of affairs.

Schuyler, in his "Colonial New York," states that L'Espenard had an intimate acquaintance with the Governor of Canada, and this was probably the cause of his having been selected for the mission. During the visit of L'Espenard to Canada he ascertained that French troops were preparing to make a winter expedition, on snowshoes, against Albany, and to burn the city, because its inhabitants had rendered aid to the Senecas. L'Espenard hastened away to report the alarming intelligence to the English authorities, and on his way to New York he stopped long enough at Albany to inform Colonel Peter Schuyler, who was then mayor of the city. L'Espenard continued his journey without loss of time to New York, and the information thus promptly conveyed probably led to the expedition under Schuyler against the French settlements at the north end of Lake Champlain, the result of which was a signal victory over the French by the English. Antoine L'Espenard was among a number of French settlers who were taken into custody upon the declaration of war between England and France, and was taken to Albany, where he and others known to be loyal to the English cause were released. Subsequently L'Espenard moved to New Rochelle, Westchester county, New York. Bolton, in his "History



## Lispenard-Witherbee and Allied Families



THE FOUNDER of this line of Lispenard was Antoine L'Espenard, who came of a family of French origin, descended from the ancient *noblesse*. Accompanied by Abeltie, his wife, he left Rochelle, France, in 1669, for America, and in 1670 his name was recorded as one of the settlers at Albany. On January 22, 1687, Governor Dongan was ordered to maintain friendly relations with the Marquis of Denonville, who in 1685 had been sent by Louis XV, King of France, to Canada as its governor. A treaty of neutrality dated November 16, 1686, had been signed at Whitehall, and by this treaty it had been agreed that the Indian trade in America should be free to the English and French. This treaty, which guaranteed non-interference by the two nations in wars against the savage Indian tribes, had been violated by the French, and, as a compromise between the governments, it was agreed that no act of hostility should be committed or either territory invaded until January, 1689. The documents relating to this negotiation were placed in the hands of Antoine L'Espenard, who was authorized to proceed to Canada and confer with Denonville relative to the condition of affairs.

Schuyler, in his "Colonial New York," states that L'Espenard had an intimate acquaintance with the Governor of Canada, and this was probably the cause of his having been selected for the mission. During the visit of L'Espenard to Canada he ascertained that French troops were preparing to make a winter expedition, on snowshoes, against Albany, and to burn the city, because its inhabitants had rendered aid to the Senecas. L'Espenard hastened away to report the alarming intelligence to the English authorities, and on his way to New York he stopped long enough at Albany to inform Colonel Peter Schuyler, who was then mayor of the city. L'Espenard continued his journey without loss of time to New York, and the information thus promptly conveyed probably led to the expedition under Schuyler against the French settlements at the north end of Lake Champlain, the result of which was a signal victory over the French by the English. Antoine L'Espenard was among a number of French settlers who were taken into custody upon the declaration of war between England and France, and was taken to Albany, where he and others known to be loyal to the English cause were released. Subsequently L'Espenard moved to New Rochelle, Westchester county, New York. Bolton, in his "History



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

of Westchester County," describes the locality of his residence as being at a place called Leisler's, and Le Count's Neck, which at a later date was known as Davenport's Neck. It is on record that the freeholders of New Rochelle granted to Antoine L'Espenard, when he had reached the ripe age of eighty-one years, land upon which to erect a grist-mill, which structure was soon after built on the east side of the Neck. The old family mansion stood at the easterly end of the mill pond. Bonnefoy's Point, on the north side, is said to have been the landing-place for certain French Protestants who settled at New Rochelle before and after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes.

Antoine L'Espenard died at New Rochelle, in the eighty-sixth year of his life. In his will, filed at Albany, the name of his wife, Abeltie, is retained, and those of his children are given as David, Anthony, Johannes, Cornelia, Margarita, and Abigail.

*II. Anthony Lispenard* (here the French accent is dispensed with and the letter "i" takes the place of the "e"), son of Antoine and Abeltie L'Espenard, was born October 31, 1683, and died in the seventy-fifth year of his age, his will signed August 16, 1755.

He married, November 7, 1705, Elizabeth Huygens de Klyne, daughter of Leonard and granddaughter of Barrentsen Huygens de Klyne, of New York. The records of the Reformed Dutch Church of New York show that Elizabeth Huygens de Klyne was baptized March 29, 1688. Children: 1. Anthony, born July 24, 1709; married Maria Milbourne. In 1784 he was a vestryman in Trinity Church, New York. 2. Magdalen, baptized Feb. 16, 1712; married, Nov. 16, 1735, Andrew Abramse, member of a family founded with the first Dutch colonists in New Amsterdam. 3. Leonard, of whom further. 4. John, born Oct. 25, 1720. 5. Elizabeth, born Sept. 5, 1723; married, May 3, 1759, Samuel Treadwell. 6. David, born May 15, 1725; married Elizabeth Rodman. He was one of the signers to a petition to certain high ecclesiastical personages in England requesting that the church in New Rochelle be supplied with a minister who could preach in English and French. 7. Abigail, born June 27, 1718; married, July 6, 1740, James (or Jacobus) Bleeker, of Albany, New York. 8. Maria, born July 20, 1727; married (first) William Rodman, of New Rochelle, N. Y.; (second) Thomas Bayeux. 9. Susannah, born Oct. 21, 1728.

*III. Leonard Lispenard*, second son of Anthony and Elizabeth Huygens (de Klyne) Lispenard, was born December 14, 1715. He was an importing merchant of New York, but his attention was not wholly confined to mercantile affairs, as for nearly half a century he filled various offices of honor and trust in connection with the government. From 1750 to 1762 he was an alderman, at a time when it was considered an honor to be "a City Father." While acting in this capacity he was called upon by the Common Council to be one







## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

of a committee appointed to prepare the draft of an address in honor of Lord Amherst, commander-in-chief of His Majesty's forces in North America, who had rendered signal services in the war against the French, which in 1760 resulted in the conquest of Canada.

Leonard Lispenard was a member of the Twenty-eighth Session Assembly, Province of New York, in 1759, and of the Twenty-ninth Session in 1761-63. He was a delegate to the "Stamp Act Congress" which met in New York in 1765, and in the same year he was one of twenty-eight delegates from the city who united with delegates from Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, and South Carolina, in a futile effort to secure the repeal of certain obnoxious laws. In 1773 he was president of the New York Marine Society, and the fac-simile of a certificate of membership signed by him is shown in Valentine's "Manual of the Common Council of the City of New York." He was an original member of the Society of the New York Hospital, and one of its governors from 1770 to 1777, returned to that office in 1784, and continued therein until 1787. He was a member of the "Committee of Fifty-one" chosen May 14, 1774, to act on the impending crisis. He was one of the "Provisional Committee" which met in New York, April 20, 1775. He was a member of the "Committee of One Hundred" chosen May 5, 1775, to control all general affairs relating to the interests of the people, for at that time the Continental Congress had not decided upon the need of an army. He was a deputy to the Revolutionary Congress which met in New York, May 22 to July 8, and from July 26 to September 2, and from October 4 to November 4, 1775. He was a regent of the "University, and a governor, trustee, and the treasurer of King's, now known as Columbia College, the cornerstone of which was laid in 1756.

As a member of the "Committee of Observation" he was an active participant in various matters of importance pertaining to the political condition of affairs which then absorbed the public mind. When the news of the skirmish at Lexington, the first fighting of the Revolution, arrived in New York, a small body of determined men, among whom were Anthony and Leonard Lispenard, seized a sloop laden with provisions for the English, at Boston, and threw the cargo overboard. On the evening of April 23, 1775, this party entered the arsenal, captured a thousand stand of arms, and sent them to the Revolutionary army. The inhabitants of New York were aroused; men in large numbers were enlisted for the service, loyalists were threatened with the gallows, and the property of the Crown was plundered wherever it could be found. Leonard Lispenard, then holding the rank of colonel of militia, renounced his allegiance to the King and openly declared himself a friend of indepen-



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

dence. He entertained General George Washington when the General arrived in New York, June 15, 1775, on his way from Philadelphia to Boston, at his home on an elevation commanding a fine view of the Hudson river (now the junction of Hudson and Desbrosses streets), two miles out of town, on the road to Greenwich, as it was then called, a locality which furnished an outlet from the city to the north.

Colonel Leonard Lispenard died February 20, 1790, and was buried in the family vault at Trinity Church, New York, a marble slab bearing his name marking the spot. The valuable estate left to his heirs included the tract of land called "Lispenard Meadows." This land, bounded on the north by Canal street, on the south by Reade street, extended from the Hudson to West Broadway. The property was not all held by Lispenard in fee simple, but some was on a lease of ninety-nine years from Trinity Church. Lispenard, Leonard and Anthony streets derived their names from the Lispenard family.

Leonard Lispenard married, in 1741, Alice Rutgers, daughter of Anthony and Cornelia Rutgers. His wife inherited from her father, who died in 1746, one-third of the large landed estate known as the Rutgers farm. This farm was a portion of an extensive grant of land which Anthony Rutgers had received from George II. It was in an orchard connected with this farm, on East Broadway, that Nathan Hale was executed. Leonard Lispenard purchased, September 28, 1748, from the sisters of his wife, the remaining two-thirds of this land. Children of Leonard and Alice (Rutgers) Lispenard: 1. Anthony, of whom further. 2. Leonard, born in 1743; one of nine graduates of King's College in 1762; a merchant, and man of superior culture and education; died unmarried. 3. Cornelia, married Thomas Marston, of New York.

*IV. Anthony Lispenard*, son of Leonard and Alice (Rutgers) Lispenard, was baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church, December 8, 1742. He was the proprietor of extensive breweries and mills on the Greenwich road, near the foot of the street now called Canal. It is said that he was a captain of militia at the commencement of the Revolutionary War, and sided with the patriot cause. He received from his father by will dated December 30, 1789, and proved February 26, 1790, a large portion of the estate left by his father. He married, December 10, 1764, his cousin, Sarah Barclay, daughter of Andrew Barclay, a merchant of New York, after whose family Barclay street was named. Children: 1. Thomas, died unmarried. 2. Anthony, died unmarried, in 1806. 3. Alice (or Elsie), died unmarried. 4. Leonard, married his cousin, Ann Dorothy Bache; Bache street (now Beach) was named after his family. One of his children, Theophylact, was the last male member of the family bearing the name of Lispenard. 5. Sarah, married Alexander L. Stewart (see Stewart line). 6. Helen Roosevelt, married Paul R. Bache.



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Stewart Line).

*Stewart Arms*—(Earl of Galloway; Lord Garlies).

*Arms*—Quarterly, 1 and 4 or, fess chequy argent and azure, surmounted of a bend engrailed gules, within a tressure flory counterflory of the last, 2 and 3 or, a fess chequy azure and argent, over all a lion rampant gules: (For Stewart of Blackhall).

*Arms*—An inescutcheon azure a bend between six crosslets fitchee or: (For Mar).

*Crest*—A pelican argent, winged or, in her nest, feeding her young proper.

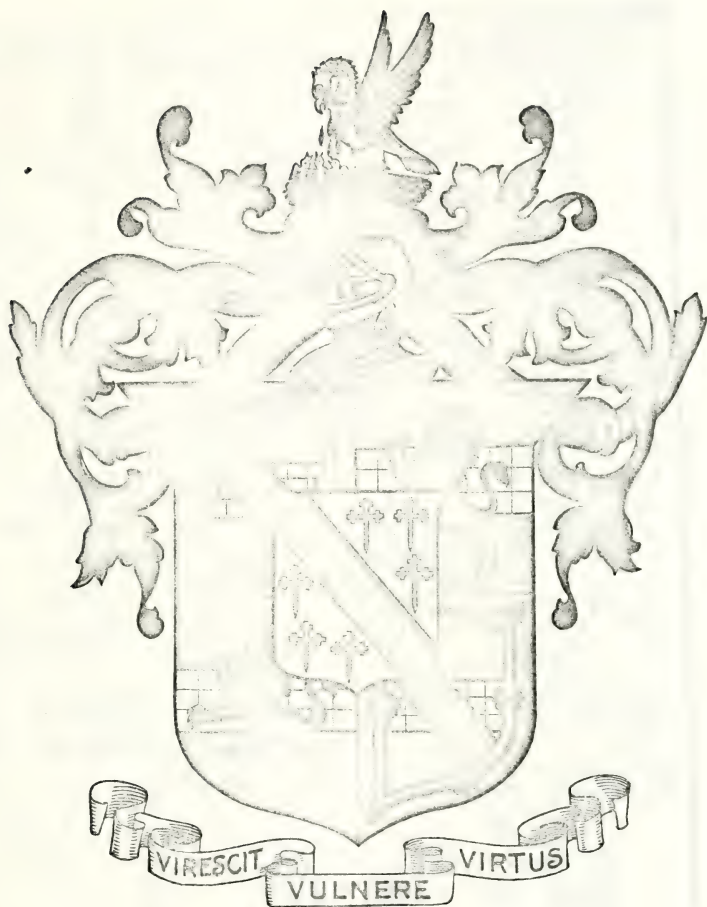
*Motto*—*Virescit vulnere virtus* (Virtue flourishes from a wound).

The origin and early genealogy of the House of Stewart have engaged the attention and labors of many students of family history. The position occupied by the family in Scotland, and their relations with the throne, have connected them closely with the recorded history, as well as with the traditions of the country. The genealogists of the last century had no difficulty in tracing with accuracy and with the support of deeds and charters of the Kings of Scotland, their descent from Walter, the first High Steward of Scotland under King David I, who reigned 1124-1153. Under varied spelling—Stewart, Steuart, and Stuart—the family was established in Renfrewshire, Lanarkshire, Banffshire, Galloway, Fifeshire, Perthshire, and elsewhere in Scotland. Among its possessions were the kingdoms of Scotland and England, the dukedoms of Albany, Lennox, Ross, and Rothesay; marquisesates of Bute and Ormond; earldoms of Angus, Ardmannach, Arran, Athol, Badenock, Bothwell, Buchan, Bute, Caithness, Carrick, Darnley, Fife, Galloway, Lennox, March, Menteith, Moray, Orkney, Ross, Strathern, Traquair, and Windsor; viscounties of Mountstewart and Kingarf; lordships of Auchterhouse, Blatyre, Brechen, Navar, Cumra, Inchmarnoch, Doun, Dunbar, Evandale, Gairlies, Hailes, Hamilton, Innermeath, Kinclaven, Linton, Lorne, Methven, and St. Colme, as well as numerous others. Early in the settlement of Ireland by the Scotch under James I, the Stewarts went in goodly numbers. In 1890 the family was numerous in Antrim, Down, Londonderry, Donegal and Tyrone in Ulster, two hundred and twenty-eight births in the name being recorded in these counties in that year. It was in Donegal that the line herein recorded was settled by Charles Stewart, of Garth, an officer in the dragoons of the army of William III, in 1685, who for gallantry in the battle of the Boyne was given the demesne of Gortlee, in Donegal, in the distribution of estates after the Revolution. He was the father of Robert Stewart, grandfather of Robert (2) Stewart, and great-grandfather of Alexander L. Stewart, through whose marriage connection is formed with the line of Lispenard.

Charles Stewart, son of Robert Stewart, was the first member of the family to come from Ireland to the United States, settling in Hunterdon county, New Jersey, in 1750. He was commissioned by Congress, June 18, 1777, as Commissary of Issues in the army of the







Stewart









## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

United States, and served as such during the remainder of the Revolutionary War.

*IV. Alexander L. Stewart* was born May 21, 1775. He married, January 27, 1803, Sarah Lispenard, daughter of Anthony and Sarah (Barelay) Lispenard (see Lispenard line). Children: 1. Helen Lispenard, born Feb. 28, 1805; married, in 1823, James Watson Webb, of New York. 2. Mary Jordan, married, Feb. 14, 1826, Stephen Hogeboom. 3. Sarah A., married (first) Jan. 17, 1825, John Skillman; (second) Rev. Charles Samuel Stewart, her second cousin. 4. Lispenard, of whom further. 5. Eliza (Elvia), born in March, 1812; died unmarried, Feb. 22, 1866. 6. Amelia Barelay, born Nov. 6, 1814, died April 14, 1826. 7. Matilda Wilson, born Feb. 6, 1816; married, Sept. 4, 1838, Herman C. Le Roy, and died in New York, April 8, 1856.

*V. Lispenard Stewart*, son of Alexander L. and Sarah (Lispenard) Stewart, was born in New York, August 9, 1809. He married (first) June 4, 1834, Louisa Stephanie Salles, who died September 7, 1867; (second) December 22, 1847, Mary Rogers Rhinelander (see Rhinelander line). Children of first marriage: 1. Louisa Stephanie, born in Paris, France, May 21, 1836; married John B. Trevor; 2. Sarah Lispenard, born April 9, 1837; married Frederick Graham Lee. Children of second marriage: 1. William Rhinelander, married, Nov. 5, 1879, Annie McKee Armstrong. 2. Lispenard, born June 19, 1855; unmarried. 3. Mary Rhinelander, born March 3, 1859; married Frank Spencer Witherbee (see Witherbee line).

(The Rhinelander Line).

*Philip Jacob Rhinelander* was the first of the Huguenot family of that name who sought refuge in America from the persecutions caused by the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. On his arrival in America in 1686, he settled in New Rochelle, Westchester county, where he purchased considerable property and there died at a good old age. In 1737 he was living at New Rochelle in the enjoyment of good health. He was born on that part of the Rhine then subject to France, four miles from the town of Oberwesel. The ancient Castle of Schönburg, on the Rhine, which overlooks that old town, was purchased in 1884 by two brothers, T. J. Oakley Rhinelander and Philip Rhinelander, lineal descendants of the first settler of that name, on account of its propinquity to the land which the family originally possessed, whence the name Rhinelander. In the history of Oberwesel and of the Castle (then belonging to the Duke of Schönburg) one of the members of the family, Friedrich Wilhelm Rheinlander, is mentioned in the fifteenth century as being the captain of the Tower of the Castle (probably the "keep"). Philip Jacob Rhinelander married in America, and had many descendants.

*II. William Rhinelander*, son of Philip Jacob Rhinelander, was





## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

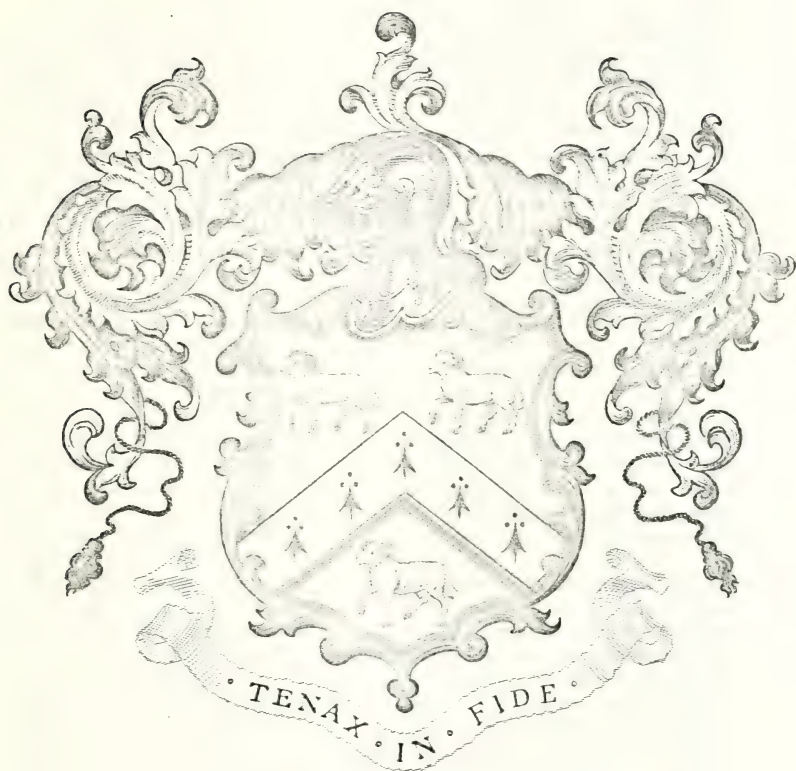
born in New Rochelle, New York, in 1718. He purchased Numbers 28 and 30 Spruce street, the oldest Rhinelander property in New York, March 7, 1744, and there lived until his death, September 7, 1777. He is buried in Trinity Churchyard. He married Magdalen (baptized Mary Magdalen) Renaud (sometimes spelled Reynaud and Renau), daughter of Stephen and Madeleine Renaud, of New Rochelle. Children: Frederick; William, Jr., of whom further; Sarah, and Philip.

*HI. William Rhinelander, Jr.*, son of William and Magdalen (Renaud) Rhinelander, was born in New York, May 29, 1753, and died September 9, 1825. In 1810 he purchased the property at No. 243 Broadway, and there lived until his death. Previous to 1810 he lived at No. 220 Pearl street, New York City. He was trustee for the family and was, as were also his ancestors and descendants, an extensive landowner. His will was proved September 14, 1825, and was witnessed by William S. Robert. He married, September 5, 1785, Mary (christened Mary Elizabeth) Robart, daughter of Christopher and Mary (Dyer) Robart, granddaughter of Daniel, Jr., and great-granddaughter of Daniel and Susanne Nicholas (du Gaillean) Robert (then spelled Robart). She died February 13, 1837, a sister of Colonel Robart, who was a line officer, chief of staff, under General Washington during the American Revolution, and descendant of Daniel Robart, who was the first of the Huguenot family of that name to come to America in 1686. She was an aunt of Christopher Rhinelander Robert, who founded the Robert College in Constantinople. Children: Philip, Eliza Lucille; William Christopher, of whom further; John Robert, Mary Robart, Frederick William, and Bernard.

*IV. William Christopher Rhinelander*, son of William, Jr., and Mary (Robart) Rhinelander, was born December 19, 1790, and died June 20, 1878. He was a quartermaster-sergeant in Colonel Stevens' regiment in the War of 1812, and afterward was commissioned lieutenant. His home from 1840 was No. 14 North Washington Square, New York City. He married, October 4, 1816, Mary Rogers, daughter of John and Mary (Pixton) Rogers. Children: 1-2. William, both died young. 3. Mary Rogers, born Sept. 4, 1821, died Oct. 7, 1893; married, Dec. 22, 1847, Lispenard Stewart (see Stewart line). 4. Julia, died unmarried. 5. Serena, died unmarried. 6. William (3), married Matilda Cruger Oakley, daughter of Thomas J. Oakley, an eminent judge of the Superior City Court, attorney-general of New York State, and member of Congress, granddaughter of Henry Cruger, M. P., twice mayor of Bristol in the reign of George III, and later Senator of the State of New York, and great-granddaughter of Lieutenant Jesse Oakley, who raised and equipped his own company in the Revolutionary War and who was present at the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown.







WITHERBEE



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Witherbee Line).

*Arms*—Vert, a chevron ermine between three rams passant argent, attired or.  
*Motto*—*Tenax in fide*.

The Witherbee patronymic is of ancient English origin, and is traced to the Norwegian and Danish conquests of the present kingdom. This is shown by the name itself, which is a territorial one, indicating the establishment of the family and the calling after it of Weatherby, a well known and picturesque market town in the county of Yorkshire, situated between the cities of York and Leeds and possessing an interesting history of many local antiquities of a notable character. It was called by the Saxons *Wedderby*, the final syllable being the Danish equivalent of the English town, or the Norman-French *ville*. References to the Weatherby family are indeed not lacking in the earlier records of the landed aristocracy of England and its branches, members having held high offices in Church and State as early as the year 1290. As early as 1461, reference is made in an ancient record to the daughters of Thomas Weatherby, a landed proprietor of Intwood, Norfolk. It was from Norfolk and the eastern countries that the principal stream of the Puritan emigration to America flowed. —

In 1558, Robert Witherby was condemned to death for heresy by Queen Mary, but escaped, owing to her death three days before the date fixed for his execution. Queen Elizabeth, who succeeded to the throne, released him, restored his confiscated estates, and conferred the Royal ermine on his coat-of-arms, giving him the motto, *Tenax in Fide* (steadfast in faith), while his daughter was appointed maid of honor to the Duchess of York.

The spelling of the patronymic has, however, assumed in the course of time various forms, and its bearers, while tracing their descent from the original source, are today found in all parts of the United States under such slight transformations as Weatherbee, Witherby, Weatherby, Weatherbye, Witherbe and Witherbee. In England it has been spelled "Witherby" for about two hundred years, and there is a tradition that before that it was spelled "Weatherby." This seems plausible, because the crest on the coat-of-arms is a wether (sheep), while the old word "by" or "bye" means a locality or estate; so that the whole name may well mean what is now called a sheep ranch. Whatever form it has assumed, its possessors have ever borne a distinguished part in the creation and upbuilding of America. Members of the family have figured in the country's earliest days as members of the Colonial Council and legislative bodies of Massachusetts, Vermont, and other New England States, or earned distinction in the clerical and learned professions; others fought gallantly in the early wars; and in the later history they have been prominent in every walk of life.



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*I. John Witherbye*, who was born in County Suffolk, England, about 1650, came to America in 1672. His name first appears at Marlboro, Massachusetts, as having married Mary A., a daughter of John Howe, a prominent citizen of that place. He fought in King Philip's War, and on March 26, 1676, while at church, he was attacked by the Indians, who also set fire to his house. He was later one of the founders of the town of Stowe, Massachusetts, and of which, in 1688, he was elected a selectman, and where he died about the year 1711.

*II. Captain Silas Witherbye*, the second son of John and Mary A. (Howe) Witherbye, was born July 20, 1707, at Marlboro, and died at Shrewsbury, March 10, 1783. He married, August 20, 1738, Thankful Keyes, daughter of Major John Keyes, known at that time as "the famous Major."

*III. Lieutenant Thomas Witherbye*, son of Captain Silas and Thankful (Keyes) Witherbye, was born in June, 1747, and died May 9, 1827, in Shrewsbury, whither he had removed in 1777. He married, January 2, 1770, Relief Huston, of Dunstable, New Hampshire.

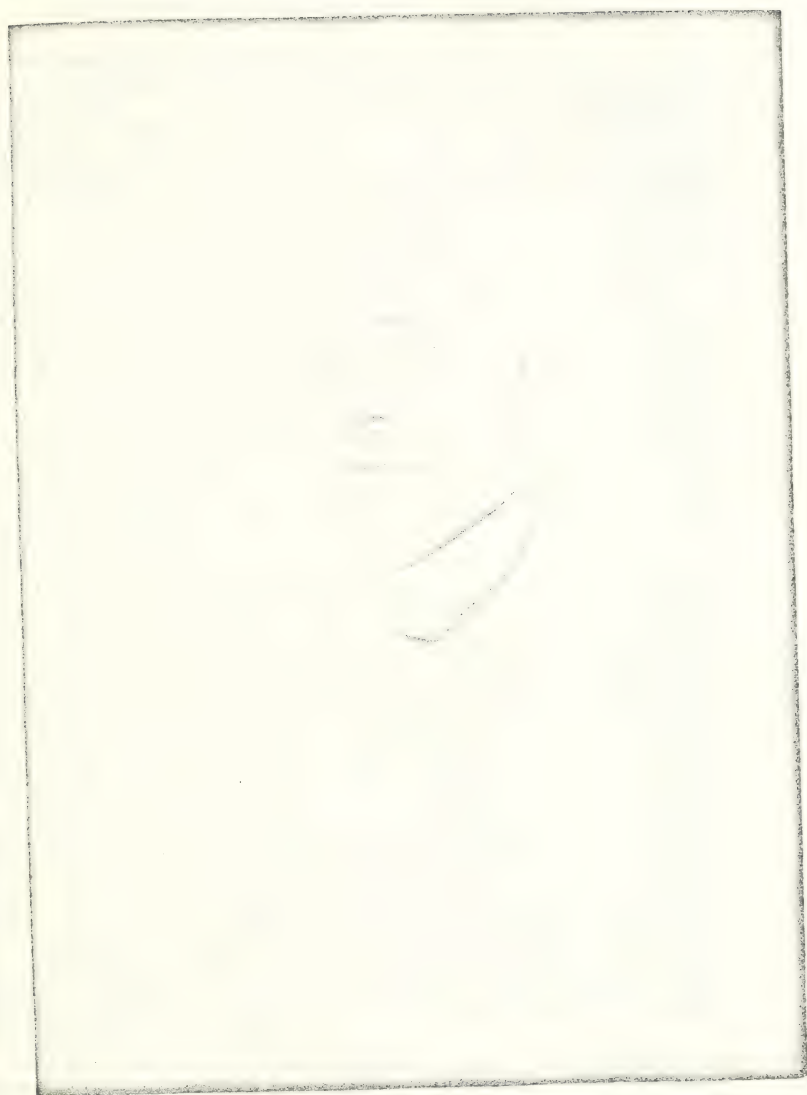
*IV. Jonathan Witherbye*, second son of Lieutenant Thomas and Relief (Huston) Witherbye, was born March 3, 1772, in Fitzwilliam, Vermont, and died at Bridport, Vermont, August 18, 1820. He married, October 30, 1795, at Shrewsbury, Virtue Hemenway, who was a daughter of Silas and Mary (Smith) Hemenway, born there January 23, 1775, and died there May 10, 1849.

*V. Thomas Witherbye*, son of Jonathan and Virtue (Hemenway) Witherbye, was born April 2, 1797, and died at Port Henry, New York, August 12, 1850. He married, November 4, 1819, Millie Adams, of Bridport, Vermont, born July 2, 1799, in Dublin, New Hampshire, and died at Port Henry, May 27, 1879. She was the daughter of Timothy Adams, who was a descendant of Henry Adams, of Quincy, Massachusetts, the ancestor of the two Presidents, John Adams and John Quincy Adams.

*VI. Jonathan Gilman Witherbee*, son of Thomas and Millie (Adams) Witherbye, was born June 7, 1821, in Crown Point, New York, and died at Port Henry, New York, August 25, 1875. About this time the spelling of the name was changed from Witherbye to Witherbee.

Mr. Witherbee was one of the pioneers of the iron ore industry of the Lake Champlain region. In 1839, when eighteen years of age, he entered upon his business career, first in Port Henry, New York, and afterwards at Saugerties, where he remained for several years. In 1849, in association with an uncle, the firm of S. H. & J. G. Witherbee was organized, in which he was the junior partner. This was the beginning of the firm, which by constantly acquiring and developing mineral lands became the largest iron mining company east





Frank L. Withersbee





of the Lake Superior district, and prior to the discovery of ore in the West was one of the most dominant factors in the iron industry of the country. In 1862 the firm name was changed to Witherbees, Sherman & Company, afterward incorporated under the title of Witherbee, Sherman & Company. In addition to the mining of ore, the firm was interested in several blast furnaces, in railroad and lake transportation enterprises, in all of which Mr. Witherbee took a leading part. These aided materially in the development of the northern part of New York and Vermont. Mr. Witherbee was also one of the organizers of the First National Bank of Port Henry, and was a man of wide influence in business and political circles.

On May 13, 1846, Mr. Witherbee married Charlotte Spencer, born February 15, 1827, in Vergennes, Vermont, whose father was Jonathan B. Spencer, born in 1796, in Vergennes, and died at Westport, New York, in November, 1875. Jonathan B. Spencer was one of the pioneers in developing the lumber districts of Canada and the western states. He distinguished himself in the War of 1812, and in recognition of his services received a grant of land from the government in the State of Iowa. He married Mary Walker, born April 6, 1802, in Vergennes, died in Westport, in July, 1895, at the age of ninety-three years.

*VII. Frank Spencer Witherbee*, son of Jonathan Gilman and Charlotte (Spencer) Witherbee, was born May 12, 1852, in Port Henry, New York. He received his early education in the schools of his native village, Poughkeepsie Military Academy, and Hopkins Grammar School, New Haven, and graduated from Yale University in 1874 with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Immediately after graduation he travelled extensively, and intended to take a trip around the world, but he was suddenly called home owing to the illness and death of his father. In consequence, he was obliged to forego his ambition to enter a profession which he had marked out for himself, to assume the management of his father's estate, and entered at once upon a business life as a member of the firm of Witherbee, Sherman & Company. He remained actively identified with this business, and upon the incorporation of the company in 1900 he was elected its first president, which position he held at the time of his death. Under Mr. Witherbee's influence and direction the magnetic concentration of iron ore was developed and enlarged until Witherbee, Sherman & Company became the largest producers of magnetically concentrated iron ore in the world. Mr. Witherbee was also instrumental in developing interest in the exportation of Lake Champlain iron ores to Europe.

Until the time of his death he was a member of the board of managers of the American Iron and Steel Institute, of which he was also a charter member. He was also a member of the American Institute of Mining Engineers, the Lake Superior Mining Institute,



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and the Association for the Advancement of Science. A list of the enterprises in which he became an important factor shows a surprisingly varied scope of his activities, and in all he was successful. Mr. Witherbee was president of the Lake Champlain & Moriah Railroad Company and the Cubitas Iron Ore Company, and the vice-president of the Cheever Iron Ore Company. In 1893 he assisted in reorganizing the Troy Steel and Iron Company, a corporation of which he became president, and which erected a large plant on Breaker Island, near Troy, for the manufacture of basic bessemer steel. He was also vice-president of the Tennessee Coal & Iron Company. Both of these companies were merged into the United States Steel Corporation. Mr. Witherbee was a director of the Equitable Life Assurance Society; the Chatham and Phoenix National Bank; the Fulton Trust Company of New York; the Citizens' National Bank of Port Henry, New York, and the Central Hudson Steamboat Company.

Considered from a social and personal standpoint, Mr. Witherbee was a courteous gentleman whose inherent charm of manner and geniality made him a favorite in club life, and he was a popular member of the Union Club, of which he was a governor, and of the Metropolitan, University, Union League, Down Town, Bankers', and Engineers' clubs, and the Delta Kappa Epsilon fraternity. He was also a member of the National Historical Society, the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, the Sons of the Revolution, and a Fellow of the American Geographical Society. In recognition of his services in behalf of the Champlain Tercentenary, he was made a Knight of the Legion of Honor by the French Government in 1912. A staunch Republican, he took an active part in the councils of his party, but never sought preferment. He was a presidential elector and a member of the college that named Harrison and Morton in 1888, also William H. Taft in 1908. For several years he was a member of the Republican State and National committees. Mr. Witherbee was also active in establishing the Adirondack State Park, and was one of a commission appointed by Governor Roosevelt to visit and report on the canals of Europe. The barge canal system of the State of New York was built largely as the result of this report, and Mr. Witherbee always took a keen interest in and rendered much valuable service in securing the development of the State waterways. To fail to allude to Mr. Witherbee's travels would be to omit an interesting phase of his life as bearing upon the character of the man, for he had many of the characteristics of the typical citizen of the world, and this was to be attributed to his extensive travels, not only in this country and Canada, but to comprehensive tours of the Old World as well, invariably being accompanied by Mrs. Witherbee on these wanderings.



## LISPENARD-WITHERBEE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Mr. Witherbee was a member of the Presbyterian church of Port Henry, and was a man of deep religious sentiment. While in New York he was a regular attendant at Grace Church. His religion was unobtrusive, but life-long, and of a very practical type, and he was a liberal contributor to many church and other charities. The death of his only son, a young man of much promise in his twenty-first year, was a blow from which he never recovered.

On April 25, 1883, Mr. Witherbee married Mary Rhinelander Stewart, a daughter of Lispenard and Mary Rogers (Rhinelander) Stewart, and a descendant of Scotch and Huguenot families of distinction (q.v.). Children: 1. Lispenard Stewart Witherbee, born June 1, 1886, in New York City; died Feb. 8, 1907, and in the month of June following his death, Yale University, in appreciation and recognition of his many high qualities, sent to his family his degree of Bachelor of Arts, which would have been conferred upon him at that time had he lived. 2. Evelyn Spencer Witherbee, born July 9, 1889, at Port Henry, New York; married, Aug. 16, 1917, Lieutenant Charles Duncan Miller, of the United States National Army.

Mr. Witherbee's death at his city residence, No. 4 Fifth avenue, April 13, 1917, brought forth many expressions of esteem from the press and the public alike, and he left to his family and friends as his choicest legacy the fragrant memories of a true-hearted man and citizen.







## Van Rensselaer and Allied Families

### Armorial bearings of the Van Rensselaers:

*Arms*—Gules, a cross moline argent.

*Crest*—An iron basket (or cresset); out of which issue flames or, above a closed knight's helmet.

*Mottos*—*Niemand Zonder* (No one without it [the Cross], and *Omnibus effulgeo* (I outshine all).



E VERMONT, in "America Heraldica" (p. 15), gives the crest as "A high basket, from which issue flames; all proper;" but we prefer Mr. Schuyler's description, as he made original investigations in Holland. The Van Rensselaer arms, quartered with the arms of three other families, were emblazoned on one of the stained-glass windows of the old Dutch Church at Albany, underneath them being the following words:

Ian Baptist Van Rensselaer  
Directeur Der Colony Rensselaer  
Wijk 1656

In early times large iron baskets were placed on castles and at other high points, and fires were kindled in them for purposes of illumination—sometimes in celebration of great events. Hence the Van Rensselaer crest. There is a family tradition that on one of these occasions of extraordinary illumination, the Van Rensselaer fires so far outshone all others that the Prince of Orange, in recognition of that circumstance, which corresponded to his estimate of the man, requested the head of the house to substitute for his ancient motto that of *Omnibus effulgeo*—I outshine all.

### *The Family in Holland*

The antiquity of the Van Rensselaer family in Holland is established by many indubitable evidences. The late Eugene Schuyler, a historical writer of high reputation, during a visit to Holland (1879) made researches concerning the origin of the Van Rensselaers, visiting the principal localities connected with their name. They are traceable, he says, to a manor still called Rensselaer, which is situated about three miles southeast of the village of Nykerk in Guelderland (Holland). "It was originally a *Reddergoed*, the possession of which conferred nobility. The estate is now only a farm, all the old buildings having lately been taken down. They were covered with gables and weathercocks of the arms and crest of the fam-



ily. There is scarcely a church in Guelderland that did not have somewhere the Van Rensselaer arms on the tombstones, either alone or quartered with others."

In the Orphan Asylum at Nykerk, established in 1638, there is still preserved a large picture, representing the founders and regents of that institution, among whom was the Jonkheer Jan Van Rensselaer. He is attired in the dress of the Dutch nobility of that day, and above his head are shown the familiar arms of his family.

The branch of the Hollandish family from which the progenitor of the American Van Rensselaers sprang has been traced back for four antecedent generations, as follows:

*I. Hendrick Wolters Van Rensselaer*, married Swene Van Indyck, of Hemegseet. Issue: i. Johannes Hendrick, of whom further. ii. Giertruy, married Advocate Swaaskens. iii. Walter Hendrick. iv. Anna, married Mr. Bygimp. v. Betye, married Mr. Noggen.

*II. Johannes Hendrick Van Rensselaer*, married Derykebia Van Luxoel. Issue: i. Kiliaen, of whom further. ii. Walter Jans.

*III. Kiliaen Van Rensselaer*, married Nelle Van Vrenoken. Issue: i. Hendrick, of whom further. ii. Engeltie, married Gerrit William Van Patten. iii. Claas, married Jacobina Van Schrassens. iv. Johannes, married Sandrina Van Erp, styled Waredenburgh.

*IV. Hendrick Van Rensselaer*, married Maria Pasraet. Issue: i. Kiliaen, the American Patroon. ii. Maria, married Ryckaert Van Twiller.

Hendrick Van Rensselaer, preceding, was a captain in the Dutch army, and was killed at the siege of Ostend, June 9, 1602. His brother Johannes held the same rank and met the same fate (February 7, 1601). There is a monument to their memory in the Protestant Church of Nykerk. It may be added that the Van Rensselaers were long prominent in civil affairs in Holland, members of the family serving as burgomasters, councillors, treasurers, etc., in many towns.

Although, as will be seen below, the family in Holland has long been extinct in the male line, it is still conspicuously represented there in the female descent.

#### *The Family in America*

*I. Kiliaen Van Rensselaer*, the First Patroon of Rensselaerswyck, was a wealthy merchant, and a resident of Amsterdam, Holland. He was one of the organizers and original directors of the Dutch West India Company. He was the only son of Captain Hendrick Van Rensselaer and his wife, Maria (Pasraet) Van Rensselaer, and was born in or about the year 1580, while his father was in garrison at Hasselt. His father was captain of a company of foot soldiers, and died June 6, 1602, at Ostend. His only sister



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Maria married Ryckaert Van Twiller, and was the mother of the noted Wouter Van Twiller, of New Amsterdam. He married (first) Hillegonda Van Bylaer, (second) Anna Van Wely. By his first marriage he had two sons: Hendrick, who died in infancy; Johannes, who became the Second Patroon, but like his father never came to visit the American possessions. He married his cousin, Elizabeth Van Twiller, and died in early manhood, soon after his father. He had a daughter, Nella, who married Johan de Swardt, and a son, Kiliaen, who married his cousin Anna, daughter of his uncle, Jeremias Van Rensselaer, by his wife, Maria (Van Cortlandt) Van Rensselaer.

On the death of his uncle, Jeremias Van Rensselaer, the Director, commonly called the Third Patroon, young Kiliaen was still in his minority. He received in conjunction with his cousin and brother-in-law, Kiliaen, the eldest son of Jeremias, the manor grant of Rensselaerswyck from Governor Dongan, October 17, 1685. He was constituted by this instrument the first lord of the manor. He died at Watervliet in 1687, leaving no children, and his widow married William Nicoll, by whom she had issue. The death of this grandson left the First Patroon without descendants by his first marriage.

By his second marriage, with Anna van Wely, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, the First Patroon, had ten children, five of whom were sons. The eldest was Jan Baptist, who came to America in 1651, accompanied by his brother Ryckaert, or Richard, then a child. This Ryckaert carried on the family in Holland, where there are many descendants now in the female line, since early in the nineteenth century, all occupying excellent social and professional positions.

Jan Baptist Van Rensselaer became Director of the Manor of Rensselaerswyck, May 8, 1652. He retained this office until succeeded by his brother Jeremias, who came over in 1658. He lived in a style befitting his position, having brought over much furniture, silverware, and other personal effects from Holland. The painted glass window representing the Van Rensselaer arms quartered with allied families, was placed by him in the Beverwyck Church. He returned soon afterward to Holland, where he married his cousin, Susanna van Wely, and became one of the leading merchants of Amsterdam, dying there in 1678. He left one son, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, who died in Holland without issue.

*II. Colonel Jeremias Van Rensselaer*, Director of Rensselaerswyck, called the Third Patroon, was the third son of Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, the First Patroon, and his second by the second marriage to Anna van Wely. He was born in Amsterdam, Holland, in 1632, and was called the Third Patroon. He came to the Colony of America in 1658, and devoted the remainder of his life, sixteen years, to the management of the Colony of Rensselaerswyck. He was distinguished for prudence and energy. His influence among the In-





dians was very great. He was presiding officer of the Landtsdagh in 1664, called by Peter Stuyvesant, the first general representative Assembly ever held within the present State of New York. He was known to the French in Canada as one of the ablest men of the Dutch and English colonies. His correspondence with the States General during this term of sixteen years and chronicle of events in America, known as the "New Netherland Mercury," are still preserved among the archives in The Hague, and are considered as authority for that period. He was commissioned "Captain of a Troop of Horse" at Albany, Rensselaerswyck, and Schenectady, September 23, 1670, (O'Callaghan's English Mss., page 6). He married, July 12, 1662, Maria Van Cortlandt, daughter of Oloff Stevense and Annetje (Loockermans) Van Cortlandt and sister of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the founder of Van Cortlandt Manor. She was born in 1645, died January 29, 1689. Jeremias Van Rensselaer died at Rensselaerswyck, October 12, 1674. Issue:

1. Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, second lord of Van Rensselaer Manor, b. Aug. 24, 1663, on the Rensselaerswyck estate; m. Oct. 15, 1701, Maria Van Cortlandt, daughter of Stephanus and Gertrude (Schuyler) Van Cortlandt. Died on the manor, 1719.
2. Johannes Van Rensselaer, died without issue.
3. Anna Van Rensselaer, born 1665; married (first) her cousin, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, first lord of the manor; no issue; (second) William Nicoll.
4. Hendrick Van Rensselaer, see forward.
5. Maria Van Rensselaer, married as her second husband, Peter Schuyler, first mayor of Albany.

*III. Hendrick Van Rensselaer*, son of Jeremias Van Rensselaer, who became proprietor of the "Eastern Manor," comprising Greenbush and Claverack, and was the progenitor of the younger line of the Van Rensselaer family, was born in Watervliet, Albany county, New York, October 23, 1667, died at his residence, Fort Crailo, Greenbush (Rensselaer), New York, opposite Albany, July 4, 1740. Upon the death of Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, the First Patroon, in 1644, his children, under the laws of Holland, succeeded jointly to his estate, the headship of the eldest being recognized, but conferring no right to exclusive inheritance. It was for this reason, that after the surrender to the British in September, 1664, when Jeremias, then Third Patroon and head of the colony, took the oath of allegiance to the new government and, desiring to obtain a new patent in the name of his family, was privately advised to apply as a private individual, and obtain a re-grant of Rensselaerswyck in his personal name, he indignantly refused, saying he was only a co-heir and would not defraud his brothers and sisters. He finally succeeded, however, in obtaining from Governor Andros a patent to the "heirs of Kiliaen Van Rensselaer," which, although in a way only provisional, tided over matters until the erection of the manor by the grant of 1685.

Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, eldest son of Jeremias, entered into nego-





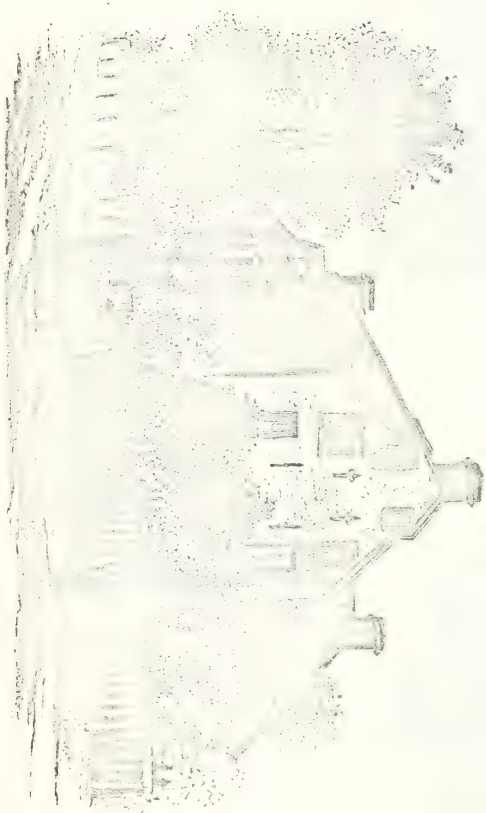
tiations in 1695 with his cousin, Kiliaen of Amsterdam, son of Jan Baptist, who represented the heirs in Holland. Richard Van Rensselaer, his uncle, also revisited America on this errand, and as a result the estate of the First Patroon, which had remained unsettled since his demise, was now amicably divided between the American heirs and the Holland heirs. The American lands which fell to the share of the American grandchildren were then counted of less value than the Holland estates. A new patent to the Manor of Rensselaerswyck was issued by Queen Anne, May 20, 1704, confirming it to Kiliaen by entail on his eldest heirs male. On June 1, 1704, he released to his younger brother, Hendrick, the entire so-called "Lower" or "Eastern" Manor of Claverack, in Columbia county, of sixty thousand acres, together with fifteen hundred acres of the upper manor, which included an island in the Hudson river, and the Greenbush or Crailo tract, one mile square. He also gave land to his sister, Mrs. Peter Schuyler, and his nephew, Rensselaer Nicoll.

By this transfer of property, Hendrick Van Rensselaer came into possession of the fortified residence, or garrison house, known as Fort Crailo, which was so named for the estate of the Patroon, "Crailo," near Huizen, in Holland. There are two stones in the cellar foundation, bearing respectively the inscriptions, "K. V. R. 1642;" and "Do. Megapolensis." This latter name is that of the Dutch minister, Domine Megapolensis, sent over from Amsterdam with his wife and children in the Patroon's ship, *de Houttuyn*, to Beverwyck (later Albany), in June, 1642. Arendt van Curler, who was the Patroon's agent and resided at "The Flatte Greenbush," which he had leased for six years, alludes in a letter, June 16, 1643, to the Patroon having sent out the last year a shipload of stone, bricks and tiles for building and roofing purposes. He gives precise details as to the buildings he has been erecting for the Patroon and the "Domine," and some competent family historians, knowing the Patroon's remarkable faculty for ordering the minutest details of the management of his "Colonie," have suggested that he may have sent over his cornerstones all graven and ready for use by the hand of his Reverence, the well-learned Doctor Johannes. Before the house passed into the possession of its present owner, the stone in the front wall, bearing the name of "Do. Megapolensis," had been much mutilated, so that now only the letters "Do" and "polensis" are legible. The other inscription on the stone in the north wall of the cellar is in perfect preservation and has been carefully covered, as well as the other, to save from relic-hunters.

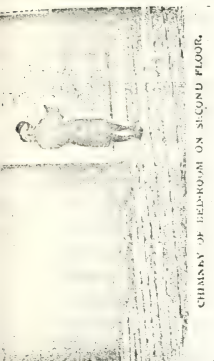
There are actual records of a score of years later which prove that it was certainly standing there in 1663. Brodhead, in his "History of New York," says, that when the Indians attacked and massacred many of the inhabitants of the village of Wiltwyck, on June 17, 1663, the farmers fled to the Patroon's new Fort Crailo at Green-



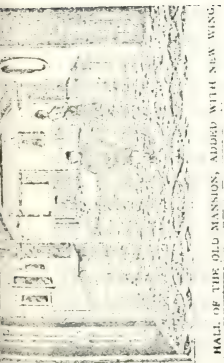
FORT GRANT



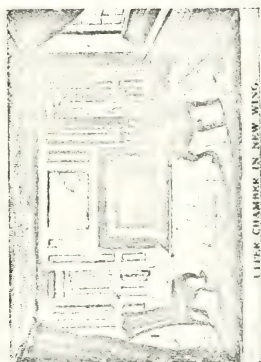




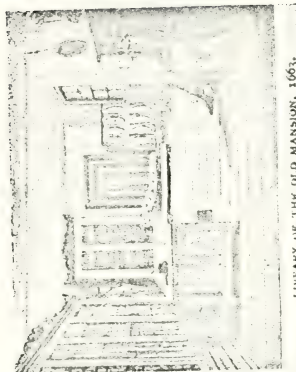
CHIMNEY OF BEDROOM ON SECOND FLOOR.



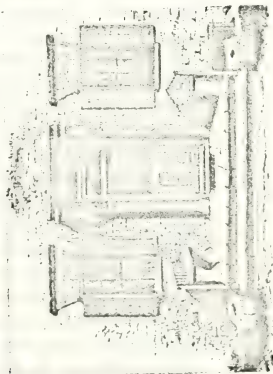
HALL OF THE OLD MANSION, ADDED WITH NEW WING.



LIFE CHAMBER IN NEW WING.



LIBRARY OF THE OLD MANSION, 1663.



THE NORTH DOOR.

INTERIOR VIEWS, OLD GREENBUSH MANOR HOUSE (FORT CRAILO)





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

bush for protection. The names of the garrison of the fort during one of these seasons of panic have been preserved. Arendt Van Curler arrived in one of the Patroon's ships in December, 1637, as "assistant," and was in charge until the Patroon's death in 1646-47, and thereupon leased "the Flatte Greenbush" from the guardians of the young Patroon for six successive years. It is believed that it was erected under Van Curler's administration, and that because of the depredations of the savages it was made as a stronghold, with unusually thick walls, twenty inches at least, and a number of port-holes, nine originally, for muskets, pierced through square stone pieces set into the Holland brick of the walls. Those facing the Hudson river may still be seen, one at either side of the door, and are objects of curiosity. One is preserved in the United States National Museum at Washington, D. C. In alteration and rebuilding during the earlier part of the nineteenth century, the others were taken out and were lost. After the Indians had accomplished their massacre at Wiltwyck, June 17, 1663, the inhabitants, who had found in Fort Crailo a safe refuge, turned to it in later days, and it passed through many sieges. Hendrick Van Rensselaer made it his home upon receiving the property on the east shore, and it is not known what alterations he made in it to fit it for a private residence. But after his death, July 4, 1740, his eldest son and main heir, Col. Johannes Van Rensselaer, greatly enlarged it and built a dining-room to the left, with the large hall and the wing, beside other changes. The initials "J. V. R." were inscribed on a stone at the north door, with another opposite, bearing the date, 1740, and these referred to the changes made by Col. Johannes, who was born at Fort Crailo in 1708, died there in 1783. These changes with others made about 1800 by Hendrick's great-grandson, John Jeremias, increased its size and height so that for a century or more it has not resembled the original house from the eastern viewpoint. The main building comprised originally the western front on the river. There were two large rooms separated by a hall, and a dwelling for the servants a little farther back. This was removed when the new addition was built in 1740. A careful examination of the interior of the building leaves no doubt that the addition of 1740 was many years after the erection of the fort, or main structure, and confirms the statement of its antiquity. The timbers in the cellar of the old building are hewn, and very large, measuring sixteen by eighteen inches. Those of the addition are comparatively small. On the right side of the hall at the north door, the wall is of brick twenty inches wide. On the left of the same hall the partition is only four inches thick. The same difference is seen in the rooms above and in the garret. The house passed in the latter part of the nineteenth century out of the possession of the family, and the surrounding property was sold and much subdivided. The house was finally sold at auction, and



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

was later acquired by Mrs. Susan de Lancey Van Rensselaer Strong, a lineal descendant of Hendrick and Col. Johannes, a great-granddaughter of Brig.-Gen. Robert Van Rensselaer, of Claverack, second son of Col. Johannes, who lived for many years at Fort Crailo. This present owner, Mrs. Alan Hartwell Strong, of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, intends to place it eventually in the care of the University of the State of New York, in order that it may be preserved for the public. \$25,000 is the amount required to cover repairs and general upkeep, and a subscription list has been opened to the friends of such an enterprise with the raising of this amount in view. The following letters indicate how enthusiastically the plan has been received by those upon whom will fall much of the burden of its administration for the greatest public good:

THE UNIVERSITY OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK,  
December 8, 1920.

MY DEAR MRS. STRONG:—I have no hesitation in saying that Fort Crailo, the old Van Rensselaer Manor House opposite Albany, is one of the most important historic houses in New York State. Although the entire structure as it now stands may not have been erected in the seventeenth century, it at least was built in the very early years of the eighteenth, thus making it the oldest manorial mansion in existence in this state. I certainly feel that every step should be taken to preserve this historic mansion as a monument of importance in our history.

Very sincerely yours,

(Signed) JOHN H. FINLEY.

MY DEAR MRS. STRONG:—It interests me to hear of your generous proposal in regard to the old Van Rensselaer Manorial House. I very much hope that a satisfactory way may be found to place this interesting historical monument in the keeping and care of the University of the State of New York.

Very truly yours,

(Signed) NICHOLAS MURRAY BUTLER.

The house and family are closely connected with the stirring events of our country's life, revolutionary as well as colonial. It is said that the lines of "Yankee Doodle" were here composed by the young surgeon, Shackberg, when Gen. James Abercrombie with his staff made Fort Crailo his headquarters on his way to fight Montcalm at Ticonderoga, July 8, 1758. For many years this tradition has endured, but be that as it may, there are many other undoubted facts which point to the house as the cradle of a brave and patriotic stock. In June, 1775, the Continental army held its cantonment in the gardens back of the house, on the way to Ticonderoga, taken by a handful of Americans under Ethan Allen, May 10, 1775. The veteran proprietor, Col. Johannes Van Rensselaer, had ranged himself with the Radicals in the Twenty-first Provincial Assembly as far back as 1737. He was too old himself for active service, but his three sons—Robert, Henry and James—held commissions in the Continental army, as brigadier-general, colonel and major respectively. His youngest brother, Kiliaen, had held a commission as second lieutenant in his brother's company of foot, November 30,



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1743, under the Royal Governor, George Clinton, and received his commission as colonel from George Clinton, Governor of the State of New York, on April 1, 1778. All these, with others too numerous for detailed mention here, were born in Old Fort Crailo, and went in and out on their country's errands until the end of the war. Three sons and eight nephews of Col. Johannes Van Rensselaer served in the Continental army, some with distinction, all with credit. Catherine Van Rensselaer, the only daughter of Col. Johannes Van Rensselaer, and the wife of Maj.-Gen. Philip Schuyler, although born at Claverack in 1734, before her father inherited Fort Crailo, came to live there in her early childhood, was married from the old house, and later built the Schuyler House opposite, on the Flatts below Albany, with the dower given by her father. Hither came Alexander Hamilton, who married her daughter, Elizabeth Schuyler, to visit the grandfather in the old home.

The soil of the tract that Hendrick Van Rensselaer acquired, June 1, 1704, was far richer for farming purposes than that of his elder brother, established at Beverwyck, later Albany, for the latter extended into the rocky formation of the Helderberg range of hills to the southwest of Albany. Hendrick Van Rensselaer was Indian commissioner for thirty years, a member of the Council of Albany and a member of Assembly. Previous to coming into his inheritance, he had endeavored to acquire by purchase from the Indians, in 1698, the Schaghticoke Tract, six miles square, on the Hudson river, but he was opposed in this by the City of Albany, which advanced a claim of previous right of purchase. He eventually resigned the property. Hendrick Van Rensselaer died July 4, 1740.

He married, March 19, 1689, Catherine Van Brugh, daughter of Johannes and Catherine (Roeloffe) Van Brugh, the latter a daughter of the celebrated Anneke Jans. Johannes Van Brugh was a schepen of New Amsterdam, possessing considerable wealth. Issue:

1. Maria Van Rensselaer, married Samuel Ten Broeck.
2. Catherine Van Rensselaer, married Johannes Ten Broeck.
3. Anna Van Rensselaer, married Peter Douw.
4. Elizabeth Van Rensselaer, married John Richard.
5. Helena Van Rensselaer, married Jacob Wendell.
6. Jeremias Van Rensselaer, died young.
7. Johannes Van Rensselaer, see forward.
8. Hendrick Van Rensselaer, b. May 8, 1712, d. July 9, 1793; m. (first) Oct. 16, 1735, Elizabeth Van Brugh; (second) Nov. 20, 1762, Alida (Livingston) Rutsen, widow of Jacob Rutsen, daughter of Gilbert Livingston, youngest son of Robert, Lord of the Manor. Issue (are by first marriage): i. Hendrick, died unmarried. ii. Johannes, died young. iii. Jeremias, b. July 15, 1740, d. Feb. 19, 1810; lieutenant of Second Regiment of New York Line in Revolution; paymaster to end of the war, and lieutenant-governor of New York, 1804-10; m. Helena Lansing; had one son, who did not marry, and three daughters; his eldest daughter Elizabeth m. (as his second wife) Peter E. Elmendorf. iv. Margaretta, m. Francis Nicoll. v. Johannes, b. Sept. 23, 1742, d. June 23, 1802; a commissioned colonel in the Revolution; married Frances Nicoll; no issue. vi. Catherine, m. Harmanus Wendell. vii. David, b. July 18, 1749, d. June 19, 1798; a commissioned major in Revolution; m. Maria Schuyler; no issue. viii. Kilian, twin with





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

David, b. July 18, 1749, d. Dec. 14, 1849; a commissioned lieutenant in Revolution; m. Maria White; two daughters, both married. ix. Peter, b. Dec. 24, 1751, d. April 23, 1816; m. April 7, 1782, Maria Ten Broeck; two of his children married; Elizabeth, m. Wessel Ten Broeck; Henry P., b. Oct. 8, 1794, d. Jan. 25, 1874; m. Jane A. Fort, and had, besides other children, four sons who left issue: Peter, m. Ann Truax; Abram m. Sarah A. How; Vrooman, m. Mary Throop; John, married Eunice A. Power. Charles Van Rensselaer, of Hudson, N. Y., is descended from this line.

9. Kiliaen, of whom further.

IV. *Colonel Johannes Van Rensselaer*, son of Hendrick and Catherine (Van Brugh) Van Rensselaer, was born in Fort Crailo, Greenbush (Rensselaer), New York, February 11, 1708. Being the eldest son, he inherited the Greenbush and Claverack land from his father, and resided there throughout his lifetime. He was a member of the Twenty-first Provincial Assembly of New York, and as such was a pronounced radical. He was appointed captain of a company of foot soldiers, and in time was promoted to be colonel. Although possessing a strong patriotic impulse, he was too aged to participate in the Revolutionary War, but his brother Kiliaen, and three of his sons, besides eight of his nephews, held commissions in the American army, and all rendered valiant service. He allowed his residence to be headquarters of the troops on their way to the north when mustering for the campaign at Ticonderoga. He died in the summer of 1783.

He married (first), January 3, 1734, Angelica Livingston, daughter of Robert Livingston, mayor of Albany; nephew of Robert, First Lord of the Manor. He married (second) Gertrude Van Cortlandt. Issue:

i. Catherine, b. at Claverack, Nov. 4, 1734; m. Sept. 17, 1755, Philip Schuyler, afterwards major-general of American army and United States Senator, who was born at Albany, New York, Nov. 22, 1733, died in the Schuyler Mansion in that city, Nov. 18, 1804, son of Mayor Johannes Schuyler, Jr., and Cornelia (Van Cortlandt) Schuyler. Issue: i. Engeltje (Angelica), bapt. at Albany, Feb. 22, 1756; m. John Barker Church. ii. Elizabeth, b. at Albany, Aug. 9, 1757, d. at Washington, D. C., Nov. 7, 1854; m. at Albany, in the Schuyler Mansion, Dec. 14, 1780, Alexander Hamilton, first Secretary of United States Treasury under President Washington. iii. Margaret, b. at Albany, Sept. 19, 1758, d. there, March 14, 1801; m. at Schuylerville, N. Y., June 6, 1783, Gen. Stephen Van Rensselaer. iv. Cornelia b. at Albany, bapt. there, Aug. 1, 1761, d. young. v. John Bradstreet, b. at Albany, bapt. there, Oct. 8, 1763, died young. vi. John Bradstreet, b. in Schuyler Mansion, Albany, bapt. there, July 23, 1765, d. at Schuylerville, N. Y., Aug. 19, 1795; m. at Albany, Sept. 18, 1787, Elizabeth Van Rensselaer, sister of the Patron. vii. Philip Jeremiah, b. Jan. 20, 1768, d. in New York City, Feb. 21, 1835; m. (first) May 31, 1788, Sarah Rutsen; (second) Jan. 21, 1807, Mary Anna Sawyer. viii. Rensselaer, b. at Albany, Jan. 29, 1773, d. Dec. 16, 1847; m. Eliza Ten Broeck. ix. Cornelia, b. at Albany, Dec. 22, 1776, d. at Philadelphia, July 5, 1808; m. Washington Morton. x. Cortlandt, b. at Albany, May 15, 1778, d. young. xi. Catherine, b. at Albany, Feb. 20, 1781, d. at Oswego, N. Y., Aug. 26, 1857; m. (first) Samuel Malcolm; (second) Major James Cochran.

2. Jeremias, of whom further.

3. Robert, of whom further.

4. Hendrick Johannes, b. Oct. 23, 1742, d. at Claverack Manor, March 22, 1814; was captain of company of foot in British army previous to the Revolution, and in 1777 was commissioned colonel in the Continental forces; m. Nov. 16, 1765, Rachel Douw, daughter of Volckert Petrus Douw. Issue: i. Johannes Hendrick, b. March 8, 1768; m. in 1798, Elizabeth, daughter of Harmanus Wendell, a prominent citizen of Albany.

5. James, of whom further.





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*IV. Kiliaen Van Rensselaer*, son of Hendrick and Catherine (Van Brugh) Van Rensselaer, was born in 1717. He was commissioned colonel of the Fourth Regiment of Albany county militia, April 1, 1778, and member of the State Assembly for several terms, beginning with 1779. He died December 28, 1781.

He married (first) Jan. 1, 1742, Ariantje (Harriet) Schuyler, born March 6, 1720, died Oct. 17, 1763, daughter of Nicholas and Elsie (Wendell) Schuyler. He married (second) Sept. 18, 1769, Maria Low; no issue. Issue by first wife:

1. Hendrick Kiliaen, of whom further.
2. Philip, of whom further.
3. Nicholas, a captain in regiment of Goose Van Schaick, and served until the end of the Revolution.
4. Kiliaen K., of whom further.
5. Catharine, married William Ludlow.
6. Elsie, married Abraham A. Lansing.
7. Maria, married Leonard Gansevoort, Jr.

*V. Jeremias Van Rensselaer*, eldest son of Colonel Johannes and Angelica (Livingston) Van Rensselaer, was born at Fort Crailo, Greenbush, New York, in 1738. He died in 1769.

He married, July 3, 1758, Judith Bayard. Issue: 1. John Jeremias, of whom further.

As Jeremias died before his father, he did not inherit as eldest son. Under the will of Col. Johannes Van Rensselaer the major part of the Claverack estate went to the second son, Brig.-Gen. Robert Van Rensselaer, with ample provision for the other sons, Col. Hendrick K. and Major James. The Greenbush lands with the ancient manor-house, "Fort Crailo," were bequeathed to the youthful grandson, John Jeremias, Volkert P. Douw and Gouverneur Morris being appointed trustees.

*V. General Robert Van Rensselaer*, son of Colonel Johannes and Angelica (Livingston) Van Rensselaer, was born at Fort Crailo, Greenbush (Rensselaer), New York, December 16, 1740. He was named for his maternal grandfather, Robert Livingston, Jr., and throughout his lifetime resided in the Claverack Manor House, having inherited the estate by reason of his elder brother, Jeremias, dying before his father, hence he was the oldest living son and heir. His is perhaps the most distinguished name of the family through its participation in the Revolution. He was commissioned, October 20, 1775, colonel of the Eighth Regiment of Albany county militia, and was made brigadier-general of the second brigade, same militia, June 16, 1780. By orders of his brother-in-law, Gen. Philip Schuyler, he was directed to command the militia which fought at Fort Ticonderoga, and he defeated Sir John Johnson in the celebrated Mohawk valley raid in 1780. He was representative in the New York Provincial Congress from 1775 to 1777, for the district comprising Greenbush and Claverack. From a newspaper printed



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

at the time of his death the following is secured: "Gen. Van Rensselaer was a zealous and active officer during the Revolutionary war, and since the peace has discharged the duties of a military and civil officer with honor to himself and advantage to the community. In private life his virtue secured to him esteem as his public services commanded general approbation. His residence at Claverack Manor was a place of refuge for many afflicted settlers on the Mohawk when flying from the incursions of the Indian allies of the British. To the poor and needy his heart and purse were never closed." He died at the Claverack Manor House, September 11, 1802.

He married, April 23, 1765, Cornelia Rutsen, born in 1747, died January 31, 1790, daughter of Colonel Jacob and Alida (Livingston) Rutsen. Issue:

1. John, b. 1766, died when a young man; married Angelica, daughter of Col. Henry and Rachel (Douw) Van Rensselaer, of Claverack; his widow married John C. Schuyler, and a third husband was Derrick Lane, with son and daughter by the last marriage.

2. Jacob Rutsen, born 1767; resided at Hudson, N. Y.; was associated with Gov. De Witt Clinton in building Erie Canal, and was a member of the legislature; married Cornelia, daughter of Pierre de Peyster. Issue: i. Cornelia, d. young. ii. Pierre, d. young. iii. Cornelia, d. aged nineteen years. iv. Pierre, d. at age of twenty-five years. v. Jacob Rutsen, m. in 1848, Emily Denning, of Fishkill, N. Y., and had a daughter, Emily Denning Van Rensselaer. vi. Robert Schuyler, b. about 1810, d. 1874; resided at Bordentown, N. J.; m. Virginia Kidd. Issue: (a) Virginia, m. Robert Kidd; resides at New Brighton, Staten Island, N. Y.; (b) Robert Schuyler, b. 1851; graduated from Yale; civil engineer; m. Arietta Archer, and had Le Roy Van Rensselaer, and a daughter. vii. Jeremiah, b. 1812, d. at New Brunswick, N. J., July 8, 1874; was interested in railroads, was at one time superintendent of New Haven railroad, and one of the founders of Dodd's Express Company; m. Mary Fleming, daughter of Gilbert Fleming, of Elizabeth, N. J. Issue: (a) James Fleming Van Rensselaer, b. Dec. 4, 1844, d. Jan. 3, 1900; m. Feb. 7, 1866, Annie J. Harriman, sister of Edward Henry Harriman; his widow resides in Dallas, Texas. Issue: i. Jeremiah, b. Oct. 27, 1866; m. Nov., 1889, Virginia Robinson. Issue: Franklin Robinson, b. Aug. 18, 1890; Jeremiah, b. July 27, 1893; William Beverly, b. Oct. 22, 1896, resides in Kansas City, Mo. 2. Cornelia Neilson, b. April 4, 1868. 3. Orlando Harriman, b. March 13, 1870; m. Minnie Louise Kramer. Issue: Robert Schuyler, b. Sept. 19, 1900; Evelyn Lucile, b. April 23, 1902. 4. Rutsen Schuyler, b. March 16, 1872, d. Dec. 31, 1875. 5. Mary Fleming, b. April 18, 1874, d. June 21, 1875. 6. James Fleming, b. Aug. 18, 1875; m. Oct. 8, 1903, Jane Boylan Glover, of Augusta, Ga.; d. in Augusta, 1908. Issue: Katrina, b. June 8, 1905. 7. Anna Harriman, b. Aug. 31, 1877; m. Oct. 8, 1904, Louis Cuthbert Masten, of Omaha, Neb. Issue: Anna Harriman, b. Dec. 20, 1905. 8. Katrina, b. May 29, 1879; m. July 17, 1902, Maurice Edward Ginn, of Boston, Mass. Issue: Katrina Van Rensselaer, b. Sept. 16, 1903, d. Jan. 23, 1905. 9. Mary Frances, b. May 1, 1881; m. Feb. 21, 1906, Rufus Janvier Briscoe, Jr. 10. Robert Schuyler, b. May 27, 1882, d. Dec. 13, 1890. viii. Catherine, died shortly after her father, due to grief.

3. Jeremias, of whom further.

4. Alida, of whom further.

5. Catherine, of whom further.

6. Angelica, of whom further.

7. Henry, of whom further.

8. James, of whom further.

- *V. Major James Van Rensselaer*, youngest son of Colonel Johannes and Angelica (Livingston) Van Rensselaer, was born at Fort Crailo, Greenbush, New York, in 1747. He was aide-de-camp with the rank of captain, on the staff of Maj.-Gen. Richard Mont-



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

gomery, from August to December, 1775, serving through the Canadian campaign at Fort Chambly, St. John's, Montreal and Quebec. In April, 1776, he was commissioned captain in the Second Regiment of the New York Line under Col. James Clinton. From June to August of the same year he was aide-de-camp with the rank of major, to Gen. Philip Schuyler, in the northern army. He was a brother-in-law of Gen. Schuyler, whose wife, born Catherine Van Rensselaer, was his only sister. He died at "Crystal Hill," Albany, New York, February 1, 1827.

He married (first) Catherine Van Cortlandt. He married (second), June 3, 1789, Mrs. Elsie (Schuyler) Bogert, born Feb. 5, 1760, died Sept. 26, 1836. She was the widow of Dr. Nicholas Bogert, of New York City, and daughter of Nicholas and Elsie (Wendell) Schuyler, of New York, and sister of Ariantje Schuyler, who married Colonel Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, youngest son of Hendrick, the head of the line. Issue (by first marriage):

1. John Van Rensselaer, b. at Parsippany, Morris county, N. J., Sept. 9, 1784; m. his cousin, Elizabeth Van Cortlandt, b. March 24, 1787, d. July 2, 1868. He was possessed of large means and occupied a prominent and influential position in Belleville, N. J., where the related families of the Arent Schuyler and Van Cortlandt lines resided. He d. at Belleville, July 26, 1870. Issue: i. James Van Rensselaer, b. April 1, 1811, d. Dec. 1, 1840; m. May 27, 1838, Margaret Duxbury, b. Jan. 5, 1810, d. Oct. 27, 1879. Issue: (a) James Henry Van Rensselaer, b. Jan. 21, 1839, d. July 23, 1893; m. Feb. 7, 1867, Margaret Rutgers Birch, of New Brunswick, N. J., b. March 29, 1843, d. Jan. 8, 1896. Issue: 1. Elizabeth Van Cortlandt Van Rensselaer, b. Jan. 18, 1868; m. Sept. 30, 1903, Charles Frederic Boell, of Lyons, France, b. Sept. 1, 1870. 2. Sarah Schuyler Van Rensselaer, b. Feb. 15, 1870. 3. James Henry Van Rensselaer, b. Feb. 9, 1872; m. Nov. 17, 1897, Florence N. Smillie. Issue: Nancy Adelaide, b. at Newark, N. J., July 31, 1900, d. of appendicitis, May 16, 1911, during her residence with her cousin, Mrs. Alan Hartwell Strong, at "Inwood," New Brunswick, N. J.; Bayard Van Cortlandt, b. Sept. 21, 1904. 4. Marie Antoinette Van Rensselaer, b. March 17, 1874; m. Sept. 14, 1898, Fritz Carl Friedrich Unger, b. Oct. 5, 1866, at Acera, West Africa. Issue: John Van Rensselaer, b. July 13, 1899, d. July 26, 1899; Margaret Van Rensselaer, b. July 9, 1900; Schuyler Van Rensselaer, b. July 24, 1902. 5. Margaret Rutgers, b. Aug. 16, 1879; m. June 4, 1902, Dr. Antonie Phineas Voislavsky, b. in New York City, June 5, 1872, graduated from New York University, B. S., 1894, Dartmouth Medical College, M. D., 1897. Issue: Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. Nov. 20, 1904; Elizabeth Van Rensselaer, b. July 14, 1906. 6. Rebecca Coffing, b. May 9, 1885; m. Sept. 18, 1913, at "Rensselaerwyck," Katonah, N. Y., Clarence Baker Tippet, b. July 24, 1884, at Dover, N. J.; graduated New York University, A. B., 1906; New York Law School, LL.B., 1908. ii. Catherine Van Cortlandt Van Rensselaer, b. June 30, 1834, d. Sept. 20, 1912; m. Oct. 17, 1855, her cousin, Gratz Van Rensselaer. iii. Stephen Van Cortlandt Van Rensselaer, b. March 23, 1836, d. May 20, 1885; m. Oct. 6, 1858, Sarah Schuyler, b. June 22, 1838. Issue: Stephen Van Cortlandt, b. Oct. 20, 1865, d. Sept. 1, 1866.

### Issue (by second marriage):

2. Angelica Van Rensselaer, lived to maturity; never married; a woman of fine ability.

3. Philip Schuyler Van Rensselaer, b. Nov. 28, 1797, died May 8, 1862; m. Sept. 27, 1826, Henrietta Ann Schuyler, b. Aug. 2, 1796, d. Nov. 21, 1875, daughter of John H. Schuyler, and great-granddaughter of Harmanus Schuyler. Issue: i. Gratz Van Rensselaer, b. April 17, 1834, d. Jan. 20, 1890; m. Oct. 17, 1855, Catherine Van Cortlandt Van Rensselaer, b. June 30, 1834, d. Sept. 20, 1912, at Morristown, N. J. Issue: (a) Elizabeth Rutgers, b. June 30, 1857; m. Oct. 2, 1878, George Lawrence Hull, of Morristown, N. J., b. May 8, 1850, d. April 29, 1879. Issue: George Lawrence, b. July 31, 1879; m. June





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

3, 1908, Lucia Viola Lombard, b. Dec. 2, 1880, daughter of Walter Edwin Lombard, colonel of Coast Artillery Corps, M. V. M., b. at Cambridge, Mass., Feb. 27, 1860, and his wife, Nelly Florence (Jones) Lombard, b. at Cambridge, Mass., July 22, 1860. (b) Cortlandt Schuyler, b. Nov. 22, 1859, at Albany, N. Y.; graduated from Hobart College, 1880, and from Columbia University Law School; practiced law in Eau Claire, Wis., and subsequently in New York City, serving there as Assistant United States District Attorney; now identified with financial interests in New York; he is a member of prominent clubs and patriotic societies; married, June 17, 1891, (?) Horace Macaulay, b. March 16, 1864, daughter of William Macaulay, of New York City. Issue: Cortlandt Schuyler, Jr., b. June 10, 1900. (c) John, b. at Belleville, N. J., April 4, 1862; graduated from Hobart College, 1882; a practicing surgeon in Washington, D. C., m. June 1, 1893, Mary Johnston, born May 8, 1872, daughter of Dr. William Waring Johnston and his wife, Effie (Ladd) Johnston, of Washington, D. C. (d) Margaret, b. Dec. 26, 1865. (e) Philip Schuyler, b. Oct. 19, 1870, d. April 16, 1885.

*V. Hendrick Kiliaen Van Rensselaer* (called Henry K.), son of Kiliaen and Harriet (Schuyler) Van Rensselaer, was born July 28, 1744. He was commissioned lieutenant-colonel and colonel in the Revolution, 1764. He "defended Fort Ann with an unequal force with great bravery and obstinacy, in support of the retreat of our troops from Ticonderoga, July, 1777;" was badly wounded at this time and made lame for life. He died in 1816. He married (first) Alida Bratt; (second) in 1796, Nancy G. Simmons.

His son was the second Maj.-Gen. Solomon Van Rensselaer, born at Greenbush, August 6, 1774, died April 23, 1852; who at the age of eighteen served as cornet in Wayne's expedition, was promoted to the command of a troop at the age of twenty, fought with much distinction throughout the war of 1812, and was appointed by Gov. De Witt Clinton brevet major-general of New York militia. He married, January 17, 1797, his first cousin, Harriet Van Rensselaer, daughter of Lieut.-Col. Philip Van Rensselaer and Maria Sanders; they resided at "Cherry Hill," an estate below "The Flatts," which belonged to her (Harriet's) mother. The daughter of Gen. Solomon Van Rensselaer, named Harriet Maria, born February 22, 1816, died January 21, 1897, inherited "Cherry Hill" from her grandmother, Mrs. Philip Van Rensselaer. She married Peter Elmendorf, December 26, 1838, and left a daughter, Harriet Van Rensselaer Elmendorf, born April 15, 1843, who married John Woolworth Gould, June 5, 1878. They reside in Newark, New Jersey; issue: One son, Edmund Westerlo Gould, born March 8, 1881, died Feb. 20, 1907; married, April 15, 1903, Elizabeth L. Tripp; issue, one son, died in infancy, and Catherine Livingston Gould, born Sept. 29, 1905.

*V. Philip Van Rensselaer*, son of Kiliaen and Harriet (Schuyler) Van Rensselaer, was born May 19, 1747. He was lieutenant-colonel in the Revolution on the general staff of the ordnance department, his commission being received from General Philip Schuyler and confirmed by Congress. He had charge of the military stores of the northern department during the war. He was a member of the Committee of Public Safety of Albany. He died March 3, 1798.



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

He was married, Feb. 24, 1768, to Maria Sanders, by Dominie Westerlo, at the home of her grandfather, Peter Schuyler, at "The Flatts." Issue:

1. Robert Sanders Van Rensselaer, b. at "Cherry Hill," Albany, N. Y., Jan. 9, 1773, died Jan. 31, 1832; m. Oct. 9, 1800, Catherine Nicholas Bogart. Issue: i. Harriet Maria, b. Sept. 12, 1827, d. Aug. 15, 1860; m. June 4, 1856, Dr. Alonzo Putnam, b. Oct., 1826, d. Aug. 29, 1892, son of Cornelius H. Putnam, b. Aug. 29, 1796, d. Aug. 12, 1875; m. Oct. 24, 1820, Gazena Visscher Maybee. Issue: (a) Catherine Bogart, b. Feb. 20, 1857; m. June 3, 1884, Edward Watkinson Rankin, b. Aug. 12, 1850, graduated from Princeton University, A. B., 1871, LL.B., Union, 1873. Issue: 1. Edward Elmendorf, b. at "Cherry Hill," Albany, June 16, 1885, graduated from Princeton University, A. B., 1909, A. M., 1911. 2. Herbert Edward, b. at "Cherry Hill," April 15, 1887, graduated from Princeton University, A. B., 1909, A. M., 1911. 3. Emily Watkinson, b. May 14, 1889; graduated from Smith College, A. B., 1911. "Cherry Hill" is now owned and occupied by Mr. Edward W. Rankin, who is a well known lawyer of Albany, his wife being a great-granddaughter of Lieut.-Col. Philip Van Rensselaer, who built the house. It has been carefully restored.

*V. Kiliaen K. Van Rensselaer*, son of Kiliaen and Harriet (Schuyler) Van Rensselaer, was born at Fort Crailo, the Greenbush Manor House, June 9, 1763. He graduated from Yale College; was admitted to the practice of law in New York, in 1784; served as district attorney of Columbia county; was active in military affairs; member of Congress for several terms. He died June 18, 1845.

He married, January 27, 1791, Margaretta Sanders, daughter of John Sanders, of "Scotia," Schenectady county, New York. Issue:

1. John Sanders Van Rensselaer, of Albany, whose son, the late Rev. Maunsell Van Rensselaer, D. D., married ———; issue: Maunsell Van Rensselaer, m. Isabella Mason; issue: Maud W., Bernard S., Arthur M., Alexander T. M., Kiliaen M.; they reside at New London, Connecticut.

2. Caroline, m. Phineas P. Hillhouse, deceased; no issue; she resides at Cambridge, Massachusetts.

*VI. John Jeremias Van Rensselaer*, only child of Jeremias and Judith (Bayard) Van Rensselaer, was born about 1769. He died September 22, 1828.

He married Catharine Glen, who was descended from Alexander Lindsay, of the Glenesk or junior branch of the ancient Scottish family of Lindsay, the head of which is the earl of Crawford. Alexander Lindsay, of the Glen, was born near Inverness, Scotland, about 1610. His family were adherents of the Stuarts, and it was probably for this cause that he left Scotland as a young man and went to Holland, where he entered the employ of the Dutch West India Company. In 1633 he was sent to America under the name of Sander Leendertszen Glen, Lindsay having been transformed into the Dutch patronymic of Leendertszen, or son of Leonard. When the English rule came in, he resumed his former name, but called himself Alexander Lindsay Glen, and by this second change the surname of Glen became attached to his family and the Lindsay was dropped. He became one of the most influential citizens of Albany, and was one of the founders of Schenectady. About



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1658 or 1659 he built a fine mansion on the north bank of the Mohawk, near Schenectady, which he named "Scotia," after his mother country. He died at "Scotia," in October, 1685. His wife was Catherine Dongan, who died at "Scotia," in 1684. His eldest son was Jacob Glen, born 1645, died October 2, 1685, who married Catharine Van Whitbeck, in 1674. She was the daughter of Jan Thomas Van Whitbeck, of Albany, died 1678, and his wife, Gertrude Andriese. Issue of John Jeremias and Catharine (Glen) Van Rensselaer:

1. Catharine Glen, d. 1806; m. Nanning Visscher, son of Col. Visscher, of British army; no issue.
2. John Jeremias, died young.
3. Jeremias, b. 1706, d. 1871; he was a well known physician, and is said to be the first American to make the ascent of Mont Blanc. He m. (first) Charlotte Foster; (second) Anne F. Waddington; no issue by second marriage. Issue (by first marriage): i. Jeremias, b. 1824, d. 1806; m. Julia Jaudon. Issue: Augustus Van Cortlandt, m. Mabel L. Watts; resides in Pittsfield, Mass.; child, Peyton K., m. Mabel G. Mason, resides in Boston. ii. Francis, b. 1829, d. 1871; m. 1851, Anne G. Moore. Issue: Foster, d. 1871; Glen, b. 1867, d. 1889.
4. Glen, b. 1768, d. 1871; never married.
5. Cornelius Glen, b. 1801, d. June, 1871; m. Oct. 31, 1826, Catharine Westerlo Bleecker, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Van Rensselaer) Bleecker (Mrs. John Bradstreet Schuyler), who was the daughter of the Patroon, Stephen Van Rensselaer III. Issue: i. John, d. young. ii. Stephen Bleecker, d. young. iii. Cornelia, b. 1831, m. 1856, Rev. Cornelius Winter Bolton, who d. at Peiham, N. Y.; she d. at Vlie House, Rensselaer, N. Y.; no issue. iv. Katharine Westerlo, b. Oct. 22, 1834; resides at Vlie House, Riverside avenue, Rensselaer, N. Y. v. John, b. 1836; a well known physician; m. 1864, Florence Taylor. Issue: Lindsay, b. 1870; m. Lolita Coffin, and had Catharine Glen and Florence. vi. Visscher, d. July, 1912; a civil engineer; m. Sept. 3, 1866, Mary Augusta Miller. Issue: (a) Katharine Westerlo, b. Sept. 3, 1857, d. Feb. 12, 1896, m. Jan. 23, 1894, at Vlie House, Rensselaer, N. Y., Benjamin Walworth Arnold, of Albany, N. Y. Issue: Katharine Van Rensselaer, b. Jan. 18, 1856. (b). Cornelius Glen, b. Sept. 24, 1869; an architect; m. 1896, Genevieve Pessell. Issue: Katharine Stewart, b. 1903, d. 1910; Justine Bayard, b. 1907. (c). Cornelia Livingston, b. June 5, 1879; m. March 21, 1900, Hon. Theodore Strong, of New Brunswick, N. J., third son of Hon. Woodbridge and Harriet Anne (Hartwell) Strong, and brother of Alan Hartwell Strong; he graduated at Rutgers College in 1883, was admitted to the bar of New Jersey as an attorney in June, 1886, and as counselor in June, 1889; he was State Senator (Republican) from Middlesex county from 1901 to 1904, and served two terms as member of the State Board of Railroad Assessors; he was a member of the Republican State Committee in 1896 and for many successive years, and has always been a prominent and active local leader of his party; after the appointment of his brother, Alan H. Strong, as general attorney of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, he succeeded him in September, 1912, as solicitor of that company for the 63rd, 64th and 65th districts. Issue: Theodore, b. at New Brunswick, N. J., Nov. 16, 1902; Katharine Van Rensselaer, b. at New Brunswick, Nov. 10, 1904; Stephen Van Rensselaer, b. at New Brunswick, Nov. 30, 1906; Benjamin Ruggles Woodbridge, born at "Stronghold," New Brunswick, May 17, 1910; ———, born at "Stronghold," New Brunswick, April 30, 1912.

*VI. Jeremias Van Rensselaer*, third son of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, was born at Fort Crailo, the Greenbush Manor House, New York, 1769. He resided for many years at Utica, New York, where he was one of the most prominent and wealthy citizens. He was the head of the firm of Van Rensselaer & Kane, long engaged in the West Indian trade as importers of sugar, coffee and spices, as well as carrying on a great





business in the transportation of grain from the western states. A branch of the house was located at St. Croix, West Indies, under the charge of the Codwises, of New York, related by marriage to the Kanes, with John (Kane) Cullen, brother of Mrs. James Van Rensselaer, Jr., as resident partner there and at Aux Cayes, where he died January 5, 1819. Soon after, in one of the financial panics which prostrated the trade of the country, the firm of Van Rensselaer & Kane failed. Although Mr. Cullen died possessed of considerable wealth, as evidenced by his will and from the letter of his agents to Mr. Joseph Kernochan, his friend and executor, his affairs after his sudden death from a malignant West Indian fever were never disentangled from the general account of the firm, and his heirs, who were his sister and her children, never realized the bequest of his entire estate, which appears in his will, copied in the Calendar of Wills, published through the efforts of the Colonial Dames of New York. After the failure of the firm, Jeremias Van Rensselaer removed to Canandaigua, New York, the home of his son-in-law, Hon. Francis Granger, and died there in January, 1827.

He married, about 1797, Sybil Adeline Kane, daughter of John and Sybil (Kent) Kane, of Albany, New York, and had eight children. This marriage carried on a family relationship of much interest, and the close and intimate ties then formed have in many cases persisted until the present writing, more than a hundred years. As will be seen, Alida Van Rensselaer, a sister of Jeremias, married, in 1794, Elisha Kane, a brother of Sybil Adeline Kane. The younger brother of Jeremias, James Van Rensselaer, Jr., kept up this family connection by marrying, May 1, 1811, Susan de Lancey Cullen, daughter of Charles Cullen by his wife, Lucy (Kent) Cullen, daughter of Rev. Elisha Kent and sister of Mrs. Sybil (Kent) Kane.

When John Kane (O'Kane), born in County Antrim, Ireland, December 12, 1734, came to America, in November, 1752, he was accompanied by an intimate friend, Charles Cullen, of County Ulster. They both entered into business, acquired valuable landed possessions in Dutchess county, and prospered. For sixteen years from 1760 to the outbreak of the Revolution, they occupied their own residences within twelve miles of each other, Charles Cullen living a mile south, and John Kane ten miles north of the house of their joint father-in-law, the Rev. Elisha Kent, a graduate of Yale College, and a Presbyterian minister, who in 1740 had settled "on the oblong," afterwards the town of South East, near Carmel, later Putnam county, New York. They married sisters, daughters of the Rev. Elisha and Abigail (Moss) Kent. John Kane married Sybil Kent in 1756, but Lucy Kent, who was the youngest of four daughters, was not married to Charles Cullen until Sunday, "day of the month forgotten, 1768," as per a letter written to her grandson, John Cullen Van Rensselaer, by her nephew, Chancellor James





Kent, June 1, 1846. The other children of the Rev. Elisha and Abigail (Moss) Kent were: Mary Kent, married Malcolm Morrison, a Scotchman and loyalist; Sarah Kent, married Major Grant of the British army, who fell at the storming of Fort Montgomery, and Moss Kent, father of the famous Hon. James Kent, chancellor of the State of New York, and author of "Kent's Commentaries." All of this happy, prosperous and respected family connection lived in the close neighborhood of each other until dispersed by the shipwreck of the Revolution, the Rev. Elisha Kent alone excepted, as he died in 1776.

John Kent and Charles Cullen were ruined by the Revolution. The former threw in his lot with the loyalists, as did also the intimate friend of the whole family, Lieut.-Gov. James de Lancey. John Kane, with Lord Dunmore and others, was attained by a special act of the New York Legislature with others, passed October 22, 1779. His property was forfeited to the State. He went to England, sending his family to Halifax, Nova Scotia. They remained away for eight years. He died March 15, 1808, at the home of his son-in-law, Gilbert R. Livingston, at Red Hook, Dutchess county, New York.

Charles Cullen also lost heavily by the war, but not sharing the family adhesion to the mother country, he escaped the fate of attainer and exile. He remained unmolested and lived on his means, out of all business, until the end of the war. His resources were then much exhausted, and he removed to a farm owned at Carmel, in the new county of Putnam. He there built a very good house, where he died in November, 1787.

The Rev. Elisha Kent removed from Newtown, Connecticut, his first charge, in 1740, and settled at South East, near Carmel. Mrs. Sybil (Kent) Kane was born at Newtown, July 19, 1739, died at Albany, New York, July 18, 1806. Her sister, Mrs. Lucy (Kent) Cullen, was born in 1745 at South East, died at Carmel, 1798, at the age of fifty-three years.

Owing to the great intimacy between the Kent and de Lancey families which may have arisen from a now untraceable relationship through the Heathcotes and other English lines of the Kents to the de Lanceys, the two Kent sisters named their daughters after the sisters, Martha and Susan de Lancey, unmarried daughters of Lieut.-Gov. James de Lancey and his wife, Ann (Heathcote) de Lancey, daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, of Scarsdale Manor, Westchester county, New York. Mr. and Mrs. Kane named their second son Charles after Mr. Cullen, and their third son was named Oliver de Lancey, after the distinguished British officer and loyalist, brother of Lieut.-Gov. de Lancey, for whom the fifth son received the name of James.

On the death of Mrs. Lucy (Kent) Cullen, in 1798, her sister,



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Mrs. Kane, took her only surviving daughter, Susan de Lancey Cullen, then twelve years of age, to her home in Albany. There the young niece was brought up as a daughter until Mrs. Kane's death, in 1806, when, by her aunt's desire, she went to live with Mrs. Kane's fourth daughter, Mrs. Jeremias Van Rensselaer (Sybil Adeline Kane), in Utica, New York, where, on May 1, 1811, she married James Van Rensselaer, Jr., and became her cousin's sister-in-law.

The children of Charles and Lucy (Kent) Cullen were:

1. Charles, died unmarried before his mother's death.
2. Martha de Lancey, died at age of sixteen, July, 1792, a beautiful and charming girl, well remembered by Chancellor Kent.
3. John (Kane), named after his uncle by marriage and his father's friend, died unmarried, Jan. 5, 1819, at Aux Cayes, West Indies.
4. Susan de Lancey, born Oct. 14, 1786, at South East Putnam county, N. Y., died June 23, 1863, at "Brookside," New Brunswick, N. J.; married in the First Presbyterian Church, Utica, New York, May 1, 1811, James Van Rensselaer, Jr., youngest son of Brigadier-General Robert Van Rensselaer, of Claverack, New York.

John (Kane) Cullen, when left orphaned with his sister, was also practically adopted by his uncle and aunt, Mr. and Mrs. John Kane, and received an excellent education. When of sufficient age, showing a remarkable aptitude for business, he was taken into the firm of Van Rensselaer & Kane and became one of the West Indian partners.

The wealthy New York and West Indian merchant, George Codwise, Sr., became closely connected with the house of Van Rensselaer & Kane by marriage as well as in business. His daughter, Maria Codwise, married John Kane, 2d, the brother of Mrs. Jeremias Van Rensselaer, and his son, David Codwise, married Martha Livingston, whose mother was Martha de Lancey Kane, daughter of John and Sybil (Kent) Kane, and wife of Gilbert R. Livingston. This family connection was carried on to another generation, as is shown by the fact that his granddaughter, Cornelia Josepha Codwise, daughter of George, Jr., and Mary (Byvanck) Codwise, married, May 17, 1838, John Cullen Van Rensselaer, only son of James Van Rensselaer, Jr., and his wife, Susan de Lancey (Cullen) Van Rensselaer. Thus the family of Van Rensselaer, Cullen, Kent, Kane and Codwise were closely related, more so than was usual even in those days of intermarriage. And yet, in none of these cases, did they marry blood relations, but the marriages of so many brothers and sisters into the same families made a great number of double first cousins, and the family intercourse was most delightful. In one family alone, that of the writer's father, there were sixty first cousins. (Communicated by Susan de Lancey Cullen Van Rensselaer Strong, Mrs. Alan Hartwell Strong).

Issue of Jeremias and Sybil Adeline (Kane) Van Rensselaer:

1. Cornelia Rutsen Van Rensselaer, b. at Utica, N. Y., 1798; m. May 20, 1817, Francis Granger, b. 1792, died 1868; Postmaster-General of United States in 1841; she



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

died Dec. 29, 1823. Issue: i. Cornelia Adeline (always known as Adele), b. Sept. 17, 1819, d. June 16, 1892; m. (first) John E. Thayer, elder brother of Nathaniel Thayer, who married Cornelia. (daughter of Stephen Van Rensselaer, of Albany). Issue: Adele Granger, b. Nov. 20, 1857, now resides in Boston; unmarried. She married (second) Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, of Boston; no issue. ii. Gideon, b. Aug. 30, 1821, at Canandaigua, N. Y.; died Sept. 3, 1868; m. June, 1850, Isaphine Pierson, of Canandaigua, N. Y., b. Dec. 6, 1826, in New York, d. Oct., 1905. Issue: Cornelia Van Rensselaer, b. 1851, d. 1859; Antoinette Pierson, b. Dec. 31, 1853. Isaphine Pierson, b. July 17, 1855.

2. Alida Van Rensselaer, b. in Utica, N. Y., 1800, d. at "The Hermitage," Mount Morris, Livingston county, N. Y., March 8, 1832; m. May 9, 1820, Judge Charles Holker Carroll, b. May 4, 1794, d. July 22, 1805, a descendant of the Carrolls of Carrollton. Issue, six children, of whom only two survived to maturity and had descendants, as follows: i. Cornelia Granger, b. at "The Hermitage," Mount Morris, Aug. 4, 1826, d. June 6, 1909; m. May 15, 1850, Edward Philo Fuller, b. Oct. 29, 1819, d. June 10, 1886; they resided at Grand Rapids, Mich. Issue: (a) Sophia Fuller, b. Oct. 14, 1854, at "The Grove," near Mount Morris, Livingston county, N. Y.; m. April 26, 1876, Edwin Forrest Sweet, one-time mayor of Grand Rapids; elected member of 62nd Congress (Democrat), Nov., 1910; appointed Assistant-Secretary of Commerce, March, 1913. Issue: 1. Carroll Fuller Sweet, b. June 24, 1877; graduated at Yale, 1899; m. Agnes Callahan, Feb. 14, 1908; issue: Carroll Fuller, Jr., b. Dec. 11, 1912. 2. George Philo Sweet, b. Nov. 4, 1881; graduated at the University of Michigan, 1904; m. Jessie Louise Ellicott, April 27, 1907; issue: Joseph Ellicott, b. Feb. 16, 1908, d. Aug. 24, 1911; Jessie Ellicott, b. Aug. 23, 1912. 3. Sidney Edward Sweet, b. Aug. 31, 1883; graduated at Yale, 1905; graduated at Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge, Mass., 1908; ordained priest, May 16, 1909; m. Elta Mae Armstrong, Sept. 3, 1907; issue: Edwin Armstrong, b. Sept. 11, 1910; Sidney Edward, Jr., b. April 9, 1913. 4. Cornelius Van Rensselaer Sweet, b. Nov. 5, 1885; graduated at Dana Hall, Wellesley, 1910. (b) Philo Carroll Fuller, b. March 19, 1857; graduated at Yale, 1881; resides in Grand Rapids, Mich.; m. (first) Nov. 25, 1882, Harriet Isabel Gilbert, d. March 13, 1890. Issue: Kate Gilbert Fuller, b. Oct. 12, 1884; m. Rankin Johnson, Nov., 1911; no issue. Margaret Carroll Fuller, b. March 7, 1886; m. Robert Johnston, 1909; issue: Isabelle Gilbert, Sarah Martin Adams, Edward Philo Fuller, b. July 1, 1887, unmarried. Philo C. Fuller married (second) Laura Sluyter, Feb. 18, 1909. ii. Anne E. Carroll, born at "The Hermitage," May 11, 1828, died at the residence of her sister, Mrs. Fuller, in Grand Rapids, Mich.; m. Dec. 24, 1849, William D. Fitzhugh, of "Hampton," Mount Morris, Livingston county, N. Y. Issue: a. Anne Fitzhugh, b. 1850; m. Hamilton Mercer Wright; resides in Bay City, Mich.; issue: (a) Virginia Wright, m. Dr. Thomas Leiper Kane, of Kane, Pa., their children being: Thomas Leiper Kane, Elizabeth Dennistoun Kane, Archibald Van Rensselaer Kane, and Sibil Kent Kane. (b) Hamilton Mercer Wright, Jr., m. Elizabeth Pease, their children being: Hamilton Mercer Wright and Eugene Wright. (c) Sybil Katherine Wright, m. Dr. George S. McLandress, child, Virginia McLandress. (d) Cornelia Fitzhugh Wright. (e) Archibald Van Rensselaer Wright. (f) Charles Carroll Wright. (g) Alida Fitzhugh Wright. (h) William Edward Wright. (b) Alida Catharine Fitzhugh, died in Texas. (c) Carroll Fitzhugh, died in 1880. (d) Cornelia F. Fitzhugh, m. Richard Field Conover, of Princeton, N. J.; they reside in Bay City, Mich.; issue: Carroll Fitzhugh Conover, b. Feb. 8, 1890; Helen Field Conover, b. March 21, 1898; Alida Van Rensselaer Conover, b. Feb. 6, 1900. (e) Edward F. D. Fitzhugh, graduated at Harvard; chemist.

3. Catharine Schuyler Van Rensselaer, b. 1802, d. about 1873; unmarried; lived at "The Hermitage," where she died; she was a second mother to her Carroll nieces.

4. Robert Van Rensselaer, b. about 1805, d. about 1840; m. Margaret Stuyvesant; no issue.

5. Archibald Kane Van Rensselaer, b. about 1808; unmarried.

6. Jacob Rutsen Van Rensselaer, b. about 1811, d. about 1840; m. Virginia Hutchins, of Norfolk, Va.; one son, Archibald Van Rensselaer, died at the age of seven years. His widow married (second) Hamilton Wright, of New Orleans; her children were: Hamilton Mercer Wright, m. Anne Fitzhugh; Nina Wright, m. the Marquis de Podestad.

7. James Carnahan Van Rensselaer, never married.

8. Jeremiah Van Rensselaer, m. Mary Hartwell, of Detroit, Mich.; no issue known.





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*VI. Alida Van Rensselaer*, fourth child of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, of Claverack Manor, born about 1772.

She died in March, 1799. She married, in 1794, Elisha Kane, fourth son of John and Sybil (Kent) Kane, born in Albany, New York, December 2, 1770, died, in Philadelphia, December 4, 1834. Issue:

1. Hon. John Kintzing Van Rensselaer, of whom further.
2. Alida Van Rensselaer, married John Constable, as his second wife; no issue.

*VI. Catherine Van Rensselaer*, fifth child of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, was born about 1775. She died February 2, 1867.

She married, in 1807, as his second wife, John Arent Schuyler, of Belleville, N. J., born April 12, 1779, died at Belleville, Oct. 12, 1817. He married (first) in 1800, Eliza Kip, daughter of James H. Kip, and had issue by her: (1) Arent Henry, born Nov. 25, 1801, died May 19, 1878; married, April 24, 1828, Mary Caroline Kingsland, and had ten children, one of whom was John Arent Schuyler, born Feb. 19, 1831, married, Jan. 14, 1863, Kate Mancini, widow of Robert Van Rensselaer Schuyler (his half-brother), their son being the present Sidney Schieffelin Schuyler, born August 25, 1864, married (first) Dec. 12, 1894, Cora Anderson, one daughter, Marion Van Rensselaer Schuyler, born Jan. 14, 1896; married (second), July 15, 1903, Helene G. Abry; one son, Van Rensselaer Schuyler, born April 29, 1905, and named after his half-uncle, the son of Robert Van Rensselaer and Kate (Mancini) Schuyler. (2) Harriet Ann Schuyler, born January 31, 1803, married, Dec. 19, 1822, Smith W. Anderson. Her granddaughter, Harriet Anderson Clark, married William Gordon Ver Planck, of New York, and has issue, a daughter, Margarita Schuyler Ver Planck.

Issue of John Arent and Catherine (Van Rensselaer) Schuyler:

1. Angelica Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. 1810, d. March, 1864; "a woman of fine abilities and great strength of character."
2. John Arent Schuyler, b. 1811, d. Nov. 21, 1855; m. Frances Elizabeth Bleeker, daughter of Alexander Bleeker, of Brooklyn, New York; no issue.
3. Robert Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. 1813, d. Feb. 10, 1855; m. Kate Mancini, daughter of Angelo Mancini, of New York. Issue: Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. July 27, 1852; resides in New York City; m. June 26, 1899, Ethel Cornelia Paul, daughter of Cornelius Daniorth Paul, of New York City.
4. Catharine Gertrude Schuyler, b. Jan. 15, 1815, d. Oct. 8, 1881; m. Oct. 4, 1838, Henry S. Craig; no issue.
5. Jacob Rutsen Schuyler, b. Feb. 23, 1816, d. Feb. 4, 1887; head of firm of Schuyler, Hartley & Graham, manufacturers of arms for the United States government during the Civil War, with works at Bridgeport, Conn.; resided at Bergen Point, N. J.; now Bayonne; m. Nov. 18, 1847, Susanna Haigh Edwards, d. Jan., 1870, a descendant of Rev. Timothy Edwards. Issue: i. Sarah Edwards Schuyler, b. April 6, 1849, d. May 30, 1897. ii. Katharine Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. Aug. 13, 1855, d. Dec. 10, 1892; m. March 20, 1879, Henry Thornton Imbrie, of Jersey City. Issue: Henry Thornton Imbrie and Schuyler Imbrie. iii. Rutsen Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. Feb. 4, 1857; m.



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(first) Augusta H. Mellick; (second), April 3, 1889, Mary Amelia Hall; issue, by first marriage: Rutsen Van Rensselaer Schuyler, Jr., and Sarah Edwards Schuyler; by second marriage: Marguerite Van Rensselaer Schuyler and Janet Smiley Schuyler. iv. Edwards Ogden Schuyler, b. May 23, 1803, d. Jan. 4, 1905; m. Oct. 12, 1887, Georgia A. de Fontaine; issue: Katharine Van Rensselaer Schuyler and Sarah Edwards Schuyler. v. Susanna Edwards Schuyler, b. March 10, 1805, d. Jan. 10, 1913; m. Feb. 8, 1887, Nicholas Butler, now president of Columbia University; issue: Sarah Schuyler Butler. vi. Angelica Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. Jan. 23, 1870; m. Oct. 5, 1892, Lie Lagnal Haigh; issue: Angelica Van Rensselaer Haigh, Rebecca MacRae Haigh, Thomas Deverux Haigh; resides at Summit, New Jersey.

*VI. Henry Van Rensselaer*, fourth son of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, born November 8, 1775, resided near Hudson, New York, his family removing after his death to Poughkeepsie. He died November 19, 1852.

He married, November 30, 1800, Catharine D. Hoffman, sister of Samuel Ver Planck Hoffman, and aunt of the late Rev. Eugene A. Hoffman, D. D. She was born January 14, 1779, died December 31, 1863. Issue:

1. Cornelia Rutsen Van Rensselaer, d. Nov. 21, 1861; m. Robert B. Rutgers; issue: Margaret Bayard Rutgers, m. Norman Finlay, and had seven children.
2. Catharine Hoffman Van Rensselaer, b. 1803, d. May 4, 1889.
3. Alida Van Rensselaer, b. 1805, d. Feb. 13, 1864.
4. Angelica Van Rensselaer, b. 1807, d. May 23, 1881; m. Rufus Reed; no issue.
5. Charlotte M. Van Rensselaer, b. 1811, d. Dec. 6, 1855.
6. Adeline Van Rensselaer, b. about 1813, d. 1887.
7. Harriet Van Rensselaer, b. about 1816, d. Jan. 3, 1879.
8. Harman Robert Van Rensselaer, b. about 1817, d. Aug. 28, 1855.

*VI. Angelica Van Rensselaer*, daughter of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, was born about 1785, died at "Mount Schuyler," the residence of her sister, Mrs. John Arent Schuyler, November 23, 1818. Married, February 11, 1813, Rev. Thomas Yardley How. Issue: 1. Robert Field, born November 15, 1813, died at Brownville, New York, August, 1835. 2. Jacob Rutsen Van Rensselaer, born December 6, 1814, died at Auburn, New York, May 12, 1865. 3. Angelica Van Rensselaer, born April 23, 1817, died in Auburn, New York, February, 1901; married Judge Hulbert, of Auburn; no issue.

*VI. James Van Rensselaer*, fifth and youngest son of Brigadier-General Robert and Cornelia (Rutsen) Van Rensselaer, was born in the Claverack Manor House, December 1, 1783. He resided during the greater part of his life at Utica, New York, where he was a member of the house of Van Rensselaer & Kane, but in 1835 he removed to Indiana with his family and decided to locate there. Consequently he purchased a large tract in Jasper county, and on June 11, 1836, the title to the Falls of the Iroquois was made out in his name. Shortly afterward the town was laid out and incorporated as Rensselaer by Act of Legislature on February 18, 1840. Many of the streets bear the names of members of his family. He was an active and broadminded citizen, built mills, established a



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Presbyterian church, and was deeply regretted when he died. To this day the children of his old associates remember him with regard. On his death his wife and daughters returned to New York. His son, John Cullen Van Rensselaer, and son-in-law, Henry Weston, were associated with him in the western enterprise and for many years kept up a business connection there. In late years the Daughters of the American Revolution have established a chapter in his town and have named it for his father, the General Van Rensselaer Chapter. James Van Rensselaer is buried close to the church which he founded and for which he gave the land. There is a monument placed to his memory. He died at Rensselaer, Indiana, March 12, 1847.

He married, at Utica, New York, May 11, 1811, Susan de Lancey Cullen, youngest daughter of Charles Cullen, from County Ulster, Ireland, and his wife, Lucy (Kent) Cullen, youngest daughter of Rev. Elisha and Abigail (Moss) Kent, of Carmel, Putnam county, New York. She was born October 14, 1786, died at New Brunswick, New Jersey. Issue:

1. John Cullen Van Rensselaer, of whom further.
2. Cornelia Rutsen Van Rensselaer, b. at Utica, N. Y., July 24, 1813, d. at New Brunswick, N. J., Jan. 10, 1906. "She was a woman of rare qualities of mind and heart. Her noble and unselfish character displayed throughout her long and useful life endeared her to a large circle of friends who will cherish her memory as that of a faithful and exemplary Christian."
3. Susan de Lancey Cullen Van Rensselaer, b. at Utica, N. Y., Dec. 7, 1816, d. at Belvidere, N. J., Sept. 22, 1870; m. at Utica, N. Y., Aug. 20, 1839, Henry Weston, b. Feb. 12, 1806, at Sandy Hill (now Hudson Falls), N. Y., d. in New Brunswick, N. J., July 1, 1880. He was at one time a wealthy merchant, and was vice-president of the Washington Fire Insurance Company of New York City. His active business career was terminated by the great losses due to the Chicago fire. He resided in New York City for many years with a summer home first in Metuchen, and afterwards bought from William Ver Planck Hoffman, "Bellevue," on the Raritan river road opposite New Brunswick. This estate, which he greatly improved, has passed through several hands, and was bought in recent years by Robert Johnson, of the firm of Johnson & Johnson, manufacturers of surgical supplies. Issue: i. Van Rensselaer Weston, b. March 23, 1842, at Rensselaer, Ind., died there May 7, 1842, and is interred beside his grandfather, James Van Rensselaer. ii. Robert Willoughby Weston, b. Aug. 23, 1843, at Rensselaer, Ind., died at Clifton Springs, N. Y., April 26, 1902; he was a successful cotton and stock broker; he was a man of unusual musical talent, possessed of a remarkably fine baritone voice, splendidly cultivated, which might have made his fortune as a professional; he was also endowed with great personal charm of appearance and manner, in which he resembled his maternal uncle, of whom below; he married (first) at New Brunswick, N. J., Oct. 26, 1875, Katharine Van Nest Janeway, b. March 21, 1852, d. at New Brunswick, N. J., Oct. 11, 1900. Issue: Henry Janeway Weston, b. July 30, 1876, d. at New Brunswick, N. J., June 7, 1898. He married (second) Charlotte (Nicoll) Minton, sister of De Lancey Nicoll, of New York City; no issue. iii. Rensselaer Weston, b. May 23, 1846, at Rensselaer, Ind.; graduated at Rutgers College, 1863; resides in New York City, and in Kentucky; interested in stock-raising and horse-breeding. iv. James Cronkhite Weston, b. at Metuchen, N. J., Dec. 8, 1840; graduated at Rutgers College, 1870; civil and mining engineer: m. (first) Sept. 2, 1864, at Cornwall, N. Y., Harriet Matthiessen. Issue: Theodora De Witt Weston, b. Aug. 26, 1865, at Galena, Alturas county, Idaho. He m. (second) at Cobalt, Ontario, Canada, April 29, 1909, Rachel Elizabeth Harris, daughter of De Villiers Harris, of Capetown, South Africa; resides at Haileybury, Ontario, and is connected with the American Smelting and Refining Company. v. Henry de Eresby Weston, b. at Metuchen, N. J., April 17,





## AN INDEX VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1852; graduated at Rutgers College, 1873; lawyer; corporation counsel; resides in New York City.

4. Angelica (called Engeltie) Schuyler Van Rensselaer, born in Utica, N. Y., in 1817, died at Philadelphia, Pa., July 12, 1874. The niece whom she taught and trained from earliest youth. Mrs Strong, has said of her "that she was one to whom long years of suffering, borne from childhood with heroic patience, taught the way of the Holy Cross, kindling in her such a flame of ardent devotion that the memorials left by the brilliant mind which dominated the frail body, read like the saints of old."

*VII. Hon. John Kintzing Kane*, son of Elisha and Alida (Van Rensselaer) Kane, was born in Albany, New York, May 16, 1795. He graduated from Yale College in 1814, studied law, and engaged in professional practice in Philadelphia, his parents having moved from Albany to the former city in his early boyhood. He entered the field of active politics, became a staunch supporter of the Democratic party, and was one of the most influential men of his time in the State of Pennsylvania. He was a member of the Legislature in 1823-24, and was especially earnest in championing the policies represented by Andrew Jackson. President Jackson appointed him one of the three commissioners to settle the claims between the United States and France, and he served in that capacity in 1831-32. He was Attorney-General of Pennsylvania, 1845, and judge of the United States District Court, 1842-58. He was a leading layman of the Presbyterian church, one of the founders of Girard College, and president of the American Philosophical Association. In this connection it is interesting to note that his grandson, Francis Fisher Kane, a well-known lawyer of Philadelphia, son of Robert Patterson and Elizabeth Francis (Fisher) Kane, was appointed in September, 1913, by President Wilson, United States district attorney for the Eastern District of Pennsylvania. Judge Kane died in Philadelphia, February 21, 1858.

He married, April 25, 1817, Jane Du Val Leiper; she died February, 1866. Mrs. Kane was one of the well-known Leiper sisters, long remembered in Philadelphia social life. Issue:

1. Elisha Kent Kane, of whom further.
2. Thomas Leiper Kane, of whom further.
3. Robert Patterson Kane, of whom further.
4. Elizabeth Kane, b. Aug. 2, 1830, d. Oct. 14, 1869, m. as second wife, Charles Woodruff Shields, D. D. Issue: i. Helen Hamilton Shields, m. Bayard Stockton, of Morven, Princeton, N. J., whose first wife was Charlotte Julia, eldest daughter of Dr. Shields. ii. James Woodruff Shields. iii. Thomas Kane Shields.
5. John Kintzing Kane, of whom further.
6. William Leiper Kane, b. April 2, 1838, d. in August, 1852.

*VII. John Cullen Van Rensselaer*, only son of James and Susan de Lancey (Cullen) Van Rensselaer, was born at Utica, New York, February 16, 1812. He received a thorough early education from a schoolmaster of the old type, an expert Latinist who insisted on his pupils speaking Latin. He studied law in the office of the distinguished Judge Denio, and went to New York, where he was ad-





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

mitted to the bar. He opened an office in Utica, where he practiced law until 1835, when he removed with his father to Jasper county, Indiana, where the town of Rensselaer was established and named after the latter. Father and son were among the earliest pioneers of that region. At the time of his marriage, in 1838, he returned East and decided to remain in New York City. Lacking the spur of necessity, he gave up the practice of his profession, in which his gifts might easily have won him a leading place. He continued actively interested in his father's western property, and visited it nearly every year even up to that just preceding his death. He was a man of varied culture and wide reading, a good linguist, speaking and writing French fluently and accurately. His wit and ready anecdote made him a brilliant raconteur, and his personal and social charm made him the favorite of a large circle of friends. He moved with his family to New Brunswick, New Jersey, in 1871, on the death of his eldest daughter, Mrs. Andrew Kirkpatrick Cogswell, in order to fulfill her request to be near her infant son, his namesake, and his son-in-law and grandson became members of his household. He died at Ortley Beach, Ocean county, New Jersey, July 4, 1889.

He married, in the Church of the Ascension, New York City, May 17, 1838, Cornelia Josepha Codwise, born in Jamaica, Long Island, New York, February 1, 1810, died at New Brunswick, New Jersey, January 5, 1890. She was a daughter of George Codwise, Jr., and his wife, Mary (Byvanck) Codwise, and a granddaughter of George and Anna Maria (Van Ranst) Codwise, of New York. On her father's side she was the great-granddaughter of Luke Van Ranst and his wife, Elizabeth (Beekman) Van Ranst, granddaughter of Gerardus Beekman, Deputy Royal Governor of New York. She was a cousin of the Rev. David Abeel, of missionary fame, who, with the Rev. Dr. Bethune, was a frequent guest at her mother's country home at Jamaica. Her husband was at one time a member of Dr. Bethune's church at Utica, but her own family had been driven away in an earlier generation from the church of their fathers by the practice, too long continued, of preaching in the Dutch language. She inherited unusual personal attractions from a line of beautiful women, and was a woman of many virtues and of a deeply religious character. Of strong intelligence and controlled will, she ruled her house like the wise woman of old, and bore long continued physical pain with an unflinching, cheerful fortitude that made her presence a continued encouragement to all who came within its influence.

Issue:

1. Mary Van Rensselaer, b. at No. 7 Waverly place, New York City, May 7, 1839, d. at New Brunswick, N. J., Feb. 5, 1871; she married, at Cazenovia, N. Y., Sept. 3, 1869, the Hon. Andrew Kirkpatrick Cogswell.
2. Cornelia Georgina (Nina), b. at No. 7 Waverly place, New York City, Nov. 3, 1840; married, at Newport, R. I., March 27, 1862, David Olyphant Vail, resident partner of the house of Olyphant & Company, at Shanghai, China, b. 1834, d. at No. 60 East 36th



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

street, New York, April 7, 1865. He was a man of first-rate business ability, and of a deeply religious character; his father was of French descent, and all his paternal relatives lived in France; his mother was a Miss Archer, a half-sister of the Messrs. David, Talbot and Robert M. Olyphant; the latter named is the oldest living graduate of Columbia College, and was until recently the president of the Delaware & Hudson Railroad Company. Mrs. Vail has resided for many years at No. 29 Washington Square, New York, passing the summers in Europe; she now makes her permanent home, together with her eldest daughter, at Rue Carnot, 19, Montreuil-sur-mer, Pas de Calais, France. Issue: i. Anna Murray Vail, b. at No. 60 East 36th street, New York, Jan. 7, 1863; was educated in Germany and France; she was the first librarian of the Botanical Department of Columbia University, at Bronx Botanic Gardens; she is the author of several monographs on botanical subjects and ranks as a first-class botanist; resides at Montreuil-sur-mer, Pas de Calais, France. ii. Cornelia Van Rensselaer Vail, b. at No. 60 East 36th street, New York, Jan. 23, 1865; was educated in Germany and France, and for two years at Miss Porter's School, Farmington, Connecticut; has inherited artistic talent, and at one time undertook household decoration with decided success; married, at Grace Church, New York, Feb. 23, 1896, Henry Golden Dearth, of Providence, R. I., and Montreuil-sur-mer, Pas de Calais, France. Mr. Dearth is an associate member of the Academy of Design and a member of the Society of American Artists; his works have received distinguished notice in Europe and America, and are considered to show a remarkable sense of color; he passes the winters in New York with his family and has a studio in Carnegie Hall; issue: Cornelia Van Rensselaer Dearth, born in Paris, France, June 11, 1898.

3. Cullen Van Rensselaer, b. at No. 7 Waverly Place, New York, Feb. 26, 1843; d. there April 12, 1844.

4. Schuyler Van Rensselaer, b. at No. 42 Clinton Place, New York City, July 6, 1843; d. at New Brunswick, N. J., March 5, 1884. He received his early education under the tuition of the Rev. C. W. Everest, of Hamden, Connecticut, and Professor Elie Charlier, of New York City, and was prepared for college by the Rev. T. Thayer, of Newport, R. I., where his parents resided during his boyhood. In the summer of 1862, in response to President Lincoln's call for volunteers, he enlisted as a private in the Newport company of the Rhode Island regiment, was promoted to sergeant, and was offered a commission on the staff of Gen. Burnside. At the expiration of his term of four months' enlistment he left the army by his parents' desire, and entered Harvard University, from which he was graduated in 1867. Pursuing the study of mining engineering, he was graduated from the Columbia School of Mines in 1868, and thereafter took a three years' course of study in Germany, graduating with high honor in 1871 from the Academy of Mines, at Freiburg, Saxony. On his return to the United States he engaged actively in his profession of mining engineering, and was appointed in 1877 as chief engineering inspector of steel rails for the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy railroad. He held this position for five years, and then resigned to take up his professional practice, which he continued until the time of his death. Mr. Van Rensselaer was personally one of the worthiest representatives of his family. He was a man of the truest nobility of character. His elevation of mind and generosity of heart won equal esteem and admiration. In a memorial of him, published by his college class, he is thus characterized:

"His life has been a strenuous and domestic one, devoted wholly to work and to his family; and his death was well in keeping with it. Although he had many friends, only the members of his household can have appreciated him for all he was. His greatest force and charm lay in the serenity and unselfishness of his private character; and his greatest talent was the gift of common sense—the power to judge quickly, wisely, wholly without prejudice or fantasy, any practical question which might come up. So happy and contented a disposition, so tender and self-sacrificing a spirit, and so sure and well-balanced a judgment in the ordinary affairs of life, as he possessed, could only be understood in his home; and his richest influence was felt by those whose lives were closely bound up with his own. . . . One of his most remarkable qualities, considering his birth and nurture and personal tastes, was the intense sympathy he felt for the working classes. Labor, not as a means towards the mere making of money, but in itself, he esteemed in a characteristically American way, and his respect for working-men in general was extended to individuals, and was quickly felt by all of humbler birth with whom he came in contact. . . . The bent of his mind was primarily scientific and practical; but he had a keen feeling for literature and for music, and an infinite respect for all forms of art."

He married in Dresden, Saxony, April 14, 1873, Mariana Alley Griswold, eldest daughter of George and Lydia (Alley) Griswold, of New York City. Mrs. Van Rens-





Schuyler Van Rensselaer

1811-1898

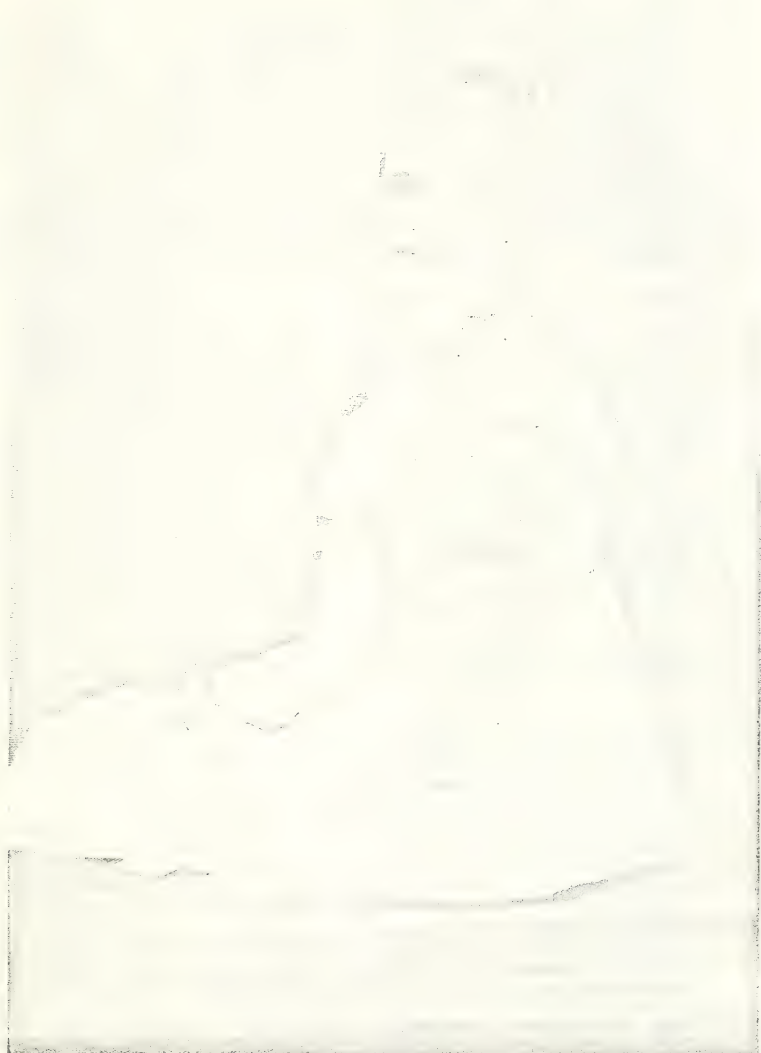




MA

EADE

ILLID PA



*Robert de Lancy Van Rensselaer Vroom*



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

selaer is a well-known author and art critic. She received in 1910 the degree of L. H. D. from Columbia University. Her history of New York City up to the year 1800, of which two volumes have already been published by Macmillan & Company, is considered a work of great research and standard merit; and her poems are regarded as evincing rare poetic feeling and masterly technique. Issue: George Griswold Van Rensselaer, b. at New Brunswick, N. J., Feb. 11, 1875. He received his early tuition from his mother, and went to school in Dresden, Saxony, and Bournemouth, England. He prepared for college in New York City, and entered Harvard University in 1892. He was an ardent yachtsman, devoted to water sports, passing the summers with his mother at Marion, Massachusetts, where since his death the memorial Griswold Van Rensselaer cup is awarded each season to the winning yacht in the races on Buzzard's bay. He died suddenly at Colorado Springs, April 22, 1894, when supposed to be convalescent from the fatal disease which had cut short his career. His unusual mental gifts had caused his college instructors to predict for him a remarkable future. Inheriting brilliant talents combined with rare nobility of character, his brief life amply fulfilled its early promise, and left with the many who saw and loved the fine and engaging qualities of his nature a deep and abiding sense of loss.

5. James Van Rensselaer, b. at No. 42 Clinton Place, New York City, Dec. 6, 1847, d. there June 18, 1848.

6. Susan de Lancey Cullen Van Rensselaer, b. at Jamaica, Long Island, N. Y., June 24, 1851. She was educated at Miss Porter's School in Farmington, Connecticut, and afterwards in Germany and France. She is an excellent linguist, and took part in the translation of the Van Rensselaer-Bowier Manuscripts, published by the New York State Library in 1908. These early records are of great importance as relating to the settlement of New Amsterdam and Rensselaerswyck. Mrs. Strong was the first of the American line to become aware of their existence, during visits to her Dutch kin in 1890, before her marriage. She at once recognized their value, and agreed with the owners to translate and publish them in America. The theft of the manuscripts delayed this work until many years later, when they were discovered and the original intention was carried out. Mrs. Strong then returned the manuscripts to Holland, and they are now in the Royal Library at The Hague. It is fortunate that this was done, or they would have perished with many other valuable family records in the disastrous burning of the State Library at Albany. Mrs. Strong is the owner of Fort Crailo, the Greenbush Manor House, at Rensselaer, opposite Albany. Three generations of her direct ancestors were born there, as well as many others of her family. It is her intention to place this property in the ownership of the State or of some patriotic society as soon as satisfactory arrangements can be made.

Susan de Lancey Cullen Van Rensselaer married at Grace Church Chantry, New York City, April 17, 1903. Alan Hartwell Strong, of New Brunswick, N. J. No issue. Daughter by adoption: Sylvia de Lancey Van Rensselaer Strong, b. at New Brunswick, N. J., Oct. 11, 1904.

Alan Hartwell Strong was b. at New Brunswick, N. J., March 5, 1856. He is the second son of Hon. Woodbridge Strong, presiding judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Middlesex County, New Jersey, and his wife, Harriet Anne (Hartwell) Strong, of Littleton, Massachusetts. Judge Strong was a descendant of Elder John Strong, who settled at Dorchester, Mass., in 1630. Alan Hartwell Strong received his education at Rutgers College Grammar School and Rutgers College, graduating from the latter institution in the class of 1874. He studied law with his father, Hon. Woodbridge Strong, at New Brunswick, N. J., and was admitted to the bar of New Jersey in 1880. He practiced law at New Brunswick, N. J., from 1877 until June, 1912, when he was appointed general attorney of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, with an office at Broad Street Station, Philadelphia, and gave up general practice. During his practice in New Brunswick he was a member from 1877 to 1896 of the firm of Woodbridge Strong & Sons, and from 1896 to 1912 of the firm of Alan H. & Theodore Strong. From 1895 until his appointment as general attorney in 1912, he was solicitor of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company for the districts including the counties of Mercer, Hunterdon, Warren, Middlesex, Monmouth, Ocean, Somerset and Union. He is a member of the Sons of the Revolution, and of the Colonial Wars of New Jersey. His political affiliations are Republican. His early training was Presbyterian, but of later years he has been an attendant of the Episcopal church. He resides with his family in winter at No. 2036 De Lancey Place, Philadelphia, and in summer at his country home, "Inwood," New Brunswick, New Jersey.



*VIII. Elisha Kent Kane*, the celebrated Arctic explorer, son of Hon. John Kintzing and Jane Du Val (Leiper) Kane, was born in Philadelphia, February 20, 1820. He graduated in medicine from the University of Pennsylvania, and was appointed a surgeon in the United States Navy in 1843. He saw much sea service and visited many foreign countries. When the Arctic expedition to search for Sir John Franklin was organized in 1850, under government auspices, he volunteered to join it, and rendered most efficient and valuable service. The reputation and experience thus gained led to his selection as commander of the second expedition organized for the same purpose. Dr. Kane sailed from New York in the brig *Advance* on the 30th of May, 1853. He was absent more than two years, and reached the highest latitude attained up to that time or for long afterwards. His scientific observations were more accurate and valuable than had been gained by any previous polar explorer, and greatly added to the geographical knowledge of those regions. In compliment to the family of his father's mother, he named a body of water where he was detained some time, Rensselaer Bay. His two voyages are sometimes called "the Grinnell Expeditions," in compliment to Henry Grinnell, Esq., who contributed generously towards the purchase and equipment of the vessels. After his return in 1855, Dr. Kane received distinguished honors from Congress as well as from other countries and from the principal learned societies of the world. In England he was received with high honor, being welcomed with touching gratitude by Lady Franklin. Dr. Kane's health was hopelessly impaired by the great privations suffered during his second expedition.

He died in Havana, Cuba, February 16, 1857, and was buried with civic and military honors at Philadelphia. He was never married.

*VIII. Thomas Leiper Kane*, second son of Hon. John Kintzing and Jane Du Val (Leiper) Kane, was born in Philadelphia, January 27, 1822. He was educated in Paris, France, and on his return to Philadelphia studied law and was admitted to the bar. He served several terms as clerk of the United States District Court, resigning the office for political reasons. He visited the Mormon settlements in 1847, and was instrumental in relieving the sufferings of those people on their pilgrimage to Utah, and eleven years later, when an armed conflict seemed impending between the Mormons and the United States government, he went to Utah at his own expense, bearing letters from President Buchanan, and, possessing the confidence of both sides, arranged the basis of the settlement which was afterward concluded. For this service he received the public thanks of the President in his annual message. He founded and laid out the town of Kane, in the northwestern part of Pennsylvania, where he raised in April, 1861, a regiment of hunters and loggers, known as



the "Bucktails," which became famous for valor and endurance. He was wounded at Dranesville, where he led the advance, and at Harrisonburg he sent to the rescue of a regiment that had fallen into an ambuscade; with one hundred and four riflemen he encountered three regiments of the army, and was wounded and taken prisoner. He was released on parole, and in August, 1862, exchanged. On the 7th of September, 1862, he was made a brigadier-general for gallant services on the field. At the beginning of the battle of Gettysburg he was absent on sick leave, yet hastened to Washington for orders, and took to General Meade the information that the national telegraphic cipher was known to the Confederates; he joined his brigade on the morning of the second day, and held an important position on the extreme right. He resigned on November 7, 1863, being disabled by wounds and exposure. He was the author of works entitled "The Mormons," "Alaska" and "Coahuila." He died in Philadelphia, December 26, 1883.

He married, April 21, 1853, his cousin, Elizabeth Dennistoun Wood, daughter of William and Harriet Amelia (Kane) Wood. Her mother was the daughter of John and Maria (Codwise) Kane. Mrs. Kane was graduated from the Woman's Medical College of Pennsylvania in March, 1863. Issue:

1. Harriet Amelia Kane, b. July 10, 1855; d. Jan. 9, 1896; graduated, March, 1885, from the Woman's Medical College of Pennsylvania.
2. Elisha Kent Kane, of whom further.
3. Evan O'Neill Kane, of whom further.
4. Thomas Leiper Kane, Jr., of whom further.

VIII. *Robert Patterson Kane*, third son of Hon. John Kintzing and Jane Du Val (Leiper) Kane, was born in Philadelphia, June 9, 1827. He was educated at the Philadelphia High School, when Alexander Dallas Bache was head-master, and received the honor of the Latin salutatory at graduation. He studied law with Thomas Dunlap, successor of Nicholas Biddle as president of the Bank of the United States, and was admitted to the bar September 18, 1849. The "Philadelphia Legal Intelligencer" of December 21, 1896, says as follows: "A careful student of the law and possessing a highly cultivated literary taste, Mr. Kane very early established a reputation as a finished and accurate lawyer. He practiced largely in the federal courts and had many patent cases, as well as suits in admiralty. In questions of salvage, the cases of the ship *Arcole* and of the bark *Ferris* where the libellants were represented by him, are important. He was the master in the interesting case involving the Morse patent for telegraphic communication, and successfully represented Kockersperger in the suit of the United States against him to prohibit his private postal system, known as 'Blood's Dispatch.' He was for some time acting United States District Attorney during the absence of Mr. Van Dyke, who held the office at that time."





## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

In the great political contests extending from 1850 to 1860, he took a very active part, being, like his father, an earnest Democrat. He was the president of the Breckinridge campaign organization in Philadelphia during the presidential struggle of 1860, as he was convinced that upon the success of Mr. Breckinridge depended the integrity of the Union and the peaceful solution of all vexed questions. But when the Civil War broke out, he recognized the duty of every citizen to support the action of his State, and immediately volunteered. He served in the First City Troop of the cavalry force under Patterson's command, through the campaign of 1861. He resided throughout life in Philadelphia, and although for many years retired from professional business, continued to maintain activity and usefulness as a citizen. He was particularly interested in charitable work and gave his direct personal efforts towards the relief of the suffering and needy. He died in Philadelphia, November 28, 1906.

He married, October 31, 1861, Elizabeth Francis Fisher, daughter of Joshua Francis and Eliza (Middleton) Fisher. She is descended in the paternal line from an old Quaker family whose ancestor was a contemporary of William Penn, and also from James Logan, Penn's Secretary of State. On the maternal side she is the granddaughter of Governor Henry Middleton of "Middleton Place," South Carolina, and great-granddaughter of Arthur Middleton, signer of the Declaration of Independence. Issue:

1. Eliza Middleton Kane, b. April 8, 1863, m. May 2, 1893, Walter Cope, of Philadelphia, an architect of brilliant talent, who designed many of the fine buildings of Princeton University. Issue: Thomas Pym Cope, b. Aug. 15, 1897; Elizabeth Francis Cope, b. Nov. 26, 1898; Anne Francis Cope, b. July 14, 1900; Oliver Cope, b. Aug. 15, 1902.

2. Francis Fisher Kane, b. June 17, 1866, in Philadelphia; attended Dr. Ferris's Academy and Protestant Episcopal Academy, Philadelphia; St. Paul's School, Concord, New Hampshire; Princeton University, 1886; University of Pennsylvania Law School, 1889; a well-known lawyer of Philadelphia; served as United States Attorney from 1896 to 1900; was appointed in September, 1913, United States District Attorney of the Eastern District of Pennsylvania; Democrat in politics, independent in municipal politics, member of the Phi Kappa Epsilon fraternity at the University of Pennsylvania Law School, Philadelphia Club, Princeton Club of Philadelphia, Protestant Episcopal church. He is unmarried.

*VIII. John Kintzing Kane*, fourth son of Hon. John Kintzing and Jane Du Val (Leiper) Kane, was born in Philadelphia, November 18, 1833. He was educated in Dr. Crawford's School and the Philadelphia High School, and was graduated from Jefferson Medical College in 1855. During the same year he accompanied the relief expedition under the command of Lieutenant H. J. Harstein, which was sent by the United States government to the Arctic regions in search of his brother, Dr. Elisha Kent Kane. He published an account of this voyage in "Putnam's Monthly" in 1856. On his return he entered the Philadelphia Hospital as a physician. He went with



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

his brother, the explorer, to Cuba, and brought his body home. He then went to Paris, France, where he studied his profession until recalled to America by the death of his father. He engaged in hospital work in Cairo, Illinois, for about a year, and then removed to Wilmington, Delaware, where he spent the remainder of his active life in professional practice. He was president of the Medical Society of Delaware, and was commissioner from Delaware to the Centennial Exposition in 1876. He died at Summit, New Jersey, March 22, 1886.

He married, October 18, 1863, Mabel Bayard, daughter of Hon. James A. Bayard, of Wilmington, Delaware. Issue:

1. Anne Francis Kane, b. Aug. 27, 1864, d. Jan. 25, 1888.
2. John Kane, died young.
3. Jean Du Val Leiper Kane, b. May 28, 1867; m. George Rhyfedd Foulke: issue: George R. Foulke; Jean Kane Foulke, married, June, 1911, Paul Eleuthere Du Pont; Willing B. Foulke.
4. Florence Bayard Kane, b. July 27, 1868; received a medal and certificate of merit from the King of Italy for self-devotion in nursing the sufferers from the Messina earthquake.
5. Elizabeth Kane, b. April 20, 1870; m. (first) Edward Norris; issue: Mabel Bayard Norris, m. December, 1912, John Shipley Dixon. She married (second) Dr. John H. W. Rhein; issue: John H. W. Rhein, b. July 11, 1902; Cornelia Rhein, Florence, and Bayard Lane Rhein, b. January 5, 1908.
6. James A. Bayard Kane, b. Oct. 18, 1871; is a physician in Philadelphia; m. Sarah Keyser Williams, daughter of John Worthington and Sarah (Keyser) Williams; issue: Mabel Bayard Kane, b. April 5, 1905.
7. John Kent Kane, b. Sept. 3, 1873; is a lawyer; resides in Philadelphia; m. Margaret Oglesby Paul, daughter of Frank W. and Florence (Oglesby) Paul. Issue: Florence Oglesby Kane, b. March 25, 1901; John Kent Kane, b. July 13, 1902; Frank Paul Kane, b. Jan. 6, 1904.
8. Van Rensselaer Kane, died young.

*IX. Elisha Kent Kane*, eldest son of General Thomas Leiper and Elizabeth Dennistoun (Wood) Kane, was born at "Fern Rock," Pennsylvania, November 25, 1856. He was graduated from the John C. Green School of Engineers, Princeton University. He was the founder of the village of Kushequa, Pennsylvania, where he resides. He has large business interests in that place and in Mt. Jewett, Pennsylvania, which include saw-mills, brick-works, gas and water-works, and railway connections. His political affiliations are with the Prohibition party, in which connections he is prominent in Pennsylvania.

He married, June 21, 1892, Griselda E. Hays. Issue:

1. Harriet Griselda Kane, b. Oct. 16, 1897.
2. Evan O'Neill Kane, b. April 19, 1899.
3. Elisha Kent Kane, b. Aug. 11, 1901.
4. Florence Mabel Kane, b. May 19, 1905.

*IX. Evan O'Neill Kane*, second son of General Thomas Leiper and Elizabeth Dennistoun (Wood) Kane, was born in Darby, Pennsylvania, April 6, 1861. He was graduated from the Jefferson Medical



## VAN RENSSELAER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

College, Philadelphia, became a practicing physician at Kane, Pennsylvania, and is surgeon-in-charge of the Kane Summit Hospital.

He married (first) May 18, 1893, Blanche Rupert, who died March 31, 1894. He married (second) June 1, 1897, Lila Rupert. Issue:

(By first marriage): 1. Elisha Kent Kane, b. March 18, 1894.

(By second marriage): 2. William Wood Kane, b. May 7, 1898.

3. Blanche Rupert Kane, b. Aug. 9, 1899.

4. Bernard Evanue Kane, b. Feb. 18, 1902.

5. Thomas Leiper Kane, born August 3, 1903.

6-7. Robert Livingston Kane, Philip Schuyler Kane, twins, born August 29, 1904.

*IX. Thomas Leiper Kane*, third son of General Thomas Leiper and Elizabeth Dennistoun (Wood) Kane, was born in Darby, Pennsylvania, November 17, 1863. He was graduated from the Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, and is a practicing physician, residing in Kane, Pennsylvania.

He married, October 13, 1892, Anne Virginia Wright, daughter of Anne Fitzhugh and Hamilton Mercer Wright. Issue:

1. Thomas Leiper Kane, b. March 9, 1895.

2. Elizabeth Dennistoun Kane, b. June 26, 1896.

3. Archibald Van Rensselaer Kane, b. Jan. 9, 1899.

4. Sybil Kent Kane, b. March 13, 1902.

NOTE.—The foregoing excellent narrative was prepared by Mrs. Alan Hartwell Strong (Susan de Lancey Van Rensselaer).







## Editorial

---

### SOME INTERESTING RELICS

1810

The leading article in this number of "Americana" is devoted to Old Williamsburg, Virginia, a town exceedingly rich in historical associations. The writer has certainly entered into his task with reverence as well as enthusiasm. At page 192 will be found views of edifices of particular interest. That of the Raleigh Tavern is from an old print; nearly all trace of the old building disappeared long ago. The view of the college buildings, from a sketch made in 1723, is true to present conditions, excepting that a porch has been built to the president's residence, which stands at the right of the print. The view of Bruton Parish Church represents the famous old edifice as it is today.

Since the preparation of the article above referred to, announcement has been made that Rear-Admiral Cary T. Grayson, an alumnus of William and Mary College, has been placed at the head of a national committee which has undertaken the raising of a fund of nearly one and a half million of dollars for the endowment of that institution. The preliminary statement concerning "the endowment drive" presents a strong array of names of the committee. That a strong appeal will be made on account of the historic importance of the famous old college, is evident from the fact that special stress is placed upon the fact that her list of alumni includes three Presidents of the United States, ten Cabinet officers, four Justices of the United States Supreme Court, twenty United States Senators, three Speakers of the House of Representatives, twenty-one Governors of States, and a great number of military and naval officers.

---

### LITERARY NOTES

"A History of the Great War" is the title of a work in two volumes totalling about one thousand pages, by Bertram Benedict, A. B., and published by the Bureau of National Literature, New



York City. Volume I opens with a narrative of the causes leading up to the great catastrophe, and in various respects readers will differ from the author, who perhaps gazes farther into the past than does the ordinary reader, who does not look beyond the immediate provocation. The story of the war progresses chronologically for the greater part, through the two volumes, and ending with the German collapse. The Peace Conference and the documents growing out of it, the Treaty with Germany and the League of Nations covenant, are presented in full form, together with an analysis of the Treaty, and a good working war bibliography.

From G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York and London, comes a volume, "Reminiscences of a Boy in Blue, 1862-1865" (pp. 347). It is from the pen of Mr. Henry Murray Calvert, a veteran of the New York regiment known as "Scott's Nine Hundred Volunteer Cavalry." The author was for many years connected with the famous Claffin business of New York City, and is now a resident of Brooklyn. He says in his preface: "*Some* persons may consider the subject antiquated, but our Civil War, in its dignity, its picturesqueness and its glory, will probably long be the theme of poets, historians and dramatists, as it deserves to be," and in elucidation of the latter phrase, he further says:

"That war was in its character a square stand-up fight in the open, by men against men. Women and children were not hurt. Noncombatants were not wantonly molested. War prisoners were not mutilated. Lawlessness for its own sake was frowned on. The seeds of hate were not wickedly sown. "This rendered reconciliation easier, should opportunity come; and one did come only thirty-three years after the surrender at Appomattox. For on the night of February 15, 1898, the 'Maine' was blown up in Havana Harbour. Next day sectional lines faded in our land. The Blue and the Gray shook hands in dead earnest, and stood shoulder to shoulder to meet a common foe. Happy the people who, after a tremendous national convulsion, could settle down in the compass of a single generation into a mighty and majestic republic at unity with itself."

"The Canadian Historical Review" for March, 1920, from the Toronto University Press, is the initial number of a continuation and development of "The Review of Historical Publications Relating to Canada," which had an existence of nearly a quarter century.



## EDITORIAL

The title indicates its mission, and this first number is a most pleasing assurance for the future. While much of its contents will not particularly interest American readers other than those who are pursuing special historical studies, there is that in its pages and particularly with reference to the Great World War, which is deserving of wide circulation in "The States." The leading article, "Canada and the Imperial War Cabinet," is an almost thrilling presentation of the difficulties experienced by the Canadian government and people, and of how surprisingly well those difficulties were met and conquered. After indicating the great changes in governmental conduct wrought by war necessities, "The Review" looks into the future:

"The future will, without doubt, bring changes startling to minds bound by precedent. It has long been held in the official world that foreign affairs, at least, must be in the control of one central government. Yet the Canadian government has announced its intention of creating the germ of a diplomatic service, and the near future is likely to see in the American capital a representative of Canada negotiating with the government in regard to business with Canada, as the British ambassador negotiates in regard to business with Great Britain. The two envoys will act together in matters common to both, and Canada will assuredly have an increased weight because of her ties with Britain. The world will only slowly understand the meaning of the words of General Smuts that on August 4, 1914, the British Empire died. Out of the torture of war have come the free, equal, and United States of the British Commonwealth. This equality must involve in the end not only equality of privilege, but also equality of responsibility and sacrifice; and it is along this road that Canada must travel."

Even as these pages are passing through the press, immediate diplomatic relations between the Dominion of Canada and the United States have been established.

The book critiques of "The Review" are especially strong and cover a very broad field, including both American and Canadian publications. Among the latter are two of especial interest to Americans as bearing upon the early history of their own country. They are in French, from Quebec presses: "Le Sieur de Vincennes, Fondateur de l'Indiana, et Sa Famille;" and "Le Seigneurie du Cap Saint-Claude ou Vincennes," both by Pierre-Georges Roy. We



## EDITORIAL

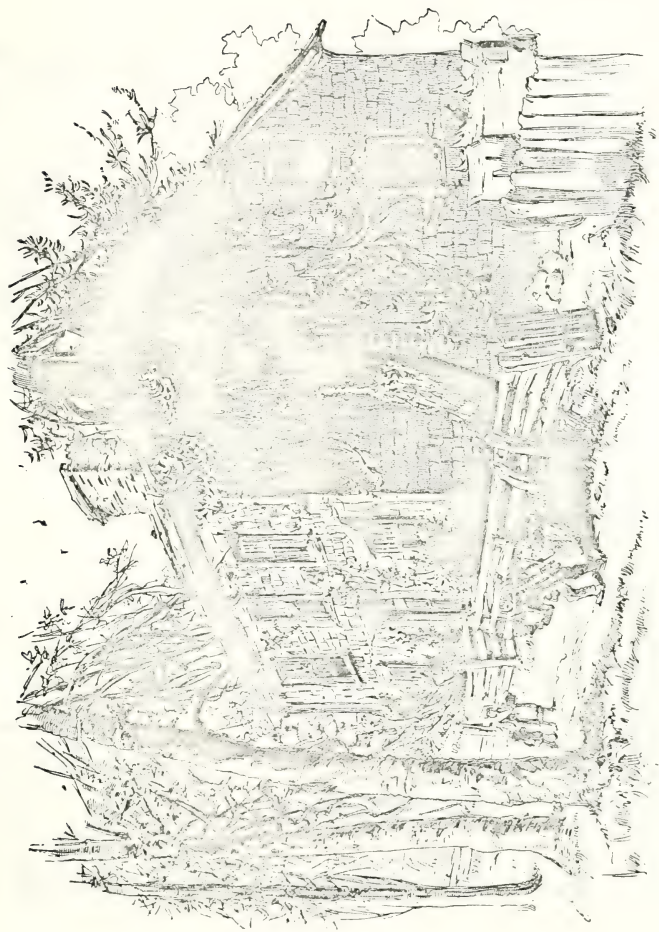
prefer to quote "The Review," rather than make our own epitomization of their contents:

"With the editorial text reduced to a few connecting paragraphs, the first-named book is a series of documents reprinted for the most part from the provincial archives of Quebec. They bear upon a specific point in the earliest history of the State of Indiana, namely, the identity of the military officer who was the first commandant at 'The Fort,' or Vincennes, on the Wabash. It is rather amazing, in view of the conclusions of M. Roy's now authoritative work, to consider the surmises and unsubstantiated pronouncements that have done service for the history of Vincennes in the absence of accurate historical data. But since the subject passed two years ago into the hands of such an expert in French-Canadian genealogy as M. Roy, it has been placed upon a sound basis. The collection of documents which he publishes is a striking example of the dependence of the early history of the American Middle West upon the resources of the Canadian archives."



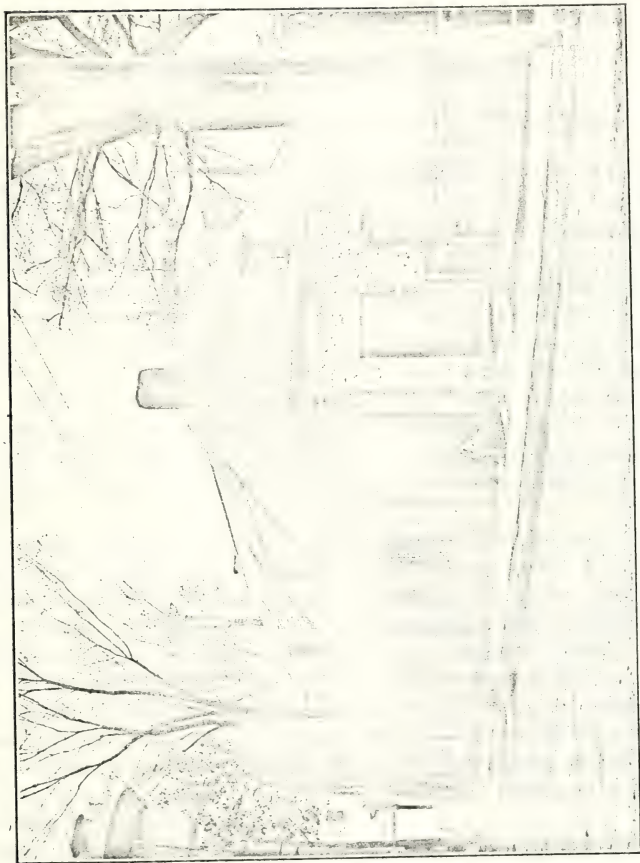






HOME OF JOHN HOWARD PAYNE.  
Author of "Home, Sweet Home," East Hampton, Long Island.





OLD STATE HOUSE AT KINGSTON, ULSTER COUNTY

Here was framed the first constitution of the State of New York, and here sat the first Legislature convened under that instrument.



# AMERICANA

OCTOBER, 1920

## Rewriting American History

BY CHARLES WILLIAM SUPER, PH.D., LL.D., ATHENS, OHIO.



ONE OF the permanent effects of the World War will be the change in the attitude of the American people toward England. Ever since the so-called Revolutionary War, the people in this country, with few exceptions, believed that when a controversy arose with Great Britain they were always in the right, and the latter invariably in the wrong. Albeit, the war that ended in 1783 was in no sense a war of revolution, it was merely a successful war of separation or secession. Although there was a change in the heads of the government, the government itself remained virtually the same. At this late day our laws differ but little from those of the mother-country, and where there is a difference it is by no means always in our favor.

A leading publisher recently expressed himself as follows: "Another great subject about which good books are needed is American history. Our political history has got itself pretty voluminously written, and there is no lack of slapdash books in distinctive imitation of Green's 'Short History of the English People.' But most of these have been prepared out of newspaper files by men who would not take their task seriously, or who were not well prepared either in material knowledge or in literary skill to produce them. Then too, geographically considered, the history of less than one-fifth of our territory has yet been written. Southern history, for instance, is utterly unknown."

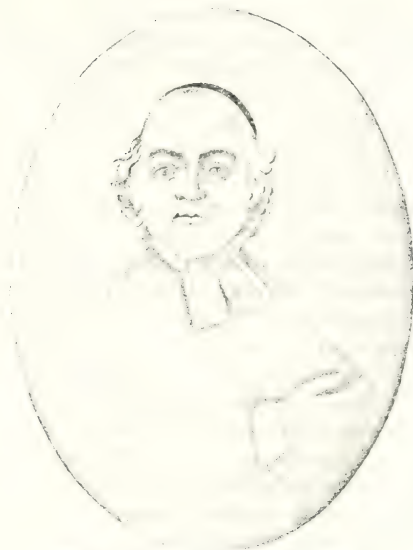
This rather sweeping condemnation contains a good deal of truth. Although there is no lack of available historical material easily accessible, little of it finds its way into our text-books. The old





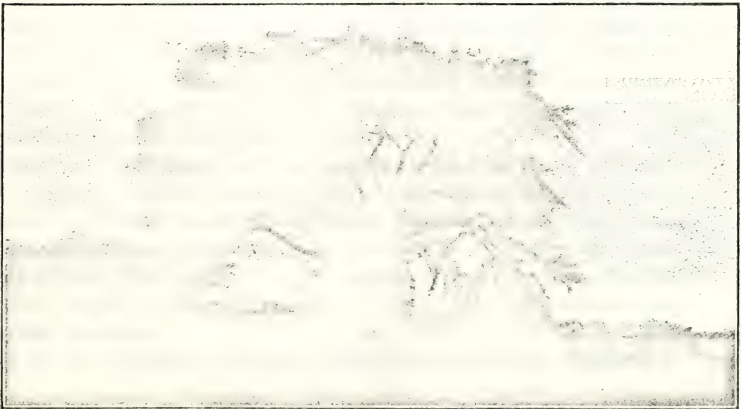
standpoint is still maintained and the new matter left unused. There is an important factor that is always considered by writers of textbooks of history. Such books are not written by historians in the proper sense of the word, but by compilers who generally have an eye on the market. They take into account the prepossessions and the prejudices of their prospective purchasers. Few men are competent judges of the merits of a historical work, especially of one dealing with their own country or with their own people or with their co-religionists; but there are equally few who will acknowledge their incompetence. Most men, when they encounter any statement that conflicts with their preconceived opinions, forthwith pronounce it false. In some States, serious objections have been made to certain books and articles on the ground that they do not sufficiently recognize the merits and services of their local heroes. The war of separation from the Mother Country was waged mainly by men living at no great distance from the seacoast between Maine and Florida. It was chiefly by people of this section that the *hinterland* was settled. They carried with them their dislike of England, to use no harsher term, and did not take the trouble to examine whether their dislike was well founded or justified. In fact, they had neither the necessary books nor the time required for careful investigation. Speaking for myself (and my experience is of value only because it was typical) I may say that until I had been for some time out of college, I was never more than a hundred miles from Philadelphia, yet I never heard a word or read a line expressing kindly sentiments toward the people of Great Britain. Nor was I under Irish influence. It was not until I took up the study of history in earnest, with a view to forming my own opinions, that I began to realize the extent of my prejudices. I had formed the fixed opinion that my country was always in the right, and that when another country made war upon it or had a different government, it was always in the wrong; at least, "behind the times." I applied this false standard to our war with Mexico. I felt that I had a sort of partnership in the victories won by Scott and Taylor. In later years my belief was almost completely reversed, although I was never able to endorse the verdict of General Grant "that it was one of the most unjust wars ever waged by a stronger against a weaker nation." The case is not so entirely one-sided that it is not arguable.





FATHER FRANCOIS PICQUET

A fine type of the French Missionaries who led the Indians of Canada and New York into Christianity and peaceful pursuits. His name is commemorated in the history of Ogdensburg (formerly La Galette), New York, where he passed eleven years, building up a community of about three thousand Indians. He established a burying ground on a hill at what is now New York avenue and King street, and where now repose the remains of many Indian dead.



SENECA COUNCIL TREE, CANOGA POINT, ONTARIO COUNTY, N. Y.

Here the Seneca Indians held their councils, among them being the famous chief and orator, Red Jacket.



## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

Most of our histories have much to say about the atrocities committed upon the whites by the Indians; and in most instances the words are based on actual facts. But how many present truly the case of the Indians? Apart from occasional acts of torture inflicted upon individuals, there was probably no great difference, as will be pointed out farther along. The Indians tried, and in not a few cases successfully, to exterminate one another; but that is no excuse for white men to use the same methods. They made no pretense to be governed by a higher law. It may be stated as a general rule that white men made war on red men only, while red men made war indiscriminately on persons of all ages and of both sexes, albeit these extreme instances are not numerous. The Indian women disappeared as fast as the men. If they were not slain outright, they must have died from want or disease. There is no other explanation of their disappearance possible. The Indian standard of honor is higher, or it is at least more nearly universal, than that of the white man. When our government made a treaty with the Indians, the latter kept it, while many white men ignored it, and our government did nothing. Bishop Rowe of Alaska once wrote: "I learned to respect the Indian's code of honor. Few white men have the integrity possessed by most Indians. I have known Indians to be starving while camped near the spot where a white man had cached abundant food-supplies. I doubt if the thought of stealing the white man's provisions ever occurred to them." Their intercourse with the whites has certainly not raised their standard of honor; the wonder is that it has not been greatly lowered. Probably one half of the white men in the world would not keep an inconvenient promise except from fear or force of the law. The Indians never had any means of inflicting a penalty on moral "slackers." Cooper's "noble red man" is nearer the reality than most white men like to admit.

During the year 1918, a committee consisting of two professors in the Leland Stanford University, two in the University of California, and the Superintendent of Public Instruction of California, made an exhaustive report on the text-books in use in the secondary schools of that State. They found nearly all more or less pro-German, and unfair to Great Britain by giving only one side to controverted questions.

One of the indictments brought against the King of England in



## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

the Declaration of Independence is that "he has endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian savages whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguishable destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions." Were the rules, that is, the methods of Indian warfare—reprehensible when employed against the whites, but quite in order when employed by the whites against the Indians? It is easier to be rhetorical than to be truthful. It is not asserted that the King has actually succeeded; and the accusation is all the more amazing in view of the fact that several months before the date of the Declaration, Indians had been enlisted as minute-men in Massachusetts, and a few months later Congress resolved "that it is highly expedient to engage Indians in the service of the Colonies." The inconsistency, not to say moral obliquity, exhibited in bringing such an indictment, becomes the more glaring when we read that in 1779 Washington sent General Sullivan "to carry war into the heart of the country of the Six Nations, to cut off their settlements, to destroy their next year's crops, and to do any other mischief which time and circumstances will permit." A few months later, Washington wrote that "General Sullivan has completed the entire destruction of the country of the Six Nations and driven all the inhabitants—men, women and children—out of it." Whither were they driven? What had the women and children done to merit such drastic treatment? Were the Indians the only "merciless savages?" Here we have a notable instance of collective responsibility, a method of dealing with an enemy that has so thoroughly discredited the Germans in the World War. It must, however, be acknowledged that the circumstances were so different as hardly to admit a comparison.

During the Revolutionary War, the War of 1812, and until quite recently, the British and the Tories have been the object of the bitterest denunciation for their ruthless destruction of property, and even of the lives of their enemies. The most gratifying evidence of the progress of the phase of civilization known as humanity, or humaneness, was exhibited by the Allies in the recent war in Europe, when they persistently refused to resort to reprisals, in defiance of a strong minority at home, until the diabolical air-raids over England and France made them absolutely necessary and fully justified. Moreover, those reprisals were mild in comparison with those that led to their employment,





In his message to Congress in 1812, President Madison alleged, among other grievances against Great Britain, that of inciting the Indians against the United States. The indictment was repeated time after time for almost a century, because it was assumed by the people to whom he addressed his message that their President was in possession of adequate proof of the truth of what he published to the world. The Canadians certainly had no love for the people south of the line. Moreover, the settlers in the Northwest Territory believed that the Indian forays were instigated by the foreign power nearest to them. Rumors were repeated over and over again until they were accepted for truth even in Washington, especially by members of Congress who wanted war. The fact is now well established that not only did the British not instigate red men against the whites, but even tried to induce them to keep the peace. There may have been a few British officers and soldiers among the aborigines, but if such was the case it was their own affair, and not that of the government to which they nominally owed allegiance. We have here a fine example of imaginary historical facts confirmed by psychological certitude. Such and such things were probably true; at any rate, they ought to be true, therefore they must be true, and there is no need of making any investigations.

The committee to which I have referred above, finds that the injustice to Great Britain appears not only in the recent histories of the United States, but in histories of the world and in the outlines of modern history. In writing his criticism of a history of our war for separation, one of the committee says: "By telling but half of the story and not mentioning that the British public was against the government, the author creates a strong anti-British feeling, and is essentially unjust. He again shows his bias against Great Britain in the Venezuela affair. American writers generally do not approve of Cleveland's use of the Monroe doctrine. He does not mention that the award of the arbitrators showed Great Britain's claims nearly all correct. When he states that the United States protected Venezuela against the aggressions of Great Britain, he is again unjust. He neglects to state that the chief contention of Great Britain in the fisheries dispute,—that is, the control of the waters within the three-mile limit even within large bays,—was sustained. The award was in Great Britain's favor."



So far as the attitude of the British government towards the States in rebellion was concerned, and towards the government of the United States as well, it was officially correct; when the Geneva Tribunal found it to have been guilty of negligence, it paid the damages awarded. President Cleveland's message was needlessly brusque; it was certainly couched in most undiplomatic language. If the English ministry had resented what it might easily have regarded as an insult, the consequences would have been serious to this country. In less than two weeks after a declaration of war, the English fleet could have bombarded some of our coast cities, and the President would have been as bitterly cursed for his bungling diplomacy as he was applauded for his sturdy Americanism. Since the Monroe doctrine is hardly more than a Canning doctrine, and had been recognized by Great Britain for three-quarters of a century, the ministry could scarcely have repudiated it over night.

Few histories give an adequate account of the fierce opposition in England to the determination of the government to coerce the recalcitrant colonies into obedience. Franklin's correspondence shows that he was on friendly terms with a number of Englishmen who wished well to the cause of which he was the champion. Many prominent British officers refused to serve against the Americans, among them the oldest son of Lord Chatham, Admiral Keppel, General Amherst, General Conway, Lord Cavendish, and others. Whig opposition to the court party was vigorous and persistent. Hence the government was powerless to punish the leaders of the opposition even if it had desired to do so.<sup>1</sup> When we consider the means at the disposal of the "King's Friends" for making war upon the colonies, we are astounded at its fatuity in deciding to settle the issue by force of arms. According to the received account, their available forces in 1774 did not exceed 18,000 men, and the effort to triple this small body of troops was almost a complete failure. It was in sheer desperation that the ministry turned for help to several of the German autocrats. It was not a case of "superfluity of naughtiness," nor were the Germans the only mercenaries of that day. Soldiering for pay was a regular business in Europe until about the beginning of the nineteenth century. It is evident that the English ministry, in spite of years of bickering, did not

---

<sup>1</sup>See also Tennyson's "England and America in 1784."



expect the colonies to revolt. It took the oft-repeated declaration of loyalty as a final decision, and did not realize that a sudden change of sentiment might take place. If the English people had supported the government with half the zeal which they had displayed in every other foreign war, the outcome would assuredly have been different. The situation was, on the whole, more favorable to the mother-country than to the colonies. The free population of the latter did not greatly exceed two millions, while that of Great Britain was at least four times as large. The British could land their troops on Canadian soil among a people who, if not particularly friendly, were not hostile. They might expect some assistance from the Indians. They knew from the reports of their agents in this country that in the Middle States, particularly in Pennsylvania, there was a large pacific element. The event, however, proved that while no inconsiderable proportion of the people were adverse to war on general principles, they were not averse from taking up arms against actual invaders. Moreover, in time the English officers found that the plundering proclivities of the Germans, who had in fact no interest in the quarrel except in so far as it was profitable to them individually, wrought more harm than help.

According to the records usually published there were in the colonial armies from first to last about 300,000 men; of whom much less than half were regulars. Almost all who offered their services for the militia or as volunteers were accepted by the recruiting officers. When we remember that although during the first years of the conflict a considerable proportion of the colonists tried to remain neutral, either because it made little difference to them which side won or because they were genuine pacifists, but that later they wanted to be on the winning side or were not averse to taking up arms to repel an actual invasion, it is evident that by the end of the war almost every able-bodied man had seen service for longer or shorter periods. The number of Loyalists who took up arms in defense of the British cause has been rated as high as 20,000, and as low as half these figures. There was, however, less difficulty in procuring men than in providing them with munitions, as these had for the most part been imported from the mother country. There was at times a serious shortage of powder. Notwithstanding Burgoyne's surrender, the situation of the colonies at the begin-





ning of 1778 was little short of desperate. If Lord Howe had been a man of energy, he could have annihilated Washington's wretched little army at Valley Forge.<sup>2</sup> Or was he purposely negligent of his opportunity? He and his men were living in plenty, or even in luxury, while a few miles away the American troops were starving or freezing or both. It was the French who saved the day for the Americans, not so much by the actual aid they brought, as by the fresh hopes with which they inspired the despondent "rebels." I have not found any figures purporting to give the number of British soldiers on American soil at any one time from first to last, but it is doubtful if so many as 30,000 were collected at one place at any time. Still, if the British army had pushed the campaign with vigor from the beginning, all would have been over in less than two years after actual hostilities had begun in earnest. The English held the mastery of the sea, and it is difficult to understand why they made so little effort to prevent the French from landing troops on American soil. While it was difficult to obtain volunteers for the army, the press-gangs always kept the navy supplied with all the seamen needed. The laxity of the British both by land and sea is explicable only on the theory that they were never really in earnest. When the movements of ships depended solely on wind and tide, they were of necessity much slower and more uncertain than after steam had enabled the captains to defy or disregard both. But the drawbacks were no greater for the English than for the French. Adverse winds did not deter Nelson from pursuing, overtaking and annihilating the French fleet. In Wilson's "Life of Admiral Duncan" we read: "There is reason to think that the revolted colonies could easily have been subdued, had the British forces on sea and land been properly handled, and that Spain and Holland, perhaps even France, would never have joined against us in the war. It is all the more melancholy to reflect that there were plenty of capable officers in the navy, had the leaders of this country taken the trouble to search for merit and capacity." And again: "What might not a leader so bold, so capable, so ready to face extreme risk in his country's service, have effected in the flower of his age, in

<sup>2</sup>"The British gold at Philadelphia was more desirable than Continental bills; and so many farmers sent their provisions to Howe. While the Americans were experiencing all this suffering, Howe's army had one long round of pleasure in Philadelphia. Franklin said: 'Howe did not take Philadelphia; Philadelphia took Howe.' The officers played cricket and had cock-fights. A theater was established on South street."



the terrible days of the American war, when England vainly sought a great admiral?"

The separation made very little change in the government, but effected a change in the governors. In Massachusetts the Council called itself the successor of the Governor, and legal documents were thenceforth issued in the name of the government and the people. After two previous attempts that failed, the State adopted a constitution in 1780. New York adopted a constitution in 1777 which was the most liberal of all. The only qualification for the prerogative of manhood suffrage was the age of twenty-one years. In Massachusetts a property qualification of two hundred dollars was required. In three Southern States only white men could vote, but in South Carolina this restriction was qualified by calling an octoroon a free white man. In most of the States the color question was ignored. In Virginia the Established Church made a vigorous fight for its privileges.

Most of us of the older generation were taught to regard Washington's Farewell Address with feelings akin to reverence. We were assured that it was the final word of political wisdom in the matters with which it deals. An importance was attached to it which the author himself did not intend and certainly did not anticipate. Washington was too wise not to be conscious of his limitations. He could neither foresee nor foretell the future far in advance. The Address itself bears the marks of the conditions that called it forth. The "entangling alliances" against which he warned his countrymen are unavoidable in an age of steam and electricity, of submarine cables and wireless telegraphy, for a great nation and an enterprising people who aspire to a leading part in the affairs of the world. It is only by chicanery that we can take without also giving, and it will not be long until we are found out. Moreover, recent events have proved that a cordial understanding among nations governed by a code of honor is stronger than a formal alliance. We are likewise in danger of making a fetish of the Monroe Doctrine. Some of the peoples south of us are inclined to regard it as an impertinence rather than a benevolence. It assumes that they need a guardian, that they are incompetent to manage their own affairs. That may have been a fact a century ago, but it is so no longer, with perhaps a few exceptions. An appeal to the past is always fraught with danger if it is blindly



## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

followed. It may mislead quite as often as lead. There is a wide difference between heeding its lessons and following precedents blindly. Prussian publicists and historians during the last half century, and some of them in an earlier period, never wearied in telling their readers that their country had grown great and had prospered in every way, under what was virtually a military dictatorship, not considering that a time might come or conditions arise when such a dictatorship would be an anachronism; that instead of being a distinguishing mark of progress, it might be a sign of stagnation. If we are always to be guided by the past instead of being merely instructed, how far shall we go back into the past for our examples? Shall every man be permitted to fix his own dates? When we are dealing with material forces, the lessons of the past are of small value; with moral and intellectual forces the case is widely different. The defenders of slavery always had the testimony of the past on their side; it had existed ever since the beginnings of history, hence it could not be wrong, and should not be abolished. Many customs that are now regarded as abuses, and even as vicious in the extreme, were either considered necessary evils or as no evils at all. The governments of some of the commonwealths of the United States were built up on an aristocratic foundation; but it was an aristocracy of social position and intelligence. The first six Presidents were, with the exception of Washington, among the best educated men in the country, and he is believed to have been the wealthiest. Though lacking in a systematic education, he was endowed with exceptional perspicacity and was inspired with genuine and unselfish patriotism. Both intellectually and morally he was a man of the Lincoln type, although no orator, and inferior to Lincoln as writer. The framers of the constitution did not trust the people to elect their President, but entrusted that duty to electors. The form is still maintained, but the spirit has long since been discarded, and the voters know the candidate for whom they are casting their ballots as definitely as if he were mentioned by name. The fathers were not so much afraid of rich men as their grandsons. It would now be impossible for a very rich man to be elected President of the United States, and even a candidate for the governorship of a State who is known or believed to be wealthy is regarded with suspicion by many voters. The instances in which the ablest





## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

and strongest man has been elected governor of a State are not numerous. The truth of the matter is that the Americans are almost always suspicious of the "strong man." It has been only in cases of extreme peril that they have temporarily laid aside their suspicions.

In this connection I may call attention to a remarkable distortion in the records of our country: it is the relative importance attached to the trials for witchcraft in Massachusetts, and the complete ignorance of the far more serious miscarriage of justice in the trials (if, indeed, they can be called trials) of the victims of the alleged negro plot in New York in 1741. Every popular history of the United States devotes more or less space to the former; not one, so far as I have read, so much as mentions the latter. The witchcraft delusion did not break out at Salem in 1692. There had been executions for the same crime at Stratford and Fairfield, Connecticut, forty years earlier. The delusion did not originate in this country. At that time there were very few persons either in Europe or in America who did not believe in the existence of witches. Their tribe is not yet wholly extinct. It may be said that not only did everybody believe in witchcraft; almost everybody *knew* that it was a reality. The Salem craze lasted less than a year, and cost the lives of about a score of persons. Later one of the trial judges had the honesty and the moral courage to confess publicly his error, and to devote one day each year during the remainder of his life to fasting and prayer as a penance for the wrong he had done. The contrition of Judge Sewall is probably unique in the annals of jurisprudence. M. Salomon Reinach expresses the opinion in his book, "Orpheus," that in the sixteenth and the seventeenth centuries alone, one hundred thousand persons were burned in Germany for practicing witchcraft. The people of New England shared a delusion that was co-extensive with Christianity. New York was the scene of a merely local frenzy. At the date above-named, the city contained several thousand inhabitants, of whom about one-fourth were negroes. A number of fires occurred almost simultaneously, but they were small and did little damage. They would probably have attracted slight attention if the citizens had not felt that they were living on a smouldering volcano. The rumor started that the blacks had formed a conspiracy to destroy the city by fire. The whites became panic-stricken and arrested a number of the





## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

blacks. The evidence against them was of the most flimsy character. But, as often happens, the imagination furnished the facts for the prosecution. Although there were several lawyers in the city, not one had the will or showed the moral courage to defend them. Even the trial judge took his stand with the prosecution. The result was that thirteen persons were burned at the stake, eighteen were hanged, and a large number deported. The undue prominence given to the trials for witchcraft is mainly owing to the predominance of New England, especially of Massachusetts and Connecticut, in the religious and intellectual life of our country.

In their political life, Virginia and New England moved almost abreast for more than half a century, although the population of the Old Dominion was larger than that of any other Colony or State. In 1790 it contained more people than Massachusetts and Connecticut combined. Maryland had a considerable larger population than the latter-named State, and did not fall far below Massachusetts, while North Carolina outnumbered it. The preponderance of New England has been unintentionally recognized up to the present time. During the War for Secession, the northern troops were indiscriminately called "Yankees." Although other epithets were proposed as a comprehensive designation for the soldiers of our expeditionary force in Europe in the recent World War, among which "Sam-mies" was the most appropriate, only "Yanks" finally survived, albeit a very small proportion of these so-called "Yanks" had ever been east of the Hudson river until they embarked for service abroad. Even the fathers and grandfathers of many of them had never crossed the Appalachian range. It may be seriously questioned whether there was at any time more religious bigotry in New England than there was in Virginia. Besides, the term New England became more and more a topographical expression, and did not designate a homogeneous people. Perhaps the enthusiastic writer was not far wrong who declared that Concord, Massachusetts, had influenced America to a greater degree than New York and Chicago combined. Chicago is young yet, and we can hardly blame her people for not having a hand in deeds that were done before they were born.

The separation from the Mother Country wrought no change in the social affairs of this country. From 1773 to 1827, Connecticut had as a prison an abandoned mining-pit near Simsbury, which is



## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

said to have equalled all the horrors of the worst European jails. The prisoners were crowded together at night with their feet fastened to heavy iron bars, and with chains about their necks attached to beams above. The chambers reeked with filth, causing incessant contagious fevers. The midnight revels of the inmates at times resembled the howlings of pandemonium to such an extent as to banish all sleep. "Men, women, boys, idiots, lunatics, drunkards, innocent and guilty, were mingled pell-mell together." In Great Britain, so early as 1774, the well known philanthropist, John Howard, secured the passage of two acts of parliament which resulted in greatly mitigating the horrors of prison life. But his work does not seem to have attracted official attention in this country, for there is no reason to believe that Connecticut was more backward in such matters than most of the other commonwealths. However, in 1827 the mine at Simsbury was closed, and the prison transferred to Wethersfield. In 1816-17 beginnings in prison reform were made in Pennsylvania and New York, but they had slow growth. The belief still prevailed that men who committed unlawful acts did so out of pure wickedness, and not from moral or intellectual imbecility or uncontrolled passion. Dr. Nisbet, who was called from Scotland at the close of the Revolutionary War to the presidency of Dickinson College in Pennsylvania, paints, in his private letters to his friends, a gloomy picture of the immorality, the irreligion, the dishonesty and the hypocrisy, of the people of the community in which he lived. And it is not likely that he was prejudiced, for it is said that he accepted a call from overseas because his sympathy with the aspirations of the colonies had made him somewhat unpopular at home.

Improvement of social conditions moved along parallel lines in this country and Great Britain. If there was any difference in the movement, ours was perhaps the slower of the two. Nowhere in this country does there seem to have been any legal protection for minors prior to our Civil War. Much sympathy was expressed and much ink used in championing the cause of the slave by the people of the North, but children were overlooked. Charles Dickens, in his inimitable way, took up the cause of British children and aroused the whole world to a recognition of their wrongs, but principally his own countrymen. His pen the most powerful of all, it was not the only one. Professor West declared that "when a batch of such



## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

labor (that of children) had been used up, another was ready at little cost; and employers showed a disregard for the physical well-being of these *white* slaves such as no prudent slave-driver could afford toward his more costly chattels." How much better were conditions in this country than in Great Britain? Professor Ely writes that "in 1832 the length of a day of actual labor in the Eagle Mill at Griswold, Connecticut, was fifteen hours and ten minutes. The regulations at Paterson, New Jersey, required women and children to be at work at half-past four in the morning. They were urged on by the use of the raw-hide. Shortly before this date, the poet Southey declared that the slave-trade was merciful compared with the factory system. Some years earlier, laws in England shortened the hours of labor for children, but no efficient means of enforcing them had been provided and they accomplished little. The enforcement of such laws and those requiring parents to send their children to school, were bitterly resented in England, for the reason that the average Englishman is always ready to resist what he regards as encroachment upon his rights. If he had children, he maintained that the government had no business to interfere with his family affairs. The same aversion to compulsory school attendance was exhibited in some parts of the United States, especially among the descendants of the German immigrants in Pennsylvania. The farmers were the chief opponents, for the reason that "schooling," as they claimed, was of no benefit to their children, and cost money. Besides, A, who had no children or only one or two, but a good deal of property, could see no equity in compelling him to pay for imparting even the elements of an education to B's children, who were numerous and whose father paid no tax at all. In most of the Southern States there was virtually no public school system. Within the memory of men yet living it was the custom to bind out orphans, and if they were ill-treated they had no redress except through their guardian, who was usually loth to interfere in the matter. Albeit, orphans in the rural regions did not often fare badly. They were, with rare exception, regarded as members of the family, and shared everything they had. But even at the worst, they were better off than most factory children, although their parents might be living. It is, however, a serious question whether paternalism both in this country and in England is not moving toward a dangerous extreme. It has already passed the danger-





mark in Germany. Laws are being enacted in rapid succession for the avowed protection of all members of the community who are unable to take care of themselves. In this country, insurance against unemployment is a radical absurdity, and has already proved to be such in Great Britain. In nine cases out of ten the able-bodied man who is without work has just what he wants. He who really desires a "job," will accept what comes in his way, whether quite to his liking or not. If the laborer gets the fixed notion into his head that the community must not only provide him with an employment that is to his liking, but also pay him the wages he asks, the situation is not good. If labor is more reasonable than capital is benevolent, the signs of the times are misleading. The next five years may bring about such a revolution throughout the whole world as is altogether without precedent.

Reform of the civil service began in England at the close of the War of Separation. In 1782 the king's patronage was greatly reduced, and bribery by office-holders made more difficult. The victory of Pitt shortly after 1784 shows perhaps for the first time the power of the voters, comparatively few in numbers though they were, to paralyze the power of the self-constituted leaders. Quite as remarkable was the stormy career of John Wilkes, who may be said to have kept London in a ferment for almost a generation. He was a wretched specimen of humanity to make a hero of; yet he embodied, to a considerable portion of his countrymen, the demand for free speech, and they stood by him through evil as well as good report, mostly the former. If the British government was at any time more corrupt than that at Washington during and after the close of the war of '61-65, it must have been bad indeed. Major Byers, author of "Sherman's March to the Sea," and consul to Zurich, thus expresses himself in his later book, "With Fire and Sword," regarding Washington about the time of the fall of Richmond: "While I stayed in Washington, what sights did I see! Our capital is now perhaps the finest in the world; then it was the most hateful in every way. Militarism, treason, political scoundrelism, and many other bad isms, reigned in every hotel, on every street corner, in Congress, out of Congress—everywhere; reigned right at the elbows of loyalty and patriotism such as the world never saw. Society was one grand conglomeration of everything good and bad." Conditions had begun to grow worse in the last



years of Buchanan's administration. Himself a man of the most rigid probity, he could not believe that he was surrounded by men bent on taking everything within their reach. When the war actually broke out, there was a brief lull; but it was of short duration. Lincoln was aware of what was going on around him and behind his back; but in his anxiety to preserve the Union he winked at the carnival of crookedness, and there was not much improvement until the Hayes administration came into power.

The outcome of the war with the Colonies had demonstrated to the people of Great Britain the dangers and disasters that follow close upon the heels of an arbitrary court party. If an administration loses a war, or even an important battle, the voters drive the guilty or inefficient party from power and attack the means by which it came into office. The revolted Colonies profited for a time by the experience of the mother-country, and refrained from dealing out offices to the incompetent. Between 1789 and March, 1829, there were only seventy-four removals; during Jackson's administration there were more than two thousand. Although within this period there had been a considerable increase in the number of offices, they were by no means in proportion to the number of removals. Many of John Q. Adams' appointees were avowed supporters of Jackson, but he refused to remove them, high-minded man and genuine patriot that he was, for the reason that he believed such acts to be inimical to public policy. In the course of events, his attitude came gradually to be recognized as correct, and that of his successor as detrimental to efficiency, and needlessly expensive. Albeit, even in this twentieth century it would not be prudent for the appointee of one party to support openly the candidate of another. In Great Britain a change in the government affects hardly a score of administrative officials. If it is the business of an official to administer the law, what difference do his opinions on non-essential matters make? It is our pernicious practice of viewing every public question from a partisan standpoint that makes the report of a committee of Congress almost worthless. Every member sees only what he is looking for and nothing else. Conversely, a committee of parliament is almost always composed of experts whose sole object is to find the truth and to set forth what they have found.

When a man of limited education who is endowed with a strong



will and with unlimited confidence in himself, rises to a position of power, he is almost certain to ignore precedent of which he knows little and for which he cares less. Yet it must be admitted that one man's intuition is sometimes wiser than the learning of a hundred. President Jackson probably had less of what is sometimes called "book larnin'" than any of his predecessors or successors in the presidential chair; and it is perhaps not doing him an injustice to say that he was the worst, albeit for fifty years after his death his memory was cherished by multitudes, especially in Pennsylvania, more fondly than even that of Washington. His conduct in the case of the Cherokees was reprehensible, in fact, outrageous. After the Supreme Court had decided in favor of the Indians, he is reported to have said: "John Marshall has rendered his decision; now let him enforce it." He alone of the Presidents defied that court. In subsequent years the dangerous tendency of such a course on the part of the chief magistrate would undoubtedly have led to his impeachment, and probably to his removal from office. If the President should be permitted to decide for himself what decisions of a court are valid, we might as well have no court and make him the official arbiter of all cases brought before him. Although Jackson was more of an autocrat than any of his predecessors, he was the first President who sprang from the people. His success in gathering around him a large number of enthusiastic supporters was exactly in line with numerous precedents in the history of the world. His conduct as governor of Florida was arrogant in the extreme, and a stigma upon the government. Sometimes, however, he exercised his usurped (or at least dubious) power wisely. In 1832 he declared, in his well known proclamation, that "a State has taken the strange position that it could not only declare an Act of Congress void, but prohibit its enforcement." If Buchanan had been a second Jackson, there would probably have been no war for secession. His humble origin, his native ability, and his successful military career, covered his name with a false glamor and served to turn public attention away from his violent methods.

Jackson's success brought to the fore a singular inconsistency which has characterized the sentiments of the American people during almost their entire national life. Among their claims to superiority to other nations, none is more insisted on than that





they are a non-military people. Yet at least four of their Presidents would never have been thought of for the chief magistracy if they had not gained renown in war, not to mention those who failed of election. Although Grant was a man of far higher attainments than the "hero of New Orleans," (whose victory at the battle of New Orleans was due more to the incapacity of his opponent than to his own genius), he was out of his element in the presidential chair. It should, however, be said in extenuation, that he was at the head of affairs at a most trying period. The British, too, claim to being a non-military nation, but they are consistent. A successful general has rarely been placed at the head of affairs. Besides, it is more democratic in other respects than we are. If a ministry is defeated on an important measure, it must resign or appeal to the country for a vote of confidence. The prime minister is always supported by parliament. There can be no such deadlock as has happened more than once (once quite recently) in this country when the opponents of the President were in the majority in Congress. This condition of affairs is due to the lack of a fixed constitution. The cabinet is the government, while with us it is merely an executive committee. It is a serious drawback that our cabinet officers are not members of Congress, and have no legal right to address it. In England the ministry is held responsible for every law enacted by parliament. With us the responsibility is indirect. For more than two hundred years no English king has ventured to annul an act of parliament, nor is there a supreme court to sit in judgment on a law, because no law can be unconstitutional. There is no longer a royal veto, while with us it has increased in importance. The speaker of the House of Commons is never a partisan, and virtually holds his position for life. That the people of this country had become convinced of the dangers arising from the overgrown power of the Speaker of the House of Representatives was proved several years ago, when it was greatly curtailed. In this matter, as in the increasing demand for a budget system, we have been drawing nearer to English precedent. Speaking upon this point, Senator Williams of Mississippi said, in a recent speech: "If you think we are the only democracy, you are again mistaken. The government of England is more democratic than is ours. The voice of the people of Great Britain is put upon the statute books within a few weeks after an election, and the voice of





they are a non-military people. Yet at least four of their Presidents would never have been thought of for the chief magistracy if they had not gained renown in war, not to mention those who failed of election. Although Grant was a man of far higher attainments than the "hero of New Orleans," (whose victory at the battle of New Orleans was due more to the incapacity of his opponent than to his own genius), he was out of his element in the presidential chair. It should, however, be said in extenuation, that he was at the head of affairs at a most trying period. The British, too, claim to being a non-military nation, but they are consistent. A successful general has rarely been placed at the head of affairs. Besides, it is more democratic in other respects than we are. If a ministry is defeated on an important measure, it must resign or appeal to the country for a vote of confidence. The prime minister is always supported by parliament. There can be no such deadlock as has happened more than once (once quite recently) in this country when the opponents of the President were in the majority in Congress. This condition of affairs is due to the lack of a fixed constitution. The cabinet is the government, while with us it is merely an executive committee. It is a serious drawback that our cabinet officers are not members of Congress, and have no legal right to address it. In England the ministry is held responsible for every law enacted by parliament. With us the responsibility is indirect. For more than two hundred years no English king has ventured to annul an act of parliament, nor is there a supreme court to sit in judgment on a law, because no law can be unconstitutional. There is no longer a royal veto, while with us it has increased in importance. The speaker of the House of Commons is never a partisan, and virtually holds his position for life. That the people of this country had become convinced of the dangers arising from the overgrown power of the Speaker of the House of Representatives was proved several years ago, when it was greatly curtailed. In this matter, as in the increasing demand for a budget system, we have been drawing nearer to English precedent. Speaking upon this point, Senator Williams of Mississippi said, in a recent speech: "If you think we are the only democracy, you are again mistaken. The government of England is more democratic than is ours. The voice of the people of Great Britain is put upon the statute books within a few weeks after an election, and the voice of



ours may never be, and frequently has not been." Our constitution has been becoming more and more of an anachronism, and from the first was too comprehensive. Instead of being made up of a few articles on which to found a compact, it is virtually a body of laws. It bears the plain marks of the eighteenth century, and the twentieth century has had serious difficulty in erasing them. Its framers were not willing to trust the people to choose their own rulers; hence they resorted to indirect voting, one of the methods that has in recent years wrought so much mischief in Germany. Owing to the extreme conservatism of many of our State constitutions, recourse has been had, in more than one instance, to the initiative and referendum as being a less cumbersome method of attaining an end than it would have been to revise the whole document. Other democracies have virtually but a single law-making body; ours has two, in fact four. It has happened more than once that a law passed by Congress, approved by the President and enforced for some years, has been declared unconstitutional by five judges of the Supreme Court. Thus after the lapse of years it has been pronounced invalid. No small body of men elsewhere in the world has such unlimited power. The Senate of the United States has generally been conservative, not unfrequently reactionary. Many of its members seem to have had the notion that they were elected to talk, not to legislate. The British people found it necessary, or at least desirable, to deprive the House of Lords of much of its power; and we have heard the same course of action recommended regarding our Senate.

Although the constitution of the United States is by no means a document of such exceptional peerlessness as some of its panegyrists would have us believe, it is a matter for wonder that, notwithstanding its compromises, its merits are as great as they are. It embodies many political principles of abiding worth. If Vergil could write *Tantæ molis erat Romanam condere gentem*, historians of our country can adopt the same sentiment by substituting *Americanam* for *Romanam*, in spite of its redundant syllable. When we get an occasional glimpse of the jealousies, the suspicions, the mutual recriminations, that found expression in the debates over the Articles of Confederation, and later over the Constitution, one can hardly help wondering that any sort of agreement was ever reached. If we were to take literally the words which mem-



bers often employed in speaking of one another, we would have to conclude that the people took particular pains to pick out the worst rogues in the country to represent them. The different States or Colonies were so suspicious and jealous of one another that it often seemed impossible to establish amicable relations. Each State seemed more anxious to get something for itself than to coöperate with the rest for the good of all. New York laid a tax on articles brought in from New Jersey and Connecticut. Massachusetts closed her ports to British ships; Connecticut opened hers. Pennsylvania seemed bent on injuring Delaware and New Jersey, while North Carolina suffered from the States contiguous on the north and the south. What a spirit of chivalry the great State of Pennsylvania showed toward its puny neighbor! Two thousand square miles were an object of fear to fifty-five thousand! As no change could be made in the Articles of Confederation except by unanimous consent, and as both Rhode Island and Pennsylvania refused their consent to the levying of duties on imports, the plan failed. No wonder England openly disregarded the treaty of peace; her statesmen could hardly have any respect, and they certainly had no fear, of a commonwealth whose representatives seemed to be as hostile to one another as to a foreign foe. Bad as conditions were, most of the citizens seemed loth to make a change. After James Madison had succeeded in persuading the legislature of his native State to invite others to a conference upon the condition of internal affairs, less than half reported or paid any official attention to the invitation. The rest evidently thought with Hamlet, that it was better "to bear the ills we have, than fly to others that we know not of."

Rhode Island seems to have tried to make its influence felt, despite its smallness, by assuming the role of the "little objector," just as the smallest member of a family sometimes makes the largest disturbance. When the people of Providence were preparing to celebrate the adoption of the constitution, a large body of men came into the city from the surrounding country, with a judge of the Supreme Court at their head, and put an end to further proceedings in favor of the document. The State also refused to send delegates to the Continental Convention at Philadelphia in 1787; then refused to ratify their work, until some of the citizens began to fear that force would be used against them which they could not resist. It was the only Northern State that held out against the other eleven. For





## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

a long time both Massachusetts and Connecticut regarded Rhode Island as a cesspool and breeding ground for all sorts of abominable heresies, because it was the only colony wherein absolute religious liberty was allowed. Its laws made no distinction between Jew and Gentile, between Catholic and Protestant, between Moslem, Buddhist or Brahman. In political liberty the little State is, in some respects, the least democratic of all. In 1800 Providence, with a population of twenty-three thousand, had no larger representation in the General Assembly than Portsmouth with seventeen hundred. Although Dorr's insurrection failed to attain its objects directly, it succeeded indirectly. Like the two little uprisings in Pennsylvania that had preceded it, nobody seems to have been greatly perturbed by the incident, nor was vengeance upon the malefactors called for. It should be said to the credit of the State that, notwithstanding its smallness, it has played a far greater part in the affairs of the nation than Delaware.

Many men who have expressed their views upon history as usually written, regarded it with distrust. Dr. Johnson once remarked that "Our knowledge of history is confined to a few facts, the coloring being conjectural." Horace Walpole said, "Tell me not of history, for I know that to be false." Macchiavelli expressed himself in a still more pessimistic strain. Few competent judges would now endorse such disparaging judgments. I do not know a single American or English or French history written during the last three or four decades by a competent hand that does not set forth the truth as nearly as it can be ascertained. That the French have passed from being one of the most warlike nations of Europe into the ranks of the most pacific, is wholly due to the lessons they have learned from their own history and from that of other countries. Conversely, the Germans, by their persistent distortion of the history of their native land and that of their neighbors, have plunged their countrymen into an almost bottomless pit of misfortunes. It will be instructive to dwell for a few moments on this point.

The intense activity in the field of historical research in our country is a happy omen. So fully are the records of our past being revealed in books and periodicals that only those of our people are ignorant of the past who are wilfully so. History should be written to enlighten, to warn, to guide, not to entertain. Although its lead cannot be blindly followed, its lessons, wisely used, are guide-posts



in dangerous places and in critical times. There have been periods in the history of most great nations when they became obsessed with a delusion that led them into serious disaster or into irretrievable ruin. Our own has not been exempt. Disinterested observers in the South, and even of the South, between 1830 and 1860, and a larger number in the North, were fully aware of the cataclysm that was impending, but to which the small class absurdly called "fire-eaters" were purposely blind. In 1860 leading southerners declared that Lincoln was a sectional candidate, supported by a sectional party—as if Breckenridge, who received less than half as many votes, was not also a sectional candidate! Wigfall of Texas sneered at the government from his seat in the Senate with the words, "Your flag has been insulted; redress it if you dare," referring to the firing on the *Star of the West* in Charleston harbor. Jefferson Davis declared the densely populated cities of the North would "provide food for the sword and the torch." Very true; but the speaker did not take into consideration the difficulties in the way of reaching those cities. In fact, few of them ever suffered from either. With here and there an exception, the temper of the North was conciliatory toward the South during these trying years. In reply to a speech by Senator Hale, John C. Calhoun shouted that he "would as soon argue with a maniac from bedlam as with such a man." Foote invited his northern peer to Mississippi, where he "would soon grace (although he meant disgrace) one of the tallest trees, with a rope round his neck; and if necessary, I would assist at the operation." In reply to this invitation, Mr. Hale invited the madman to New Hampshire, "where the people would be glad to listen to his argument and engage in intellectual conflict for the truth." In the North, speakers and writers who denounced slavery were often in danger and were sometimes put to death, while defenders of slavery were rarely molested. I listened to pro-slavery speeches and sermons. The mails were never tampered with as they were in the South. Among the most eloquent advocates of separation from Great Britain for her tyranny, not a few were slave-holders. The negro generally received as little consideration as if he had not existed. When the new French government announced its intention to abolish slavery at once, and special congratulations were proposed in Congress, some of the southern members declared that they were sick and tired of



such foolishness. In the House, Mr. Giddings said: "Look out of that window upon that slave-pen! Will not Frenchmen view with disgust such hypocrisy? a nation of slave-holders tendering their sympathy to a free people!"

One may read the history of the South during the latter three-fourths of the nineteenth century with the strongest possible desire to give its people the benefit of every doubt that may arise upon controverted questions, yet he cannot avoid condemning the general course of the slave-holding aristocracy. They were determined to have their own way and to treat all opposition as sectional, as unjust and unreasonable. The attack of young Brooks on Senator Sumner was the most cowardly and infamous deed ever perpetrated on an unarmed and unsuspecting victim. The Senator was perhaps unduly sarcastic and severe; he was not more so than other speakers in Congress both before and after him. The incident although apparently insignificant in itself, was both a revelation and a portent. It revealed the spirit of the slave-holding aristocracy as nothing else could have done. It may be said to have startled the civilized world—it shocked Anglo-Saxondom. It was a practical defiance of the time-honored principle embodied in the familiar words "fair play," so dear to the heart of every man who can enter into the spirit of the English tongue. Assassination has never been an approved British method of dealing with either personal or political opponents. A clandestine attack is the method of the footpad and the cut-throat whose sole aim is to rob his victim. There were many men in the South—more than we shall ever know—who privately condemned Brooks and deplored the incident. The leading spirits of the South seem to have actually believed that they could suppress the truth and ignore the spirit of progress by prohibiting the circulation of obnoxious books and periodicals. Postmasters arbitrarily rifled the mails and destroyed even private letters if they contained or were suspected of containing objectionable matter. Many men honestly believed they could set on foot a government the corner-stone of which was human slavery, and they would listen to no criticism. It is almost certain that if the Confederate government had taken measures to abolish slavery at any date in the future, no matter how distant, England would have intervened in the sectional quarrel. Both Louis Napoleon and Lord Palmerston declared that "as matters stand, we dare not go before





a European congress with a proposal to recognize the Southern Confederacy." Yet hardly one soldier in ten in the southern army owned a slave. When one compares conditions in the South for about three decades prior to 1860 and the subsequent sufferings of the people from a war in the making of which few of them were consulted but which most of them supported with alacrity and even with enthusiasm after it had been declared, he can hardly help being struck with the similarity of conditions in Germany under the rule of Bismarck and of William the Second, when the expression of public opinion was carefully suppressed, although not by the violent and unlawful means often resorted to in ante-bellum days. At the present time, however, it seems that the Allies have shown a more conciliatory spirit toward their vanquished foes than did the North towards the prostrate South. It is again instructive to compare the treatment of the Boer rebels by the British government, with that dealt out to the vanquished rebels on our own soil. So complete had been the reconciliation that when the World War broke out a few years ago, the Boer Botha took the field at the head of an army of his countrymen to fight for the same government against which he had taken up arms in his early years. Jan Smutz rendered valiant service on the same side as a civilian on British soil. It has been affirmed more than once and never contradicted, that what are known as Wilson's fourteen points were in fact formulated by the Boer statesman. The English seem to have been thoroughly convinced that while there may be political blunders, there are no political crimes.

There is something admirable and heroic in the pertinacity with which a portion of the English people, century after century, persisted in the struggle to maintain what they considered their rights, against the usurpation of the crown. At first the recalcitrants were few in number, as we see by the list of names appended to the Great Charter. But they continued to increase until they virtually included the entire population and both sexes. More than once the sovereign was deposed, and one king forfeited his head. There have always been Englishmen who were suspicious, who were restless, who were turbulent to the point of rebellion; but they were never bent on destruction and devastation as many persons were on the continent. Serfdom, a milder form of slavery, at one time existed over the whole of Europe. In England it was legally abol-





ished in the fourteenth century, while it perdured in some of the German states until far into the nineteenth century, and in Russia still longer. There was a peasant uprising in England in 1381. A few lawyers were put to death and several nobles, but neither women nor children. Compare this with the Jacquerie in France and the Peasant revolt in Germany in Luther's time, not to mention the frightful Thirty Years War. By 1451 villeinage had been done away for all time in England. There was no real reaction from the revolt of the peasants. During the Hundred Years War the potency of parliament kept on increasing steadily. The kings needed money, and could obtain it only by granting more and more privileges to the people's representatives. Sir John Fortescue, who died in 1471, wrote a book which he called "*De Laudibus Legum Angliae*," wherein he set forth the duties and prerogatives of an English king. He says, among other things: "A king of England cannot, at his pleasure, make any alteration in the laws of the land without the consent of his subjects, nor burden them against their will with strange impositions. The king is appointed to protect his subjects in their lives, properties and laws. For this end he has the delegation of power from the people, and he has no just claim to any other power." Although the divine right of the English kings was claimed more than once and defended by a few English writers, it was never widely recognized. Notwithstanding the incessant political quarrels and the religious controversies, the great body of the people always felt that they were Englishmen first—not Catholics, or Protestants, or Dissenters. Spain learned this fact to her cost, perhaps to her surprise. When the sons of Britain went forth from their native land to make their homes in other parts of the world, they carried with them the conviction that they knew their rights and had the courage to maintain them. They never lost the feeling of solidarity with the people from whom they separated.

The blighting effects of constant interference on the part of the government and of waiting for the officials to take the initiative, was demonstrated in many ways, but particularly in the war which put an end to French rule in North America. In 1750 France had a population at least four times as numerous as that of England, but only one-twentieth as many colonists in the New World. The French in Canada were almost indifferent to the outcome of the



struggle. When their country passed under the government of Great Britain they made no vigorous resistance. If Montcalm had defeated Wolfe, the people of New England, and perhaps of all the Colonies, would have continued the struggle. It was written in the Book of Destiny that the Anglo-Saxon should win eventually. The feeling of solidarity among the English-speaking people was also strikingly shown in the World War. Although the French in Canada saw the deadly peril hanging over the descendants of their ancestors in the home land, they showed little disposition to go to the rescue. When the Dominion government found itself in straits for men and decided to resort to conscription, some of the French resisted even by force. The people of the United States, although in no immediate danger, anticipated the peril that was gathering in the distance and took up arms to avert it. The opposition to the designs of Germany soon became so vigorous as the war progressed, that even the language was accused of sharing the guilt of those who spoke it, and outlawed in some parts of the country. One of our state universities recently issued a bulletin setting forth what this country owes to Britain, also reminding its readers to what extent our institutions and laws are founded on those of the country from which we sprang. For a considerable time French thought had a good deal of vogue among certain of our thinkers: but it left no abiding traces. It should however be said to the credit of the fourth generation of Americans that they had not forgotten "Our Debt to France."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup>It is illuminating to compare the early unification of England with conditions in Italy, and even of France, up to the time of the Revolution. Worst of all were the *dissecta membra* that composed the German Empire. The situation is thus stated by Professor West in the *Modern World*: "Up to Napoleon's time, Germany consisted of Austria and Prussia, both of them half Slavonic in blood; of about thirty states of the second rank, of some two hundred and fifty petty states of the third order, varying in size from a small duchy to a large farm, and of some fifteen hundred knights of the empire who were really independent sovereigns and whose subjects averaged about three hundred each. Every one of these puny states was an absolute monarchy, with its court, its officials and its own coinage. Each of the fifteen hundred knights had his own system of tariffs and taxes. One of the sovereigns of the third rank kept a standing army composed of one colonel, nine lower officers and two privates. Perhaps the German author was not far astray, as human affairs go, who wrote towards the close of the nineteenth century, after a careful study of British history, that English institutions evolved with almost the sequence of the acts of a drama in which one scene naturally grows out of another without doing violence to the probabilities of the situation. He believed that

"in yon far off divine event  
Towards the whole creation moves,"

Great Britain has always led the procession!



Future historians who contemplate the labor of setting forth adequately the events of the second decade of the twentieth century will find themselves confronted with a task of such magnitude that it would have been utterly inconceivable to any previous writer. Communications transmitted through the air, by wire, by submarine cables, by swift dispatch bearers on automobiles and bicycles, in immense quantities have been preserved and will be accessible for all future time. The press has accumulated a huge mass of data, all of which will have to be examined and much of which is trustworthy. Even that which is utterly false and designedly misleading can not be ignored. Dogs and birds have played an important role in the gigantic struggle. Napoleon kept Europe in a ferment for almost a generation; but how insignificant were his greatest battles, which at most continued for a few days, compared with the gigantic contests carried on from the English Channel to the Swiss border, along almost the entire northern boundary of Italy, in the Balkans, and far into Asia Minor. All previous armies faced each other on the earth, while fleets faced each other on the sea. But in the second decade of the twentieth century, armies fought each other on sea and land, on the earth and under the earth, while smaller groups fought each other in the air and in the depths of the sea. In previous wars, armies were numbered at most by hundreds of thousands; within the last few years armies numbering men by millions were collected. In former times it was chiefly men who were slain, and a city occasionally sacked. But in the latest war even the ground was turned into a desert, and whole cities into heaps of ruins.

In the recent war there was active a mighty force to which all previous wars were a stranger: it was the alacrity and liberality displayed by the civil population throughout almost the whole civilized world in the endeavor to alleviate the distress of the non-combatants in the besieged and devastated regions. The work of succoring those in need was carried on in addition to what was done for those who were actively engaged in the grim work of war itself. When the story of those eleemosynary activities is fully written, it alone will fill several large volumes. Still more noteworthy is the struggle for an idea and an ideal to which almost all previous belligerents were total strangers. America had much to lose in a material sense and little to gain, whatever might be the





## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

issue in Europe. But she threw herself into the contest with all her enormous resources without a thought of tangible profit. Not only government employees but very many private persons poured out their treasures and gave their labor without stint or limit. In most of the previous wars, the belligerents knew in advance what they had to gain or lose by the issue, whatever it might be. The Americans stipulated for nothing, asked for nothing, expected no material advantage. Her people furnished a practical lesson in altruism and self-denial to which all nations in the future will look back with admiration and Americans with just pride. Even after peace had been virtually declared, the work of benevolence was not only continued unabated, but was pushed with increased energy. A plain statement of fact is more eloquent than the most flowery rhetoric. American soldiers have added a chapter to the world's military history that is without precedent or parallel. They have shown that with a few months' training they are fully equal in bravery, in tenacity of purpose, in endurance, in resourcefulness, to the soldiers of most other countries who have had years of army life to their credit. They have demonstrated the uselessness and waste involved in maintaining huge standing armies and a military caste. American officers with no experience in actual warfare were no whit inferior to their foreign peers who knew war at first hand and who thought only in terms of war. The spirit of the American soldier was exhibited in the answer of the officer who, when ordered to retire with his men, replied: "We are Americans. We cannot retire." A glance at the names on the casualty lists discloses the remarkable fact that notwithstanding the diversity of the ancestry of those who made the supreme sacrifice, they had become thoroughly Americanized. They thought, they felt, they fought like Americans, although some of them could only with difficulty think in the official language of America. The altruism shown by the United States in entering the World War was not altogether without precedent. England exhibited a good deal of the same kind of unselfishness at the Congress of Vienna. She had fought Napoleon for half a generation, had incurred an enormous debt in doing so; but she received little in return. Although the outlying territory which fell to her share of the spoils eventually proved valuable, it was not so a century ago. England stayed the hand of the great Corsican by destroying his navy, and took the lead in routing him on



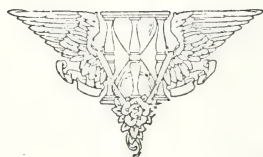
land. He would nevertheless have won in the end had it not been for England, just as William II would have won the great war before the end of 1914 had not England thrown herself across his path. There is no event in modern history that bears so close a resemblance to a miracle on so gigantic scale, as the stoppage of the onrushing Germans in France and Belgium. Yet neither officers nor men indulged in any boasting over their gigantic achievements by land and sea, nor claimed any credit for regarding a "scrap of paper" as a binding pledge. It was merely the British way.

One of the great contributions to the enlightenment of the world, and, we may add, to its enfranchisement, was made by the adoption of that clause in our federal constitution in which it is declared that "Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion," etc. It was a complete ignorance of European precedent, although some of the colonies had already taken the momentous step. There are many persons in the United States who do not know that an established religion means the taxing of all the people for the support of one or more preferred creeds to the exclusion of all others, and not unfrequently the infliction of disabilities upon those who do not belong to the elect. Many years elapsed before the people of Europe began to learn the lesson which the American had been putting into practice, and not all of them have learned it to this day. Our example has been a striking revelation to the world by demonstrating that religion is far more liberally supported where every one has his choice of a creed or of no creed, than where such support is compulsory. The contributions of both American Catholics and Protestants to the various religious agencies in which they are officially interested far exceed those of other countries in their magnitude, not to mention those agencies that are religious in character but undenominational in management. In some of the older States the amount of money available from private benefactions for the support of higher education is larger than that appropriated by the legislature. And the good work is not only going on; it is moving forward with increasing velocity. In Continental Europe there are virtually no educational institutions of high grade supported by private funds. While, therefore, in the almost a century and a half of our independent existence we have done things to which we can not look back with feelings of pride, or even of satisfaction, there is no country on the

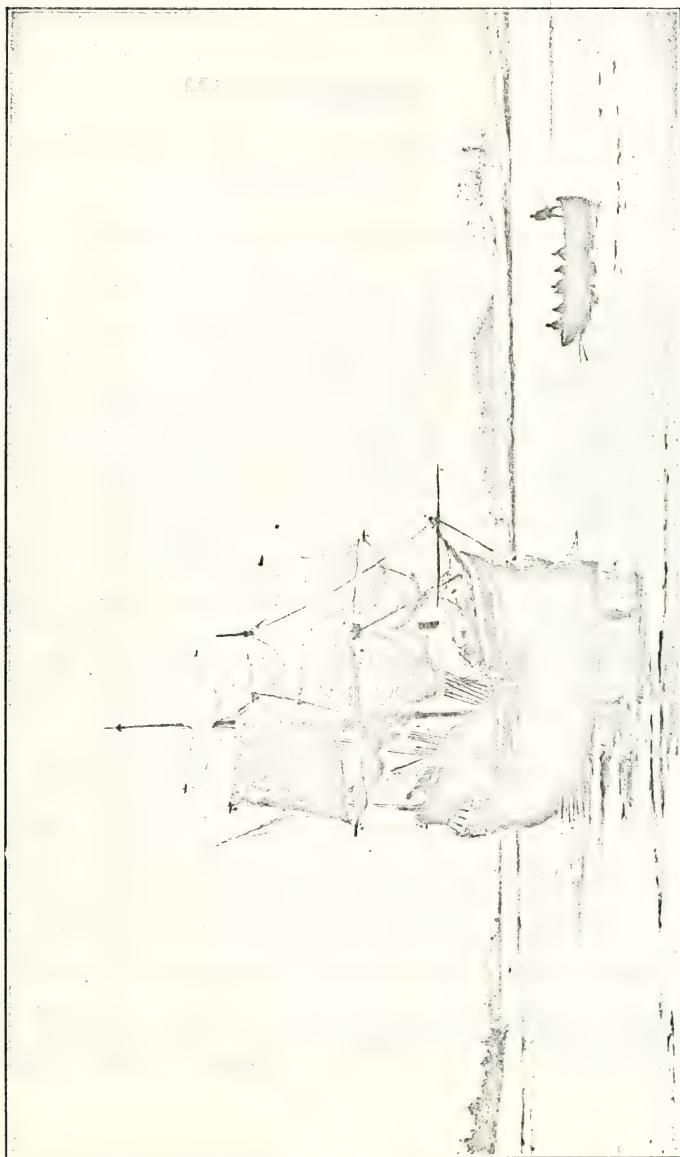


## REWRITING AMERICAN HISTORY

face of the globe whose record is, on the whole, as creditable as ours. Although there were a few slackers, a few hypocrites, a few profiteers at all times, "what were these among so many?" They were hardly more than a few defective grains in an otherwise sound ear of corn.







THE MAYFLOWER





## their part in the Myles Standish

MILITARY COMMANDER AND BRAVE DEFENDER OF THE  
PLYMOUTH COLONY.

BY AMELIA DAY CAMPBELL, NEW YORK CITY.



O STILL *live* after three hundred years! To become enshrined deeper and firmer in the heart of a nation as the years roll on and give a broader perspective of appreciation and understanding of their *ideals* of law and religion which became *actualities*; of the hardships they endured; the terrors heroically overcome, and the sorrows of sickness and death bore unflinchingly! What a record to attain, and yet such is the case with Myles Standish, (the "man of the hour" to-day as then), and the early Pilgrims who came to our shores in the *Mayflower* just three hundred years ago, and whose arrival is being celebrated by the entire English-speaking world today, as well as in Leyden, Holland, which was their home for twelve years.

After Myles Standish had been commissioned an officer in Her Majesty's service for bravery, Queen Elizabeth sent him to Holland to assist that country in her war with Spain, and again his ability and bravery were rewarded by the Twelve Year Treaty between the two warring countries. This Treaty would terminate in 1621, and the Pilgrims believed war would be resumed. The Thirty Year War had begun not very far away. For the reason that their boys were becoming soldiers in the Dutch service, that more and more would join if war with Spain was renewed, also because their children were intermarrying with the Dutch, the Pilgrims determined to go to America and become identified with the new country.

The spirit of adventure no doubt led Myles Standish to give up his commission in the army and accompany the Pilgrims in their

---

NOTE—The author is a lineal descendant of Captain Myles Standish in the ninth generation, and through this descent is a member of the Society of Mayflower Descendants. Through ancestors identified with the Revolutionary War, she is a member of the Daughters of the American Revolution.



## MYLES STANDISH

quest for a place to worship God in their own desired way, for "to enjoy religious liberty was the known end of the first comers that adventured into this remote wilderness," as well as to retain their nationality and language. Knowing it to be an *adventurous quest*, he desired to devote his indomitable energy in needed *service* as leader and protector, for history shows that these qualities were *never failing*, and Standish is affectionately remembered by a grateful posterity for the important part he played in the everyday life of the Colony. To him we undoubtedly owe the fact that we have Pilgrim ancestors to-day, and that the little band did not *all* perish wretchedly during that first winter.

Myles Standish was the sixth signer of the Compact, to which every man of the *Mayflower's* passengers attached his name the night before landing, and unto which they "promised all due submission and obedience," and which has been termed "the birth of popular constitutional liberty." It was drawn up for mutual benefit, a common fellowship and community of interests, and they undertook and established this self-government because they were God-fearing, law-abiding people; and we know that the spirit of endeavors of Standish and the other Pilgrims are bridging those three hundred years and finding accomplishment in the Americanism of *today*.

They had no royal charter; their patent was for a place farther south, on the Hudson river, but the sea-captain of the *Mayflower* is suspected of being in league with the Dutch, who wanted the Hudson river territory for themselves, and bribed the *Mayflower* captain, who deposited his passengers on the bleak New England coast. They came to a wilderness filled with savage Indians, but they braved fears and hardships; they had no homes, but proceeded to build them; they were hungry, but they looked forward to the harvest; half their number died the first winter, but when the *Mayflower* sailed back to England—back to what meant home and comfortable living—not one soul returned in her. They had *faith* and *hope*, and who shall say that they did not have a *vision* of the possibilities of this fair land? Already they had become liberty-loving *Americans*. We, in looking back to their day, cannot fail to hold our heads a little higher, square our shoulders a little more to our task, and plant the standard of our ambition and purpose a little higher, for our eyes see more clearly, and our minds





Standish

The

of Standish





## MYLES STANDISH

grasp with keener joy the possession of the heritage which has come to us down through these three hundred years, and we desire to be worthy of their great and heroic example.

Myles Standish was a descendant of the Standishes of Standish in Lancashire, England,—a family dating back to William the Conqueror, and noted through successive generations for its fighting men. They fought for and by the side of their kings in the Crusades, and in the French, Scottish and English wars, and for their brave deeds many of them received knighthood. Lingard records that “Sir Robert de Standish was knighted for killing Wat Tyler, a rebel who rode up and placed his hand on King Richard’s horse, at the same time toying with his own sword, whereupon the Lord Mayor suspected his intention and thrust his sword into his throat. Tyler spurred his horse, rode about a dozen yards, fell to the ground, and was despatched by Robert de Standish, one of the king’s esquires.” And this is but one of the many thrilling tales told of the men of this noted family.

The coat-of-arms of the Standishes is “Arms sable, three standing dishes argent; crest, an owl holding a rat in its talons proper.” According to Bartlett, “the shield which appears on the battlements of the Standish church (which is handsome and extensive), has simply three standing dishes argent on field of azure blue.”

Myles Standish was born in 1584, undoubtedly in Standish Hall, Lancashire, but the records in the parish church for 1584 and 1585 have been obliterated by means of pumice stone, so that they are illegible. It is supposed that this was done by or with the authority of some of the descendants of the family, in order that his American descendants (who some years ago sent an emissary to examine the records) should not be able to prove that Standish was entitled to the vast possessions which were his by right but withheld from him, for in his Will appears the following bequest:

“March 7th, 1655. I give vnto my son and heire aparent, Alexander Standish all my lands as heire aparent by lawful decent in Ormistick Borsconge Wrightington Maudsley Crawston and in the Ile of Man and given to me as right heire by lawiul decent but surruptously detained from mee, my great-grandfather being a vond or younger brother from the house of Standish. By mee, MYLES STANDISH.”

The ancient Standish estate contained ten townships and 15,377 statute acres, and Whittaker states in his “History of Manchester, England,” that “Standish was one of the twelve places in the South of Lancashire in which the Saxons erected fortified castles for the



## MYLES STANDISH

residence of their chiefs and the protection of their country. Standish Hall was erected in 1530, near the site of the ancient Standish Castle. The moat encircling Standish Hall was partially filled up in 1780, and much of the building was removed." The present Standish Hall, according to Bartlett, "contains but a fragment of the old building; the rest is modernized, and contains numerous family portraits of warriors in corselet and buff, lawyers with peaked beards and starched ruffs, and handsome courtiers with slashed dresses and flowing lovelocks. . . . Inside the Chorley church is the Standish pew, capacious enough to contain a large family, and having a very unique ornamental screen, elaborately carved in oak with quaint figures and scutcheons, while between the supporting columns two seats of honor for the master and mistress of the family. The chancel window bears the arms of the Standishes and the Widdringtons, with whom they intermarried." Historians differ as to which branch of the Standishes Myles belonged. Some say Duxbury, and others Ormistick, but all concede that these branches belonged to the manorial house originally, and certainly from his Will he claimed descent from the Standishes of Standish. Regarding Duxbury Hall, Bartlett in "The Pilgrim Fathers" says: "Within two miles of Chorley is Duxbury Hall, a splendid modern mansion which has succeeded to the ancient one, containing a fine collection of Spanish and Italian pictures. . . . The park is bold and open, adorned with clumps of timber, and overlooked by the noble ridge of Rivington Pike, upon which is a beacon tower which was kept in readiness to be lighted during the panic of a Spanish invasion in Elizabeth's reign, and also during the meditated attempt of Napoleon."

Although reared in splendor, surrounded by wealth, and nourished on tradition, Myles Standish was a crusader whose individuality and initiative developed into the pioneer spirit, of which he was then, and still is to-day, "the man of the hour."

After a tempestuous voyage of sixty-seven days from Plymouth, England, the *Mayflower* reached Provincetown, Massachusetts, in December, 1620. Richard Carver, after the signing of the Compact, was appointed governor, William Brewster was chosen elder, and Myles Standish was made captain and military commander—a post which he held as long as he lived. Captain Standish's duties began at once, and although it was conceded that "there might be danger



in the attempt," yet he was impatient to be off, and with his band of sixteen men was put ashore, each in his corselet and armed with sword and musket, and set out on an exploring tour to ascertain whether this would be a good place to land and make their homes; but after exploring for miles they returned to the ship with the information that they had seen Indians in the immediate vicinity. This, and other reasons—the sandy coast, the thickly wooded country and no fresh water—decided them to look farther. So Captain Standish led still another expedition, and later a third, before a place was selected. Finally, on December 21st, 1620, they stepped ashore upon the now historically famous Plymouth Rock, and called the place where they landed Plymouth. Because of its spring or stream of fresh water, and because they found it "a very good harbor for our shipping, we marched along and found divers corne fields and beheld running brooks—a very good place for situation," they decided to remain. The spring of water is preserved to this day as a memorial drinking fountain, and is pointed out as one of the interesting historical spots of Plymouth. On one of their ventures they had discovered a quantity of Indian corn which had been hidden by the Indians. They took it for seed purposes, but later returned its equivalent to the Indians, and with generous interest, for Mourt's Relations states, "It was purposed to make them large satisfaction." Five days later the *Mayflower* passengers arrived, and, to use the language of the chroniclers, "New England was born."

The first winter was filled with burdens almost more than human endurance could bear, but their strong Christian faith in a Divine Providence kept them from despair, even when half their band of five score and two souls died of exposure, privations, etc. Governor Bradford's account in his "History of the Plymouth Plantation" gives a vivid word picture which thrills us with sympathy amounting almost to terror, and commands admiration verging on reverence for their devotion and self-sacrifice. He records as follows:

"That which was most sad and lamentable was that in 2 or 3 months time halfe of our company dyed, espetially in Jan. and Feb. being the depth of winter and wanting houses and other comforts, being infected with scurvie and other diseases which this long vioage and their incomodate condition had brought upon them, so as ther dyed sometimes 2 or 3 of a day in the foresaid time; that of 100 and odd persons scarce 50 remained. Of these in the time of ther most distress ther was but 6 or 7 sound persons, who to ther great commendation be it spoken spared no pains night or day, but with





## MYLES STANDISH

abundance of toyle and hazard of ther owne health, fetched them wood, made them fires, drest them meat, made ther beads, washed ther lothsome cloaths, cloathed and uncloathed them—in a word, did all the homely and necessarie things for them which dainty and quesie stomaks cannot endure to hear named; and all this willingly and cheerfully without grudging in the least, showing herein their true love unto ther friends and bretheren. A rare example and worthy to be remembered. Two of these 7 were Mr. William Brewster, ther reverend Elder, and Myles Standish ther captain and military commander, unto whom and myselve and many others were much beholden in our lowe and sicke condition. And yet the Lord so upheld these persons as in this generall calamity they were not at all infected either with sickness or lameness."

Sorrow stalked by the side of brave Captain Standish, for his beloved wife Rose, who came with him from Leyden, died January 29th, one month after reaching this New World. She was, according to Dr. Edw. Tinkham Gibson's account in his "Standish Hall," undoubtedly the daughter of Sir Alexander Standish, of the Duxbury branch of the Standishes, and Myles' first cousin. Being of gentle birth and unaccustomed to the close crowding that was necessary on the *Mayflower*, where the women lived until houses were built, the poor food as well as the lack of it, and unavoidable exposure, it is small wonder that she was the first woman to succumb to the rigors of a New England winter. The loving care which her husband gave her when he could be spared from his military duties, could not save this delicate flower. Though his heart was bowed with grief at his loss, yet his hands were ever ready to help others of the sick and dying, as Governor Bradford so ably relates.

When spring came, the decoration for the many graves was a field of corn (grown from the seed of the supply taken from the Indians a few months earlier), which was the only means of effectively hiding from the Indians the fact that there remained so few alive. But those few were banded together in the name of Christianity and liberty. They had signed the meritorious Compact which provided for laws on which our own are founded, such as "the law of the ballot, trial by jury, registry of public lands in books, taxation, and the equal distribution of inheritance among their children," and had placed the carrying out of its laws into the hands of men to whom they gave their allegiance.

The first offender against the law of the Colony was John Billington, who joined the Pilgrims in England before sailing, and of whom Young says: "His accession was of no benefit to the Colony. He was a mischievous and troublesome fellow. The first offense in the settlement was committed by him. In March, 1621, he was





'convented before the whole company for contempt of Standish's lawful commands, with approbrious speeches, for which he was adjudged to have his neck and heels tied together, but upon humbling himself and craving pardon and it being the first offense, he is forgiven.' "

Misfortunes and disappointments continued to pursue the colonists in the lack of rain for their crops on which they were so dependent that first year for food. They felt this was a punishment from God for having displeased Him, and when rain came on one occasion after a long season of prayer, and continued gently for fourteen days so that their crops were abundant, they appointed a day to be set apart for Thanksgiving to God for His mercies to them.

On different occasions the colony was alarmed by the appearance of Indians, but Captain Standish and his men were so zealous in their protective watchfulness, that they did no harm to the colonists, although they skulked about, stole their tools, etc., but eventually returned them. Some of the Indians were friendly when they discovered they would be well treated if they "kept the peace," and Samoset made them frequent visits. On one of these occasions he brought Squanto (probably diminutive for Tisquantum, as Young in his chronicles always calls him), an Indian who appears to have been the only living native of Plymouth, the other Indians having died off during the plague, which some say was smallpox, but which left this territory free for the Pilgrims, for they were far too conscientious to have dispossessed the Indians had they been found in possession.

Squanto reported that Massasoit, their sagamore or chief, was in the vicinity with his braves, so a parley was arranged. Massasoit was a very powerful sagamore, "being chief of the Wampanoags, and over-lord of the Indians on Cape Cod and around Massachusetts Bay." Davis in his "Ancient Landmarks" records: "On April 1st, Massasoit, with *twenty* attendants unarmed, crossed the brook where he met Standish with *six* musketeers, and was by him escorted to the common house of the settlement, where he met the Governor," and a Treaty was entered into which was never broken on either side as long as Massasoit lived, and which lasted fifty years. "Squanto remained with the Colonists, showed them how to set their corn (the Indian season for planting the maize was 'when the leaves of the white oak are as big as the ears of a mouse'),



## MYLES STANDISH

where the fish were most plentiful, how to fertilize their land with fish, piloted them on the water," and became almost indispensable as guide and interpreter. Captain Standish, however, was not content to rely on Squanto as an interpreter in his continual dealings with the Indians, which included bartering and trading as well as warfare, so he mastered the Indian language and became the best linguist in the colony.

Irrespective of the Treaty with the Wampanoags, the Pilgrims believed in caution, and for their greater security a fort on what is now Burial Hill was built, and the spot where it stood is marked today by a stone to commemorate it. There are also many tombstones which give the names of those early Pilgrims and their descendants, and which are wonderfully well preserved considering the lapse of time since they were placed there, for they are of slate which crumbles and perishes with age. But ancestor-loving and Pilgrim-revering people are seeing to it that these old slabs are gradually used as inlays on strong marble or granite stones which will stand the stress of ages yet to come. As a further protection, Captain Standish drilled every man in the colony to handle a gun and a sword, and to be prepared at a moment's notice against attack. Their houses were surrounded by stockades, wall, etc. These precautions were later found very necessary on account of the hostility of the Narragansetts and Massachusetts, both large and powerful Indian tribes.

According to Article IV of the Treaty with Massasoit, "If any did unjustly war against him, we would aid him; if any did war against us, he should aid us"; therefore, when the Narragansetts made war against Massasoit, Captain Standish headed an expedition against them. Each man was appointed his task by the Captain, and "all men encouraged one another to the utmost of their power." This was done to secure the release of Squanto, their interpreter, who was of the Wampanoag tribe and had been captured by the Narragansetts. After they had been defeated and Squanto returned to them, Standish notified them that "there must be no further insurrection against Massasoit at their peril," and they knew he would keep his word.

The following year, however, Canonicus, chief of the Narragansetts, sent a messenger to Plymouth with a bundle of arrows bound with a rattle-snake's skin. Governor Bradford, after conferring



PLATE II



OLD FORT, BURIAL HILL, PLYMOUTH





with Mr. Isaac Allerton and Captain Myles Standish, sent it back to Canonicus filled with powder and shot. This terrified the Indians, as was intended, for they stood in great fear of the "fire" of the white men, and they returned the ammunition-filled snake-skin, not permitting it to remain overnight in their settlement.

From this episode which might have been fatal to them had they had less intrepid leaders, the colonists realized their own weakness, as they had no means of protection except their arms, so they built four bulwarks or jetties from which they could defend the town. Captain Standish divided the men into four squadrons, or companies, and at a general muster or training appointed officers and issued instructions, so that in his absence they could direct the defense. Young in his chronicles states that "this was the first general muster in New England, and the embryo of our present militia system."

The people who established the Wessagussett Colony, now Weymouth, arrived from England in June, 1622, having been sent over by Thomas Weston as a private adventure. The larger of the two ships which brought them soon sailed away, leaving sufficient supplies to last until harvest, and even though, according to Channing, "there were no women, children or old men—only strong lusty men," yet shortly after harvest, starvation stared them in the face, for they had become dissatisfied, improvident, indolent and disorderly. Then they stole from the Indians, who became more and more suspicious and finally grew to hate them and decided to kill all the white men. In some way the Weston Colony found out their intention, and sent one of their own men to Plymouth through the snow to ask assistance, and Captain Standish was sent to aid them with all the men who could be spared, also with supplies which included the corn they were saving for seed purposes, thereby impoverishing themselves. Channing further records that "Standish found on arriving at the settlement that everything was in confusion, the men scattered about, some of them even living with the Indians. His first work was to collect the scattered colonists and get them to a place of safety. Then he turned on the Indians and did his work so thoroughly that ten years later, when the Indians found a wandering white man in the wilderness half crazed from starvation and hardship, they surrounded him and sent to Plymouth to ask Governor Bradford as to what they should do



## MYLES STANDISH

with him." Young relates that "The Plymouth Captain was a man of small stature, but of such an active and daring spirit that he spread terror throughout all the Indian tribes from Massachusetts Bay to Martha's Vineyard, and from Cape Cod harbor to Narragansett."

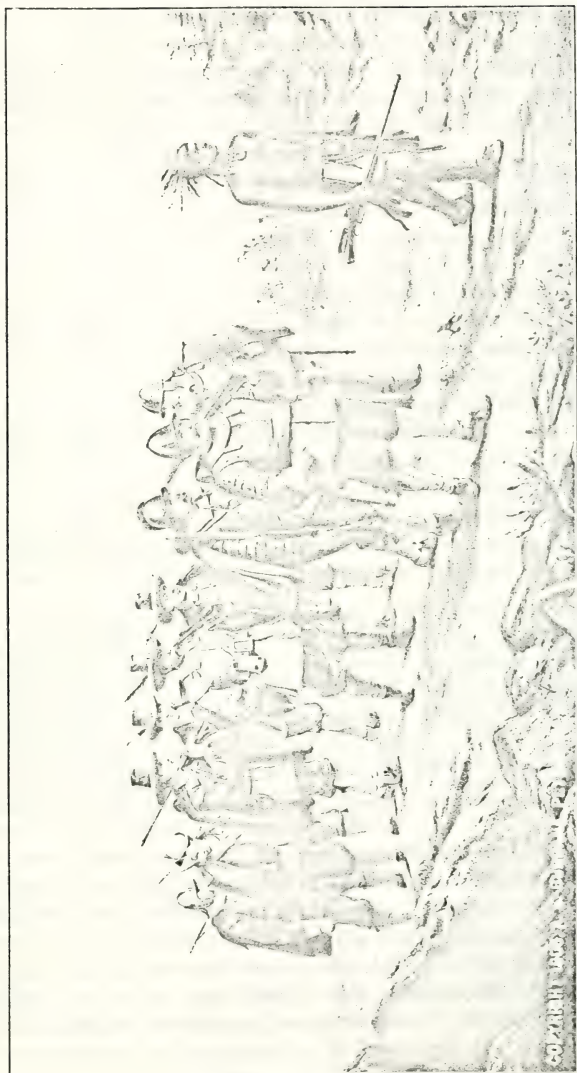
Pecksuot, one of the Indian leaders of this uprising, a very large Indian, told Captain Standish that he might be "a great captain, yet he was but a little man." The Indians were insolent and defiant, but "these things the Captain observed, yet bare with patience." The next day the trouble continued, and Standish found it necessary, for such had been his orders, to treat them with violence. Pecksuot had sharpened his knife to kill the Captain, but he wrenched it from him and killed Pecksuot with his own weapon. Then another chief, Wituwamat, was killed by Standish and his men, and when he returned to Plymouth he brought Wituwamat's head and set it up in the fort. By this means only was respect instilled into the Indians. All of the Indian women were kept from harm by his orders, and he would not accept one penny-worth of their corn or furs or wampum. Regarding this affair, Cockshott records the following in his "History of the Pilgrims":

"This was Standish's triumph, his notable adventure, and he returned bearing the head of Wituwamat (a notorious and bloody villain). He had ample proof that bloodshed was necessary. \* \* \* The conspirators were only waiting till Weston's men had made them two canoes, and that they meant to take the ship and kill all. Justifiable and necessary as this punishment had been, it was an episode of regret by all. \* \* But the severity of Standish had done its work. The tribes who had joined the Massachusetts, seeing their punishment, were filled with fear and for many years peace reigned around the colony of Pilgrims."

On another occasion he forestalled the Indians in their savage and evil intentions, for Bartlett records that "one of the Indians had promised to murder Standish in his sleep, and with this design accompanied Standish on board. But either from the coldness of the night or a mysterious presentiment of evil, the gallant Myles Standish was unable to sleep, but either walked about or sat by the fire all night—probably a camp fire. The Indians must have thought he had a charmed life, for their treachery and cunning availed them little.

During this warrior's lifetime he was ever vigilant, but after his death in 1656, vigilance relaxed, perhaps because of their long period of peace under the terms of the Treaty with one tribe, and because the Narragansetts and Massachusetts were expected to con-





From a Painting.

MARCH OF MYLES STANDISH





tinue to respect his severe discipline. At any rate, Cockshott in his history says: "In 1675 when war actually broke out (with the Indians), it found the Plymouth Colony somewhat unprepared, somewhat enfeebled in fighting capacity since the early days of Standish's notable adventure—those early days when they were conscious of carrying their lives in their hands, and every man was trained for military defense and strategy."

Myles Standish did not confine his services to military exploits only; in fact, he seems to have been in the thick of every activity of an executive and financial nature as well. He was assistant governor to Governor Bradford for six years, and although he is reputed to have had "a fiery temper which was sometimes too military in character, sudden and quick in quarrel," yet in this office he was wise of judgment and humane in all decisions, and was greatly honored and respected. He was treasurer of the Colony for twelve years, and we may be sure the funds were safely kept by this man of whom historians say "he was of incorruptible integrity."

In all times of trouble, no matter of what nature, it was to this vigorous personality that the Pilgrims turned, and history does not record one failure. He was instrumental in protecting the trading industries which grew up along the coast, and especially one on the Kennebec, which Bancroft describes as follows:

"The Plymouth settlers had established a trading station on the Kennebec and had obtained from the Crown a patent giving them a monopoly if need be, by force of arms. In defiance of this a certain Hocking forced his way in a bark up the river intending to intercept the Indian trade before the Plymouth factory. Howland, the manager, remonstrated and threatened to use force. Hocking, after bidding him do his worst, went up the stream and came to anchor. Howland then sent a party with orders to cut Hocking's cable and let him drift down the stream. This was done. Hocking fired on his assailants and shot one dead. Soon after their trading vessel went to Boston. Among those on board was John Alden, a leading man among the settlers. He had been in Kennebec but had borne no part in the fray. \* \* \* But they detained the bark and kept Alden prisoner, and Standish was thereupon sent to try for his release. This was granted by the Massachusetts government, but not until Standish and Alden had given security to appear and explain the matter."

In order to secure money and supplies for their voyage to the New World, the Pilgrims had signed articles of agreement with the Merchant Adventurers, one of which was as follows: "That at the end of seven years the capital and profits, viz. the houses, lands, goods and chattels, be equally divided among the Adventurers and the planters; which done, every man shall be free from other of them of any debt or detriment concerning the adventure." At the beginning it was impossible for the colonists to discharge any part of





## MYLES STANDISH

their obligations to the Adventurers, who were very indignant when the *Mayflower* returned with no cargo, but gradually, as their crops grew, they were able to trade with the Indians and to send furs, lumber, etc. But they had to borrow money frequently, and different prominent and responsible members of the colony were sent to England to obtain loans, for which they paid very high rates of interest up to fifty per cent. In 1625 Myles Standish "was sent to England in a fishing vessel . . . on business with the Adventurers and the Council of New England, with instructions to obtain a supply of goods and learn what terms could be made for release. In 1626 he returned, having hired one hundred and fifty pounds at fifty per cent., which he expended in the most needful commodities. . . . In the same year Mr. Allerton went to England with orders to make a composition with the Adventurers upon as good terms as he could (unto which some way had been made the year before by Captaine Standish)!" "Allerton returned in 1627, having hired two hundred and fifty pounds at thirty per cent.," as set forth in Davis' "Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth." He also arranged for their seven-year contract to be cancelled, and for payment of a debt of eighteen hundred pounds, which was guaranteed by the signatures of Governor Bradford, Captain Myles Standish, Isaac Allerton and others. Bartlett glories in the Pilgrims' uprightness, as follows:

"It is ground for rejoicing that the Pilgrims under temptations of poverty and in the midst of trials, scorned under any pretense or consideration to countenance the modern doctrine of repudiation. The foundations of the new state were laid in integrity and honor, and Winslow, Bradford, Alden, Prince, Allerton and Standish—men whose courage and conduct had carried it triumphantly through discouragement and peril—now nobly became sureties with their fortunes, and not without eventual loss, for the fulfillment of its commercial enterprise."

Myles Standish was married twice. The widows and widowers who were bereaved during that first winter, very soon chose mates again, some within only two months. No doubt it was a paramount necessity in those days of partings, for the women needed husbands as protectors and providers, the men must have housekeepers and mothers for their motherless children, and homes must be kept together. All had to live as compactly and as economically as possible, so the whole company was assigned to nineteen houses, the unmarried living with the married families. Eighteen wives had arrived on the *Mayflower*, but at the end of the first summer there were only *four* living.



## MYLES STANDISH

Myles Standish has long been a *romantic* personage, due to Henry W. Longfellow's poem, "The Courtship of Myles Standish," in which Standish asked John Alden, his friend, to propose for him to the fair Puritan maiden, Priscilla Mullins. Her coy question, "Why don't you speak for yourself, John," which of course showed her preference for Alden, resulted in the rejection of Captain Standish's suit, and her happy marriage to the young man of her choice. To this romantic poem is due the general belief that Myles Standish was a timid, shrinking man, when it came to association with the ladies, but in reading his history one is bound to believe that a man of his birth, breeding and bravery was perfectly capable of living up to the customs of the day.

Priscilla Mullins was a passenger on the *Mayflower*, with her father, mother and brother, all of whom died within two months, and she was left alone in the world. Then the great-hearted Elder Brewster said, "Priscilla, you will come to my house and henceforth be my dear daughter," so it was to Elder Brewster's home that John Alden went a-wooing at Standish's request. There is no doubt that Elder Brewster would have welcomed the prominent Myles Standish as a suitable husband for his ward, but the young cooper was much more attractive in her eyes, and while she no doubt worshipped Standish the chieftain for his bravery and military prowess, yet it was John Alden the youth whom she loved. While Priscilla's preference may have estranged the Captain and his proxy wooer for a time, yet it did not last, for history records that he and Alden were lifelong friends, and also that Alexander, the son of Myles Standish, married Sarah, the daughter of John and Priscilla Alden.

The second wife of Captain Standish was Barbara, either the sister or cousin of his first wife Rose, who died in 1621. She arrived from England in the ship *Anne* in 1623, and they were undoubtedly married soon after, for history states that it must have been before the distribution of land in 1624, as her name is given in the allotment as "Mrs. Barbara Standish for one acre of land." They had seven children—Alexander, Charles, John, Myles, Josias, Lora and Charles. Two of the boys died quite young, the second Charles being named for the one who died in infancy. The daughter Lora also died in her youth.

About 1627, Plymouth began to be very crowded, for many people had arrived from England and joined them, wives and children



## MYLES STANDISH

of the Pilgrims left behind in Leyden had come over, their families had increased, and their many cattle required space; so Myles Standish removed to a place which he called Duxbury—probably naming it after the branch of the Standish family from which his two wives sprang, although some historians claim that it was named by the colonists (others of whom removed with him) as a token of regard for his work among them, while Savage and others claim that it was so named by him because he belonged to the Duxbury branch. At any rate, his first house was built there and he moved into it in 1630.

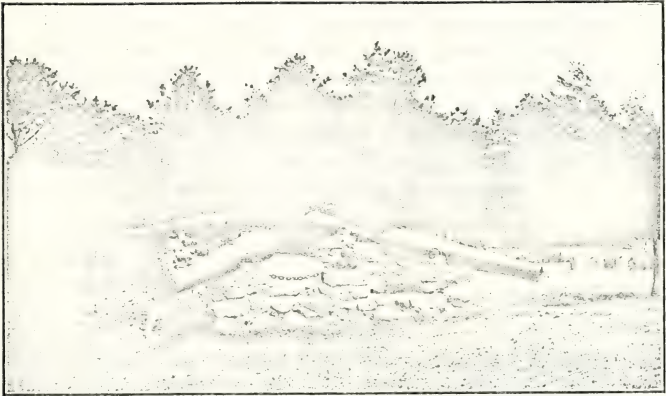
There has been a great deal of speculation regarding Myles Standish's religion. While the Standish or Standish family of to-day is Roman Catholic, it is not probable that he was a Catholic. The Pilgrims were Protestant, and the basic rule of their lives was religion, so it is unlikely that he would have performed marriage ceremonies as he did in his office of magistrate, and held other high and responsible posts, had his religious belief differed so greatly from theirs. He never belonged to the Pilgrim church, but he attended the services, for when he removed to Duxbury he was one of the signers of the document agreeing to return to Plymouth to live in the winter in order to attend the church services. Among his books at his death were a Testament, three Bibles, a psalm book, and several other religious books. His Will shows a strong religious belief and faith.

At his death on October 3rd, 1656, Standish was still the chief military officer of Plymouth. Morton, the secretary of the Colony from 1645 to 1685, tells us "He was a man full of years and honored by his generation. He growing very ancient, became sick of the stone or strangullion, wherefore after his suffering of much dolorous pain, he fell asleep in the Lord and was honorably buried at Duxbury." Though only seventy-two years of age at his death, he was considered "very ancient," and when one reviews the accomplishments of those days, the years encompassed *more*, much more, than is reasonably expected from the span of a lifetime.

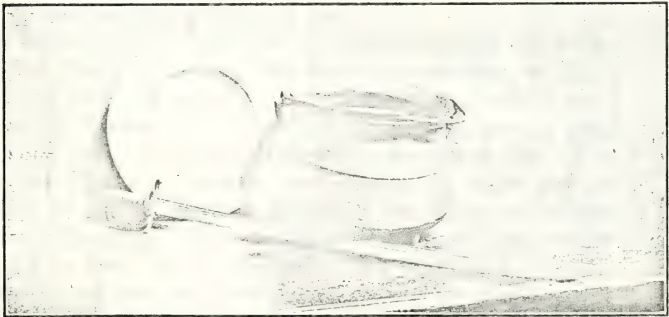
No doubt to E. J. V. Huiginn, an Episcopal rector of Plymouth for many years from 1890, is due the authentic locating of the grave of Myles Standish. He searched diligently among old records and old graves, interviewed the descendants and old settlers of the surrounding country, and tells most minutely of his findings in his book, "The Graves of Myles Standish and Other Pilgrims."







GRAVE OF MYLES STANDISH, DUXBURY



MYLES STANDISH'S SWORD, PLATE AND KETTLE

was buried there



## MYLES STANDISH

A portion of Myles Standish's Will helped also to determine his resting place. It reads as follows: "My Will is that out of my whole estate my funeral charges be taken out and my body buried in decent manor, and if I die at Duxburrow my body to be layed as neare as conveniently may be to my two dear daughters, Lora Standish my daughter and Mary Standish my daughter-in-law."

This shows still another side of his character and nature—love and affection—for in death he wanted to be near his loved ones who had preceded him. Bartlett states that "of Lora thus beloved, there remains a relic in the Pilgrim Hall at Plymouth, a sampler of excellent workmanship, of which the following is a portion:

Lora Standish is my name  
Lord guide my heart that  
I may doe Thy will,  
Also fill my hands with such  
Convenient skill as may  
Conduce to vertue, void of shame,  
And I will give The glory to Thy name.

There is also in Pilgrim Hall a case filled with personal effects of Myles Standish, among them a kettle and plate, and beside them his sword, on the back of which is an Arabic inscription, which would indicate that it is a real Damascus blade, and was undoubtedly carried in the Crusades by his ancestors. There is also a picture hanging in the Hall which was found in a shop in Boston in 1877, which bears the date 1625, and on which the name "M. Standish" was discovered when the frame was removed. This is believed to be an authentic picture of him.

In 1892 a committee was appointed to appropriately mark the grave of Myles Standish in the little primitive cemetery at Duxbury. The Navy gave the use of four 32-pounder guns, which were brought from the Boston Navy Yard and set in place, one on each of the stone-wall corners enclosing this fairly goodsized plot. The cannon are connected by massive iron chains. A huge granite boulder marks his grave, fittingly typifying the character of the man, and simply inscribed "Myles Standish," without date or other inscription, for he is *the* Myles Standish. The years of his usefulness are indelibly written on history's pages, and his memory will endure as long as our country shall last. On one side of his grave is the headstone of Lora Standish, and on the other that of Mary, his "two dear daughters." Barbara, his wife, survived him, and after his death went to live with their son Josias in Connecticut and died and was buried there.



## MYLES STANDISH

A few miles away from this hallowed spot where he sleeps, on the brow of Captain's Hill, which was consecrated for that purpose on August 17th, 1871, and which is now a sightly park, stands the imposing monument erected to Standish in 1888. It is one hundred feet in height, and is surmounted by a heroic size figure of Myles Standish in his military uniform. In one hand he holds the charter of the colony, and the other rests on his sheathed sword, as he looks out over the waters through which he arrived, and across the land that he helped to make safe for mankind. By climbing the circular stairs inside of the monument to the tower-like top, one has an impressive and beautiful view for many miles. It was at the foot of this hill that Standish built his house, as it was part of his estate, and lived here until he died.

At Provincetown there is an artistic Pilgrim Memorial Tower or monument, "erected as a tribute from State and Nation in memory of the lives and work of the Forefathers." The corner-stone was laid in 1907 by President Roosevelt, and the British Ambassador attended. In 1910 President Taft delivered an address at its dedication, and in his beautiful tribute to the Forefathers said: "Governor Bradford, Elder Brewster and Captain Myles Standish are the types of men in whom as ancestors, either by blood or by education and example as citizens, the American people may well take pride."

In sight of Standish's monument in Duxbury, across the bay in Plymouth, stands the "National Monument to the Forefathers," which was erected "by a grateful people in remembrance of their labors, sacrifices and sufferings for the cause of civil and religious liberty." On its paneled sides, inscribed in letters of gold, are the names of all who came to our shores in the *Mayflower* just three hundred years ago—an event which we are venerating this year in memorial celebrations, and which Great Britain, too, is honoring. They were her sons and daughters, and, in becoming our forefathers, they made our two English-speaking peoples and countries of close kin. The spirit which they brought to our shores has burst forth into the radiant light of Patriotism—a love of country which has given birth to *Americanism*—and with their devotion to a cause as an example, we are patriots by descent, whose love of country, and not self-love of the individual, shall place our country in the front rank of world-brotherhood.

THE END

THE END

THE END

THE END

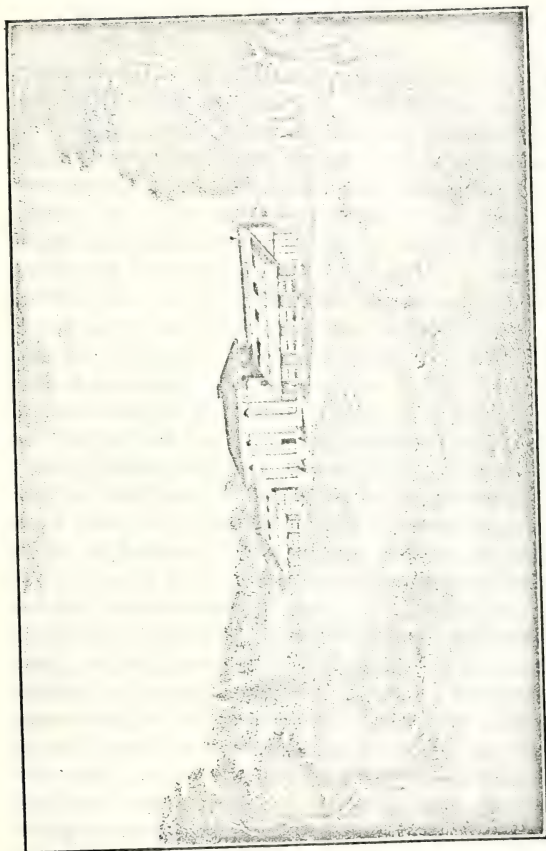
THE END



MYLES STANDISH MONUMENT AT DUXBURY







#### BOTANIC GARDEN

Founded about 1811, by Dr. David Hosack. Comprised about twenty acres, the location bounded by 47th and 51st streets and Fifth and Sixth avenues, now the vastly valuable leasehold property of Columbia University. Was purchased by the State of New York, and placed in guardianship of College of Physicians and Surgeons, which was unable to support it, and the property reverted to Columbia College. The above view is reproduced from the "Hortus Elginensis" of Dr. Hosack, bearing the imprint "T. and J. Swords, Printers to the Faculty of Physic of Columbia College, 1811."



# Personal Characteristics of Washington Irving

By CHARLES A. INGRAHAM, M. D., CAMBRIDGE, NEW YORK.



HEN WASHINGTON IRVING was born in New York City on April 3, 1783, it was a comparatively small town of perhaps 25,000 population, of a commercial, money-making proclivity, and dominated by a distinctly Dutch persuasion. The place partook of the character of a village, having its streets shaded by poplar trees, and a spirit of neighborliness and good-will prevailing throughout its limits, which on the north did not extend much beyond the present line of Chambers street. The family of William Irving and his wife, Sarah Sanders, was a large one embracing eleven children, of whom Washington was the youngest. The father had originally followed the occupation of seafaring, having his home in the Orkney Islands, but after his marriage at Falmouth, England, he abandoned this calling and settling in New York, became prominent as a dealer in merchandise.

Ere Washington had passed the years of childhood, he began to develop and exhibit those traits of character and tendencies of mind which in future days were to render him distinguished in the realm of letters; he was fond of Chaucer and Spenser, a lover of the quaint and curious, of a wandering, Bohemian disposition, indolent and devoid of ambition. Moreover, a weakness of the lungs with which he was afflicted was an added handicap to his prospects, and altogether the likelihood of his ever achieving any worthy success in the world was very remote. Evidently his parents little appreciated or understood the rare gifts and capacities which in an embryonic way were taking shape in the heart and intellect of this sickly, unconventional and ingenuous youth, for a Puritanical discipline was maintained by them over their children. William Irving was a deacon in the Presbyterian church, and of an arbitrary disposition, and though Mrs. Irving was an amiable and beautiful woman, both were of the opinion that levity and mirth, no matter how innocent, was of an evil tendency and to be discouraged, so



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

that Washington was more than once reproved in his play by his mother, who would say, "O, Washington, if you were only good!"

The birthplace of Irving was 131 William street, halfway between Fulton and John; a year later the family moved across the street into a house built in the Dutch style, standing with its gable facing the street, and having the picturesque interest of its peculiar kind of architecture, and here Washington dwelt up to the age of nineteen, when the family took up their newly-purchased abode at the north-west corner of William and Ann streets. It was at about this date that he began his literary career by contributing to the "Morning Chronicle" under the *nom de plume* of "Jonathan Oldstyle," and it was now that his pulmonary affection began to excite apprehension on the part of his family. Yet another residence of New York in which Irving made his home was that built by him at the south-west corner of Irving Place and East Seventeenth street. Concerning it Rufus R. Wilson, writing in "Harper's Weekly," (vol. xl., No. 2081) says:

"It became the centre of a little family settlement, from which Irving Place took its name. It fronts on Irving Place, but can be entered only from Seventeenth street. Irving would not permit a door and steps in front, for he loved to sit in the big room that in his day occupied the entire ground story of the house and to gaze through ample windows down the hill, at the East river, filled with craft bound to and from the Sound. This was Irving's favorite room. Here he wrote and sat on long winter evenings before the great fireplace, with his pipe and his thoughts for company. . . . Before the front windows on Irving Place hangs an iron balcony, and this, on those rare summer evenings when he was in New York, was his favorite seat. . . . His occupancy of the house ended not long after his return from Spain (1846), where he had filled the post of American minister; but the building remained the property of the Irving Family for many years."

While yet a mere boy, and with a defective education, young Irving had been assigned by his parents to the profession of the law, the preparatory studies for which he pursued in a very indifferent manner, for no occupation could have been selected for him of a more uncongenial character. It is therefore quite unnecessary to say that though he was admitted to the bar, and not long after was retained as one of the counsel for Aaron Burr, spending two months in Richmond, but receiving no call for the employment of his





## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

ready pen, he never attempted to establish himself in practice; moreover, that legal lore had no attraction for him, even if it were not positively distasteful, is indicated by the fact that throughout his voluminous writings there is little or nothing to reveal that he was in any manner acquainted with the profession. At the age of seventeen he made a visit to his two married sisters residing in Johnstown, New York, ascending the Hudson river in a sloop to Albany, and thence by stage *via* Ballston Springs, then a watering place of nation-wide appeal, to his destination. Two years later the trip was repeated, Irving at this time being seriously ill with what was believed to be incipient consumption. The following season, in 1803, he was invited by Mr. Josiah O. Hoffman, in whose office he was studying law, to accompany his family on a trip to Montreal and Quebec, and a year subsequent he was sent by his brothers to travel in Europe in the hope of restoring his health, which had become so infirm that the captain of the ship, as he observed his debilitated condition as he was assisted to board the vessel, said that he believed that he would not live to complete the voyage and that he would be buried at sea.

But when after two years of agreeable and instructive loitering at the shrines of old world history, legend and culture, he returned to America with recovered health, he was prepared to take up that prominent literary role which he was destined to adorn. He did not, however, apply himself vigorously to the occupation of a writer, but employed much of his time in diversions, being very fond of society and popular in the social circles of New York, Albany, Ballston Springs, and other outlying communities. Of an amiable and generous disposition, witty and accomplished, fastidiously appareled, a sketcher and flutist of considerable skill, a lover of romance and acquainted with the legendary tales of love and heroism, and altogether a young man of brilliant parts and magnetic nature, he was a welcome guest and a valuable asset at every social function.

Soon after Irving's return from Europe in 1806, he began the publication of a serial which was to introduce him to the people as a writer of real distinction. It appeared in "Salmagundi," which had its beginning in January, 1807, and continuing a year, with twenty numbers. He had associated with him in this unique and popular periodical, which aimed to be a facetiously critical organ of



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

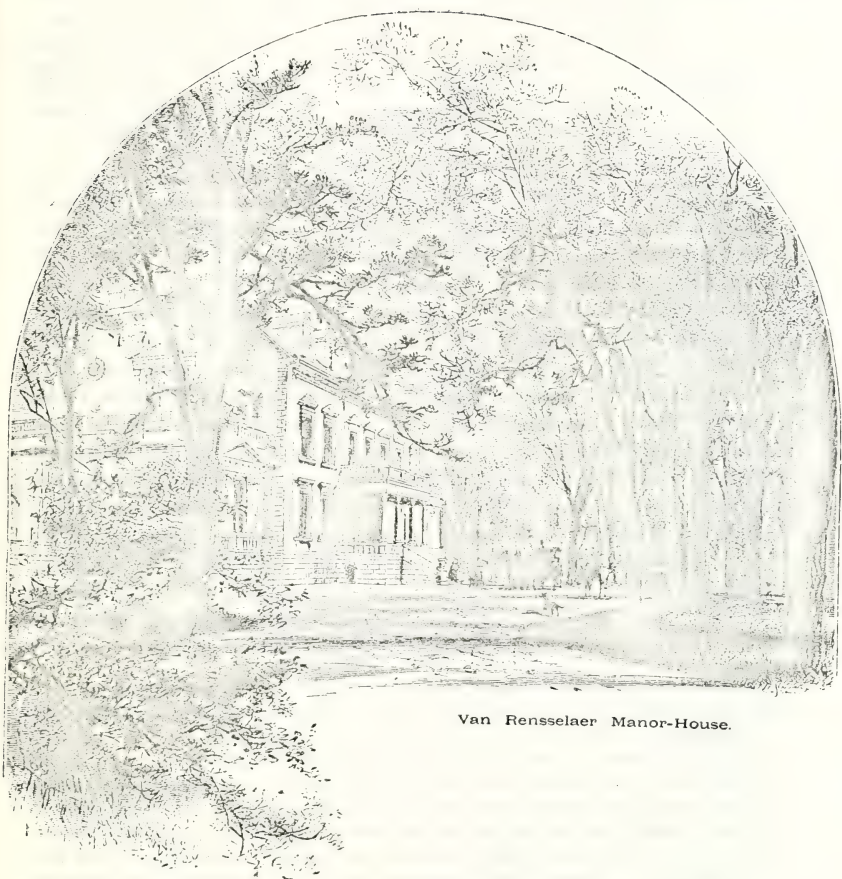
contemporary affairs, his brother William, and James K. Paulding, who under assumed names contributed brief poems and essays which remain to this day of a rank hardly excelled in the sphere of high-class humorous writings. Concerning the identification of the respective work of the three editors, the "American Cyclo-pedia" says:

"No distinct announcement has ever been made of the part borne by each of the writers; but the poetical epistles are said to have been written by William Irving, and the prose papers to have proceeded in about equal measure from his associates. Those by 'Anthony Evergreen, Gent.,' bear internal marks of the pen of Washington Irving. . . . The pleasant portrait of 'My Uncle John' is understood to have been the work of Paulding; and from his pen also proceeded the original sketch of 'Autumnal Reflections,' which was, however, extended and wrought out by Irving."

The next venture that Irving seems to have applied himself to was "The Literary Picture Gallery and Admonitory Epistles to the Visitors to Ballston Spa, by Simeon Senex, Esq.," and issued in seven numbers at that place in the summer of 1808, he then being of the age of twenty-five years. Though it is not positively known that Irving was connected with this small and humorous local periodical, it is believed that he was either its editor or one of its contributors.

The village of Ballston Springs, seven miles from Saratoga, and having a population of something more than four thousand, though now a quiet place unknown to fame, was in the days we are writing of a noted summer resort, while as yet Saratoga Springs was practically unknown. Its medicinal waters enjoyed a high reputation for their curative qualities, attracting many seekers of health to visit them, while the wealth, culture and fashion from all parts of the country consorted there for purposes of relaxation or social enjoyment. The principal hostelry of the place was the famous Sans Souci Hotel, the headquarters of the brilliant fashionable life which once throbbed and glittered in this now placid and uneventful village. In the book, "Salmagundi," (No. xvi) may be found an article on "Style at Ballston" written in the whimsical vein which characterizes the volume, and undoubtedly the product of Irving's pen, or was inspired by him. The following excerpt will convey an idea of the contribution:





Van Rensselaer Manor-House.





## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

"A sober citizen's wife will break half a dozen milliners' shops, and sometimes starve her family a whole season, to enable herself to make the Spring's campaign in style. She repairs to the seat of war with a mighty force of trunks and handboxes, like so many ammunition chests, filled with caps, hats, gowns, ribbons, shawls, and all the various artillery of fashionable warfare. The lady of a southern planter will lay out the whole annual produce of a rice plantation in silver and gold muslins, lace veils, and new liveries; carry a hogshead of tobacco on her head, and trail a bale of sea-island cotton at her heels; while a lady of Boston or Salem will wrap herself up in the net proceeds of a cargo of whaleoil, and tie on her hat with a quintal of codfish."

It was at about this time, and probably during Irving's visits to Ballston Springs, that he was entertained at the Knickerbocker home in Schaghticoke, (pronounced Skat-a-cook, with the accent on the first syllable) which was located about fifteen miles eastwardly and across the Hudson. The Knickerbockers were a prominent Dutch Colonial family who had long resided on their estate on the south bank of the Hoosac river, and within their goodly mansion, still standing, extended an old-time generous hospitality. Irving had formed an intimate friendship with Herman H. Knickerbocker, who was a Congressman, and at different times visited him at Schaghticoke, where, being impressed with the old Dutch heirlooms—portraits, furniture, and accumulations in the garret of chests, oldtime apparel, etc., he conceived the idea of writing his "History of New York" under the assumed name of "Diedrich Knickerbocker." Having an acquaintance with these facts, it is very interesting to note the allusions to the Schaghticoke Knickerbockers made by Diedrich in the introductory pages of the book. In the "Account of the Author" we are informed that,

"He extended his journey up to the residence of his relations at Schaghticoke. On his way thither, he stopped for some days at Albany, for which city he is known to have entertained a great partiality. . . . Having passed some time very agreeably at Albany, our author proceeded to Schaghticoke; where, it is but justice to say, he was received with open arms, and treated with wonderful loving-kindness. He was much looked up to by the family, being the first historian of the name; and was considered almost as great a man as his cousin the Congressman—with whom, by-the-by, he became perfectly reconciled, and contracted a strong friendship."

Again, in Chapter I, Book III., the author says: "Such are my





## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

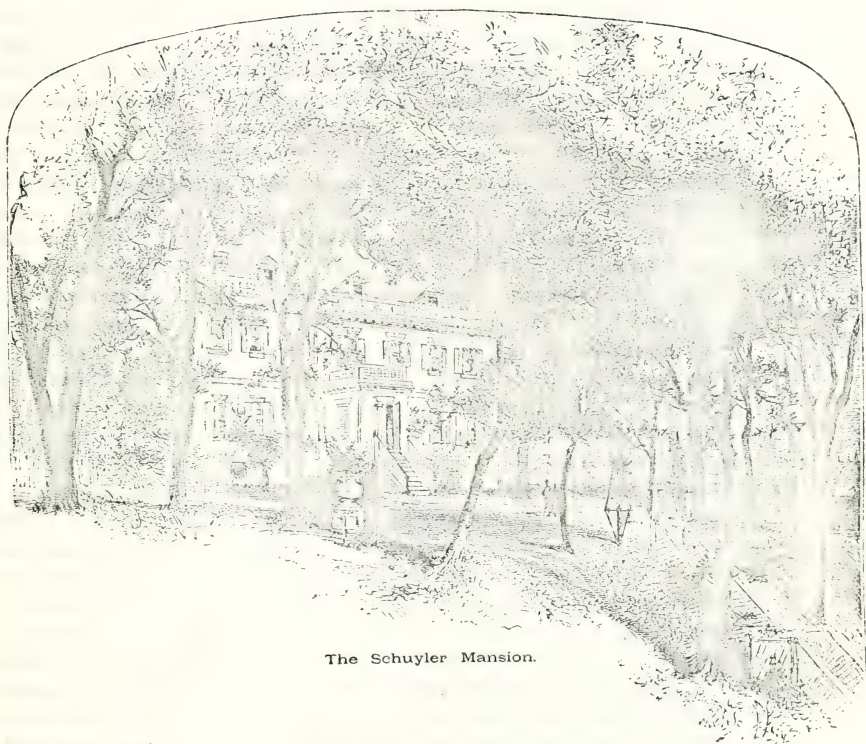
feelings when I revisit the family mansion of the Knickerbockers, and spend a lonely hour in the chamber where hang the portraits of my forefathers. . . . As I pace the darkened chamber and lose myself in melancholy musings, the shadowy images around me almost seem to steal once more into existence—their countenances to assume the animation of life—their eyes to pursue me in every movement.”

It is a remarkable fact and an enduring monument to the genius of Irving, one moreover which he beheld erected in his own day, that while previous to the appearing of his “History of New York” the name and family of Knickerbocker were of little account except locally about Schaghticoke, the cognomen came to stand for the titular genius of New York City, and to represent, to use Irving’s prefatory words forty years later, “Knickerbocker societies, Knickerbocker insurance companies, Knickerbocker steamboats, Knickerbocker omnibuses, Knickerbocker bread, Knickerbocker ice; and when I find New Yorkers of Dutch descent priding themselves upon being ‘genuine Knickerbockers,’ I please myself with the persuasion that I have struck the right chord.”

The fine old Knickerbocker mansion is standing today practically as it was when young Irving was entertained under its hospitable roof and meditated on the Indian legendary, colonial, revolutionary and domestic traditions which abound in this quiet, well-nigh forgotten neighborhood. The modern lines of travel have left it secluded and unvisited except by the few pilgrims, who, weary of the rush and confusion of modern days, love to retire to the quiet places of primitive times and commune with the memories of historic places and the spirits of those whose work was associated with such notable shrines.

In 1809, at the age of twenty-six, Irving published his “Knickerbocker History of New York,” which for its originality of conception, literary grace of execution, mock-gravity of delineation, and sparkling, spontaneous humor, is stamped with the shining seal of genius, and is considered by some authorities to exhibit the most striking gifts and to possess the most lasting qualities of all his books. Though his share of the profits accruing from the first edition of the work amounted to the encouraging sum of three thousand dollars, it was ten years or more before he again employed himself earnestly to literary pursuits, spending the most of his time in





The Schuyler Mansion.

OF  
turn L



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

the social diversions of which he was ever fond. Other explanations for his inactivity are found in the fact that he had in 1809 been grief-smitten by the death of his fiancé, Matilda Hoffman, daughter of the lawyer with whom he had been studying, and that he had become a partner in the hardware importing firm of his brothers, which circumstances, together with his constitutional tendency to indolence, confined his writings to occasional productions of a not important character. He visited England again in 1815 for the purpose of assisting in the affairs of the Liverpool branch of his firm's business, an employment for which he was in no manner adapted, and after an ineffectual struggle of a few years' duration the concern went into bankruptcy, and Irving was thrown upon the resources of his pen for a livelihood. By this time he had become quite at home in England, having a married sister, Mrs. Van Wart, living in Birmingham, with whom he sojourned. His writings had made him the friend of Scott, Moore, Campbell, and other literary lights of Great Britain, and the first named recommending him to a prominent English publisher, the "Sketch Book" was issued and was received with a most generous approval. "Bracebridge Hall" followed in 1822, "Tales of a Traveller" in 1824; and "Salmagundi" and "The History of New York" now having become known and admired in England, Irving found himself enjoying the highest of social and literary distinctions. To follow Irving's brilliant European career of seventeen years, to return with him to America in 1832 and to delineate his subsequent history, is a task which I did not propose to myself, and therefore for the rest, having followed him somewhat closely till his genius has been developed and his fame assured, I will dwell in a general way upon certain interesting and illuminative phases of his life and character.

Irving was a man of singular elevation and purity of mind, finely poetic in his sentiments, wonderfully sensitive to the beauties and moods of nature, and of a dreamy romantic disposition. To him womankind appealed with an irresistible power; his fervent and unsullied imagination arrayed them in celestial grace and endowed them with heavenly characteristics of mind, body and soul. He was quick to observe and eager to appreciate whatever was kind, good or worthy, but from all that savored of vulgarity or evil he would turn away and refuse to contemplate; suffering in man or beast, when he observed it, was communicated through his high-wrought





sympathies to himself; having dreamed that he had killed a robin, he was so distressed by the remembrance of the vision that he was compelled to arise from his bed and divert his mind by reading. Contrary to the impression which one gathers from the somewhat stalwart frame of Irving as he appears in his portraits, he was a man of infirm constitution, with an inherent lack of confidence in himself, exceedingly sensitive to criticism, and afflicted with a disposition to melancholy. To the close of his literary career, the event of the publication of an additional work from his pen was attended with painful apprehension of its failing to meet the favor of the reading public; even the earlier volumes of the "Life of Washington" were issued with anxious solicitude, though this his last and most laborious writing enjoyed from the first a splendid success.

As an instance of Irving's modest estimate of his capacities there might be mentioned his nervous dread of assuming the position of Minister to Spain, to which honor he had, at the suggestion of Daniel Webster, been appointed in 1842 by President Tyler. In great agitation of mind he paced the floor of his home at Sunnyside, saying, "It is hard, very hard; yet I must try to bear it; God tempers the wind to the shorn lamb." Concerning his appointment, Henry Clay said, "This is a nomination everybody will concur in." Other public honors were offered him; he had declined to be a candidate for mayor of New York and for Member of Congress; he had been offered the position of Secretary of the Navy in Van Buren's cabinet, but felt himself, no doubt, disqualified by his lack of interest in practical and governmental affairs to assume the responsibilities of the office. At about the time of his appointment as Minister to Spain, Charles Dickens visited this country, and it being known that he and Irving were intimate friends, entertaining for each other a generous admiration, the latter was chosen to make the introductory speech at a banquet, given to Dickens in New York, but owing to the emotion under which he was laboring he was unable to proceed with his remarks. We have in regard to Irving's incapacity for any regular occupation the testimony of his own words in a letter to Walter Scott, declining to accept the editorship of an Edinburgh periodical at a salary of five hundred pounds. He said:



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

"I am unfitted for any periodically recurring task, any stipulated labor of mind or body. I have no command of my talents such as they are, and have to watch the varyings of my mind as I would those of a weathercock. Practice and training may bring me more into rule; but at present I am as useless for regular service as one of my own country Indians or a Don Cossack. I must keep on, therefore, pretty much as I have begun; writing when I can, not when I would. . . . Should Mr. Constable (publisher) feel inclined to make a bargain for the wares I have on hand, he will encourage me to further enterprise; and it will be something like trading with a gypsy for the fruits of his prowlings, who may at one time have nothing but a wooden bowl to offer, and at another time a silver tankard."

In personal appearance Irving was five feet nine inches in height, of a stout figure, grey eyes, brown hair, handsome features and an attractive smile. He had an agreeable voice and was very companionable, enjoying to relate the many and interesting experiences he had met in the course of his diversified career. I quote in this connection from George W. Curtis:

"Forty years ago upon a pleasant afternoon, you might have seen tripping with an elastic step along Broadway, New York, a figure which even then would have been called quaint. It was of a man about sixty-six or sixty-seven years old, of a rather solid frame, wearing a Talma, as a short coat of the time was called, that hung from his shoulders, and low shoes, neatly tied, which were observable at a time when boots were generally worn. The head was slightly inclined to one side, the face was smoothly shaven, and the eyes twinkled with kindly humor and shrewdness. There was a chirping, cheery, old-school air in the whole appearance, an undeniable Dutch aspect, which in the streets of New Amsterdam, irresistibly recalled Diedrich Knickerbocker. . . . This modest and kindly man was the creator of Rip Van Winkle; he was the father of our literature and at that time its patriarch."

After his return from Europe in 1832, Irving purchased an old stone Dutch residence, upon land which by subsequent purchases came to embrace upwards of twenty acres, and located on the east bank of the Hudson river near Tarrytown, and looking out upon that broad lake-like expanse of the stream, called the Tappan Sea. Weary of the conventional life which for many years he had led in foreign parts, he longed to retire to this quiet hermitage, endeared to him by the happy associations of his youth, and over which



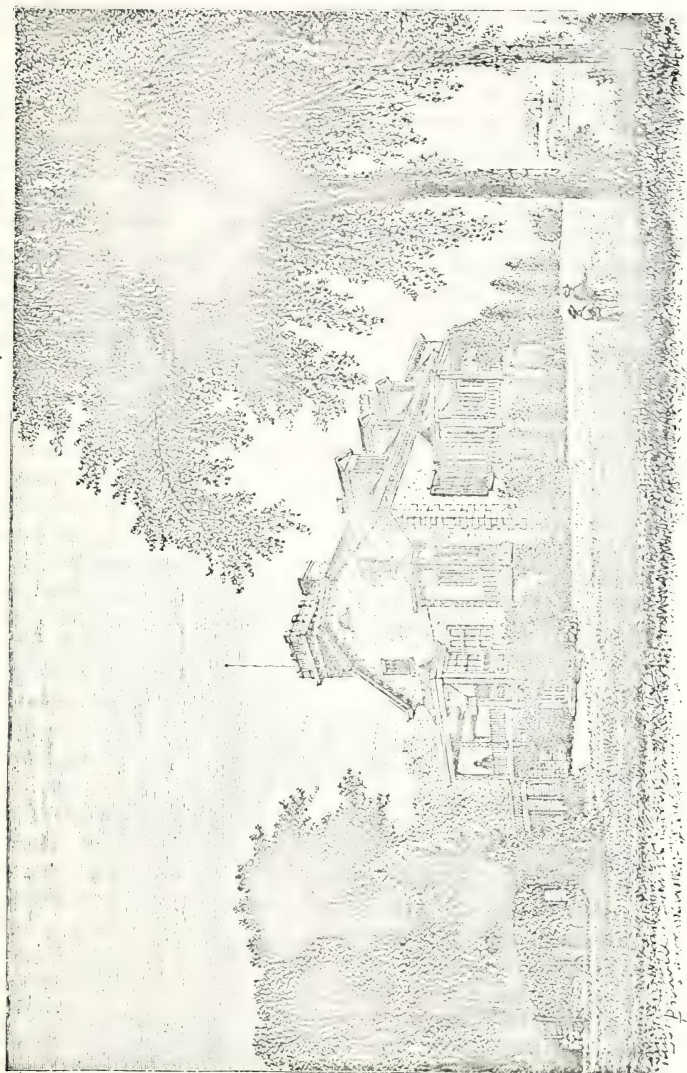
brooded the legendary charm which, breathed into his books, had served to lend him his literary renown. Indeed, this very house which he had chosen for his home had figured in his "Legend of Sleepy Hollow" as the place where Katrina Van Tassel had dwelt and where she had been courted by the unfortunate Ichabod Crane. Naming it Wolfert's Roost (or Rest), Irving enlarged the dwelling and beautified the grounds, making his residence there for the remainder of his days, and being never so happy as when at Sunnyside, as he afterwards named the place. Concerning his home he writes in his book, "Wolfert's Roost,"

"I have become possessor of the Roost. I have repaired and renovated it with religious care, in the genuine Dutch style, and have adorned and illustrated it with sundry relics of the glorious days of the New Netherlands. A venerable weather-cock of portly Dutch dimensions, which once battled with the wind on the top of the Stadt-House of New Amsterdam, in the time of Peter Stuyvesant, now erects its crest on the gable end of my edifice; a gilded horse in full gallop, once the weather-cock of the great Vander Heyden Palace of Albany, now glitters in the sunshine, and veers with every breeze, on the peaked turret over my portal. . . . I thank God I was born on the banks of the Hudson! I think it an invaluable advantage to be born and brought up in the neighborhood of some grand and noble object in nature; a river, a lake, or a mountain. We make a friendship with it, we in a manner ally ourselves to it for life. It remains an object of our pride and affections, a rallying point, to call us home again after all our wanderings. . . . I fancy I can trace much of what is good and pleasant in my own heterogeneous compound to my early companionship with this glorious river. In the warmth of my youthful enthusiasm, I used to clothe it with moral attributes, and almost to give it a soul. . . . I gloried in its simple, quiet, majestic, epic flow; ever straight forward. . . . The Hudson is, in a manner, my first and last love."

Much of Irving's literary work was accomplished under this roof, including his "Life of Goldsmith," "Mahomet and His Successors," and the "Life of Washington"; distinguished persons were coming and going, and his days were crowned with affluence, domestic enjoyment and the veneration of his countrymen. It should be said, however, regarding the popularity of his books, that for five years following 1843, when the contract under which his works had been published expired, the demand for them ceased, and







"Old Morrisania," Morrisania.





## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

Irving was despondent concerning their future, expressing the opinion that they were antiquated, had "turned to chaff and stubble," and doing nothing toward inducing a publisher to undertake a new edition. Finally, in 1848, G. P. Putnam, of New York, proposed to bring out a uniform library edition in fifteen volumes, which offer being accepted, the books were published and enjoyed a very large sale, eight hundred thousand volumes having been printed up to the year 1860, thus affording the author a considerable income (\$9,000 a year), and reassuring him of the permanent success of his books. Of his pleasant life at Sunnyside with his household affairs being presided over by his nieces, he writes not long after his return from Spain, in 1846 : "My own place has never been so beautiful as at present. I have made more openings by pruning and cutting down trees, so that from the piazza I have several charming views of the Tappan Sea and the hills beyond, all set as it were in verdant flames; and I am never tired of sitting there in my old Voltaire chair of a long summer morning with a book in my hand, sometimes reading, sometimes musing, and sometimes dozing and mixing all up in a pleasant dream."

Sunnyside is located three miles south of Tarrytown, and a mile north of Irvington-on-the-Hudson; it is reached from the highway by Sunnyside Lane, which in Irving's words, is "a lonely, rambling, down-hill lane, overhung with trees, with a wild brook dashing along, and crossing and recrossing it." It is a secluded place, the dwelling standing near the bank of the river, which at this point has a breadth of three miles, and the house and premises remain practically as they were left when Irving died. About twenty-two years ago an extensive addition was made to the residence, following the same style, but it is not visible from the front, care having been taken to preserve the original appearance. Irving's library, with its furnishings, remains as he left it. In compliance with a wish expressed in his will, Sunnyside has remained in the possession of his collateral descendants, the present owners being Mr. and Mrs. Louis du Pont Irving and their three sons. Mr. Irving is a great-great-nephew of Washington Irving, and his sons are the fifth generation of the family who have lived in the home. Sunnyside is sought out by many visitors, and it no doubt will continue for many generations to be the Mecca of admirers of the father of American literature.



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

Here, in the delightful surroundings of his Sunnyside home, a few months before he died, Irving finished the "Life of Washington," rejoicing that he had been given the strength to write with his own hand its concluding pages, and having remarked that he would be willing to take his departure when this work should be completed. The declining years of few have been so happy as were Irving's, honored as he was at home and abroad, and with everything to render existence attractive, at his disposal. He had no enemies, a fact which cannot easily be duplicated in the case of an author so eminently successful as he, though Cooper was known to cherish for years a jealousy toward the writer who in this country was even more popular than himself. Mr. Putnam, Irving's publisher, in his "Recollections of Irving," (Atlantic, November, 1860) has recorded in an interesting manner how this unfortunate alienation was healed. Being the publisher of both authors, and the two happening at his office at the same hour, Mr. Putnam somewhat at a venture brought them together with a most happy result; they visited cordially for an hour, and parted the best of friends. It was not very long after this reconciliation that Cooper died, and that Irving had a part in the commemorative exercises that were held in honor of the great novelist. One can easily imagine how that in this interview the amiable author of the "Sketch Book" would take due account of Cooper's irascible disposition, and aim to conciliate and make him his loyal well-wisher.

In the fall of 1858, about a year before he died, Irving suffered with shortness of breath, nervousness, and inability to obtain sufficient sleep, his malady being enlargement of the heart. During the Christmas season his condition was unimproved, and he suffered still from nervous conditions; had a dread of the nights and of being alone, his mind in the meantime being one day unnaturally active and cheerful, and another, dull and despondent. In the spring his condition somewhat improved, but the sleeplessness and difficult breathing again became prominent in the fall, till on Monday evening, November 28, 1859, he died suddenly, as he was about to retire. A year previous he had remarked to George W. Curtis, "I am getting ready to go; I am shutting up my doors and windows."

The closing scenes of Irving's life were in keeping with the spirit of tranquil cheerfulness which had characterized him throughout his career; his life had been one of amiability and good service to



## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

his fellows, and now his departure from earthly scenes and associations was accompanied by kindly and beneficent circumstances. Surrounded by his brother Ebenezer and daughters, who composed his household, and his nephew, Rev. Pierre M. Irving, afterwards author of his elaborate biography, and other relatives, he passed into the great land of the Future. On the day previous, Sunday, he had attended the Episcopal church at Tarrytown, of which he was a communicant, though it was observed that he appeared more infirm in health than usual. During the following day he was about the house and grounds at Sunnyside, joined his family at dinner, and enjoyed the evening with them in social intercourse, entering into the happy spirit of the hour with his usual zest and relish, though mentioning that he was embarrassed in his breathing. Having bidden the family good-night, he went to his chamber above, when suddenly with a sound as if choking, and with his left hand over his heart, he fell forward, arresting his fall by catching hold of a table, and expired.

Irving was buried on December 1st, a beautifully mild, dreamy day, when, as if nature, appreciative of the deep devotion ever shown her by the departed author, had enwrapped the Hudson valley, though at the gates of winter, in an atmosphere of genial warmth, typical both of his gentle, amiable character and of the gracious quality of his writings. He was buried with his kindred in the graveyard of the little old Dutch church, two miles north of Tarrytown, where a few years before he had brought the remains of his father's family, who had been buried in the plot of the Brick Church of New York. Thus it is observed how deep a hold this quiet, romantic and historic locality had taken upon the imagination and affection of Irving, additional proof of which may be found in the volumes of his writings, wherein he bestows all the literary grace which he is able to command, upon its natural charms, early associations and legendary traditions. The grave is on somewhat elevated ground, east of the church, which by the way, is the oldest house of worship in the State; it is but a short distance north of the Pocanteco creek, which makes its way through Sleepy Hollow, and it overlooks the Tappan Sea; it is in the very heart of that territory which Irving with his magic pen has made forever famous. He has described the spot in his "Legend of Sleepy Hollow":





## PERSONAL CHARACTERISTICS OF WASHINGTON IRVING

"The sequestered situation of this church seems always to have made it a favorite haunt of troubled spirits. It stands on a knoll, surrounded by locust trees and lofty elms, from among which its decent whitewashed walls shine modestly forth, like Christian purity beaming through the shades of retirement. A gentle slope descends from it to a silver sheet of water, bordered by high trees, between which peeps may be caught at the blue hills of the Hudson. To look upon this grass-grown yard, where the sunbeams seem to sleep so quietly, one would think that there at least the dead might rest in peace. On one side of the church extends a wide woody dell, along which raves a large brook among broken rocks and trunks of fallen trees. Over a deep black part of the stream, not far from the church, was formerly thrown a wooden bridge; the road that led to it, and the bridge itself, were thickly shaded by overhanging trees, which cast a gloom about it even in the daytime, but occasioned a fearful darkness at night. Such was the favorite haunt of the headless horseman, and the place where he was most frequently encountered."

Irving had expressed a desire to go out of the world "with all sail set," a wish which was granted, for, intellectually at least, he was normal and vigorous to the last. Moreover, the ship of his genius did not founder at his death, but is still beautifully visible, riding gracefully the sea of time and bearing rich cargoes of spice, luscious fruit, gems and golden ore, from the sunny clime of his genial and prolific nature. In the pages of his books are the fragrance of tropical, unidentified flowers, songs without words, sermons without preaching, and instruction without teaching. Irving's mission in the world was not that of a moralizer in the narrower sense of the word, but rather he was a high, benevolent influence, intangible, elusive, but nevertheless real and effective. Though he recommends no ethical dictum, it is difficult in the light of the spirit of his books to entertain an unworthy thought, or to resist its invitation to be conformed to the mind of the good and noble soul which the reader instinctively feels is inditing the words he peruses. Herein lies his power, an efficacy that will live on when the more particularized ethics of the day shall have been forgotten.



## 1. In Sleepy Hollow Cemetery

BY CAROLINE WILLIAMS BERRY, NEW YORK CITY.

**B**EAUTIFUL, picturesque Sleepy Hollow, where the "headless horseman" and Icabod Crane made the race best known to Americans of literary taste, if not to turfmen, is to-day a beautiful cemetery, where many of the quaint characters described by Irving, many famous Americans, and the author himself, lie in the last long sleep.

The plot contains one hundred and ten acres of land, commanding a fine view of the Hudson river, which widens here into an expanse of three miles forming the Tappan Zee. The early settlers selected this spot on the Pocantico (an Indian name) for their graveyard; later the area was several times enlarged; in 1848 it was incorporated under the name of the Tarrytown Cemetery, and in 1849 the Legislature changed the name to Sleepy Hollow Cemetery. It was through the efforts of Washington Irving, one of the trustees, that this change of name was effected. He wrote concerning the name, "it is enough of itself to secure patronage of all desirous of sleeping quietly in their graves. If ever I should wish for a retreat, whither I might steal from the world and its distractions, I know of none more promising than this little valley."

On the east side, runs the Pocantico river, in size little more than a brook, whose babbling and gurgling shallows and black pools are unchanged since the days when Icabod wandered along its banks on his way to Katherine Van Tassel. At the entrance, stands the Old Dutch Church, as it is now called, made known to the world by Irving's description of a country church, and by his pathetic "Burial of the Widow's Son."

Across the road to the west, is Philips' Manor, now the home of Elsie Janis, the actress. This old stone house was built by Frederick Philips, to whom in 1680 His Majesty of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, granted a tract of land in "Westchester in America beginning at the place of Spuyten Duyvel's kill and run-



## SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY

ning north along the river to the kill of Kitch Awong" (Croton). Less than a mile away is historic Tarrytown, now the richest village in the world, the site of which was once sold for a few pounds of tobacco, a bit of hardware, a few yards of cloth, and a little rum. In the Philips house, much "improved" by some of Frederick Philips' descendants, parts of which are still preserved, Washington made his headquarters during the Revolution. Philips' Mill near by was a port of entry; here Dutch ships cast anchor without stopping at the town of New Amsterdam, located upon a barren island about twenty miles to the south.

On the front wall of the church is a tablet bearing the inscription, "Built by Frederick Philips and Katrina Van Courtlandt Philips, 1699." The old bell, still preserved, bears the date 1685. The church, with its rough hewn seats for the villagers, and those upholstered and covered by a canopy built for Lord Philips, his family and guests, may be seen, if one is fortunate enough to be in Tarrytown on the one Sunday in the year in which services are held here. Lord and Lady Philips, as they were known, are buried beneath the church.

Turning north from the church, one enters the oldest part of the burying grounds. Names to be found upon the pages of any history of the United States meet the eye upon many quaint old tombstones. One of the first of these is the family vault of William Paulding, bearing date, October, 1824. The entrance is a circular iron door, which is raised from its horizontal position like an old-fashioned cellar door. A flight of steps leads to the underground vault, where Paulding and his family are entombed. To the north near the road, originally the Albany Post Road, may be seen a grave bearing this curious inscription,

Time was, these ones lived;  
And shall be,  
When others thus may stand  
And look at thee.

Nearby lies buried the maiden made known to the world by Irving's pen; her epitaph reads:

In memory of Katherine Van Tassel, daughter of John and Rachel Van Tassel, who died June 9, 1820 and was born on 29th of September 1773. Aged 49 years 3 months and 20 days.

Her months of affliction is over  
Her days and nights of distress.  
We see her in anguish no more  
She has gained her happy releas.





## SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY

Nearby, another interesting inscription is,

In memory of Captain John Buckhourt, who  
Departed this life April 10th, 1785 aged 103 years  
And left behind him when he died  
240 chilm and Grand chilm also  
Mary the wife of John Buckhourt  
Died August 1755, aged —. (The rest cannot be deciphered.)

Walking north still another hundred yards, one passes over fortifications of the Revolution. The trench and cannon are preserved with care, and here many of the old heroes are buried.

Irving sleeps near by, surrounded by the graves of two score of his kinsmen. These graves are inclosed by an iron fence. A simple slab marks his grave, the third one to be erected on the spot, two former ones have been chipped away by relic hunters. The inscription is characteristic of the man,

Washington Irving.  
Born April 3, 1783. Died Nov. 28, 1859.

Human eloquence could add nothing to this simple inscription, the name alone suggests the tenderest emotions.

Here are buried three John Van Warts, and the names of Hunt, Odell, Tappan, Paulding, Archer, Van Courtlandt, Dykman and Beekman, names inseparable from the history of New York. A conspicuous monument in the old section of the cemetery, like that of Irving, has recently taken the place of an older one and bears the inscription:

Captain Jacob Romer and Frena Haerlager, his wife, emigrated from Switzerland in 1747, were married in Sleepy Hollow church by the Reverend Johannes Rilzena, Aug. 20, 1754.

Jacob died Feb. 14, 1807, aged 93 years.

Frena died Jan. 2, 1819, aged 94 years.

The captors of Major André breakfasted at their home the morning of the capture. Their son James Romer being one of the party, after the capture the entire party returned to the Romer home for dinner.

In this old section of the cemetery are inscriptions that are difficult to read, on account of the disintegration of the stone, and others are equally difficult because the wording is quaint and provincial. Another inscription is:

In memory of John Enters  
Who died Sept. 27th.

AD 1779,

place has been Aged 71 years, 5 months & 12 days.

Death is a debt  
To nature due;  
Which I have paid,  
And so must you.

The writers of early epitaphs apparently were impressed with the idea that there was some kind of magic in rhymes.





## SLEEPY HOLLOW CEMETERY

The dates in this plot adjacent to the old church go back as early as 1685. One curious monument contains an eight-day clock. The inscription tells us that it is "My father's clock, placed here at my request." The clock stands inside the marble shaft, and a bronze door containing a glass face protects it from the elements. The audible ticking above the mortal remains of a man seventy-one years, silent in death since 1880, make one stop to think how short, how transitory, human life is. This clock, the work of human ingenuity, did service to father and to son, and has stood sentinel over the son's grave for nearly half a century.

The last addition to the cemetery as it now stands, includes a part no less beautiful than the older ones. Looking north across the boundary may be seen beautiful Pocantico Hills, John D. Rockefeller's country estate. On the east is a strip of woodland containing kings of the forest—chestnut, fir, sycamore, and oak. Beyond this stretch of forest is the Croton Aqueduct, carrying its supply of clear cool water to hundreds of thousands of thirsty men, women, and children, dwellers in the world's largest city. In this new division are perhaps a score of dignified, beautiful mausolea, built upon artistic lines. There are several boulders marked only by a small bronze plate, bearing only a name and two dates. There are also in this new section many other imposing monuments, new, ornate, expensive. Here William Rockefeller owns a beautiful lot, yet unused and unornamented.

Hamilton Mabie, Carl Schurz, the son of Alexander Hamilton, Paul Liester Ford, Amelia E. Barr, Whitelaw Reid, are buried here; and here may be seen the names of Schuyler, Vanderbilt, Gould, Archibald. The remains of the great philanthropist, Andrew Carnegie, were recently taken to Sleepy Hollow, there to await a fuller appreciation of his services. The monument of Henry Villard will, as time passes, serve a double purpose, commemorating the service of Villard, journalist, scientist, and philanthropist; and also as a monument to the skill and artistic conception of Carl Bitter, who conceived and executed this piece of art. This romantic place has also been enriched by the chisel of St. Gaudens.

Beautiful Sleepy Hollow, rich by nature's endowment, rich in memories, enriched by letters and by art, an ideal resting place "Until the day breaks and the shadows flee away," if indeed they ever do.





WADSWORTH



## Wadsworth=Shead Families

*Wadsworth Arms*—Gules, three fleurs-de-lis, stalked and slipped, argent.

*Crest*—On a terrestrial globe winged proper an eagle rising or.

*Motto*—*Aquila non capit muscas.*



FAMILY names among the early Saxons and subsequently among the Anglo-Saxons, were derived from trades, callings, professions, names of places, moral, physical, or religious excellencies, and sometimes from acts performed, sometimes from places and residences, and often from terminal affixes of parental designations. English literature abounds in this species of etymology. In early times words were written according to the ear of the writer, and were loaded down with diphthongs, double consonants and silent letters, without rule and without reason. Such was the origin of most of the English names now in use, having been lengthened, abbreviated or changed to suit the ideas of the possessor. The name of Wadsworth, being of this origin, has suffered in this respect like many others, and has changed from the Wadesuurde of 1086 through Wadewerde, Wadewurth, Wadworth, and many other variations, to the Wadsworth of today. Quoting from an address by George Wadsworth at a family reunion, September 13, 1882:

"What, then, does Wadsworth mean? It is evidently a Saxon name, not Celtic, we are not of the old British stock, which fought the Romans, nor are we of Norman or French extraction; our name is not found in the roll of Battle Abbey, nor in the Peerage list, but we are interloping Saxons (carpet-baggers) who came into England about the fifth century, before the Normans, certainly, but long after the Celts. It is a compound name composed of two syllables and formed from two original words, each of which had its own distinct and separate meaning.

"From Lower's 'Essay on Family Nomenclature' the derivation may be had: Wade, meaning a meadow or a ford; Worth, (the modern signification of this syllable is, of course, eminently characteristic of the family in all ages,) but Lower says that no less than six origins have been sought for it, and it has been made to stand for a possession, a farm, a court, a place, a fort, an island. Arthur gives substantially the same definitions of the two parts of the name, but also gives the name and meaning in full: 'Wadsworth, same as Woodsworth, the farm or place in the woods.' Therefore it may safely be assumed that those who first bore our name were foresters, or woodsmen, denizens of the 'merrie greenwood' as the Robin Hood ballads have it, and perhaps friends and contemporaries of the great outlaw. This meaning of the word probably denotes the occupation, as well as the residence of our ancestors; their business was with and in the woods, they were not townsmen or farmers, but woodsmen."

The Wadsworths were a prominent and somewhat numerous family in Yorkshire, being especially prominent in ecclesiastical affairs; while the name was not unknown in other portions of England. The family is by no means extinct, numerous representa-





tives still existing. The name is even borne today on the rolls of England's twin universities, Oxford and Cambridge. The church which landed at Plymouth from the *Mayflower* originally came from Scrooby in Nottinghamshire, on the borders of Yorkshire and Lincolnshire, while, according to Mather, the flames of persecution waxed hot in Yorkshire. This county—a county in which the name of Wadsworth was common—furnished a large number of Puritan men of prominence, like William Bradford and Sir Richard Saltonstall. Some Wadsworths were prominent Dissenters, or Puritans, in the seventeenth century, and were imprisoned in the Castle of York for non-conformity.

From these early associations, if from nothing else, we might conclude that William and Christopher Wadsworth had lived in the midst of a puritanic atmosphere, and that it was to obtain religious freedom that they came to New England; but we have stronger evidence than that. Never would William have taken the oath of freeman so soon after his arrival; have been elected one of the first selectmen of Cambridge; have been the companion of Hooker in his journey through the wilderness; have married the sister of Rev. Samuel Stone, the lifelong friend and associate of Hooker, as well as his successor; never would William Wadsworth have been trusted and honored as he was had he not been a Puritan, had he not been with them heart and soul. So, too, never would Christopher have been so soon after his arrival a freeman and constable; and, above all, never would he have been appointed to revise the ordinances of the Plymouth Colony unless he had been in perfect accord with the people of that time—a time when none but church members could be freemen, and take part in colonial affairs. The Puritan Fathers had a way of dealing with those not in unison with them, the absence of which in this case proves beyond a doubt that William and Christopher Wadsworth were not opposed to them. They were of one spirit and of one mind, or they would not have been what they were nor where they were.

*I. Christopher Wadsworth;* the exact date of arrival in America is unknown. It is believed that he journeyed in the ship "Lion," September 16, 1632, which brought William Wadsworth, founder of the Connecticut and New York branches of the family. Christopher Wadsworth is the progenitor of the Maine and Massachusetts Wadsworths, and his name is found in the first record of freemen in the Plymouth Colony in 1633.<sup>1</sup> He is recorded as being taxed under date of March 25 of the same year. His name is appended to a will as a witness with William Bradford, the second governor of Plymouth, under date of September 16, 1633. The same year he was the first constable of Duxbury, an office of which Win-

<sup>1</sup>Plymouth Colony Records, 1, 4.



sor says<sup>2</sup>: "This was an office of high trust and responsibility, and none were elected to it but men of good standing." In Duxbury he early took a prominent position among his townsmen, though such veteran pilgrims as Miles Standish, Elder Brewster, and John Alden were his neighbors. He is described as being quite young when he arrived among them. His wife was Grace Cole; but whether he was married when he arrived at Duxbury is not known. Christopher Wadsworth, or as it is early spelled, "Xtofer Waddsworth," was one of the earliest settlers, and the first constable of the town, an office at that time to which none but the most faithful and honest were elevated. His name appears upon almost every page of the town's history while he was there in active life. He repeatedly held the positions of deputy, selectman and surveyor. A perusal of the town records gives assurance of his worth and respectability. His name first appears in the records of the town in 1633. He had land in 1638 at Holly Swamp, and in 1655 bought land of John Starr and Job Cole. The house where he lived is now standing, about a mile west from Captain's Hill, near what is called the new road to Kingston. His lands then ran down to the bay, or what was formerly known as Morton's Hole. Joseph F. Wadsworth, a gentleman of some note and a descendant, lived on the place until about 1855, when he died, leaving no children, and the place was sold to strangers.

Christopher was elected constable of Duxbury in January, 1634. This was the highest office of the town. The constable was a sort of high sheriff; he was to serve as jailor, and keep such as were committed; he was to execute punishments and penalties, and to give warning of marriages approved by the civil authorities; he was to act as sealer of weights and measures, and surveyor of land according to government orders. In his oath he swore loyalty to the king, and promised to promote the welfare of his people and see that the peace was not broken. The will of Christopher Wadsworth bears date July 31, 1677, and was filed at the court in September the following year, so that his decease occurred between those dates. He gave his home-place to his son John, after making suitable provisions for his wife Grace, and his Bridgewater grant and other lands to his son Joseph. His only other legatee mentioned is his daughter, Mary Andrews. That his son, Captain Samuel, of Milton, or his heirs, had received a share of his property previous to this, is evidenced in the fact that Samuel was possessed of a portion of these Bridgewater lands; and after his decease these lands were taxed to widow Wadsworth, and later to Timothy Wadsworth, of Boston, a son of Captain Samuel, who was the last non-resident person to dispose of these original grants. (See Mitchell's "History of Bridgewater.")

<sup>2</sup>History of Duxbury, p. 81.



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

Christopher Wadsworth was the father of four children: Joseph and John, who lived and died in Duxbury; Captain Samuel, who early moved to Milton, "a resolute, stout-hearted soldier," who perished in the Sudbury fight with the Indians, the grandfather of the Rev. Dr. Benjamin Wadsworth, the ninth president of Harvard College; and Mary, who married an Andrews.

*II. John Wadsworth*, son of Christopher and Grace (Cole) Wadsworth, was born in 1638, and died in 1700. He lived and died on the homestead of his father, and was a deacon of the church for many years. He married, in 1667, Abigail Andrews, who died in 1723. Issue: 1. Mary, born 1668. 2. Abigail, born 1670. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Christopher, born in 1685. 5. Ichabod, born in 1687. 6. Isaac. 7. Lydia. 8. Sarah. 9. Grace, married William Sprague. 10. Hopesill, married William Brewster. 11. Mercy.

*III. John Wadsworth*, son of John and Abigail (Andrews) Wadsworth, was born in 1671, and died in 1750. Duxbury was his home throughout his life. He married (first), in 1704, Mercy Wiswell, who died in 1716, aged thirty-six years. He married (second), in 1718, Mary Verdie. Issue (the last being of his second marriage): 1. John, born 1706. 2. Uriah, born in 1708, died 1784. 3. Dorothy, born 1710, married Joseph Bartlett. 4. Ichabod, born in 1712. 5. Peleg, of whom further. 6. Mary, born in 1721, married, in 1756, Deacon Elisha Phillips.

*IV. Peleg Wadsworth*, son of John and Mercy (Wiswell) Wadsworth, was born in 1715, and died in 1774. For many years he was deacon of the church at Duxbury, his home, and was familiarly known as Deacon Peleg Wadsworth. He married Susanna Sampson. Issue: 1. Zilpah, born in 1742, died in infancy. 2. Cephas, born in 1743, lived in Kingston. 3. Jephtha, died in infancy. 4. Zilpha, born in 1746, married, in 1772, Perez Drew. 5. Peleg, of whom further. 6. Uriah, born in 1754; married, in 1789, Eunice Bradford. 7. Ira, born in 1757. 8. Welthea, born in 1759; married, in 1780, Major Alden. 9. Dura, born in 1763. 10. Lucy.

*V. General Peleg Wadsworth*, son of Peleg and Susanna (Sampson) Wadsworth, was born in Duxbury, Massachusetts, March 6, 1748, and died in Hiram, Maine, November 12, 1849. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1769, at the age of twenty-one. Among his classmates were Alexander Scammell, who became a distinguished officer in the Revolution, and Theophilus Parsons, who became Chief Justice of Massachusetts. After he graduated he engaged in teaching in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He removed to Kingston, Massachusetts, as may be inferred from the fact that his first child was born there, in 1774. On September 26, 1774, a meeting of delegates from Plymouth county met at Plympton, and Peleg Wadsworth, with others, were chosen a committee of correspondence. He recruited a company of minute-men, and was chosen





## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

captain. Early in 1775 the town of Kingston voted to purchase thirty-three stand of arms and equipment for thirty-three soldiers, the company commanded by Captain Peleg Wadsworth. Immediately after the battle of Lexington, the Kingston company marched in Col. Cotton's regiment to dislodge Col. Balfour's regiment of British troops at Marshfield. On reaching Marshfield a council of officers was held. Capt. Wadsworth became impatient at the delay, and marched his company in the vicinity of the enemy, but Col. Balfour and his troops retreated, and, embarking on several sloops, sailed for Boston. Peleg Wadsworth served as a colonel in the battle of Long Island, but whether in command of a regiment or as a staff officer cannot be ascertained. He was in Col. Cotton's regiment that formed a part of the detachment that was ordered to throw up intrenchments on Dorchester Heights. On August 28, 1775, while his wife was with him, their first-born died, and was buried within the intrenchments. In March, 1776, he was appointed aide to Gen. Ward when the Heights were occupied. It was the formidable character of the troops and defences on Dorchester Heights that caused the hasty retreat of Gen. Howe and the British troops from Boston. In 1776 Col. Wadsworth was an engineer under Gen. Thomas, and assisted in laying out the defences of Roxbury. In 1778 he was appointed adjutant-general of Massachusetts.

In 1779 the British sent a fleet to occupy Bagaduce (now called Castine), at the mouth of Penobscot river, in Maine. The Massachusetts Board of War in return sent a fleet under Com. Saltonstall of Connecticut, and a land force under Gen. Solomon Lovell, the brigadier-general of Suffolk county, and Gen. Peleg Wadsworth was second in command. The attack upon the British works by the land forces is noted in history as one of the most brilliant and heroic engagements during the war. In 1780, Gen. Wadsworth, with a force of six hundred men, was placed in command of the whole coast of Maine, to protect it from the British and Tories. He was authorized to execute martial law, and his firmness and intrepid bearing overawed the Tories of that region. Maine was peculiarly exposed, from its extensive frontier and its long line of seacoast, and Gen. Wadsworth's responsibilities were very great and his duties arduous; but his courage and patriotism never faltered, his fortitude was wonderful, and his duties were performed with that careful accuracy of method and system that permeated every act of his long and distinguished career, and the British could gain no permanent advantage during his occupancy. After the term of service of his troops expired, he was left with only a guard of six soldiers at his headquarters at Thomaston, Maine, his family being with him, and it being his intention to leave in a few days. The British commander at Castine heard of his exposed situation and





sent a lieutenant and twenty-five men to capture him. At midnight on February 18, 1781, he was awakened by loud and rapid reports of musketry and the crashing of glass in his windows. On the approach of the enemy the sentry had challenged them and retreated to the house. A volley of bullets were fired after him, while others were fired into the window. The British quickly took possession of the house, except one room, which Gen. Wadsworth occupied alone. Here, with a brace of pistols, a fusce and a blunderbuss, he contended alone against his assailants, driving them away from the door and windows. The British then attacked another door, which they broke in. This time the general's blunderbuss missed fire, but with that fearless intrepidity that ever characterized his career, he fought single-handed and alone against a score of men with his bayonet. Being in his night-clothes, he was a conspicuous mark, and a bullet soon pierced his elbow, when, finding himself disabled, he surrendered. Lieutenant Stockton complimented him for his heroic defence, when the general replied, that from the manner of their attack he inferred that they did not intend to capture him alive, and he intended to sell his life as dearly as possible. His wound prevented him from wearing his coat, and a blanket was thrown over him and he was hurried away to a vessel. After walking a mile in the snow and intense cold he became exhausted from over-exertion and loss of blood, and was placed upon a horse. He was taken to a vessel, carried across the bay to Bagaduce, and imprisoned in Fort George. For two weeks he knew nothing of the fate of his family, consisting of his wife, a son of five years, two daughters, younger, and a Miss Fenno, of Boston, a friend of Mrs. Wadsworth. He was regarded as a man of too much consequence to be exchanged, and was refused the privilege of a parole. He was allowed to write to the governor of Massachusetts, also to Mrs. Wadsworth, and he soon learned that his family was safe. Major William Burton, a brave officer who served in 1780 under Gen. Wadsworth, was confined in the room with him. After two months' imprisonment Gen. Wadsworth was visited by his wife and Miss Fenno, and he received a hint that he was to be taken to England and probably tried and executed. He gave his barber a dollar for a gimlet, with which he bored holes around a large portion of the pine ceiling, filling them up with chewed bread. At midnight of June 18th, just four months after his capture, amid the darkness of a tempestuous thunderstorm that drove the sentinels to shelter, he cut with his penknife the spaces between the gimlet holes, making an opening through which he and Major Burton escaped. General Wadsworth let himself down the walls of the fort, twenty feet high, by means of his blanket. In the darkness he became separated from Major Burton. General Wadsworth waded across the cove, a distance of a mile, the water reaching about to his armpits. The next



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

morning he found Major Burton, and after three days of toil and suffering they reached the St. George settlement. In 1797, President Dwight, of Yale College, who had been a chaplain in the American army, visited Portland, Maine, and was the guest of Gen. Wadsworth, from whom, he stated, he received an uninterrupted succession of civilities; he also received from the general, and wrote, a minute and thrilling account of his capture, imprisonment and escape. General Wadsworth at the time of its publication vouched for the accuracy of the account, which covers twenty-five printed pages. After his escape he resided several years in Massachusetts. He removed to Portland, Maine, in 1784, and in 1785 built the first brick house ever erected there, the bricks having been brought from Philadelphia. The house stood on Congress street and was occupied by his son-in-law, Hon. Stephen Longfellow, the father of the poet. The good taste shown by Gen. Wadsworth in selecting Portland as his place of residence may be well commended, for New England wears no fairer gem in her coronet of beauty than the Forest City,—the home of Longfellow's "Lost Youth,"—"the dear old town that is seated by the sea."

General Wadsworth engaged in trade in Portland for several years. He was chosen president of a convention that met from time to time to consult on the separation of Maine from Massachusetts. In 1792 he was elected to the Senate of Massachusetts; in the same year he was elected a member of Congress from the District of Maine, and he discharged his duties with such ability and fidelity that he was elected seven consecutive terms, serving from 1793 till 1807. In 1798 the citizens of Portland gave him a public dinner in approbation of his official conduct. In 1790 he purchased of the State of Massachusetts seven thousand five hundred acres of land, now included in Hiram, Maine, between the Saco and Ossipee rivers, the price being twelve and one-half cents per acre. He commenced to clear a farm immediately, and his success is shown by a statement in the "Eastern Herald," printed in Portland, September 10, 1792, as follows: "General Wadsworth thinks he has raised more than 1,000 bushels of corn on burnt land at a place called Great Ossipee, about thirty-six miles from Portland." In 1795 he built a house and settled his eldest son, Capt. Charles Lee Wadsworth, on his tract. In 1800 he built a house for himself, the largest ever built in Hiram. On January 1, 1807, Gen. Wadsworth removed to his rural home, soon after (Feb. 27) procured the incorporation of the township, and, being a Free Mason, had it named Hiram, in honor of Hiram, King of Tyre, and Hiram Abiff, the first Most Excellent Grand Master. With his son, Capt. Charles L. Wadsworth, he engaged in farming and lumbering. He was a skillful surveyor, and was of great service and usefulness in the new township. He was selectman six years, treasurer twelve years, and a



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

magistrate for many years, being often an arbiter and always a peacemaker. He was regarded as the patriarch of the settlement, and his home was the central point in the region for law, literature and hospitality. He was a liberal patron of education. One of his last munificent acts was the establishment of a free school at the town house, when the settlement was too poor to maintain such an institution, and he rode through the town on horseback in his eightieth year, inviting the children to attend.

Peleg Wadsworth married, in 1772, Elizabeth Bartlett, born in Plymouth, Massachusetts, August 9, 1753, died in Hiram, Maine, August 9, 1825. Issue: 1. Alexander Scammell, born in Kingston, Mass., May 9, 1774, died within the Revolutionary fortifications at Dorchester, August 28, 1775. 2. Captain Charles Lee, born in Plymouth, Mass., Jan. 26, 1776, died in Hiram, Maine, Sept. 29, 1848. 3. Zilpah, born in Duxbury, Mass., Jan. 6, 1778; married, Jan. 1, 1804, Hon. Stephen Longfellow; she died in Portland, March 12, 1851. 4. Elizabeth, born in Boston, Sept. 21, 1779, died in Portland, August 1, 1802. 5. John, born in Plymouth, Mass., Sept. 1, 1781; graduated at Harvard College in 1800, admitted to the bar of Cumberland county, Maine, in 1808, died in Hiram, Jan. 22, 1860. He was an accomplished scholar and linguist. 6. Lucia, born in Plymouth, June 12, 1783, died in Portland, Oct. 17, 1864. An elaborate obituary from the pen of Hon. William Willis closed with the following lines: "Of no disorder, of no blast she died, But fell like autumn fruit that mellowed long." 7. Lieutenant Henry, born in Falmouth (now Portland), June 21, 1785; a lieutenant in the United States Navy at the age of nineteen; killed before Tripoli, Sept. 4, 1804, while aiding in running a torpedo ship into the enemy's fleet. 8. George, born in Portland, Jan. 6, 1788, died in Philadelphia, April 8, 1816. He is said to have been one of the best penmen in the United States. 9. Com. Alexander Scammell, born in Portland, May 7, 1790. He was for years commodore in the United States Navy, and was said to have been one of the finest looking officers in the service. He died in Washington, D. C., April 5, 1851. 10. Samuel Bartlett, of whom further. 11. General Peleg, born in Portland, Oct. 10, 1793; was a general in the militia of Maine; he died in Hiram, Maine, Jan. 17, 1875.

These children, by their mother and their father's mother, trace their descent from five of the Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth Rock from the *Mayflower*, including Elder William Brewster and Capt. John Alden.

General Wadsworth and his excellent wife had long been members of the Congregationalist church. On a high plateau in the valley of the winding and silvery Saco, whose majestic cataract makes endless melody as its bright waters roll onward to the sea, set like a gem in its circlet of hills and mountains, the old ancestral Wads-







## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

worth took his place. On his return to Portland his fellow-citizens worth mansion still stands. On an eminence nearly in the shadow of "the forest primeval" sleeps the honored patriot among his kindred, well worthy of the eulogium upon his tablet, "He was a Patriot, a Philanthropist, and a Christian."

Two sons of Gen. Wadsworth were gallant officers in the United States Navy, and another served in the War of 1812. Henry, for whom his nephew, the poet Longfellow, was named, was a lieutenant at the age of nineteen, and was attached to the schooner *Scourge* in Com. Decatur's expedition before Tripoli in 1804. As he took leave of his friends before embarking, a sister remarked, "Henry, I fear we shall soon hear that you are a prisoner." "No, Lucia," he replied with determined emphasis, "you shall never hear that of me." The last entry in his journal before the attack in which he lost his life was this: "We are in daily expectation of the Commodore's arrival from Syracuse with the gun-boats and bomb-vessels, and then, Tripoli, be on thy guard." The story of his heroic death is inscribed on a marble cenotaph erected by his father to his memory in the Eastern Cemetery in Portland. On the southwest face: "In memory of Henry Wadsworth, son of Peleg Wadsworth, Lieut. U. S. Navy, who fell before the walls of Tripoli on the eve of Sept. 4, 1804, in the twentieth year of his age, by the explosion of a fire-ship, which he and others gallantly conducted against the enemy." On the northeast face are these lines:

"My country calls, this world adieu;  
(5. P. 131) I have one life: that life I give for you."

On the southeast face is an extract from a letter of Com. Preble: "Determined at once, they prefer death, and the destruction of the enemy, to captivity and torturing slavery." On the northwest face is an extract from a resolution of Congress: "An honor to his country, and an example to all excellent youth."

Commodore Alexander Scammell Wadsworth, the ninth child of Gen. Wadsworth, was a lieutenant in the United States Navy at the age of twenty-two. When the frigate *Constitution* (*Old Ironsides*) fought her memorable battle in August, 1812, in which she captured the British frigate *Guerriere*, Alexander S. Wadsworth was second lieutenant on board the victorious ship. The first lieutenant, Morris, was wounded severely early in the action, and Lieut. Wadsworth presented him with an elegant sword, in commendation of his brave conduct as an officer. He was an officer on the ship that carried Hon. Joel Barlow, United States Minister to France, in 1811, and for courtesies received that gentleman presented him with a sword. He rose to the rank of commodore.

General Peleg (2) Wadsworth, the eleventh child of Gen. Peleg (1) Wadsworth, was for many years the wealthiest man and largest



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

landholder in Hiram; his merits rested not upon wealth or the pride of ancestry, but upon his pure life and unswerving integrity. He was a consistent Christian from his youth, and a member of the Congregational church of Hiram from its foundation. He was a good military officer, was a magistrate for many years, and held other important offices; and all his business was preëminently accurate, systematic and exact, his penmanship as plain as a printed page. For seventy years he kept a diary and record of the weather. He was a successful farmer, an excellent surveyor of land, and in his youth was a model teacher, teaching a school in his native town in his twelfth year.

Zilpah, the eldest daughter of Gen. Wadsworth, was married to Hon. Stephen Longfellow, a distinguished lawyer of Portland. In her character of rare excellence was combined all that exalts and ennobles the heart of a Christian lady. She also possessed intellectual qualities of a very high order. One fact alone would well cause her name to be spoken with reverence in every civilized land beneath the sun: *She was the mother of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow.*

VI. *Samuel Bartlett Wadsworth*, son of General Peleg and Elizabeth (Bartlett) Wadsworth, was born in Portland, September 1, 1791, and died in Eastport, Maine, October 2, 1874. He resided for the greater part of his life in Eastport. He married, in 1823, Eliza C. Harrington. Issue: 1. Elizabeth Harrington, born in 1824; married (first), in 1848, Augustus Norton; (second), in 1857, G. E. Richie; (third), in 1870, William D. Harrington, M. P., of Halifax, Nova Scotia. 2. Anne H., born in 1827. 3. Mary N., born in 1829; married, in 1848, Charles C. Norton, of Eastport. 4. Samuel L., born in 1830. 5. Edward Henry, born in 1835. 6. Lucia, born in 1839; married, Sept. 16, 1868, Edward E. Shead (see Shead line).

(The Shead Line).

*Shead Arms*—Gules, on a bend or three billets sable.

*Crest*—A falcon's head proper.

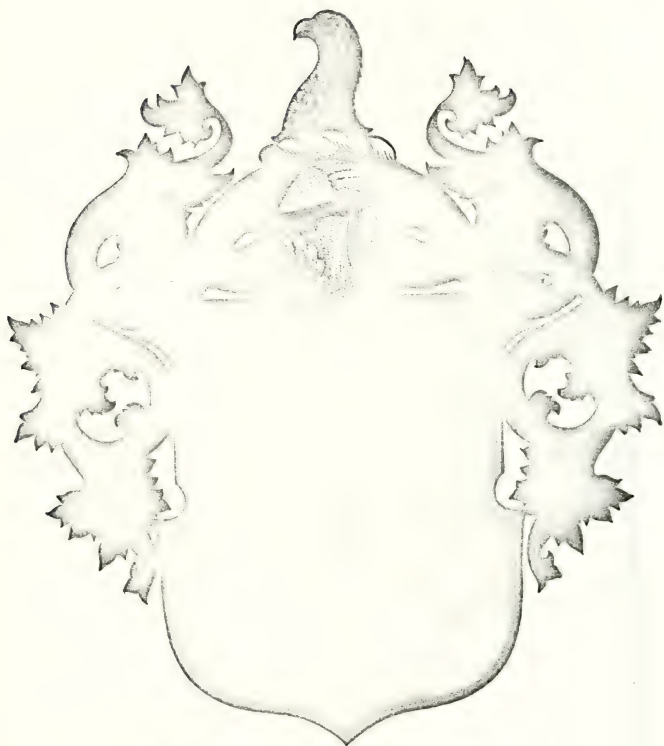
The family of Shead, ancient and distinguished in American history in its own right, has been allied with colonial names noted and familiar in the early settlement of New England, and Edward E. Shead, of this record, was a descendant in the eighth generation, through maternal lines, of John and Priscilla Alden, of *Mayflower* and Plymouth Colony fame.

*Colonel Oliver Shead* was the first member of the line herein followed to make his residence in that section of the Massachusetts territory now the State of Maine. He was a son of Oliver and Chloe

---

NOTE—The greater part of this narrative was taken from Horace Andrew Wadsworth's "Two Hundred and Fifty Years of the Wadsworth Family in America."





BY THE NAME OF  
SHEAD









## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

(Jones) Shead, who was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, October 29, 1777. He settled in Eastport, and became the clerk of Nathaniel Goddard, who was the second merchant to establish a business in Eastport, which he did in 1789. Afterward Mr. Shead connected himself in trade with Aaron Hayden, under the firm name of Hayden & Shead, and they succeeded to Mr. Goddard's large business. He built the first two-story house on the island at the north end, near where the bridge now crosses. In 1802 he was appointed the first postmaster, and held the office until his death. He was also the first coroner, and was town treasurer from 1800 to 1811, when, declining re-election, he received a vote of thanks in town meeting. He owned the first horse on the island—a vicious, black animal, which grown up children, who had never seen the like before, called "an ox without horns," and smaller children called "the devil." He was chosen second captain of the town militia, John Shackford having been the first. As Capt. Shead's and Capt. Vose's commissions bore the same date, there was a serious dispute as to which was entitled to the right of the line; and Capt. Shead was arrested by Major Brewer, and the Eastport company placed under the command of his first lieutenant, Jacob Lincoln. At a later day Capt. Shead was tried by court martial and acquitted, and was afterward chosen major and then colonel of the regiment. When elected to the General Court in 1809, he was allowed for four hundred and fifty miles' travel, that being the distance by post road from Eastport to Boston; the only other member from Washington county at that time was John Dickinson, of Machias. In 1808 the town voted not to send, but Col. Shead was re-elected for 1809-10-11, having the last year Mr. Delesdernier for colleague, the increased population of the town being sufficient for two representatives. Colonel Shead was a comparatively young man, only thirty-six years of age, when he died in Eastport, November 18, 1813, being still at the time postmaster of the town, and colonel of the Third Regiment and Second Brigade, Tenth Division, of the militia of the Commonwealth, of which John Balkane and Joseph Whitney were majors.

*II. Oliver (2) Shead*, son of Col. Oliver Shead, filled for many years the office of which his father had been the first incumbent, that of postmaster. He married Sophia Jones Johnson, and they were the parents of Edward Edes Shead.

*III. Edward Edes Shead*, son of Oliver (2) and Sophia Jones (Johnson) Shead, born in Eastport, Maine, February 9, 1835, died there August 8, 1908. As a boy he attended the public schools, and at the age of twenty-one began his business career by the establishment of an apothecary shop in this town. This was in the month of September, 1856, and from that date until within two years of his death, Mr. Shead continued actively engaged in this



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

business, which developed under his skill and sound judgment to very large proportions. Some years ago Mr. Shead admitted his younger brother, Jesse G. Shead, as a partner to the business, and this association was continued up to the time of his retirement. To the drug business Mr. Shead added a large stationery line, and in both transacted a very large trade in this region. So successful was he, indeed, that for a number of years before his actual retirement he was enabled to leave the care of the business largely in the hands of his brother, which thus gave him the time and opportunity for the pursuit of several studies in which he was particularly interested. Mr. Shead may indeed be said to have had what amounted almost to a hobby in his interest in local history and tradition, and much of his time during the years preceding his death were spent in looking up old traditions and records connected with the early affairs of Eastport and this vicinity. In the year 1888, Edward E. Shead & Company published a history entitled "Eastport and Passamaquoddy," of which the late William Henry Kilby says: "The appearance of Mr. Shead's name on the title page as publisher, affords no adequate idea of his share in the labor of carrying the book to completion; and but for his efficient aid in the collection of material, as well as for his successful arrangements in insuring the disposal of the finished volume, the compiler would have hesitated about undertaking the enterprise."

It was in 1885 that Mr. Shead was elected president of the Frontier National Bank of Eastport, and in that office he continued to successfully direct the affairs of this important financial institution to within a short time of his death. Mr. Shead's activities were by no means confined to the business world hereabouts, however, but he took a vital interest in the public affairs of the community and held a number of important positions here. He was selectman of Eastport in 1886-87, and for a number of years served as a member of the Superintending School Committee. He was also prominent in fraternal circles, and was a member of Easton Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons. Although holding the positions above referred to in the city government, Mr. Shead was quite unambitious in the political world, preferring whenever possible to give his services to the community in the capacity of private citizen, and it was only in response to the urgent representation of his colleagues, and to his own sense of duty, that he consented to hold office at all. He was a Republican in political belief, but was not closely associated with the local organization of his party, although his advice was frequently sought for and always highly valued. In his religious belief, Mr. Shead was a Unitarian, and for more than three score years was a regular attendant at the church of this denomination in Eastport. He was also very active in the work of



that congregation and served for some time as chairman of the board of trustees.

Edward E. Shead married, September 16, 1868, Lucia Wadsworth, of Eastport (see Wadsworth line).<sup>1</sup>

It is not through a mere recitation of his achievements that the influence of Mr. Shead's personality upon the community in which he lived can be adequately gauged. For more than fifty years he was active in the business life of Eastport, and during that whole period maintained a standard of integrity and high business ethics which may well serve as an example worthy of emulation to his fellow-townsmen for many generations to come. His personality was a kindly and genial one, yet gave the impression of great reserve strength, so that men generally found him easy of approach, yet instinctively realized that he was not to be imposed upon. In what high esteem he was held by his associates may be judged from the following set of resolutions passed by the directors of the Frontier National Bank at a meeting held by them August 12, 1908, four days after the death of their president. The resolutions follow:

*Resolved*, That in the death of our much esteemed President, Edward E. Shead, we lose one of our best citizens, who, while he has won high respect as a valued citizen, and while his death is therefore an affliction in which we must all have part, it devolves upon us, who have been associated with him in discharge of common duty, for a special expression of our share in the general sorrow.

*Resolved*, That we have lost a valued friend and adviser from this Board, whose counsel and advice have always been for the best interests of all.

*Resolved*, That we deeply sympathize with his family in their sad bereavement.

*Voted*, That the family of the deceased be furnished with a copy of these resolutions, and that the same be printed in the Eastport "Sentinel" and spread upon the records of this bank.

Mr. George H. Hayes, cashier of the Frontier National Bank under Mr. Shead, received the following letter from the cashier of the First National Bank of Boston, relative to Mr. Shead's death:

It is with much sorrow that we learn of the death of your honored president, Mr. Shead, and we all extend to you and your directors, our deepest sympathy for the great loss which you have sustained. Mr. Shead, by his genial personality, endeared himself to us, and we shall feel that we have lost a friend.

The following letter was received from E. H. Bucknam, of Sioux City, Iowa, and published in the Eastport "Sentinel":

Editor "Sentinel." Dear Sir—To the Sons and Daughters of Old Eastport, widely scattered all through the country, wherever the "Sentinel" may go, and outside of that circle too, the news of the death at Boston so recently, of Edward E. Shead, comes as a personal shock, with the feeling akin to that of the loss of an older and very dear brother. Is it too much to say that Eastport's foremost citizen has gone, beyond that Harbor Bar, where surely in that mystic sea beyond our ken, such as he, can meet their Pilot face to face? Though three score and ten years had passed over his head, and sorrows

<sup>1</sup>Mrs. Shead has placed two memorial stained glass windows in the Eastport Unitarian Church, one in memory of her father, the other of her husband.





## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

heavy and wearing had shadowed his later days, so brave, so cordial, so helpful where help was needful; so wise; it still seemed that his naturally strong constitution and inbred optimism might hold him to us for years to come.

As head of his business firm for half a century; to all people of the many islands which surround our own, from Grand Manan to Shamcook Hills, to those whose homes were along our rivers and around our lakes and farther back, even among the lodging camps and forests; to all these and more, Dr. or "Ned" Shead was known for his strict integrity and skill. The Shead Drug Store always seemed a natural meeting and greeting place of those older boys who from time to time came back to their old Island Home. As President of the Frontier Bank, as chairman of the board of trustees, and sterling member of the Unitarian Church, and in all civic matters, his advice was sought and his judgment held in high esteem.

To his faithful, true and devoted wife, the sincere and deep sympathy of all who knew her husband goes out in unbounded measure, as also to his loyal brother and all of kin. His life among us is his best monument. Green may his memory be in the old town of his birth.

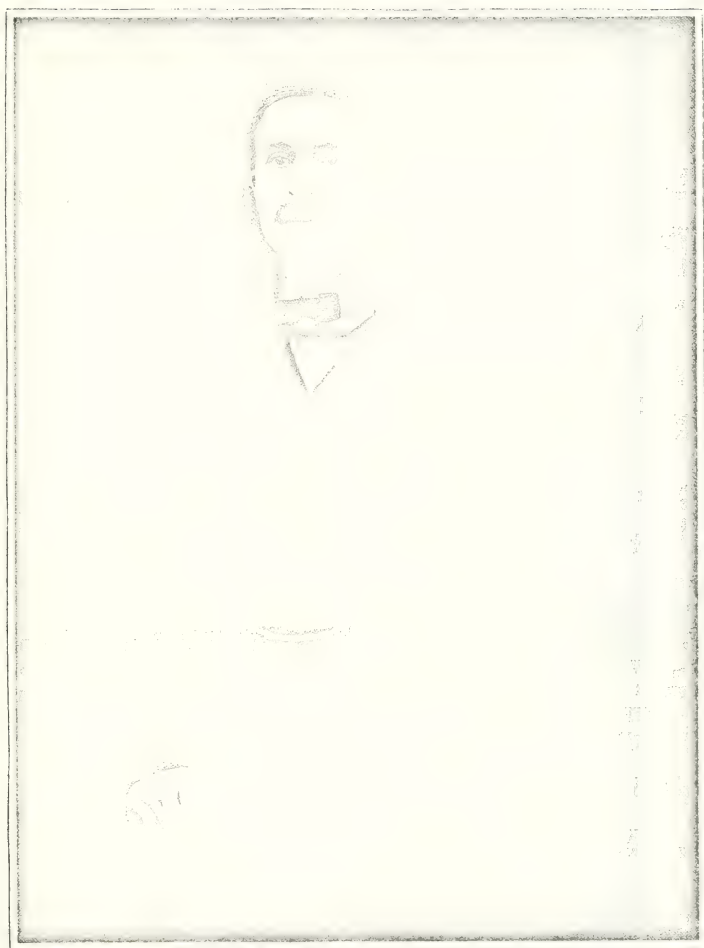
Concerning Mr. Shead and his death, the Eastport "Sentinel" of August 12, 1908, had the following remarks to make in the course of a long obituary article:

During the seventy-three years of Mr. Shead's life, he had always been a resident of Eastport. For fifty years he had been in active and successful business in his native town, retiring about two years ago. In all this time no man was better known or more highly respected or esteemed among not only his own townsmen, but also in neighboring towns on both sides of the "Line," than E. E. Shead. He was an ideal citizen, fair and considerate in all his dealings with his fellow-men, of a warm and social disposition, that attracted and held many strong and sincere friendships. His sound judgment and scrupulous honesty of purpose made him a trusted advisor in many cases of widely varying interest.

In the death of Edward E. Shead we see the passing away of one of the best citizens a town was ever blessed with. For more than half a century he had occupied a prominent and honorable life in the business, social and religious life of the community. His genial ways, modest and unassuming manner and pleasant address, made friends of old and young. His private charities were numerous and continued. He was a character to inspire respect, admiration and love, and surviving relatives have the sincere sympathy of many friends in the loss in this life, of the companionship and comfort of a noble soul.

*IV. Oliver Wadsworth Shead*, son of Edward E. and Lucia (Wadsworth) Shead, was born November 6, 1869, in Eastport, and received the elementary portion of his education at a private grammar school there. He was then a pupil of the Boynton High School at Eastport, and later attended the Allen School at West Newton, Massachusetts, and the celebrated Phillips Exeter Academy, where he was prepared for college. He then entered Harvard University, where he took the usual classical course and graduated with the class of 1893. He had determined by this time to follow the profession of law as his career in life, and accordingly entered the Columbia Law School, in New York City, where he graduated with the class of 1896. During his college career, Mr. Shead was well known as an athlete, and it was while at Harvard that he began those athletic sports which eventually resulted in his death. He continued to engage in athletics after his college life, and it was in February, 1905, that the fatal accident occurred. He was exercising at that time in the gymnasium of the Boston Athletic Club, and





Oliver Wendell Sheaf





S. W. Shad



a companion, who was swinging on the flying rings, accidentally struck him, breaking two of his ribs and bringing on a case of what is known as "railroad spine." He recovered from the initial shock, but a series of unfortunate mental strains occurred which gradually induced a nervous trouble, from which he died in 1909. It had not, however, interfered entirely with Mr. Shead's career, which had already begun with fine promise at the time of his accident. Upon completing his legal studies he had practiced law in New York City for a year, and then formed a partnership with Fred W. Moore, of Boston, where he continued until his last illness. His success during these years was brilliant, and he had already gained, in spite of his youth, a position of prominence at the bar. Mr. Shead was a Republican in politics, but did not take an active part in public affairs, contenting himself with doing his duty and performing his functions as a private citizen. He was a member of the Corinthian Yacht Club, the Boston Athletic Association, the North Haven Team, and several other organizations of athletic or social character. In his religious belief he was a Unitarian, and attended the church of this denomination in Boston.

Of Mr. Shead, who was former all-around indoor athletic champion of New England, the following article appeared at the time of his death: "While in college he was a noted athlete, and received many medals in college events. His genial nature made him popular with all who came in contact with him, and his friends were legion. He is survived by his mother, to whom the deepest sympathy is extended." Another article had this to say of him: "Amateur sport followers of the early nineties were greatly shocked yesterday to hear of the death of Oliver Shead. If ever there was a game athlete, it was he, and besides being game, he had a cool head, no matter how close the contest, which pulled off many a victory for the broad-shouldered athlete. That he was very successful in the practice of law was no surprise to those who knew him at Harvard, for he stood remarkably well in his studies while there and was always pointed out as an athlete who was always a scholar."

*IV. Edward Wadsworth Shead*, son of Edward E. and Lucia (Wadsworth) Shead, was born February 9, 1874, at Eastport, Maine, and died August 19, 1905, at Seattle, Washington. As a child he attended the local public schools of Eastport, and his early life was spent at that place. Later he was a student at Dummer Academy, South Byfield, Massachusetts, and still later he attended Dean Academy at Franklin, Massachusetts, where he was prepared for college. He then matriculated at Brown University, Providence, Rhode Island, and after taking the usual classical course was graduated with the class of 1893. The young man had already determined upon a medical career, and accordingly entered Har-





vard Medical School, from which he was graduated in 1901 with honors, and received his medical degree. Dr. Shead then took six months' work in the contagious department of the Boston City Hospital, and served as house officer for one year at the Cambridge (Massachusetts) Hospital. He then served for a time at the New York Lying-in Hospital. In July, 1904, he went to Seattle, Washington, where he began the practice of his profession, opening an office in the Walker building in that city. There he was very successful, and later became associated with Dr. H. G. Laselle. Although still a young man, Dr. Shead had already made for himself an enviable reputation in the western city, and enjoyed the confidence not alone of his own clientele, but of his professional colleagues in the city and the community-at-large. At the time of his death, there was being constructed a hospital at the foot of Mt. Baker, of which he was to have taken charge, having been selected for this responsible post from a large number of applicants. It was his intention to make a trip to the East for certain supplies with which to equip this hospital, but unfortunately his death intervened in a tragic manner, being the result of a fall, and his brilliant career was thus closed prematurely. Dr. Shead was a Republican in politics, but his professional activities prevented him from taking that part in public affairs for which his great talents would have eminently fitted him. In his religious belief he was a Unitarian. He was a member of the Theta Delta Chi college fraternity and of the Harvard and Athletic clubs of Seattle. The early death of Dr. Shead was tragic, both on account of his manner and because of the brilliant future which promised him. He exhibited throughout his short career that devotion which characterizes the really great physician, and to this end he added an energy and strength that seemed indefatigable. Of any man who takes up medicine as a profession with the true realization of what is involved in the way of sacrifice, and a sincere intention to live up to its ideal, it may be said that he has given himself for humanity's cause. This was unquestionably true in the case of Dr. Shead, who hesitated at no hardship or difficulty where his professional tasks and duties were concerned, and he never failed to keep himself abreast of the more recent developments of his science. It will be appropriate here to quote from his associate, Dr. H. G. Laselle, who wrote on the occasion of his death as follows:

Dr. Shead was associated with me from the time of his arrival in Seattle, and I was very much attached to him and feel his loss keenly. His preparation for his profession was most excellent, and there was every prospect of a successful life.

The *Dean Megaphone*, in commenting on his death, had this to say of him:

Dr. Shad was a man of genial disposition, naturally modest and retiring, and generous to an extreme. He had the rare charm of manner which attracts everyone, and,



## WADSWORTH-SHEAD FAMILIES

though in Seattle but a short time, had many friends, and was greatly beloved by all who knew him. His loyalty to his friends, with constant devotion to their interest, and his strong sense of honor, were among the many sterling traits which, if he had lived, would have insured for him popularity in his success in his professional career.

NOTE—The material for this record was taken from "Eastport and Passamaquoddy," and the biographical section of "Maine, a History," by Louis Clinton Hatch.





## Libbey Family

*The Libby* (present spelling *Libbey*) *Arms*—Ermine, a lion rampant azure.

*Crest*—Out of a paling or, a dexter arm proper vested gules, holding a baton azure, tipped of the first.



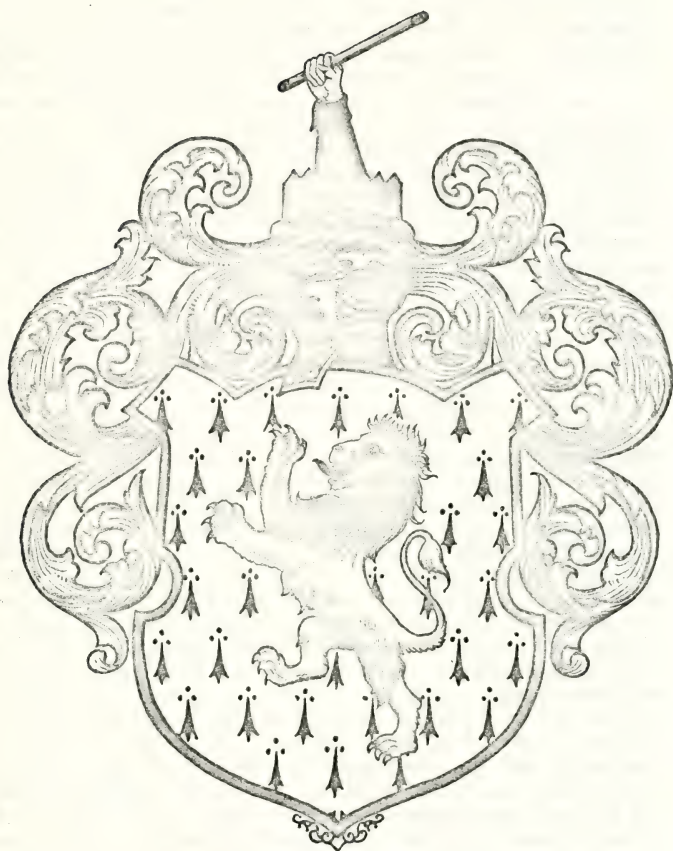
HE earliest mention of the name of Libbey that has been found is in the Visitation of Oxfordshire for 1574. It there appears that "Richard Libbe of Taston in County Devon, Gent., marryd Bridgett, daughter and one of the heirs of — Justice of Readinge in County Berk, Gent., and by her had yssue Richard, Mary, married to Robert Fitch of Hasley in Coun. Warw: and Elizabeth married to Ninian Coxon, Cittizen of London." The son Richard married Joane, daughter of John Corker, of Checkenden in Oxfordshire, and settled in that place. The family was afterward "long settled at Whitechurch in Oxfordshire, where they were lords of the manor of Hardwick."

The name seems to have belonged either in Cornwall or Devon. The Oxfordshire family, the earliest, as has been said, of which mention has been found, evidently sprang from the latter county. According to Colonel Joseph L. Chester, LL.D., D. C. L., the only wills of the name deposited at London, beside those of the Oxfordshire family, are those of William Libbye and Henry Libby, proved in 1653 and 1655, and both of these men belonged in Cornwall, where the name still abounds. As a family in America, the Libbys have been largely respected by their neighbors as men of sterling worth and uprightness and honesty of character. They have generally belonged to that law-abiding class which forms the bone and muscle of a nation, content to render the wise efforts of others effective by its hearty support, and willing to concede all the glory to the leader. The family numbers its Revolutionary soldiers by scores, and many hundreds participated in the succeeding wars of the country. They are, as a family, very devout, and have figured much more largely in the religious than in the civil institutions of the communities in which they have lived. The family has abounded in Christian ministers, elders, and deacons, while generation after generation has died in the faith.

As written by strangers, the manners of spelling the name have been almost endless; but the forms that have been used by the members themselves of the American family are thought to be only the following: Libby, Libbey, Libbee, Libbie, Libbe, Lebby,







Libbey  
{LIBBY}

1867. MAR. 20. AMN



## LIBBEY FAMILY

Lebbey, Lebbee, and Lebbe. Those existent today are Libby, Libbey, Libbee, Libbie, and Lebby. The line of Matthew, son of the immigrant, which is that through which the family herein recorded traces, has favored the spellings Libbey and Libbee. Throughout this record, after the immigrant, Libbey will be used.

Maine was settled chiefly through speculative enterprises of English merchants. They yearly sent many vessels to fish on her coast, and established trading houses at convenient points to supply the wants of their fishermen and to obtain furs from the Indians. One of these stations was located on Richmond's Island, a small island on the coast of Cumberland county, distant about one mile from the coast of Cape Elizabeth. There had been one Walter Bagnall there trading with the Indians, but he had dealt unjustly with them and they had murdered him. In 1631, Robert Trelawny and Moses Goodyear, of Plymouth, Devonshire, England, procured a patent which included that island, and soon after established a trading post, with John Winter as their agent. In John Winter's employ first appears John Libby, founder of the American family.

*I. John Libby*, named above, was born in England, about 1602. In July, 1677, he stated that "the good and pious report that was spread abroad, into our Native Land of this country, caused your Petitioner to come to this Land 47 yeares agoe, where he hath ever since Continued." According to this, the year of his immigration was 1630; but "47 yeares" was probably a slight exaggeration. The "good and pious report" was doubtless set afloat by Trelawny in his efforts to obtain men to carry on his fisheries, and there can be little doubt that John Libby was sent over by him. From Winter's reports to Trelawny it is evident that John Libby was in the employ of Trelawny four years, from 1635 to 1639, and that during that time a large part of his earnings were paid for him in England. This was doubtless for the support of the wife he had left behind; and probably in 1640 he sent for her and took up his permanent abode on the neighboring mainland, on the possession of Thomas Cammock, the patentee of Black Point. A few miles west of Richmond's Island, formed by the little river now called Nonesuch, on the west, and a still smaller stream, since dignified by the name Libby river, on the southeast, was a low neck of land. On that neck, close to the marsh of the stream that bears his name, John Libby built his house. The land which he selected was afterward laid out to him by Henry Joselyn (who had come into possession of the Cammock patent), and for many years he doubtless occupied it as his tenant. During those years much of his time was probably devoted to fishing, but as his land gradually became more productive he doubtless depended less upon the sea and applied himself exclusively to the tilling of the soil. In a document dated January 1, 1663, he was described as a planter. On April 14,



## LIBBEY FAMILY

1661, he was one of the appraisers of the estate of Andrew Heffers. John Libby was (to use the words of the "History of Scarborough") "for many years one of the town's principal planters," but he took no part in the affairs of the province, and little so far as is known in the management of the town. It appears, however, that he was constable in 1664, and his name stands first of the four selectmen in a town grant bearing date 1669. His name, except as constable, does not appear at all in the provincial court records, and that at a period when quarrels and litigations were the order of the day, and indictments were issued for the most trivial offenses and on most questionable testimony.<sup>1</sup> That in point of morality he took a stand far above the ordinary is very evident from a comparison between his accounts while on Richmond's Island, and those of his fellow fishermen. Whereas most of them spent their entire wages for spirits and tobacco, he used no tobacco and very little intoxicating drink of any sort, while nearly all of what he did use was wine. He seems to have practiced that quiet, correct, peaceful mode of life which has always characterized his descendants.

In Philip's War, in which were devastated all the more exposed settlements of Maine, John Libby suffered in common with the other inhabitants. He lost everything he had except his plantation. In the late summer of 1675 hostile Indians began to appear at Black Point, shooting cattle, etc. Those of the inhabitants who lived at any distance from the garrison (and among them John Libby) were compelled to leave their habitations for the safer abode. Their crops had to be gathered under the protection of soldiers who went from Boston. The burning of John Libby's house was recorded in the diary of Capt. Joshua Scottow, who had charge of the Boston soldiers.

In October, 1676, Black Point Garrison was deserted and most of the inhabitants fled to Boston. The able-bodied men returned soon after and again took possession of the garrison, which the Indians, contrary to their custom, had left unburnt. Probably the women and children did not return until the close of the war; at any rate, John Libby with his wife and younger children were in Boston, July 10, 1677, and on that date petitioned the governor and council there assembled that his sons, Henry and Anthony, on whom he stated he was dependent for support, might be discharged from the Black Point Garrison; the petition was granted the same day. He returned to Black Point probably very soon after. There was no serious trouble there subsequent to June, 1677, and on April 12, 1678, terms of peace were finally ratified. In a short time Black Point had regained something of its former prosperity, and in the

<sup>1</sup>The existing town records of Scarborough date back so as to include only the declining years of his life.





## LIBBEY FAMILY

few remaining years of his life, John Libby acquired a comfortable property. He died at about eighty years of age.

That John Libby had two wives is certain. Of the first nothing is known, but that she was the mother of all his sons except Matthew and Daniel, and probably all his daughters. Of the second there is nothing known but her Christian name, which appears from the mention in a town grant, May 1, 1686, of "Mary Libby's marshes." How long Mary Libby outlived her husband is uncertain, but she probably lived to be again driven from her home by the Indians, as no attempt was made to settle her estate.

Issue of John Libby (probably all born in America except eldest): 1. John, born 1636; married, his wife's given name Agnes. 2-3. James, Samuel; these both lost their lives in Philip's War; unmarried; one was killed at Black Point in the spring of 1677; the other was taken sick in the garrison, carried to Boston, and there died July 9, 1677. 4. Joanna, married Thomas Bickford, of Black Point; his father lived at Dover, N. H., and in the second Indian war his family moved from Scarborough to that place. 5. Henry, born 1647; married Honor Hinkson, of Scarborough. 6. Anthony, born about 1649; married Sarah Drake, of Hampton, N. H. 7. Rebecca, married Joshua Brown, of Scarborough. 8. Sarah, born 1653; married Robert Tidy, of Scarborough. 9. Hannah, married Daniel Fogg, of Scarborough. 10. David, born 1657; married, his wife's given name Eleanor. 11. Matthew, of whom further. 12. Daniel, married Mary Ashton, of Scarborough.

*II. Matthew Libbey*, son of John Libby, was born in Scarborough, in 1663, died in March, 1740-1. He went to Portsmouth in 1690, and thence to Kittery in the winter of 1699-1700. He built a house of hewn timber, the upper story projecting over the lower for protection against the Indians, and there lived until his death. Sometime before the second organization of the town of Scarborough he, with Roger Deering, John Libby, a nephew, and Roger Hunnewell, went down to Black Point, and built a saw-mill on Nonesuch river, a short distance above the present Congregational church. His interest in that mill he afterward gave to his three sons, William, John, and Andrew, and it is doubtful if he ran the mill himself longer than a very short time. He died in March, 1740-1, leaving his homestead to his son, Samuel. In the family burying ground lie Matthew Libbey and his wife, and five generations of their descendants, with nothing but rough stones to mark their graves.

He married Elizabeth, daughter of Andrew Brown, a prominent citizen of Black Point. She survived him but two or three years. Issue: 1. William, married Sarah Brown. 2. Matthew, married Mary Nason. 3. Mary, married Samuel Libby. 4. Rebecca, married, January 21, 1723, Thomas Musset. 5. Hannah, married, in January, 1722, Samuel Hauscom. 6. John, born 1698; married





## LIBBEY FAMILY

Keziah Hubbard. 7. Andrew, born Dec. 1, 1700; married (first) Esther Furber, (second) Eleanor (Libby) Trickey. 8. Sarah, born Sept. 7, 1702; married John Libby. 9. Nathaniel, of whom further. 10. Dorcas, born Feb. 2, 1706; married, June 24, 1729, James Staples. 11. Samuel, born June 5, 1709; married Margaret Rogers. 12. Mehitabel, born March 14, 1711; married, Aug. 2, 1733, Daniel Knight. 13. Lydia, born April 27, 1713; married, Oct. 17, 1730, Benjamin Stacey. 14. Elizabeth, married, Nov. 26, 1734, John Smith, Jr., of Berwick.

*III. Nathaniel Libbey*, son of Matthew and Elizabeth (Brown) Libbey, was born in Kittery, Maine, November 2, 1704, died in 1761. In 1735 or 1736 he moved to the adjoining town of Berwick, and settled at Blackberry Hill. This was at that time a frontier wilderness. It was much exposed to the Indians, and they had frequently to seek the shelter of the garrison. On one occasion, it is told, when Mr. Libbey was away from home the house was surrounded by savages, but his wife frightened them away by deceiving them into the belief that there were men there. In that spot Nathaniel Libbey cleared for himself a farm, which he occupied until his death.

He married (first) October 11, 1730, Miriam Knight; (second) Nov. 16, 1757, widow Hannah Staples, of Kittery. After his death she returned to Kittery. There were thirteen children of his first marriage, but only four survived him. It is said that he lost six of the thirteen in one week, by a throat distemper. Issue: 1. Nathaniel, died young. 2. Susannah, died young. 3. Miriam, born about 1735; married, Jan. 24, 1779, Ephraim Goodwin. 4. Stephen, died young. 5. Nathaniel, born about 1738; married (first) Elizabeth Fogg; (second) Eleanor Johnson. 6. Child, died young. 7. Stephen, of whom further. 8. Zebulon, born about 1742; married Sarah Brackett. 9. John, died young. 10. Susannah, died young. 11. Reuben, died young. 12. Mary, died young. 13. Hannah, died young.

*IV. Stephen Libbey*, son of Nathaniel and Miriam (Knight) Libbey, was born in Berwick, Maine, about 1741, died May 8, 1793. After his marriage he settled in what is now North Berwick, on the Beech Ridge road, close by Spencer brook. On this brook he owned and operated a grist-mill. In 1777 he bought one hundred acres of land, about a mile from the headline of Lebanon, in what afterward became Shapleigh and is now Acton. He cleared a farm about a mile north of Acton Corner, and there died. He married (first) April 22, 1761, Alice Guptil, (second) July 21, 1773, Hannah Young.

On June 10, 1797, his widow married Jacob Hersom, and they continued to reside on the Libbey farm, and are both buried there. She died about 1829. Issue (by first marriage): 1. Miriam, married, Oct. 22, 1778, Miles Thompson. 2. Stephen, born April 12, 1764; married Sally Butler. 3. Samuel, married Anna Cook. 4.



and

Collier

W. D. Libby



## LIBBEY FAMILY

Alice, born about 1770, died young. Issue (by second marriage): 5. Alice, born April 15, 1774; married, in April, 1792, John Her-som. 6. Abigail, born March 31, 1778; married, Nov. 23, 1815, Thomas Thurston, of Acton. 7. Zebulon, born May 15, 1780; married Dorcas Holmes. 8. Peter, of whom further. 9. Hannah, born May 25, 1788; married, Sept. 17, 1806, Benjamin Tibbetts. 10. John, born Feb. 5, 1790; married Betsey Dean. 11. Lydia, born March 27, 1792; married (first), Jan. 20, 1804, Jacob Lord; (second) Miles Thompson.

V. *Peter Libbey*, son of Stephen and Hannah (Young) Libbey was born in Shapleigh, Maine, July 3, 1781. In the winter of 1802-3 he moved from Shapleigh to Fairfield and settled in the wilderness. A few years later he moved to Smithfield, where he became a very successful farmer. He was selectman many years, was a justice of the peace, and represented his town in the state legislature. He died August 11, 1862.

He married, Dec. 31, 1801, Sarah Bean, of Shapleigh. Issue (first four born in Fairfield, last in Smithfield): 1. William, born April 14, 1803, died in infancy. 2. Asa M., of whom further. 3. Abigail, born July 3, 1807; married Asa Libbey. 4. Hannah, twin with Abigail, married, in 1823, Seth Gage. 5. Sally, born Oct. 30, 1809, died in 1818.

VI. *Asa M. Libbey*, son of Peter and Sarah (Bean) Libbey, was born in Fairfield, Maine, January 13, 1804, died in West Waterville, Maine, August 9, 1879. In his younger days he taught school, began a college course, and then studied medicine. Shortly before his marriage he settled on a farm in West Waterville, and also engaged in manufacturing chairs. From 1835 to 1847 he was a miller of Pittsfield and Hermon. He was then a farmer in Smithfield, in Avon, and finally from 1857 in West Waterville, where his death occurred.

He married (first) Sarah Ann Cook, daughter of James Cook, of Tanworth, New Hampshire. She died Nov. 12, 1840, in Pittsfield, Maine. He married (second), March 23, 1843, Joanna B., daughter of Rev. Francis and Joanna (Brown) Powers, of Norridgewock. Issue (by first marriage): 1. William V. T., born May 12, 1833; married, March 29, 1856, Annie W. Parker. 2. Sophia Maria, born Oct. 7, 1836, died Oct. 5, 1838. 3. Albert L. H., born Aug. 25, 1839; married, Jan. 12, 1862, Clara Augusta Libbey. He was the first volunteer from Exeter, Maine, to enlist in the Union army in the Civil War. Issue (by second marriage): 4. Sarah Ann, born Oct. 20, 1844; married, May 11, 1875, Evanda H. Wood, of Winslow. 5. Truman D., born Oct. 22, 1848. 6. W. Scott, of whom further.

VII. *W. Scott Libbey*, youngest son of Asa M. Libbey and his second wife, Joanna B. Powers, was born in Avon, Maine, August 27, 1851. He was educated in the common schools of Oakland and in





## LIBBEY FAMILY

Coburn Classical Institute at Waterville. Upon completing his education, which ended before his course at the last-named Institute was finished, Mr. Libbey became a telegraph operator, and in 1876 came to the Western Union office in Lewiston as its manager, which position he retained until 1887, resigning of his own accord to devote his entire time to other business interests.

From the beginning of his career he was determined to advance and reach a point where it could be said he had achieved a success. It was seldom that he talked of those early days to his friends, but when he did it was a very interesting tale, for the frugality which he practiced in order to get a start in life was astonishing. One of his earliest investments was in Lewiston real estate. He purchased a tenement on Lincoln street. At that time his capital was so limited that even though he had bought the building, he could not afford to provide the janitor service which it required. He was equal to this emergency, however. He rose early each morning and went to the building and did the work himself, following this by visiting it again at night, after hours in the telegraph office, and doing such work as was needed. Convinced that there was money to be made in the woolen business, he kept a watchful eye upon that industry. All the time he was looking for an opportunity to secure a woolen mill at a reasonable figure, and in time he secured a lease of one of the small mills at Vassalboro. Realizing that he was not in a position to give up his certainty of a salary as manager of the Western Union in Lewiston, he retained that position and continued the work. From Monday morning until Saturday night he devoted to the telegraph office. The remainder of the week he gave to his woolen mill interests in Vassalboro. As soon as the business of the week in Lewiston closed on Saturday night, he took the train for Vassalboro, from which point he walked three miles to his woolen mill. At the mill he worked all day Sunday, arranging plans for the coming week, walking back to the station and coming home early Monday morning. It was a strenuous life. Many men could not have stood the strain. He had remarkable physique, a strong constitution, was regular in habits, used neither alcoholic drinks nor tobacco, and was careful of his diet. He stood the test splendidly, made the mill pay and saw his capital and business increase. Later Mr. Libbey secured a small woolen mill in the town of Dover. It was not a paying proposition, but Mr. Libbey felt sure it could be put upon a profit-producing basis. Realizing that it was necessary to have personal supervision of the plant if it were to be made a paying investment, Mr. Libbey engaged another operator, paying the salary from his own pocket, to work in the telegraph office in Lewiston, and so, retaining the management, as an anchor windward, went to Dover and took charge of the mill. The story of how the East Dover Woolen Mill was made a good



investment is one of keen management, hardships and disappointments sufficient to make a volume. The hours which he put in and the obstacles which he overcame seem impossible, but in the end his judgment was proven and the mill paid. It was not until 1888 that Mr. Libbey ventured into the mill business in Lewiston. That year he purchased the Cumberland Mill. Five years later, in 1893, he secured the Lincoln Mill, which was operated by him in connection with the Cumberland property after that time. Mr. Libbey always felt proud of the purchase of the Lincoln Mill, because it was the first mill he was ever in. In speaking of this to intimate friends, he frequently remarked that his thought on the occasion of that first visit was: "Will I ever have money enough to own a mill like that?" Not only did he become one of the owners of that plant, but had an interest in others and of many other varieties of industry.

Mr. Libbey became interested in the electrical possibilities of the Androscoggin river, and in 1901 he purchased control of the Lewiston & Auburn Electric Light Company and the American Light & Power Company, and consolidated them under the name of the former company. This light and power interest was added to in 1906 by the purchase of the Mechanic Falls Electric Light Company. For many years Mr. Libbey conceived the idea of a huge power plant at Deer Rips. Work was begun early in 1902, and in 1904 this plant was put in operation, after thirty-one months of labor and an expenditure of a considerable amount of money. This plant is today estimated as worth considerable over a million dollars. In the year 1908 Mr. Libbey became interested in the project of building an electric railroad from Lewiston to Portland. At first he took a block of stock in the road, but eventually purchased all stock, underwrote the bonds, and built the line which was practically completed at the time of his death. This is one of the finest interurban lines in the country, and had been the hobby of Mr. Libbey since he first became interested in it. He took personal charge of its construction and equipment. It was built to compete with steam roads, both in comfort and speed. Mr. Libbey was a director of the Manufacturers' National Bank, and was a trustee of Coburn Classical Institute. He always took a deep interest in Bates College, and only a few years ago donated to it a large society building known as Libbey Forum.

Mr. Libbey never took a great part in politics. In 1906 he was a candidate for member of the executive council of the State and was elected, serving with great credit during the administration of Governor Cobb. He was a member of the sub-committee of that council which selected the site of the School for the Feeble-minded, which was then established. It has always been claimed by those who understood the facts of that purchase that his business acumen, devoted to the interests of Maine, saved the State many thousands



## LIBBEY FAMILY

of dollars in the purchase. During that term he gave the State the same good judgment and careful attention to details as he always gave his own business. His associates on the board regarded him as one of the ablest men among them and one of the best councilors which the State ever had.

No man had a greater degree of business acumen or a more prophetic sense in business opportunities than he. His courage was unbounded. Nothing ever frightened him, never even halted him, when once he had begun. He had absolute confidence in his capacity to carry through to a finish any undertaking which he had once canvassed and decided to be practicable. His knowledge of mechanics, engineering, manufacturing and of financial matters, which in a large degree was intuitive, was so remarkable as to be practically business genius. The man who from a telegraph operator in 1876 becomes a millionaire and industrial leader in thirty years by his unaided effort and who practically hews the fortune out of the very town in which he began, is no ordinary man.

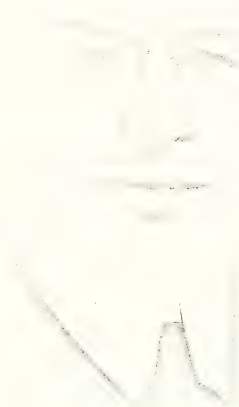
Mr. Libbey personally had two distinct sides to his character. One of them was the resistless, forceful, driving machine with which he spurred on men and machinery to do its utmost, and the other was the sensitive, gentle, kindly and appreciative personality which was most lovable and which is sweetly remembered by those within the circle of his intimate friends. If he was often brusque and impetuous, he was also considerate, courteous and kind. He had his own positive views upon all matters, which it was well, perhaps, to respect and to permit him to enjoy unrestricted, but at the same time his mind was open to every new thought, receptive of information and eager to look beyond the immediate surroundings into the future, especially so far as business was concerned. He was very fond of good literature; very sensitive to praise or criticism; exceedingly generous, especially to his trusted employees; very charitable, especially where his charities could not be a matter of publicity, and withal a man of singular and positive character; a man of genius in business, of thorough-going honesty in all affairs, and of singular fidelity to his friends. In thirty years he made a greater impression upon Lewiston and Auburn than perhaps any other man who had ever lived there. The mere recapitulation of his enterprises bear this statement out. The boy who, on the side of old Mount Blue, in the town of Avon, said to himself, as we have been told, that some day he would make his name in the world, kept his word. He died May 17, 1914.

He married, in 1877, Annie E. Shaw, of Lisbon. They are the parents of five children: Truman C., who died in infancy; Mrs. Gertrude Anthony, and Harold S. Libbey, of Lewiston; Alla A., of Newton; and W. Scott, Jr., who enlisted in the Navy for the duration of the war. There are five grandchildren: Richard, Warren



LIBBEY FAMILY

16078



16078

*Harold S. Libbey*





## LIBBEY FAMILY

and Charles Anthony, and Eleanor and Channell Libbey, of Lewiston.

*VIII. Harold Shaw Libbey*, son of W. Scott and Annie E. (Shaw) Libbey, was born in Lewiston, September 10, 1881, where his death occurred suddenly, April 19, 1919, resulting from influenza-pneumonia. He was graduated from the Lewiston High School in the class of 1901, and received the degree of A. B. from Bates College in 1905, then pursuing post-graduate work at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, specializing in chemistry and the textile industry. Upon the completion of his education he entered the Cumberland Woolen Mills at Lewiston, where he received his practical training in textile manufacture, rising to the position of superintendent. He fulfilled the duties of this position until the death of W. Scott Libbey in 1914, when he became treasurer and agent of the W. S. Libbey Company, and the Cumberland Mills. He directed these affairs with profitable results until his sudden death, serving at the same time as a director of the Androscoggin Electric Company and of the Manufacturers' National Bank of Lewiston, being especially interested in the latter institution, and rarely failing to attend the meeting of the board of directors.

The close comradeship that existed between Mr. Libbey and his father continued through business into their hours of recreation. During the construction of the Portland-Lewiston Interurban Railroad, which W. Scott Libbey built and controlled, he was in charge of portions of the work on the road. They were closely associated in the operation of the mills, while their camping trips together were of the greatest pleasure of both.

Mr. Libbey was a member of the United Baptist Church of Lewiston. He belonged to the Gardiner Gun Club, hunting and gunning being his favorite recreation, and he also belonged to the Boston Athletic Association. He devoted his time and means to the support of movements of progress and improvement in his city, and was a citizen who gladly acknowledged the duties as well as the privileges of citizenship. As a business man he held the regard of the business fraternity, and from the earliest days of his relation with the employees of the concerns with which he was connected, he was an employer wise and just, who valued and strove for the good will of his men and who held it by fair and straightforward dealings. In the brief time that was allotted to him he won recognition as a man of able parts and lived in the approval of all men.

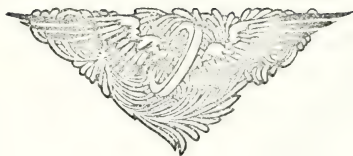
Governor William T. Cobb, the intimate friend of both the elder and younger Libbey, spoke of Harold S. Libbey as follows: "Of fine physique and clean life, it seemed to look at him and to know his love and capacity for the work of business, that fortune had much more in store for him than to be claimed by death at thirty-eight years. . . . He was sure to become a prominent factor in



## LIBBEY FAMILY

the business life of his city and of the State, and personally, in character and wise ambitions, was the type of young man from whom his own generation had every right and reason to expect fine accomplishments and helpful influence."

Harold S. Libbey married, in 1907, Helen V., daughter of Frank A. Channell of Lewiston, and granddaughter of Henry A. Channell, of New Market, New Hampshire. Mrs. Libbey was a schoolmate of her husband both in high school and college. They were the parents of two children: Eleanor V., born April 18, 1909, and Channell T., born May 12, 1913.





## Foster=Chapman Families

*Foster Arms*—Argent, a chevron gules between three bugle-horns vert, on a chief of the second as many leopards' faces or.

*Crest*—An arm embowed in armour holding a broken tilting spear proper.

*Motto*—Anacher, Great Forester of Flanders.



DESCENDANT of an ancient English line resident in America since 1638, possessing the high heritage of an honored name, Judge Enoch Foster, throughout an unusually long and vigorously active life, so lived that the light of example which had been clear to him was rekindled as a guide to those who shall follow him in the law and the public service for decades to come. From the time of his admission to the bar he gave promise of the abilities and capacities that his mature years so splendidly fulfilled, and on the bench and in public affairs he wielded an influence for right and truth that was ever intelligently directed toward the best good of his fellows. And, when he turned from the more serious affairs of life and mingled in social gatherings, there emanated from him a cordiality, a kindness, an abounding good will, that gained him friends and admirers everywhere. Life was fuller to those who knew Judge Foster, for contact with him meant good cheer and good courage, qualities indispensable to him who would wage life's battles successfully.

He traced descent from an ancestry dating to an early period in Flanders, the line as follows: Anacher, Great Forester of Flanders, died in 837. Baldwin I., of Flanders, married the Princess Judith, daughter of Charles II., of France. Baldwin I. built castles at Bruges and Ghent to defend the country against the Normans, and died at Arras in 877. Baldwin II., of Flanders, married Princess Alfrith, daughter of Alfred the Great, King of England; he made war against Endes, Count of Paris, who defeated him and usurped the French crown; he died in 919 and was succeeded by his son, Arnulf, of Flanders, the Forester, who was succeeded by his son in 988. Baldwin III., of Flanders, called "of the handsome beard," married a daughter of the Count of Luxembourg; he was a great warrior, and defended his country against the united forces of the Emperor Henry, King Robert of France, and the Duke of Normandy; he died in 1034, and was succeeded by his son: Baldwin IV., of Flanders, called "Le Debonair," married Princess Adela, daughter of Robert, King of France, by whom he had issue; his daughter Matilda married William I. Sir Richard Forester. Sir Hugo Forster, died in 1121. Sir Reginald Forster, knighted by





## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

King Stephen at the Battle of the Standard, 1138, died in 1156. Sir William Forster, died in 1176. Sir John Forster, accompanied Richard I. to Palestine, where he received the honor of knighthood; he died in 1220. Sir Randolph Forster, accompanied Prince Richard, brother of Henry III., to France in 1225; he died in 1256. Sir Alfred Forster, assisted Prince Edward, after his escape from the rebel barons, in raising an army for the purpose of releasing his father, Henry III., and Prince Richard, from their confinement, and was appointed one of the King's officers; he was knighted in the battle of Eversham, 1265; he died in 1284. Sir Reginald Forster, fought at Bannockburn in 1314; he died in 1328. Sir Richard Forster, fought at Crecy in 1346 and at Poitiers in 1356; he was knighted for his valor, and died in 1371. Sir William Forster, took an active part against the French, and was knighted by Henry V. Sir Thomas Forster, was of Etherstone Castle, Knight, born in 1397; he married Joan Elwerden, co-heiress to the Earldom of Angus, which is now in abeyance. Sir Thomas Forster, was knighted, and married the daughter of Fetherstonbaugh. Sir Thomas Forster, married a daughter of Lord Baron Hilton, of Hilton Castle, and had children: Sir Thomas, Patrick, Roger, and Reginald. Sir Thomas Forster, of Etherstone, Knight, was High Sheriff of Northumberland in 1564, and in 1572 married Dorothy, daughter of Ralph, Lord Ogle of Ogle and Baron of Bothall, and had eight children. Sir Thomas Forster, married Feorina Wharton, daughter of Thomas, Lord Wharton of Wharton; he was of Adderstone, High Sheriff of Northumberland, his will was dated April 4, 1589. Cuthbert Forster, married Elizabeth Bradford; his will dated 1589. Thomas Forster, of Brunton, Esquire, married Margaret Forster, daughter of Richard, of Tungwell Hall, Esquire, and had one daughter, Elizabeth; he married (second) Elizabeth Carr, daughter of William Carr, of Ford, Esquire, and his will was dated June 19, 1648. Next in line:

*Reginald Forster*, was born at Brunton, England, about 1595. He came to America in 1638 with his wife Judith and seven children, and settled at Ipswich, Massachusetts. He died in 1681. He married (first) Judith —, and (second) Mrs. Sarah Martin. William Foster (as this branch have come to spell the name), was born in England in 1633. He was brought to America by his parents, married Mary Jackson, and in 1661 moved to Rowley Village, Massachusetts, which was later named Boxford. Jonathan Foster, born in Boxford, Massachusetts, March 6, 1667; married, December 14, 1693, Abigail Kimball, and died May 21, 1730. Zebadiah Foster, born in Boxford, September 28, 1702; married, in 1723, Margaret Tyler, and died February 21, 1772. Abner Foster, born in Boxford, Massachusetts, April 23, 1773; married, and moved to Newry, Maine. Asa Foster, born in Newry, Maine; married Anna



TERC

FAMILIES



*Enoch Foster.*



## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

Bartlett, and died aged eighty-five years. Enoch Foster, born January 1, 1799; married (first) in 1824, Persis Swan; (second) in 1861, Mrs. Louisa Cutting, and died at Bethel, December 26, 1881; to Enoch Foster, of this record.

*Enoch Foster* was born in Newry, Maine, May 10, 1839, son of Enoch and Persis (Swan) Foster. He spent his youthful years on the paternal homestead, his early schooling pursued under the direction of his father, the elder Foster being a man of scholarly tastes with high ambitions that his son should be possessed of greater educational advantages than he had enjoyed. Enoch Foster enjoyed study and made the most of his opportunities, for a time attending Gould's Academy, then taking college preparatory work at the Maine State Seminary at Lewiston. In 1860 he entered Bowdoin College but had been at work for but a short time when the outbreak of the Civil War called him to the Union colors, and he was made a second lieutenant in Company II, Thirteenth Regiment of Maine Volunteer Infantry. The Thirteenth was recruited by Colonel Neal Dow, who was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general, and who led that regiment through much active service. Soon after receiving his first commission, Enoch Foster was made a first lieutenant, and then was appointed provost marshal by General Banks. For two years he filled this important position, so necessary in the maintenance of order and discipline in an army, and then he resigned to take part in the Red River Expedition, in which he served with conspicuous gallantry. He received an honorable discharge after three years service, and returned to Bowdoin College to complete his course. A vote of the academic council awarded him his degree in the class of 1864, it being the sense of the council that it would be unfair to compel him to resume study three years behind his class. At the completion of his course he began reading law in the office of his cousin, the Honorable Reuben Foster, of Waterville, Maine, after which he enrolled in the Albany Law School, graduating as a Bachelor of Law in 1865. He was admitted to the New York bar in the same year, and soon afterward established an office in Bethel, Maine.

His early legal work was marked by such energy and talent that the attention of the profession and the public was attracted to him most favorably. Within two years he was elected to the office of county attorney, and from a capable administration of this office he went to a seat in the State Senate, serving during the session of 1873-74. His public career was marked by his brilliant and powerful speeches, and he compelled the admiration of protagonist and antagonist by his straightforward courageous support of those measures and institutions he considered good. In 1884 Governor Robie appointed Mr. Foster an associate judge of the Supreme Court of Maine for a seven years' term, and at the expiration of

the first of these is the fact that the  
the second is the fact that the  
the third is the fact that the  
the fourth is the fact that the  
the fifth is the fact that the  
the sixth is the fact that the  
the seventh is the fact that the  
the eighth is the fact that the  
the ninth is the fact that the  
the tenth is the fact that the  
the eleventh is the fact that the  
the twelfth is the fact that the  
the thirteenth is the fact that the  
the fourteenth is the fact that the  
the fifteenth is the fact that the  
the sixteenth is the fact that the  
the seventeenth is the fact that the  
the eighteenth is the fact that the  
the nineteenth is the fact that the  
the twentieth is the fact that the  
the twenty-first is the fact that the  
the twenty-second is the fact that the  
the twenty-third is the fact that the  
the twenty-fourth is the fact that the  
the twenty-fifth is the fact that the  
the twenty-sixth is the fact that the  
the twenty-seventh is the fact that the  
the twenty-eighth is the fact that the  
the twenty-ninth is the fact that the  
the thirtieth is the fact that the  
the thirty-first is the fact that the  
the thirty-second is the fact that the  
the thirty-third is the fact that the  
the thirty-fourth is the fact that the  
the thirty-fifth is the fact that the  
the thirty-sixth is the fact that the  
the thirty-seventh is the fact that the  
the thirty-eighth is the fact that the  
the thirty-ninth is the fact that the  
the fortieth is the fact that the  
the forty-first is the fact that the  
the forty-second is the fact that the  
the forty-third is the fact that the  
the forty-fourth is the fact that the  
the forty-fifth is the fact that the  
the forty-sixth is the fact that the  
the forty-seventh is the fact that the  
the forty-eighth is the fact that the  
the forty-ninth is the fact that the  
the fiftieth is the fact that the  
the fifty-first is the fact that the  
the fifty-second is the fact that the  
the fifty-third is the fact that the  
the fifty-fourth is the fact that the  
the fifty-fifth is the fact that the  
the fifty-sixth is the fact that the  
the fifty-seventh is the fact that the  
the fifty-eighth is the fact that the  
the fifty-ninth is the fact that the  
the sixtieth is the fact that the  
the sixty-first is the fact that the  
the sixty-second is the fact that the  
the sixty-third is the fact that the  
the sixty-fourth is the fact that the  
the sixty-fifth is the fact that the  
the sixty-sixth is the fact that the  
the sixty-seventh is the fact that the  
the sixty-eighth is the fact that the  
the sixty-ninth is the fact that the  
the seventieth is the fact that the  
the seventy-first is the fact that the  
the seventy-second is the fact that the  
the seventy-third is the fact that the  
the seventy-fourth is the fact that the  
the seventy-fifth is the fact that the  
the seventy-sixth is the fact that the  
the seventy-seventh is the fact that the  
the seventy-eighth is the fact that the  
the seventy-ninth is the fact that the  
the eightieth is the fact that the  
the eighty-first is the fact that the  
the eighty-second is the fact that the  
the eighty-third is the fact that the  
the eighty-fourth is the fact that the  
the eighty-fifth is the fact that the  
the eighty-sixth is the fact that the  
the eighty-seventh is the fact that the  
the eighty-eighth is the fact that the  
the eighty-ninth is the fact that the  
the ninetieth is the fact that the  
the ninety-first is the fact that the  
the ninety-second is the fact that the  
the ninety-third is the fact that the  
the ninety-fourth is the fact that the  
the ninety-fifth is the fact that the  
the ninety-sixth is the fact that the  
the ninety-seventh is the fact that the  
the ninety-eighth is the fact that the  
the ninety-ninth is the fact that the  
the hundredth is the fact that the

## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

this period Governor Burleigh reappointed him for a term of like length, his fourteen years on the bench proving him a master of jurisprudence and a jurist whose opinions were learned, clear, and practical.

In 1898 Judge Foster, descending from the bench after useful and warmly appreciated service, formed a law partnership with the Hon. Oscar H. Hersey, the firm opening offices in Portland, Maine, under the firm name of Foster & Hersey. It was not difficult for Judge Foster to resume private practice after the exercise of his judicial functions, because his innate instincts were those of the advocate. He was never in a state of indecision on any subject of importance, his views were always well defined and well defended, and this gave him the ideal temperament for the successful advocate. The reputation of the firm of Foster & Hersey spread rapidly through the State, and they were represented in much of the most important litigation in the court records of that time.

His professional practice caused Judge Foster to lessen considerably his activity in political matters, but never his interest, and he was in the Republican Convention when the historic break in the party occurred and the Progressive Party was born. It is believed by those who knew him that the abandon with which he threw himself into the fight on the side of the Progressives shortened his life, as he spent himself prodigally in the establishment of the party. During this period he gained the friendship and confidence of Theodore Roosevelt by his loyalty to party, their friendship enduring until Mr. Foster's death.

Judge Foster belonged to the various bar associations in which his professional confreres met for the interchange of views, and he also held membership in the Bowdoin College Alumni Association, and Brown Post, Grand Army of the Republic, of Bethel. In the Masonic Order he held the Knight Templar degree, also belonging to the Ancient Arabic Order Nobles of the Mystic Shrine, and he was a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows.

Judge Enoch Foster married (first) June 6, 1864, Adeline O. Lowe, daughter of Ivory Lowe, of Waterville, Maine, who died in 1872; (second) in 1873, Sarah W. Chapman, daughter of Robert A. and Frances (Carter) Chapman, of Bethel, Maine. They were the parents of one son, Robert C.

(The Chapman Line).

*Chapman Arms*—Per chevron argent and gules, a crescent counter-changed.

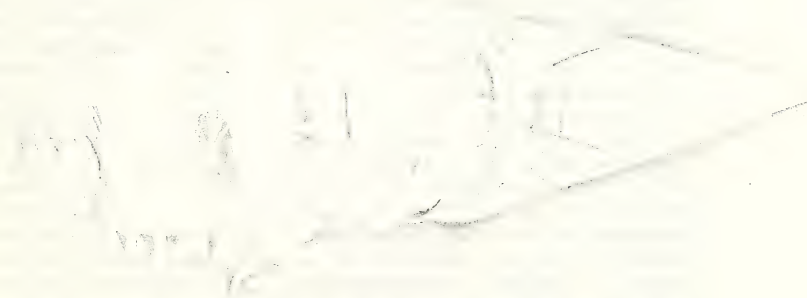
*Crest*—An arm embowed in armour, holding a broken spear encircled with a wreath proper.

The Chapman family of which Mrs. Enoch Foster is a member is widely represented in New England. Rev. Eliphaz Chapman, founder of the line in Maine, was born in Newmarket, New Hamp-





(Total)



33. Frances



## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

shire, March 7, 1750, son of Samuel Chapman, and a direct descendant of Edward Chapman, the American ancestor of the Chapmans of New England. The Rev. Mr. Chapman in 1791 journeyed to Sudbury, Vermont, making the trip with two teams, and he afterward became a preacher at Madbury, New Hampshire, and at Methuen, Massachusetts, doing ministerial work for fifteen years. He was a man of wide acquaintance and influence, and his death occurred in Bethel, Maine, where the closing years of his life were spent, January 20, 1814. He married Hannah Jackman, a daughter of Timothy Jackman, who survived him, her death occurring December 15, 1839, at the venerable age of ninety-two years. They were the parents of seven children, among them Eliphaz (2) Chapman, father of Mrs. Foster.

*Eliphaz (2) Chapman*, eldest son of the Rev. Eliphaz and Hannah (Jackman) Chapman, was born June 16, 1775. He was a farmer, owned a large tract of land in Gilead township, Maine, and there occupied numerous important offices, also representing his district in the State Legislature. He died July 9, 1844. He married (first) June 30, 1804, Salome Burnham, whose death occurred July 2, 1829, and he married (second) Betsey Adams. There were six children of his two marriages, of whom Robert Andrews Chapman was the eldest.

*Hon. Robert Andrews Chapman*, son of Eliphaz (2) and Salome (Burnham) Chapman, was born September 22, 1807, at Gilead, Maine. In boyhood he attended the schools of that place, and afterward became a clerk in the employ of O'Neil W. Robinson, of Bethel Hill. After a number of years in Mr. Robinson's employ he succeeded to the ownership of the establishment. He afterward, in partnership with his brother Elbridge, conducted a general store at Bethel, Maine, Elbridge Chapman withdrawing from the firm after many years, and Robert A. Chapman continuing with Enoch W. Woodbury. This connection endured for several years, and Mr. Chapman became known as one of the wealthiest citizens of that region. He was possessed of untiring energy and admirable business judgment and tact, and these were the qualities responsible for his generous share of material success. For many years he was a loyal Democrat, but afterward became one of the strongest proponents of the prohibition cause, working constantly in the temperance cause. During the later years of his life he was associated with the Republican party, and in 1850 was its successful candidate for the State Senate. His church was the Congregational, and he was active in that denomination in Bethel. He was a citizen of value to his community in public-spirited service, and he was deeply devoted to his home, his wife, and his family. He died April 7, 1880, at Bethel.

Hon. Robert Andrews Chapman married, March 28, 1833, Frances



## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

Carter, born in Bethel, Maine, September 1, 1809, daughter of Dr. Timothy and Fanny (Freeland) Carter. Mrs. Chapman survived her husband, and lived to the advanced age of ninety-two years. They were the parents of: Cullen Carter, born December 27, 1833, and during his life a well known business man of Portland, Maine; Frances Salome, born December 30, 1837, and now the widow of Thomas E. Twitchell, and a resident of Portland; Charles Robert, born July 6, 1842, died in early youth; Sarah Walker, born February 4, 1844, of whom further; Charles Jarvis, born January 29, 1848; Robert, born January 6, 1850, a prominent business man of Portland.

Sarah Walker (Chapman) Foster attended the public schools of Bethel as a young girl, and completed her education at the Gorham Seminary, of Gorham, Maine, at that time a young ladies' school of wide reputation. Upon the completion of her course in this institution she was strongly attracted toward the teaching profession, and became a teacher in the district schools of the town of Bethel. For two years she taught in these schools, and was then for one year a teacher in the village school. Ill health compelled her to give up her profession. She afterward became the wife of the Hon. Enoch Foster. During her married life, Mrs. Foster devoted her entire time and attention to the duties of her home, and left nothing undone to contribute to the happiness of her husband and son, both of whom she has since lost by death. Her devotion to their memory is most beautiful, and not a day passes that she does not pay tribute to them. Her life has been one of love and devotion, and her fortitude in her great sorrow has had its birth in a strength of Christian character and an unfaltering faith. She is a member of the Congregational church, and while a resident of Bethel was quite active in church work there. She now attends the High Street Congregational Church at Portland, and is an earnest supporter of its works, her example the translation of Christian precepts into everyday conduct. Mrs. Foster is a lady of culture and artistic taste, to which her home and its surroundings bear ample witness. She is a member of the Women's Literary Club and the George Eliot Club, of Portland.

### CAPTAIN ROBERT CHAPMAN FOSTER.

While the name of Foster will long live in Portland, Maine, through the memory of the life and works of Judge Enoch Foster, there would have been, had not death intervened, a monument in all probability equally as impressive in the career in medicine of his son, Robert Chapman Foster. The future can be foretold by no man, but the qualities and tendencies displayed by a man during the first thirty-five years of his life are surely a fair index to his character and a safe basis on which to build hopes and expectations.

*Sarah M.*





Sarah W. Foster



Robert C. Foster



## FOSTER-CHAPMAN FAMILIES

Robert Chapman Foster as a young man entered the legal profession and remained with his father in practice from his graduation until the death of the elder Foster, when, feeling that the field of endeavor in which he belonged was the medical profession, he began study in that calling. Death called him from his medical books and from the associations that had already learned his worth, and once more he took his place by that father to whom, living, he had been devoted, and whose memory he had revered with the reverence of a faithful and loving son.

Robert Chapman Foster was born in Bethel, Maine, March 19, 1880, and after attendance in the public schools of his birthplace he studied in Gould's Academy and Bowdoin College, in both of which institutions his father had been a student. He was graduated from Bowdoin College in the class of 1901, and to prepare himself for partnership with his father he entered the Law School of Harvard University, receiving the degree of Bachelor of Laws from that school in the class of 1905. He at once became his father's partner in Portland, and under the careful preceptorship of that eminent lawyer and jurist he made rapid strides in his profession until the death of Judge Foster ended this most happy association. The study of medicine had always had a strong appeal for him, and he felt that with his old ties thus broken his opportunity to embrace that profession had come. He enrolled in Harvard Medical School, and was deep in preparation for a physician's career when his death came, March 7, 1916.

Mr. Foster had been identified with the Maine National Guard since 1905, when he became a charter member of Company Five. He advanced through the noncommissioned and commissioned grades to the rank of captain, which he held at the time of his resignation and honorable discharge in 1910. His military record was of such excellence that when the National Guard, at the outbreak of war between the European Alliance and the Entente, became increasingly active in response to the demand for greater preparedness on the part of the United States, he was appointed quartermaster of the Artillery Corps. He engaged in this work with energy and thoroughness that were characteristic, winning the commendation of those in authority above him, and he was one of the last incumbents of that office.

Mr. Foster was a Republican in political persuasion but public life never attracted him. He was an attendant of the Congregational church, held the thirty-second degree in the Masonic order, and was also a member of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks. He was a marksman of ability and reputation, belonging to both the Portland and the Harvard Gun Clubs, and his mother has more than a score of cups which he won as prizes in different meets.

Reference there will not be found for many years. It is doubt



## "Dorothy Q.," Who Became Dorothy H.

BY LUCY PORTER HIGGINS, BOSTON, MASS.



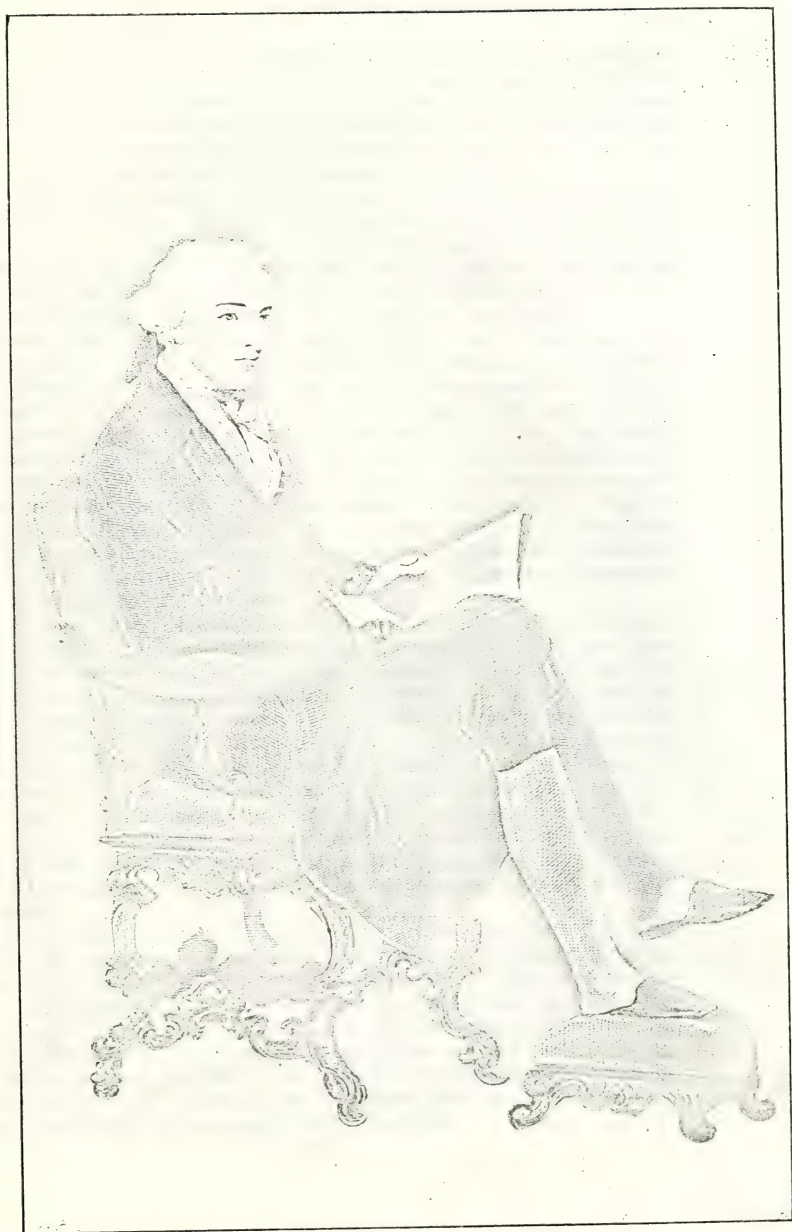
IF we turn the pages of history back six hundred years and more to the Old World, and in the far land of the North, we shall find the ancestors of the Quincy family. This ancient race fought and conquered, lived and loved, in the wonderland of Norwegian mountains and streams; and from the village of Quincy in Normandy, Robert de Quincy came with William the Conqueror to England. The grandson of this feudal baron was created Earl of Winchester by King John about 1207. He was one of the barons present at the convocation with King John who extorted from that monarch the grant of Magna Charta. The title of Winchester became extinct for lack of male heirs, but in another line of Robert's descendants we are interested.

On October 14, 1593, in the quaint old town of Wigsthorpe, in Northamptonshire, Sir Edmund Quincy, whose family escutcheons and armorial banners were the pride of the old town, gave his name and rank to the fascinating and accomplished Ann Palmer, also of high degree. Their son Edmund was baptized May 30, 1602, and July 14, 1623, married Judith Pares, who was destined to bear two other names before her story should be "writ in stone" in a far-off and then almost unknown wilderness. They settled on an inherited estate at Achurch, a small parish not far from Wigsthorpe. But Edmund the second strayed from the fold of the old Church of England, and when his son Edmund the third was born, he was baptized "elsewhere," March 15, 1627. Soon after he left his native land, embarking for the New World in quest of a home, with others of the new faith, amid more friendly surroundings. Being pleased with the country, he went back for his wife and family and returned with them, the Rev. John Cotton and others, arriving this second time in Boston, Sept. 4, 1633.

He was a man of distinction, whose influence and abilities were soon recognized, he being appointed the following May as representative from Boston to the first Colonial General Court. He was also one of the committee appointed to purchase the peninsula of Mr. Blackstone, or Blaxton, as it was then called. He was one of the first to receive a grant of land at Mount Wollaston from Boston. His grant and that of Mr. Coddington were adjoining, and the boundary between them was not defined for many years. It is doubt-







JOHN HANCOCK



"DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

ful if he ever lived on his Wollaston estate; though presumably he built a house, as the law required every owner of land to erect a building of some kind thereon. In less than two years from the time of his settlement in Boston, he died, at the early age of thirty-three years, his son, Edmund the third, who was baptized "elsewhere" in 1627, inheriting his father's broad acres at Wollaston.

Mr. Quincy was buried in what is now called the Hancock Cemetery at Quincy, Mass. His grave was marked by a granite stone in which the arms and inscription were inserted, cut on lead. This lead was cut out in revolutionary times and run into bullets, and the inscription would have been lost but for the efforts of John Adams, who identified the stone and had the inscription restored.

The son, Col. Edmund Quincy, born in 1627, was a man much esteemed. He was colonel of the Suffolk regiment, and held various public offices. He was a prominent man in the church and in the town, and died when about seventy years of age. The arms of Edmund Quincy were inserted on the table monument over his tomb, and were broken in the search for lead, but no lead was found, and they were left in a fractured state; however, they were preserved and copied, and are now in the possession of the family. The inscription is still perfectly legible on the stone as it lies in the deep shade of the old cemetery, where so many have since been gathered to their rest. A silver cup engraven with these arms was presented to the First Church in Braintree in 1697.

Col. Quincy gave the name Edmund the fourth to his son, born in October, 1681. He was graduated at Harvard in 1699, and was judge for twenty years of the Supreme Court of the Colony. He was also representative and councillor. He was sent to the Court of Great Britain to settle a controversy about the boundary line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire. He sailed for England in December, 1737, and died in London, Feb. 23, 1738, at the age of fifty-seven, from the effects of inoculation for small-pox. The colony donated one thousand acres of land in Lennox to his family, and erected a monument on his grave in Bunhill fields, near the ashes of Milton and Bunyan. The Latin inscription says he was greatly beloved by the people, and by the Senate who erected the monument.

Judge Quincy married Dorothy Flynt, who was thus the first Dorothy Q., a name made famous in literature by Oliver Wendell Holmes's poem to his "grandmother's mother," who was Judge Quincy's daughter. His son, Edmund the fifth, born in 1703, was many years a merchant in Boston, and also resided on the paternal estate in Braintree. He became judge of the county of Suffolk, in which office he died in July, 1788. He married Elizabeth Wendell, April 15, 1725, and his tenth and youngest child was the Dorothy whose eventful life is the subject of this sketch.



Dorothy Q., the third, was born in 1747. When she was but two years of age, her eldest sister Elizabeth was married, being eighteen years her senior. Sarah, another sister, married General William Greenleaf of Lancaster. "Katy" became Mrs. Bracket, and Esther married Jonathan Sewall. The five sisters were remarkable for their beauty, and the little Dorothy was no doubt a great pet in the family, being nine years younger than her next sister, Esther. The Braintree mansion where she first saw the light is still standing, situated on the east side of Hancock street, about half a mile due north from the railroad station. The estate originally extended northerly to the old boundary of Dorchester and westerly to Adams street, where was the gate and entrance to the Quincy mansion. The mansion has not now the original form, being considerably changed in its general aspect by additions. Its easterly end clearly discloses in the clapboarding the method of enlargement, and shows the original shape of the gable. The southerly front towards the eastern end is of the original construction, and its architecture and finish without and within certify to its antiquity. Another house comprised in the estate, and called the farmhouse, is the older house, probably built in 1685. Sewall's neverfailing diary records, under date of March 22, 1686, that he was in Braintree and "lodged in the lower room of Unkle Quinsey's new house," thus intimating that there had been an old house. The "lower room" being used for a guest room, also suggests the attic above, as is matter of fact in the farmhouse. March 28, 1712, Sewall records that "By the time I got to Braintree the day and I were in a manner spent, and I turned into Cousin Quinsey's; lodged in a chamber next the brook." This chamber is still shown to visitors. Another diary, that of John Marshall, records that, "June 14, 1706, we raised Mr. Quinsey's house; July 29, I laid the foundation of Mr. Quinsey's chimnies; Aug. 17, colouring the pediments at Mr. Quinsey's; Sept. 3 to 7 at Mr. Quinsey's about the arch." So that 1706 is probably the correct date for the mansion, and 1685-86 that of the farmhouse.

Among the peculiar and interesting features of this mansion is a small closet with ornamentally outlined shelves, and a sea-shell modelled semidome, extensively copied by New York builders. A "secret chamber," a space between floor and ceiling, is said to be large enough to hold twenty persons. The house is full of queer recesses, crooked passage-ways and unexpected stairways, the result of the various additions made from time to time. "Furnace brook," that runs through the place, was intersected by a dam some distance away as early as 1643, the water-power being used in the operation of a furnace set up for the production of iron and iron ware from bog metal. It was the first iron furnace established in the Colony, and probably first in the United States. A large heap of cinders marked the spot. Sixty and more years ago a "sign plate" of iron





## "DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

was found in this ash-heap, bearing the stamp of the manufacturers and the date 1646. To the south of the mansion there is a beautiful lake of some two acres, and stately elms and gigantic willows once adorned the place, and curved driveways bordered by flowering shrubs. The old well-sweep is another reminder of the past. Beside the Sewall chamber and the Hancock parlor, Tutor Flynt's chamber may be seen. Tutor Flynt was Dorothy's uncle, and taught in Harvard College for fifty-five years. No doubt his visits were an especial delight to the young maiden, who grew to womanhood in this charming spot, and on the Sabbath attended the church nearby with her father, who was an honored and influential member of the same.

Not far from this historic spot lived the pastor of this church, who died some two or three years before Dorothy was born, leaving a widow and three helpless little ones, whose baptism he thus records as per Braintree church records: "Mary Hancock my first born April 13, 1735; John Hancock my son Jan. 16, 1736-7; Ebenezer Nov. 5, 1741." The mother who was thus the second time widowed, was formerly the wife of Samuel Thaxter, of Hingham. Her maiden name was Mary Hawke. Mr. Hancock's brother Thomas took the little John to Boston, and adopted him for his own son. Mrs. Hancock subsequently married the Rev. Daniel Perkins, of Bridgewater, so that probably Miss Quincy knew but little of the family who once had been such near neighbors. However, her father owned a fine house in Boston and spent much of his time there. This house stood on Summer street, nearly where the establishment of C. F. Hovey now stands, and nearly opposite Trinity Church, now also only a memory. It was an "ample gambrel-roofed wooden house, with dormer windows, built up to the street sidewalk, from which the principal outer door opened directly, but having on the east a spacious paved hollow square court yard; bounded by stable, and coach-house with one end to the street; on another side an old fashioned garden shaded by ancient mulberry trees and an old English-walnut tree; and on the third side by an extension of the house itself—the whole front on Summer street measuring about ninety-three feet." "In that coach-house I remember to have seen in my boyhood," says one, "a venerable coach retired from service."

Edmund Quincy entered into partnership with his sons about 1752, and in some way through mismanagement the enterprise was a failure. Some time before 1769 he sold both of his estates in Boston and Braintree, though it is inferred that the family continued to reside in Braintree. His wife died Nov. 7 of the same year, and possibly at this juncture Mrs. Jackson came to live in the old mansion where she, too, was born. Mrs. Jackson was Mr. Quincy's sister Dorothy,—Dr. Holmes's Dorothy Q.—and the widowed father and his young daughter no doubt made her welcome. Mr. Jackson



## "DOROTHY Q." WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

owned a residence in Boston, near the corner of Pemberton Square and Tremont street, as it became later.

Miss Quincy was an acknowledged beauty, and a belle. She was below the medium size, with a very slight figure, and the daintiest feet. Mr. Hancock is said to have fallen in love with these same dainty feet as they tripped out of church one bright morning, and immediately sought an acquaintance with the fair owner. Her diminutive blue and white satin slippers, which may still be seen, attest to the excellence of his taste. We suspect this was in 1764, when Miss Quincy was in her seventeenth year. The fascinating and highbred young beauty kept him in attendance a long time before he had any assurance that his suit would be successful, and even then he was disturbed by fears that her heart was not entirely in his keeping. It is not certain that it was. However, she was quite successful in keeping possession of his, and it is pleasing to note the homage paid by this wealthy, proud and distinguished young aristocrat at her shrine.

Early in 1775 we find Miss Quincy visiting Mrs. Lydia Hancock, and also making a visit in company with that lady and her nephew to the Rev. Mr. Clark, in Lexington, little thinking it would be three years before either of them would see Boston again. Mr. Quincy was then in Boston, perhaps making his abode temporarily with Mrs. Jackson, as he frequently did. We will give what happened on this visit in Miss Dorothy's own words many years after, as related by Gen. Sumner:

Mr. Hancock used to come down from Concord, where the Congress sat, to the Rev. Mr. Clark's in Lexington to lodge, Mrs. Clark being a cousin. He and Mr. Samuel Adams were there, and Mrs. Hancock, who was her particular friend and protectress, (her mother being dead), and she was there also. Dr. Warren sent out a message in the evening that they must take care of themselves and give the alarm through the country, for Gen. Gage had ordered a force that night to march to Concord, and destroy the stores of guns and ammunition kept in that town. Paul Revere brought the message, and arrived about twelve o'clock. Mr. Hancock gave the alarm immediately, and the Lexington bell was rung all night; and before light about one hundred and fifty men were collected. Mr. Hancock was all the night cleaning his gun and sword and putting his accoutrements in order, determined to go out to the plain by the meeting house, where the battle was, and fight with the men who had collected, but who were only partially provided with arms, and those they had were in most miserable order. It was with very great difficulty that he was dissuaded from this by Mr. Clark and Mr. Adams, the latter clapping him on the shoulder said, "it is not our business, we belong to the cabinet." It was not till break of day that Mr. Hancock could be persuaded; but overcome by the entreaty of his friends, who convinced him that the enemy would indeed triumph if they could get him and Mr. Adams in their power; and finding by the inquiries of a British officer (a forerunner of the army) who asked where *Clark's tavern* was, that he was one of their objects; he with Mr. Adams went over to Woburn to the Rev. Mr. Jones's. The ladies remained and saw the battle commence. She was sure the British fired first. One of the first British bullets whizzed by old Mrs. Hancock's head as she was looking out of the door, and struck the barn. She cried out "What is that?" They told her it was a bullet, and she must take care of herself. Miss Quincy was at the chamber window looking at the fight. Two of the wounded men were brought into the house. One of them whose head was grazed by a ball, insisted that he was dead. The other who was shot in the arm, behaved better. The first was more scared than hurt. After the British passed on towards Concord.



## "DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

they received a letter from Mr. Hancock informing them where he and Mr. Adams were, wishing them to get into the carriage and come over, and bring the fine salmon they had sent to him for dinner. This they carried over in the carriage, and had got it nicely cooked, and were just setting down to it, when in came a man from Lexington whose house was upon the main road, who had cleared out, leaving his wife and family at home, when he saw the British bayonets glistening on their return from Concord. Half frightened to death he exclaimed, "The British are coming! The British are coming! My wife's in eternity now." Mr. Hancock and Mr. Adams, supposing the enemy was close at hand, hurried into the swamp and staid until the alarm was over.

She could never tell what became of that dinner, for none of those for whom it was prepared ever tasted it. Upon their return to the house, Miss Quincy told Mr. Hancock that having left her father in Boston, she should return to him to-morrow. "No, madam," said he, "you shall not return as long as there is a British bayonet left in Boston." She with a woman's spirit replied, "Recollect, Mr. Hancock, I am not under your control yet, I *shall* go to my father to-morrow." But she did not go.

A very ancient house in Burlington is pointed out as a place of refuge a few hours for the four as they journeyed to Fairfield, Connecticut, where the old aunt who had been a second mother to Hancock, and the distinguished young lady who was his promised wife, and her maid, were left in the care of the Hon. Thaddeus Burr, an intimate friend of her father, and a warm friend of the young rebels, who proceeded to Springfield on their way to Philadelphia. Aaron Burr was a nephew to the host, and soon paid a visit to his hospitable uncle. The young people were mutually attracted, and the kind old aunt was kept busy in preventing anything serious coming in the way of the wedding, for which preparations were already being made. The marriage of her nephew and Miss Quincy was her most ardent desire. And so, according to Miss Quincy herself, "she did not leave Mr. Burr" and Miss Dorothy a "moment together."

The coming of that young lady to Fairfield was a social event, and perhaps the handsome young Burr was not the only menace to the old lady's peace of mind, but the summer passed without any calamity befalling her young charge, and we are told that regularly every two weeks the old stage brought a huge package from Philadelphia, addressed in Mr. Hancock's "upright and downright hand." One letter written from New York is characteristic, but is too long to be inserted here. Another, copied from the original, is too interesting to omit. It was written from "Philad<sup>a</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> June 1775:":

My Dr Dolly I am almost prevail'd on to think that my Letters to my Aunt & you are not Read, for I cannot obtain a Reply, I have ask'd Million Questions & not an Answer to one, I beg'd you to let me know what things my Aunt wanted & you; & many other matters I wanted to Know but not one word in Answer, I Really Take it extreme unkind, pray my Dr use not so much Ceremony & Reservedness, why can't you use freedom in writing, be not affraid of me, I want long Letters—I am glad the little things I sent you were Agreeable, why did you not write me, of the loss of the Umbrella I am sorry it was spoiled, but I will send you another by my Express <sup>web</sup> will go in a few days. How did my Aunt like her gown, & do let me know if the stockings suited her, she had better send a pattern shoe & stocking. I warrant I will





## "DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

suit her—The Inclos'd Letter for your Father, you will Read, & Seal & forward him, you will observe I mention in it your writing your sister Katy about a few necessities for Katy Sewall, what you think Right let her have & Boy James, this only between you & I; do write your Father I should be glad to hear from him, & I Beg, My Dear Dolly, you will write me often & long Letters, I will forgive the past if you will mend in future. Do ask my Aunt to make me up & send me a Watch String, & do you make up another & send me, I wear them out fast—I want some little thing of your doing—Remember me to all Friends with you as if nam'd I am Call'd upon & must obey.

I have sent you by Doc<sup>r</sup> Church in a paper Box Directed to you, the follow'g things, for your Acceptance, & which I do insist you wear, if you do not, I shall think the Donor is the objection: 2 pair white silk, 4 p<sup>r</sup> white Thread stockings which I think will fit you; 1 p<sup>r</sup> black sattin, and 1 p<sup>r</sup> Black Calam<sup>ee</sup> shoes, the others shall be sent when done; 1 very pretty light Hat; 1 neat Airy summer Cloak, ask Doc<sup>r</sup> Church; 2 Caps, 1 Fan. I wish they may please you, I shall be gratified if they do, pray write me, I will attend to all your Commands—Adieu my Dr<sup>r</sup> Girl, and believe me to be with great Esteem & affection

Yours without Reserve  
JOHN HANCOCK

Remem<sup>r</sup> me to Katy Brackett

Preparations for the wedding of John Hancock and her niece were made by Mrs. Jackson in the hereditary mansion at Braintree, among which was the renovation of the wall paper on certain of the rooms, the quaint design of which is still most picturesque. But it was not thought safe for Mr. Hancock to adventure so near to the enemy. Mr. Quincy had gone to Lancaster, where a daughter resided, and where he remained until the fall of '77. Dorothy Q. went on a visit to Fairfield, and was present with other relatives at the wedding, which occurred late in August. The chronicles of the times are said to have detailed minutely the elaborate toilets of the ladies on this occasion. "Coiffures sprinkled with diamond dust, long waisted gowns, shimmering silks and satins, ribbons, laces, ruffles, priceless gems on shapely necks and wrists; the gentlemen themselves with glossy ques, plum-colored coats and velvet small clothes, white silk stockings and elaborate ruffles at wrist and throat;" truly it was an august assemblage. "This was the last merrymaking in the old mansion. During the four succeeding years of war, it was the scene of many secret conclaves of the patriot leaders, and in the British descent on Fairfield in 1779, the house was burned by order of Gen. Tryon." At the same time nearly all the principal buildings in the town were reduced to ashes. In 1793, Mr. Burr commenced rebuilding, when Governor Hancock promptly made him a present of the lumber and glass.

In the church records at Fairfield may be found the following entry: "Aug<sup>st</sup> 28<sup>th</sup> 1775. The Hon<sup>ble</sup> John Hancock Esq<sup>r</sup> and Miss Dorothy Quincy both of Boston were married at Fairfield. p<sup>r</sup> Andrew Eliot V. D. M."—(Verbi Dei Minister, an old ministerial phrase often used in the last century).

During the siege of Boston, Fairfield was a welcome asylum to Boston people. Mr. Eliot's mother, three sisters and a brother, were among the number. Mr. Burr was a leading citizen of the town,





## "DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

a member of the Committee of War, and at different periods deputy of the General Court, justice of the peace, and high sheriff of the county. This fine colonial mansion was in the centre of the town, where he dispensed sumptuous hospitality.

The newly wedded pair started the following morning for Philadelphia, which was a long journey by stage, but after some amusing adventures they arrived at their destination and were welcomed with all due ceremony. The young wife was not especially pleased with the city, but found some choice friends among the Quakers. She was amid busy scenes, and the President, who was at his own charge, not receiving any remuneration for his services till seven or eight years afterwards, did not keep a clerk, and so the President's wife found abundant occupation in "packing up commissions to be sent off to the officers appointed by Congress," and was for months engaged with her scissors in trimming off the rough edges of the bills of credit issued by Congress and signed by the President; and packing them up in saddle-bags to be sent off to various quarters to be used by the army.

Mrs. Hancock had not been very long in Philadelphia when one day her husband came into the room saying he had a secret which must be faithfully kept. It was, that a letter that day received stated that it was thought to be necessary to burn the city of Boston, and asking him if he would be willing to sacrifice all his wealth; and he had immediately replied giving his full consent. Mr. Hancock thought this was rather a disagreeable secret, as he acknowledged it would reduce them to beggary. She was preparing to attend her first Quaker meeting, and she calmly proceeded to the meeting. The room was crowded, and the painful secret was almost more than she could bear as she waited in silence three hours for a speech. But no speech was forthcoming, and the silence was unbroken until the time came for separating.

Other and pleasanter duties, however, awaited the young wife; for we find under date of March 11, 1777, a most pathetic entreaty from the President to his "dearest Dolly" to hasten her return to him, for there is "no relish," no "comfort," no "relief" for him, till she does come. And she must "take precious care of our dear little Lydia," and must "take care of yourself." When the wee babe was two weeks old, she made the journey in her carriage and arrived without any mishap, and things in the President's cottage were soon put to rights. The little daughter lived for a few months, winning all their tenderest love, and then flitted away, leaving them desolate.

September 26, the British enter Philadelphia, and not long after Mr. and Mrs. Hancock start on the journey to Boston. In a Hartford journal of Nov. 19 is this item: "On Friday last, there passed through this town escorted by a party of light dragoons the Hon.



"DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

John Hancock with his lady on their way to Boston." The next Congress meets in York Town, and a letter from that place, June 23<sup>d</sup>, 1778, to "Dearest Dolly," who remained in Boston, is full of domestic anxiety. After all sorts of worriments, among which are unanswered letters, he gets down to the real cause for his disquiet, thus:

I hope this will meet you tollerably Recover'd from your late Confinement, I wish to hear of your being below Stairs & able to take care of our Dear little one. I am much concern'd about your improving the fine season in Riding. I am sorry I did not take hired horses & leave you mine, but I beg you spare no Cost in Riding for the Establishment and Continuance of your health, hire horses whenever you are dispos'd to Ride, be as frugal & prudent in other matters as is consistent with our Scituation. I wish to know every Occurrence since my departure, pray be particular as to your health in your Letters & give me an exact state of little John. Does Mrs. Brackett intend continuing with you? I beg she may at least untill my Return. My love to her, pray her to take great care of the little fellow. As soon as the City of Philada is cleansed. (the British had evacuated the city five days previously) I judge Congress will remove thither & as soon as we have got over the important Business now before Congress I shall solicit leave to return home, as it will not be necessary for so many of our Members to be here, but of this more hereafter. . . . I am with the utmost Affection and Love, Yours forever John Hancock.

Before the year closed, ill-health compelled the President's resignation. On his return to the "old stone mansion," as it was called, in Boston, he had it thoroughly renovated. He sent to England for new carpets, and had a grand banquet hall attached to the northerly wing of the house, which was the scene of many a stately feast. He was soon chosen for Governor of the State, and thereafter kept open house from early morning till eleven at night. At the time when the Continental money was nearly worthless, his sympathies prompted him to continue to take the bad paper, until his friends, seeing he would have nothing left, told his wife the "money trunk" must be removed from the house or she and her child would be penniless, and it was removed. Mrs. Hancock is said to have "filled her illustrious position with great dignity, and dispensed with queenly grace the hospitalities of her house." "She was a lady of superior education and delightful powers of conversation."

When "baby" was christened, the robe was from England, of India muslin embroidered with a stomacher, and trimming of thread lace. The mother's hat, also imported, was lavender silk trimmed with flowers, and she wore a mantilla of muslin lined with the lavender silk. The city was searched in vain for gold or silver bells with coral for a rattle, until at length one was found. When the young son was five years old he was inoculated for the small-pox; a circumstance of no small importance. Mr. Quincy wrote to his daughter:

Boston, Sept. 25, 1783.

Mrs. Hancock, Point Shirley:—

Dear Daughter Hancock: I have only time to give you joy as to your Son's courage expressed at ye time of inoculation and to tell you that we've great reason to be confident, (according to the Common course of Success, which the practitioners



## "DOROTHY Q.," WHO BECAME DOROTHY H.

here and abroad have met with, especially in such young patients) that your Son will do well, as here all without exception have done, under y<sup>e</sup> distemper, heretofore inoculated; a very happy remedy which, through the Goodness of Divine Providence, the world is famed with. Still more happy the world would be if mankind should prove obediently grateful, instead of being careless under the blessings conferred upon them. I hope soon to hear the Symptoms are favorable, and with my most devout wishes of a Favorable Issue, I remain Dear daughter, Your Most Affectionate Father,

EDMUND QUINCY.

When we remember that his father died from the effects of this treatment, we can understand the anxiety of this occasion. This son, John George Washington Hancock, lived till about nine years of age, when he died in Braintree from the effects of an accident while skating. Mrs. Washington and Mrs. Hancock were friends. The former would often say to Mrs. Hancock, "There is a great difference in our situations. Your husband is in the cabinet, but mine is on the battlefield."

Governor Hancock was the most popular man of his time, and in little acts as well as great ones, he was very close to the people, though living in a style that was a revelation to many at that period. He would stop his carriage when passing some half-built church, and ask why it was not completed, offering liberal assistance. "One morning going to town in his phaeton at an early hour, he saw a poor woman trudging along with a large bundle, he ordered the horses stopped, and asked where she was going. Being informed that she was a poor washerwoman on her way to town, he had her and her bundle placed in the open carriage and took her to her stopping place." "Such acts," it is added, "made him king in the hearts of the people." "One day driving with his wife, they met Samuel Adams walking with the sheriff beside him. Hancock asked "what is the meaning of this?" Adams replied, "I am going to jail, as I cannot satisfy the sheriff's demands." The Governor said he would see to that and settle the "sheriff's demands," and so Adams was free. The stories of his good deeds might be multiplied, but Oct. 8, 1793, his eventful career came to a close. He had been a lifelong sufferer from the disease which caused his death. Thousands visited his house while he laid in state, testifying to their love and grief. His funeral was the most imposing ever witnessed, and his demise was felt to be a public calamity. Alas for all things mortal! His ashes repose in his own tomb in the Grannary burying ground. A broken headstone marks the spot. How many today know where it is, or ever think of it? Even the centennial of his death has passed by without recognition, in this land to which he gave his fortune, his health, his life.

Mrs. Hancock continued to live in the old mansion for some years. She was often visited by distinguished people from abroad. Prince Edward of England paid his respects to her when in this country. She always kept open house for friends or strangers, keeping up







the customs of former days. She excelled in the preparation of rich and delicate viands, an accomplishment acquired to gratify Mr. Hancock.

A Boston lady has in her possession one of the breakfast cloths used at the famous breakfast given to the officers of the French fleet. It will be recollected that on account of mismanagement and consequent defeat of the Rhode Island expedition, there was danger of rupture between the American forces and our French allies. Mr. Hancock promptly made efforts to heal the breach. To this end he invited the Count D'Estaing and thirty of the officers to breakfast. The Count, however, brought officers and midshipmen to the number of one hundred and fifty or more, who made a very brilliant display of gold lace as they marched across the common in the morning sun, excelling, as Mrs. Hancock relates, anything she ever saw before or afterwards of military display. Mr. Hancock sent word to her of the increased numbers of her guests, and she had to prepare for them while they were actually entering the house. They spread twelve pounds of butter onto bread; sent to the guard to milk all the cows on the common, much to the amusement of the owners; and sent to all the neighbors for cake. She says they could not get much into the room, for the little midshipmen made prize of it as the servants passed through the entry, and she was obliged to go out and order it put into buckets and covered with napkins, and in this way escape capture. They ate voraciously, and one, it is said, actually drank seventeen cups of tea. The midshipmen made sad havoc with the fruit in the garden, but the Count said he would make it all right. At the Admiral's dinner given in return, Mrs. Hancock occupied the seat of honor, and at her right was a large rosette of ribbon attached by a strong rope to something under the table. When the toasts were to be given, she was asked to draw up the ribbons, and in doing so she fired the signal gun which was instantly answered by every gun in the fleet. This was a distinguished honor. Mr. Hancock at one time had one hundred and fifty turkeys in the pasture where the State House now stands, and shut them up at night in the coach house. Two or three would be despatched every night. Famous recollections of the old house are associated, says one, with venison dinners and mince pies that cannot be repeated, but must remain a memory only.

Mrs. Hancock at length married Captain James Scott, whose daughter by a former marriage was the wife of Ebenezer Hancock. She subsequently removed to Portsmouth, where she had relatives and where he died. Returning to Boston, she lived for a time in the rear of where Jordan & Marsh now have their establishment, and from there she went to live at No. 4 Federal street, next to the corner of Milton Place, and there spent the remainder of her days. A nephew of Governor Hancock occupied the Beacon street man-



sion; at that time some of the finest residences in the town were on Federal street, and Madam Scott continued to receive her friends in a manner befitting her dignity.

A relative of hers until recently living, remembers "Aunt Scott" as a very dignified, beautiful, and carefully dressed lady. She remembered visiting the old mansion when a little child of not more than five years, and recalls the circumstance of a pepperbox cover dropping off into her plate. Aunt Scott did not approve of little girls using pepper, and her question, "have you got enough," was still distinct in her mind, though seventy-eight years had passed. She never used pepper again. The firing of cannon on the common, much more frequent in those days than now, made a reverberation in the house also distinctly recalled. The array of portraits in the hall were a source of delight not yet forgotten. There were visitors at the house constantly; a Mr. Joy and Miss Abby Joy were often there. An extra plate was always placed on the table for the chance visitor.

At Lafayette's last visit to America, his first call in Boston was on Madam Scott, his old-time host. Both marked in silence the ravages of time. Mrs. Scott was cheerful and contented in her declining years, and entertained her friends with many incidents of other days, but "seldom sighed that they were gone." To the last day of her life she was as attentive to her dress as when in the first circles of fashion. She dearly loved the friends of her old age, and it was an especial honor to be her guest. She amused herself during her last illness in making lists of friends to invite to her dainty suppers, but who never came.

Such was our Dorothy Q. We can scarcely take leave of the sweet-faced old lady without imprinting a kiss of peace on the serene brow, with benedictions in our heart for the "first lady of the land" in the troubled times of 1776. Womanly and sweet to the end, she fulfilled all her allotted tasks, and shone as few women have been able to do in a sphere far above the common walks of life, and rounded out her days with usefulness and helpfulness. She died on the third of February, 1830, eighty-three years of age, greatly beloved; and laid by weeping friends to rest in the tomb of her distinguished husband, the first signer of "The Declaration," and the first (and for eleven years) the Governor of the State of Massachusetts.





## Editorial

---

### SOME TIMELY TOPICS

The present number of "Americana" contains two articles which are most timely, albeit not at all related—"Rewriting American History," and the narrative concerning Myles Standish.

The first of these, "Rewriting American History," is from the pen of a well known litterateur and historian, one who has ably filled various collegiate chairs, and whose many contributions to the book and periodical press have had wide and appreciative reading. His present article will certainly impress many a reader as a new revelation, so far does it take one away from convictions derived from the average historical text books and fiction so much in vogue even to the present time, and his argument inferentially suggests clear thinking along the lines upon which his argument is based. In logical sequence, it may well be wondered to what extent we understand the history America has made during the past three years, and is still making. If accurate knowledge of the past is so uncertainly understood, or certainly misunderstood, how much more uncertain must we be as to the great transactions of our own day. Builders frequently erect an edifice which they never contemplated. Those who set up our United States had no first intention of creating a new nation; their only intention was to effect a redress of grievances, without change in the governmental structure. In like manner, our Civil War was not waged for the extinguishment of slavery; the first purpose was the preservation of the Union, and emancipation of the slaves was an incident. Both in the Revolutionary and the Civil War struggles, results obtained that had not been contemplated. So also in the Spanish-American War, with its incidental acquisition of the Philippines.

Out of these considerations, comes wonderment as to the ultimate results of the recent World War as affecting the American people—what are to be their world entanglements; and, of far greater concern, how is the nation to be affected by recent legis-





## EDITORIAL

lation, and to what extent may legislation yet be carried under recent decisions of the last court of resort in the land. But as to all this, the oracles are dumb.

The narrative relating to Myles Standish is peculiarly appropriate to the season, in view of the approaching Tercentenary Fete to commemorate the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, Massachusetts, on December 21st, 1620. The day will be becomingly celebrated at Plymouth under the auspices of the Plymouth Pilgrim Tercentenary Commission, and it is presumable, as it will be entirely proper, that observances will be nation-wide, as suggested by President Wilson in his proclamation containing the following impressive phrases:

"It seems to me that the influences which the ideals and principles of the Pilgrims with respect to civil liberty and human rights have had upon the formation and growth of our institutions and upon our development and progress as a nation, merit more than a local expression of our obligation, and make fitting a nationwide observance of the day.

"I, therefore, suggest and request that the 21st of December, next, be observed throughout the Union with special patriotic services, in order that the great events in American history that have resulted from the landing of these hearty and courageous navigators and colonists may be accentuated to the present generation of American citizens. Especially do I recommend that the day be fittingly observed in the universities, colleges and schools of our country, to the end that salutary and patriotic lessons may be drawn from the fortitude and perseverance and the ideals of this little band of church men and women who established on this continent the first self-determined government based on the great principle of just law and its equal application to all, and thus planted the seeds from which has sprung the mighty nation."

An additional interest attaches to the narrative contained in these pages, in the fact that it is from the pen of a lady who is a lineal descendant of Myles Standish. The accompanying illustrations are reproduced through the courtesy of Mr. A. S. Burbank, publisher, of Plymouth, Massachusetts, the owner of the copyright.

---

## SERIOUS PROBLEMS

*Coal, Iron and War; a Study in Industrialism Past and Future;* by Edwin C. Eckel, Assoc. Amer. Soc. C. E.; Fellow of Geol. Soc. America; late Major, Engineers, U. S. A. (New York, Henry Holt & Co.)

On a preceding page of the editorial department of this Magazine, under the caption "Some Timely Topics," occurs a phrase expressing "wonderment as to the ultimate results of the recent World War as affecting the American people." In line with this, and in a





way somewhat of an answer, almost on the instant comes to our table the volume above named, and which epitomizes most clearly some existing socio-industrial conditions, and discusses their possible eventuation. Of course, not all phases of such conditions are primarily due to that war, but in various particulars that war has brought some of them earlier than would otherwise have been the case, and in confusing multiplicity.

The author lays down as a major proposition at the outset, that industrial changes (and upon which, we may remark, depend in larger degree than ever before, social, economic and governmental conditions), are to a very great extent due to purely natural evolution; that any discussion which lays undue stress upon either personal, class or racial factors, is historically defective; that changes may be for the good or ill of the community, but are rarely if ever due to conscious and intentional planning or direction; that whatever their merits or defects, they come about under the operations of an unrecognizable law of causation, and that there are some purely physical factors which will serve to limit the degree of change that human will would introduce. These phrasings are principally our own, but they form a most accurate synopsis of the author's introduction. The volume begins with a history of the origin and development of modern industrialism, tracing it through the principal manufacturing nations and through their most important industries—coal and iron—which underlie all others, the very foundation of the industrial edifice. Coming down to the present time, the author takes up the tremendous questions now confronting us, and which many regard as even threatening our national existence—the relations between capital and labor; the corporation, its mission and regulation; the share of the worker, (involving most complex elements); legislative helps and hindrances, (a most fruitful and disturbing theme in the light of influences in some instances amounting to intimidation, wielded over legislative bodies, both state and national, by well organized and aggressive lobbies working in the interests of class minorities and subverting the wills of apathetic majorities); the future of industrialism; the progress of political beliefs (which ever leads to amelioration or revolution); the trend of future industrial growth; and world competition, including the Asiatic races as potent manufacturing and commercial rivals.

The work is well worthy of careful perusal by everyone who seeks



to understand (if that be possible) the almost chaotic present-day conditions, and gropes for a basis from which to diagnose a future the path to which is unenlightened by any past experience. At first glance, the title of the work suggests restriction to certain great industries and their accompanying formidable technicalities; but such impression is speedily dissipated, and the philosophically dispassionate treatment of an all-important topic which involves practically all the elements of industrial, commercial, political and social life,—in short, all that goes to make up our American civilization—has the fascination of a well told tale, however deficient it be as to a practical solution of the mighty problem which is beyond all but the omniscient ken.

---

### AN ANCIENT PERIODICAL RECALLED

In the very clever "Notes on the Personal Characteristics of Washington Irving," which occupy several pages of this number of "Americana," some reference is made to a famous old periodical, "Salmagundi," which had for one of its originators and editors the gifted writer whose name appears above. The editor of this magazine trusts that the contributor of the "Notes" will excuse him for supplementing his paper somewhat.

When the present writer (the editor of "Americana") was in his youth, "Salmagundi," though long extinct, was yet considerably read. Its full title was: "Salmagundi; or, The Whim-Whams and Opinions of Launcelot Longstaff, Esq., and Others." The prospectus announced as its purpose, "To instruct the young, reform the old, correct the town, and castigate the age"; and its founders were credited with the higher aim of making it for America what Addison's "Spectator" was to England, and in which it certainly failed. Its title was taken from the name of a once famous table dish, *Salmagundi*—a mixture of pickled herring, cold chicken, salt beef, radishes, olives, etc., highly spiced—and the term came to be applied to a literary olio, or medley. As told by a reviewer of long ago, in "Salmagundi" the periodical, a fortnightly, "the follies, prejudices and affectations of the society in which the young authors moved, were hit off with so much cleverness and truth that the fashionable promenaders of the Battery and the exclusive residents of State



## EDITORIAL

Street and Bowling Green, laughed long and loud." This description, taken in connection with the early demise of the publication (it expired with the first month of its second year), might lead to the suspicion that it was too highly spiced to be palatable to the readers of that day whose patronage was necessary to its continuance. It was the first periodical of the kind to come from the American press, and for quite a period it was the last. In time, it came to have imitators of various qualities, some so entirely degenerate that their publishing house was known only to those in the secret, and their product was only surreptitiously circulated. This class of publication finally came to an end, along with lotteries and other unwholesome agencies, through the exposures of certain reform societies and the repressive measures of the postal department of the general government.

The illustrations which accompany the "Notes" above referred to, are of places familiar to Irving, and which figure more or less recognizably in his writings.

---

## IN MEMORIAM

In the July number of the magazine appeared a family and personal narrative relating to Dr. Thomas Upham Coe, a prominent resident of Bangor, Maine, one of great usefulness in the community, and a man of fine traits of character. His death occurred July 31st, 1920.







STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC.

REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUGUST 24, 1912.

OF AMERICANA, published Quarterly at Somerville, New Jersey, for April 1st, 1920.

City and State of New York, }  
County of New York, } ss.

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and county aforesaid, personally appeared Marion L. Lewis, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Vice-President and Manager of the "Americana," (Amer. Hist. Society, Inc.), and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 443, Postal Laws and Regulations, printed on the reverse of this form, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, The American Historical Society, Inc., Somerville, N. J., New York City; Editor, Fenwick Y. Hedley, No. 267 Broadway, New York City; Managing Editor, Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, New York City; Business Manager, Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, New York City.

2. That the owners are: Benjamin F. Lewis, Sr., No. 908 Central avenue, Wilmette, Ill.; Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, New York City; Metcalf B. Hatch, Nutley, N. J.; Ed Lewis, No. 2121 Foster avenue, Brooklyn, N. Y.; F. M. Keller, 267 Broadway, New York City; Benj. F. Lewis, Jr., 542 South Dearborn street, Chicago, Ill.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

MARION L. LEWIS, Business Manager.

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 1st day of April, 1920.

ROBERT H. HAGEMANN, JR.,

(Seal).

Notary Public of New York City.



# INDEX

Vol. XIV

January, 1920—December, 1920.

American History, Rewriting, Charles W. Super.....	309
American History, Romance in .....	187
Ancient Periodical Recalled (Editorial).....	423
Berry, Caroline Williams, Sleepy Hollow Cemetery.....	369
Browning and Allied Families.....	153
Campbell, Amelia Day, Myles Standish.....	339
Coe-Harthorn Families .....	251
Commandatory (Editorial) .....	185
Cortiss, George Henry, Biographical Sketch.....	178
Dorothy Q. who became Dorothy Hancock, Lucy Porter Higgins	408
Downs, Winfred Scott, The Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute .....	32
Downs, Winfred Scott, Libbey Family.....	390
Eaton, Arthur W. H., Chapter in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia, No. XV .....	129
Editorials .....	94, 185, 305, 420
Everett, Marion N., Biographical Sketch.....	259
Finley, Walter S., Foster and Chapman Families.....	401
Foster, Chapman Families, Walter S. Finley.....	401
Fox, Elizah, Biographical Sketch.....	85
George, James Greenough, Biographical Sketch.....	88
Halifax, Nova Scotia, Chapters in the History of, Arthur W. H. Eaton .....	129
Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute, The, Winfred Scott Downs .....	46
Hawes and Allied Families.....	143
Higgins, Lucy Porter, Dorothy Q. who became Dorothy Han- cock .....	408
Historic Ships, Mary Lloyd .....	227



In Memoriam, Dr. Thomas Upham Coe (Editorial).....	424
Ingraham, Charles A., Honest Jenny Lind .....	32
Ingraham, Charles A., Personal Characteristics of Washington Irving .....	355
Interesting Relics, Some (Editorial).....	305
Irving, Personal Characteristics of Washington, Charles A. In- graham .....	355
Libbey Family, Winfred Scott Downs.....	390
Lind, Honest Jenny, Charles A. Ingraham.....	32
Lispenard, Witherbee and Allied Families.....	262
Literary Notes (Editorial) .....	195, 305
Lloyd, Mary, Historic Ships.....	227
Looking Backward (Editorial).....	94
McWilliams and Allied Families.....	172
Monroe and Allied Families.....	58
Moravians in Northampton County, Penn., The Rev. William N. Schwarze .....	1
New England Exile, Letters of, Caroline Clifford Newton....	208
New Jersey in the Revolution, Charles E. Shriner.....	97
Newling, Cecil G., Wadsworth—Shead Families.....	373
Newton, Caroline Clifford, Letters of a New England Exile....	208
Russell—Baldwin Families .....	72
Schwarze, The Rev. William N., Moravians in Northampton County, Penn. ....	1
Serious Problems (Editorial) .....	421
Shriner, Charles E., New Jersey in the Revolution.....	97
Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, Caroline Williams Berry.....	369
Standish, Myles, Amelia Day Campbell.....	339
Stories of Achievement (Editorial) .....	185
Super, Charles W., Rewriting American History.....	309
Timely Topics, Some (Editorial).....	420
Van Rensselaer and Allied Families.....	274
Wadsworth—Shead Families, Cecil G. Newling.....	373
Weaver—Forsyth Families .....	90
Wood and Allied Families.....	163



# ILLUSTRATIONS

---

	FACING PAGE
Berkeley, The Right Hon. Norbonne, Portrait.....	200
Bonnell's Homestead of Revolutionary Times, Chatham, N. J.	111
Botanic Gardens, New York.....	355
Browning, Coat of Arms.....	153
Browning, J. Hill, Steel Engraving.....	157
Bruton Parish Church, Williamsburg, Va.....	192
Chapman, Frances C., Steel Engraving.....	405
Chapman, Robert A., Steel Engraving.....	405
Coe, Coat of Arms .....	251
Coe, Rev. Curtis, Steel Engraving.....	253
Coe, Eben, Steel Engraving.....	Between 254, 255
Coe, Homestead of Rev. Curtis.....	252
Coe, Homestead of Eben .....	254
Coe, Sada L., Steel Engraving.....	255
Coe, Thomas Upham, Steel Engraving.....	Between 254, 255
Colonial House, Haddonfield, N. J.....	111
Cooke, Coat of Arms.....	151
Corliss, George Henry, Steel Engraving.....	178
Cradle of Iron Industry, Jersey City, N. J.....	107
Dunmore, Lord, Portrait.....	194
Dwight Hall, Yale University.....	Between 50, 51
Elizabeth, Queen, Portrait .....	225
Everett, Marvin N., Steel Engraving.....	259
Everett, Viola D., Steel Engraving.....	260
Farrington, Coat of Arms.....	145
First House at Bethlehem, Penn.....	13
Fort Crailo, Columbia County, N. Y.....	278
Fort Nonsense, Morristown, N. J.....	103
Foster, Enoch, Steel Engraving.....	403
Foster, Robert C., Steel Engraving.....	407
Foster, Sarah W., Steel Engraving.....	406
Foster, W. Scott, Steel Engraving.....	395
Free Library, Concord, Mass.....	Between 60, 61





Free Library, Concord, Mass., Lending Department.	Between 60, 61
Friedenstahl, Penn., Map .....	7
Gemein Haus, Bethlehem, Penn.....	13
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, Portrait.....	234
Greenbush Manor House, Interior Views of.....	279
Hampton, Institute, Hampton, Va.....	46
Hancock, John, Portrait .....	408
Harthorn, Coat of Arms.....	256
Hawes, Amos Bradish, Steel Engraving.....	146
Hawes, Book Plate .....	144
Hawes, Coat of Arms .....	143
Hawes, Mary Hidden, Steel Engraving.....	147
Henry, Patrick, Portrait .....	196
Hull, Coat of Arms.....	159
Jefferson, Thomas, Portrait.....	187
Lehigh Valley, In the.....	1
Libbey, Coat of Arms.....	390
Libbey, Harold S., Steel Engraving.....	399
Lind, Jenny, Portrait .....	32
Location of the American Army at Totowa and Preakness, N. J., 1780, Map .....	114
Log House, Nazareth, Penn.....	11
McWilliams, Clara Elizabeth, Steel Engraving....	Between 174, 175
McWilliams, Coat of Arms .....	173
McWilliams, Josephine L., Steel Engraving.....	Between 174, 175
McWilliams, Owen J., Steel Engraving.....	172
Madison, James, Portrait.....	187
Memorial Chapel, Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute, Hampton, Va. ....	49
Monmouth Battle Field Monument.....	105
Monroe, James, Portrait .....	187
Moravian Cemetery, Bethlehem, Penn.....	16
Moravian Church, Bethlehem, Penn.....	11
Nazareth Hall, Battalion Drill, Nazareth, Penn.....	31
Oburg, Bebe, Steel Engraving .....	Between 260, 261
Oburg, Oscar, Steel Engraving.....	Between 260, 261
Old Fort Burial Hill, Plymouth, Mass.....	346
Old Morrisannia, Morrisannia, N. Y.....	365
Old State House at Kingston, Ulster County, N. Y.....	309



Old Stone House, Jersey City, N. J.....	121
Payne, Home of John Howard.....Frontispiece No.	4
Picquet, Father Francois, Portrait.....	311
Powhattan, when Captain John Smith was Delivered to Him as a Prisoner .....	188
Pulpit Rock, Lehigh Valley, Penn.....	3
Raleigh Tavern, Williamsburg, Va.....	192
Ruins of Old Oxford Furnace, Warren County, N. J.....	107
Scenes of Mutiny at Pompton, N. J.....	121
Schuyler Mansion, The .....	361
Seneca Council, The, Canoga Point, Ontario County, N. Y.....	311
Shead, Coat of Arms .....	382
Shead, Edward Edes, Steel Engraving .....	383
Shead, Edward Wadsworth, Steel Engraving.....	387
Shead, Oliver Wadsworth, Steel Engraving.....	386
Skirmish at Newark, N. J., (now Market and Broad Streets)....	103
Smith, Captain John, Portrait.....Frontispiece No.	3
Spotswood, Alexander, Portrait .....	198
State Capitol of New Jersey, 1794.....Frontispiece No.	2
Standish, Coat of Arms.....	341
Standish, Grave of Myles, Duxbury, Mass.....	353
Standish, March of Myles .....	349
Standish' Monument at Duxbury, Mass.....	354
Standish, Sword, Plate and Kettle of Myles.....	353
Stewart, Coat of Arms.....	266
Stewart, Geneological Chart .....	267
Strong, Susan Lancey Cullen Van Rensselaer, Steel Engraving	299
Tierney, Coat of Arms .....	175
Union Theological Seminary, New York City.....Between 50, 51	
Van Rensselaer Manor House .....	359
Van Rensselaer, Schuyler, Steel Engraving .....	298
Wadsworth, Coat of Arms.....	373
Wardlow, Coat of Arms.....	150
Washington, George, Portrait .....	187
Washington's Statute at Newark, N. J.....	97
Whorrogott Gap, Lehigh Valley, Penn.....	5
William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Va.....	192
Witherbee, Coat of Arms .....	269



Witherbee, Frank S., Steel Engraving..... 270

Young Men's Christian Association Building, Osaka, Japan,  
Between 56, 57

Young Men's Christian Association Building, Osaka, Japan, In-  
terior of .....Between 56, 57

1386 0













